

CHILE

See page 1256

PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS

Their Life Today and
the Story of their Past

By Our Foremost Writers of
Travel Anthropology & History

Illustrated with upwards of 5000
Photographs, numerous Colour
Plates, and 150 Maps

Edited by

J. A. Hammerton

VOLUME II

Pages 785-1508

CHECKED - 1963

CHECKED
1987

British Empire to Dahomey



LONDON: EDUCATIONAL BOOK CO., LIMITED,
17, New Bridge Street, E.C.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

Descriptive and Historical Chapters

BRITISH EMPIRE IN ASIA:

- I. PEOPLES AND PLACES IN THE GULF OF ADEN. *Lt.-Col. H. E. Jacob* 785
- II. THE JUNGLE FOLK OF BRITISH BORNEO. *Charles Hose* .. 801
- III. HONGKONG: AN EASTERN LINK OF EMPIRE. *H. B. Morse* 843
- IV. THE POLYGLOT LIFE OF THE SARAWAK SETTLEMENTS. *Sir Frank Sattertham* 849
- V. THE MALAY STATES AND THEIR TROPIC LIFE. *Sir Frank Sattertham* 865
- VI. PLANTING OF TROPICS OF EMPIRE IN THE EASTERN SEAS. *Demetrius G. Budy* 889

BRITISH EMPIRE IN AUSTRALASIA:

- I. ISLAND LIFE IN THE STRANGE SOUTH SEAS. *Sir Basil Thomson* 897
- II. HOW SOUTH SEA ISLANDERS CAMP UNDER THE FLAG. *A. D. Tane* 973

BRITISH EMPIRE IN EUROPE:

- I. TODAY AND YESTERDAY IN THE CHANNEL ISLANDS. *Edith F. Clive* 977
- II. GIBRALTAR: THE WESTERN GATE OF EMPIRE. *Major C. W. J. Orr* 989

BRITISH EMPIRE IN EUROPE (contd.)

- III. MALTA AND THE MALTESE. *Prof. J. L. Myers* 993
- IV. CYPRUS: GREEK AND TURK AS BRITISH SUBJECTS. *Major C. W. J. Orr* 1002
- BULGARIA I. *H. Charles Woods* .. 1039
- " II. *Sir Reginald Rankin* .. 1049
- BURMA I. *Sir George Scott* 1045
- " II. *Prof. E. H. Parker* .. 1089
- CAMBODIA. *Mme. Gabrielle Vassal* .. 1093
- CANADA I. *Frederick J. Nison* .. 1121
- " II. *A. G. Bradley* 1123
- CEYLON I. *G. F. Milton* 1133
- " II. *J. D. Jones* 1229
- CHILE I. *J. A. Hammetton* 1233
- " II. *H. Hesketh Prichard* .. 1282
- " III. *W. H. Kerbel* 1287
- CHINA I. *Arthur Corbett-Smith* .. 1291
- " II. *Lancel Giles* 1423
- COLOMBIA I. *J. A. Hammetton* .. 1433
- " II. *F. Lomaine Pote* .. 1453
- COSTA RICA I. *Hamilton Fyfe* .. 1467
- " II. *Percy F. Martin* .. 1468
- CUBA I. *Richard Crole* 1471
- " II. *Percy F. Martin* 1497
- CZECHOSLOVAKIA I. *Walter Jerrold* .. 1501
- " II. *C. Trenchard-Pullum* .. 1533
- DAHOMY. *Frank R. Carr* 1535

List of Colour Plates

	Facing page
BRITISH EMPIRE:	
ASIA: Hart of Borneo	802
AUSTRALASIA: Malaya Chief ..	912
BULGARIA: Rustic Beauty	1016

	Facing page
CANADA: Free Rangers of the Prairie ..	1164
CHINA: Where Buddha Reigns	1299
CHINA: Actor Playing Leading Lady ..	1376
CZECHOSLOVAKIA: Daughter of a Colourful People	1508

Pages in Photogravure

PAGES IN PHOTOGRAPHS:	
Khmer in China	817
Khmer Girl's Solo Dance	818
Hon. W. Lee's Dance	819
Solo Dance, Female	820
Island Women of Borneo	821
Solo Dances from Borneo	822
Hon. W. Lee's Dance (Contd.)	823
Hon. Method of Weaving	824
Khmer Women's Dance	825
Dance of Two Warriors	826
Shouting a Blow Pipe	827
Beating the Gongs	828
Singing through the Bore	829
Taking a Child in Part	830
Collecting Peas	831
Beating the Saps	832
Men Hunting Monkeys	833
House from the Hill	834
BY RIVER AND FIRM:	
Solo in Islanders' Shield and Spear	945
Paired Women of Village	946
Solo in Island Group	947
Dance of Gilbert Islanders	948
Three Islanders' Dance	949
Prepossessing Tongan Woman	950

Tongan Lady of High Degree	951
Dance of Rukana Lagoon	952
Father and Son of One Tong	953
Solo in Islanders' Pan Pipe	954
Solo in Islanders' Skill	955
Honour Ceremony	956
Island War Dance	957
Fishing on the Coral Reefs	958
Local Karam	959
A Dutch Feast	960
Preparing the Banquet	961
Rounding the Mark Boat	962
BULGARIANS IN DAYS OF PEACE:	
Bulgarian Peasant Woman	1029
Ready to Dance the Hora	1030
Gala Dances of Young Girl	1031
Melancholy from the Turk	1032
Typical Bulgarian Village	1033
Dancers for the Dead	1034
Modern Tomb at Dobrovo	1035
Street Weaver of Dobrovo	1036
Market Day at Timovo	1037
Gay Attire of Well-to-do	1038

IN WESTERN CANADA:	
Blackfoot Chief	1112
Blackfoot Revivification	1113
Mooring Camp in Alberta	1114
Act of Apple Trees	1115
Prize Trees in Illinois	1116
Rattling up in Columbia	1117
Roll of Trees	1118
Indian Girl of Saskatchewan	1119
Stoney Indian	1120
Canadian Mounted Policeman	1121

Colossal Rite of the Naga	1160-1
Young Cambodian Noble	1162
Bewitched Cambodian Lady	1163
Cambodian Dancer-Girl	1164
IN WESTERN CANADA:	
Blackfoot Chief	1112
Blackfoot Revivification	1113
Mooring Camp in Alberta	1114
Act of Apple Trees	1115
Prize Trees in Illinois	1116
Rattling up in Columbia	1117
Roll of Trees	1118
Indian Girl of Saskatchewan	1119
Stoney Indian	1120
Canadian Mounted Policeman	1121
IN WESTERN CANADA:	
Pilgrims of Kandy's Temple	1209
Concubine-Simile Woman	1210
Ceylon Girl's Pose	1211
Devotion on Adam's Peak	1212
Pilgrims and Pilgrims	1213
The Temple at Kandy	1214
Land Snake Charmers	1215
Cutting and Polishing Gems	1216
Rock Veddhas as Archers	1217
Savages of Eastern Ceylon	1218

Photographs in the Text (contd.)

Peace and War hip ..	1001
Happy Young Cypriots ..	1003
Shipped Ease upon an Ass ..	1004
Greek Cypriot's Plough ..	1005
Burning Forage to Market ..	1006

BULGARIA

Milk-women outside Sofia ..	1008
Beauty of the South ..	1009
Torching Rivers near Sofia ..	1010
Country Customs in Sofia ..	1011
Health and Happiness ..	1012
Folk of "Peasant State" ..	1012
Natives of Belogradchik ..	1013
Primitive Baby-carrying ..	1013
Ceremonies in Bulgaria ..	1014
Bride's Floral Mask ..	1015
Radiant May Queens ..	1016
Oasis in the Desert ..	1017
Remnant of Ottoman Rule ..	1017
Tea and Grace ..	1018
Booth-lark in Sofia ..	1019
Rose-gatherers of Kazanlik ..	1020
Rumpled Rose Farm ..	1021
Rose-Mandarin of Ruzhica ..	1021
Shoemaking Transport Ox ..	1022
Gatherers of the Grape ..	1023
Summer Scene ..	1023
Dancing the Hurd ..	1024
Soldiers and Civilian Dance ..	1025
"The Village "Dope" ..	1026
Retreat of John of Ryk ..	1027
Brother of "Black Clergy" ..	1028
Members of a Sisterhood ..	1029

BURMA

At Prayers ..	1034
Prince's Niece ..	1035
"AAWthakian White Cheroot" ..	1036
Gentle womanly Grace ..	1036
Pillars of Minor Mosque ..	1037
Medicinal Burmese ..	1038
Temple in the Temple ..	1039
Children Chanting ..	1039
Burma's Moustache Poo ..	1041
A Local Quirky ..	1042
Business in Bhamo Bazaar ..	1043
Old Age and Childhood ..	1044
Healing Timber ..	1045
Taking Baggage to the Hills ..	1045
"Lads Re-counting Time" ..	1046
Buddhist Monks ..	1046
Initiation of a Novice ..	1047
Conservation of Pagoda Site ..	1048
Buddhist Monastery School ..	1049
Burmese Fruit Sellers ..	1049
Order of the Yellow Robe ..	1050
Alms: the Vehicles of Prayer ..	1051
Local Villagers ..	1052
Painting Women's Singdhot ..	1053
Padam of Home ..	1054
Painting Village Life ..	1055
Well Fed Padam Family ..	1056
Speeding a Padam Soul ..	1057
Camera shy Padam Girls ..	1058
White Karen Women ..	1059
Loaves of the Mylat ..	1059
Dwellers of the Bir Hills ..	1061
Akha Dancing Girls ..	1062
Soldierly Little Women ..	1063
Simple Life in Shan States ..	1064
Dance of the Padams ..	1065
Water Festival, Yawingwe ..	1066
Infra Watermen ..	1067
Yawingwe State Barge ..	1067
Infra Leg paddlers ..	1068
Triumph of Golden Images ..	1069
Seven Worthy Hill Folk ..	1069
Unusually Womanhood ..	1071
Three Laughing Graces ..	1072
Tassel turbaned Luminaries ..	1073
Survivals of the La'hu ..	1074
Karen Bachelors ..	1075
Red Karens of the Hills ..	1076
Padam Frocks and Frills ..	1077
Rehearsing for Festival ..	1078

CAMBODIA

Coronation Ceremony ..	1092
Under the State Umbrella ..	1093
Westernised Cambodian ..	1093
Head Mistress of Ballet ..	1096
An Easy-going Garment ..	1104
Making Royal Resting Place ..	1106
Honouring the late King ..	1107

Venerable Apostle of Buddha ..	1108
Bonze's Grotesque Pulpit ..	1109
Pote at a Buddhist Shrine ..	1110
High Priest of Buddha ..	1111
Up-to-date Styles ..	1112
At the Midday Meal ..	1112
Men of French Indo-China ..	1113
Hour of Recreation ..	1113
Cambodian Dancers ..	1114
Fencing Instructor ..	1115
Cambodian Funeral Rites ..	1116
Water Fete on Mekong ..	1117
Fisherman's Home ..	1118
Corner of Cambodia ..	1119

CANADA

On Trail in the Rockies ..	1120
Chief Solace of Red Indian ..	1121
Pulsing Heart of Montreal ..	1122
Market Day, Montreal ..	1123
Glimpse of Winter Life ..	1124
Montreal's Ice Palace ..	1125
Variants of Norway's Ski ..	1126
Familiar Winter Scenes ..	1127
Tobogganing in Quebec ..	1128
Skiing on the Slopes ..	1129
Outdoor Oxen, Quebec ..	1130
French-Canadian Lumbermen ..	1131
Harvest Time in Alberta ..	1132
Old Habitant of Quebec ..	1133
Sport on Kamy Lake ..	1134
In a Canadian Canoe ..	1134
Fording the Pipestone ..	1135
Still Waters Run Deep ..	1135
Gardener of British Columbia ..	1136
Out-size in Giant Cabbages ..	1137
Tapping the Sugar Maple ..	1138
Purifying the Maple Sugar ..	1139
Completion of Purifying ..	1139
From Small Beginnings ..	1139
A "Building Bee" ..	1140
Cherry Pickers of Annapolis ..	1141
Cattle Branding ..	1142
Lords of the Lariat ..	1143
Backwoods Christmas ..	1144
Longing Railway ..	1145
Calgary Cattle Dip ..	1146
Unloading the Herring Catch ..	1147
Collecting the Potato Crop ..	1148
Barriers against Winter Snows ..	1149
Mountain Health Resort ..	1150
Prosper for on Mountain Trail ..	1151
Tourists' Pleasure Ground ..	1152
Camp in Forest Park ..	1153
Making a Portage, Manitoba ..	1154
John Henry of Post Garry ..	1155
Chief Ben Charles ..	1156
Old Stoney Indians ..	1157
Indians of the Yukon ..	1158
Dark lined Nimrod ..	1159
Farewell to the Brave ..	1159
Flaves and Marbue Men ..	1161
Burdens on Mothers' Backs ..	1162
Blackfoot Family at Home ..	1162
Prize Papovers ..	1163
Stoney Indians in Band ..	1164
Chippeway Indian Family ..	1165
Patwawanting in Outback ..	1165
Kootenay Indians ..	1166
Archers at Target Practice ..	1167
Disciple of New Civilization ..	1167
Safe Pet on Mother's Back ..	1168
Vancouver Island Cradle ..	1169
Comox Indians' Totems ..	1170
Reskaha of Columbia Indian ..	1181
Peaceful One-time Savages ..	1182
Kinnewakan, Chief of Sioux ..	1183
Round the Log Fire ..	1184
The Great Divide ..	1185
Courage Triumphant ..	1190

CYPRUS

Tamils' Tambourine Dance ..	1194
Fanciests of Devils ..	1195
High Caste Tamil Women ..	1196
Dress of Kandian Chiefs ..	1197
Sinhalese Sportsman ..	1198
Tamil Chicken Vendor ..	1199
Light but Sturdy Craft ..	1200
Commerce on the Kelani ..	1201
Grace in the Field ..	1202
Trio of Tamil Tea pickers ..	1202
Picking the "Golden Tip" ..	1203
Planting the Tea Shrub ..	1204

Picking the Raw Material ..	1204
Withering Green Tea Leaf ..	1205
Laborating the Juice ..	1205
Fermentation Process ..	1206
Sifting the Tea ..	1206
Storing the Different Grades ..	1207
The Finished Article ..	1207
Relic of Demian War-hip ..	1208
Fine Type of the Moonrime ..	1217
Native Life on Country Road ..	1218
Village Scene ..	1219
The Old Order and New ..	1220
Blithe Maidenhood in Ceylon ..	1221
Highland Beauty Unadorned ..	1224
Beating Plumbago ..	1224
Sitting the Crushed Graphite ..	1224
Lace-making ..	1224
Extracting Oil from Coconuts ..	1224
Sinhalese Caravan ..	1224
Slow Method of Travelling ..	1224
Sacred Stone Figures ..	1225
Where Buddha Sleeps ..	1225
Faithful Followers of Buddha ..	1226
Fruct of the Jack Tree ..	1227
Women War-hippers ..	1228
Temple Elephant ..	1230

CHILE

Santiago's Promenade ..	1232
One of the Carabineros ..	1233
Waiting the Chilean Mando ..	1234
Street Department in Chile ..	1235
Returning from Church ..	1235
Planting Memorial Tree ..	1237
Santiago Girls Study Botany ..	1237
Religious Ceremony ..	1238
Army Review, Con-ito Park ..	1239
Cats' Meat Man in Santiago ..	1240
Smart and Soldierly ..	1240
Woman Train conductor ..	1241
Chilean Officers ..	1242
Public Speaking in Chile ..	1242
Chilean Capataz ..	1243
Water Transport ..	1243
Chilean Nitrate Field ..	1244
After Blasting the Soil ..	1245
Working Nitrate on beres ..	1246
Where Nitrate is Boiled ..	1247
Drawing Cables from Tanks ..	1248
Emptying Crystallizing Pans ..	1249
Nitrate Works ..	1249
Sons of Chile ..	1251
Children of Mining Centre ..	1251
By Windmill Waters ..	1252
Bringing the Harvest Home ..	1253
Four legged Milk Cattle ..	1254
Crowded Docks of Valparaiso ..	1254
Elevation in Valparaiso ..	1255
Carrying Beer in Valparaiso ..	1256
A Valparaiso Baker ..	1257
Enjoying the Open Air ..	1258
Three Belles of Santiago ..	1259
Chilean "Attorneys" ..	1260
Taking up Meat Supply ..	1261
Sitting Line among Colonists ..	1262
Wayside Calvary ..	1263
"Lopacabras" ..	1271
Ranchero's al Fresco Meal ..	1274
Homes of Native Indians ..	1275
Ready for a Rodeo ..	1276
Weaving Winter Clothing ..	1278
Juan Fernandez Island ..	1279
Easter Island ..	1279
Arancanian Woman Weaving ..	1280
Arancanian Woman ..	1281
Tehuelche Indians ..	1283
Nimrod of the Pampas ..	1284
Men of Large footed Tribe ..	1285
Chilean Government School ..	1286

CHINA

Temple of Heaven, Peking ..	1290
Decorous Dress of a Lady ..	1291
Dame of High Degree ..	1292
Victim of Cruel Custom ..	1293
Emancipated Young Lady ..	1293
Images and Puppets ..	1294
Pious Detachment ..	1295
Buddhist Priest of Lin Yia ..	1296
Where no Woman may Dwell ..	1297
Degenerate Professors ..	1297
Lama Priests' Headresses ..	1298
Venerable Priest of Buddha ..	1299
Waiting his Prayers ..	1300

Photographs in the Text (contd.)

Smiling in Face of Adversity	1301
Mid-autumn Festival	1302
On China's Greatest River	1303
Beggars' Floating Home	1304
Midday Meal on Yang-tse	1304
Sturdy River Boatwoman	1305
Floating Population	1305
Off Chusan Archipelago	1306
Tall and Stately Argovies	1307
On Gently Flowing River	1308
Washtub of Hang-chow	1308
Boatman of Yang-tse	1309
Drawing Junk over Rapids	1310
A Ghostly Record	1311
Portable Stocks	1311
All Rags and Tatters	1312
Rich Young Widow	1313
Witnesses Kneeling	1314
Missionary School	1315
Eastern Exponent of Euclid	1316
Chinese Student	1317
Wedding Chair of Bride	1318
Chinese Wedding Procession	1319
Matron of Tai Yuen Fu	1320
Giving his Pet an Airing	1320
Aged Father and Daughter	1320
Chinese Beggar	1321
Washing Day	1321
A Chinese Venice	1322
Coffure and Hat Combined	1323
Arms and the Man	1324
Long-haired Nonsu Lasses	1325
Nosu Market Village	1325
Their Son and Heir	1326
Making Hay	1327
Juvenile Land Girl	1328
Baby Boy of China	1328
Village Schoolboys	1329
Young Diogenes in his Tub	1330
See what I've Found	1331
Crying for the Moon	1332
Youthful Tricksters	1332
Minding his Manners	1333
Chinese Boys with Sweets	1334
Deserves a Flea in his Ear	1334
Shrewd as the Winter Wind	1334
Village Patriarch	1335
Crowded Street, Kiu-Kang	1335
Cantonese at Tea	1336
An Afternoon Stroll	1337
Consulting Fortune Teller	1338
Chinese Chess Players	1338
The Master's Voice	1339
Playing Dominoes	1340
Feet of Chinese Woman	1340
Western Influence at Work	1341
Dressing thy Lady's Hair	1341
Cormorant Fishing	1342
Chinese Fisherman	1343
Angler among Water-lilies	1343
Chusan Island Fisherman	1344
Gambling for Sweets	1345
Playing a Trio	1346
Cantonese at Cards	1346
Street Acrobats	1347
A Juggler of Swords	1347
Member of the Miao Clan	1348
Aborigines of Yun-nan	1349
Strength and Endurance	1350
Out after Wild Fowl	1350
A Street Quack	1351
A Chinese Doctor	1351
With Heavy Tread and Slow	1352
Rich Man's Funeral	1353
Tadist Priest at Funeral	1354
Chinese Funeral Pageantry	1354
Pauper hurried to his Grave	1355
To his Final Resting Place	1355
Where Dead Porters Rest	1356
Sold Cash and Paper Money	1357
The Oxen	1357
Pushing Water Ox Power	1358
Method of Irrigation	1358
Cheerful Oxen	1359
Ploughing with Oxen	1359
Water Oxen	1360
Ploughing with Oxen	1360
Water Oxen	1361
Ploughing with Oxen	1361
Water Oxen	1362
Ploughing with Oxen	1362
Water Oxen	1363
Ploughing with Oxen	1363
Water Oxen	1364
Ploughing with Oxen	1364
Water Oxen	1365
Ploughing with Oxen	1365
Water Oxen	1366
Ploughing with Oxen	1366
Water Oxen	1367
Ploughing with Oxen	1367
Water Oxen	1368
Ploughing with Oxen	1368
Water Oxen	1369
Ploughing with Oxen	1369
Water Oxen	1370
Ploughing with Oxen	1370
Water Oxen	1371
Ploughing with Oxen	1371
Water Oxen	1372
Ploughing with Oxen	1372
Water Oxen	1373
Ploughing with Oxen	1373
Water Oxen	1374
Ploughing with Oxen	1374
Water Oxen	1375
Ploughing with Oxen	1375
Water Oxen	1376
Ploughing with Oxen	1376
Water Oxen	1377
Ploughing with Oxen	1377
Water Oxen	1378
Ploughing with Oxen	1378
Water Oxen	1379
Ploughing with Oxen	1379
Water Oxen	1380
Ploughing with Oxen	1380
Water Oxen	1381
Ploughing with Oxen	1381
Water Oxen	1382
Ploughing with Oxen	1382
Water Oxen	1383
Ploughing with Oxen	1383
Water Oxen	1384
Ploughing with Oxen	1384
Water Oxen	1385
Ploughing with Oxen	1385
Water Oxen	1386
Ploughing with Oxen	1386
Water Oxen	1387
Ploughing with Oxen	1387
Water Oxen	1388
Ploughing with Oxen	1388
Water Oxen	1389
Ploughing with Oxen	1389
Water Oxen	1390
Ploughing with Oxen	1390
Water Oxen	1391
Ploughing with Oxen	1391
Water Oxen	1392
Ploughing with Oxen	1392
Water Oxen	1393
Ploughing with Oxen	1393
Water Oxen	1394
Ploughing with Oxen	1394
Water Oxen	1395
Ploughing with Oxen	1395
Water Oxen	1396
Ploughing with Oxen	1396
Water Oxen	1397
Ploughing with Oxen	1397
Water Oxen	1398
Ploughing with Oxen	1398
Water Oxen	1399
Ploughing with Oxen	1399
Water Oxen	1400
Ploughing with Oxen	1400

Eggs of Yellow	1401
Carrying a Pig to Market	1402
Gathering Snails	1403
Spaceth in the	1404
Barber in Peking	1405
Shoemaker in Peking	1406
A Chinese Soap-seller	1407
Hawker of Flowers	1408
A Shop in Peking	1409
Trade in Peking	1410
Immigrant Indian	1411
Trundling a Cart	1412
Donkeys at Work	1413
A Peking Cart	1414
Engine and Automobile	1415
Mulberry and Mule Cart	1416
Factory Girls on the Work	1417
China's Great Wall	1418
The Bell Tower, Peking	1419
The Great Wall	1420
Chinese Farmer	1421
Haunt of Ancient Peace	1422
In a Shanghai Tea Shop	1423
A Temple in Peking	1424
Trade's Busy Function	1425
Oldest Observations	1426
Quiet Corner	1427
Commercial Enterprise	1428
Peking Bazaar	1429
Young Chinese Student	1430
Happy though Minded	1431
Eating with Hospitality	1432
Tea-laden Caskets	1433
Vendor of Oriental Delight	1434
Shelling Peanuts	1435
Haggling over Prices	1436
Willow Pattern Plate	1437
Chinese Women and Police	1438
Soothing Water-pipe	1439
Clad in Cap and Gown	1440
COLUMBIA	
Scene in Aviation Ground	1441
Refreshing Fruit for All	1442
Loading Up the Boats	1443
Savouries for Epheures	1444
Champion Chachaculo	1445
Inspecting his Papaw Tree	1446
Pleasuring to Eve and Palate	1447
Mule Train with Coffee Beans	1448
Mountain Plantation	1449
Earthenware in Bogota	1450
Officials of Law Courts	1451
Young Gardener's Prize Fruit	1452
Stern Wheeler near Girardot	1453
Street in Rio Peru	1454
Resting by the Roadside	1455
Old Stone Fountain	1456
Cathedral in Bogota	1457
In Santa Fe de Bogota	1458
Factory Girl of Bogota	1459
Treasures at St. Ana	1460
Where Colombians Meet	1461
Costa Rica	
Costa Rican Schoolboys	1462
Sunshine in her Heart	1463
Talamancan Thatched House	1464
Society Belies of San Jose	1465
West Indian Negroes	1466
A Model Farm	1467
Working the Salt Mines	1468
Chosen of the People	1469
Good Pull-up for Carters	1470
Slow but Sure	1471
Gathering Nuts Wholesale	1472
Picking Coffee Berries	1473
Indian Girls Grinding Grain	1474
Delivering Vegetables	1475
Patient Obedience	1476
Live Turkeys for Sale	1477
Smiles and Contentment	1478
Mayana Pedlar	1479
Cuban Baker	1480
Flourcutter at Tanco Market	1481
Ports of Human Interest	1482
Tending Tobacco Plants	1483
Rolling Cigars	1484
Smile from Koozoo	1485
Hanging up Tobacco	1486
Shop of a Laboring Man	1487
Impassioned Expression	1488
An Open Door	1489
Brought to a Quiet Haven	1490
Dahomey	
European Fashions	1491
High Priest of Dahomey	1492
Poetical Village Life	1493
Art Nurses at Work	1494
On the Great North Road	1495
Dahomey Villagers	1496
Dancing the Tam-tam	1497
Youthful Dahomeans	1498
Native Making Palm-oil	1499
List of Maps	
British Empire in Asia	1501
British Empire in Australasia	1502
British Empire in Europe	1503
Bulgaria	1504
Burma	1505
Cambodia	1506
Canada	1507
Ceylon	1508
China	1509
Columbia	1510
Costa Rica	1511
Cuba	1512
Czechoslovakia	1513
Dahomey	1514

British Empire in Asia

I. Peoples & Places in the Gulf of Aden

(Perim, Aden, Lahej, Socotra, & Bahrein Islands)

By Lt.-Col. H. F. Jacob, C.S.I.

Author of "Perfumes of Araby"

Separate articles are devoted to Burma, Ceylon, India, and Nepal. Here are described in a series of six articles (including an historical outline) the lands and islands of the Gulf of Aden, British Borneo and Sarawak, Hongkong, the Straits Settlements and the Malay States, which comprise the rest of the British Empire in Asia

PERIM is a small, rocky island in the Straits of Bab-el-Mandeb. Commanding the entrance to the Red Sea, it is separated from the Arabian mainland by a narrow channel, not usually traversed by ships. The British visited it first in 1799, when a naval force was sent from Great Britain, with troops from India, to occupy it and prevent the French in Egypt from communicating with the Indian Ocean. To-day it is garrisoned by a detachment of Arab troops from Aden, and the British officer in command is ex-officio assistant to the Resident of Aden. Perim is barren and wind-swept. A few gazelle wander about. There are the offices and coal depot of the Perim Coal Company, Lloyd's signal station, and two lighthouses. The inhabitants, other than coal coolies, engage in fishing.

Ninety-six miles east of Perim is

Aden. The Arabia Felix of the Romans, it was the chief port of the Minaean and Sabaeen dynasties. Temporarily in eclipse under the

Himyaritic kings, Aden regained its position by the fourth century A.D., when Constantius negotiated for the erection there of a church.

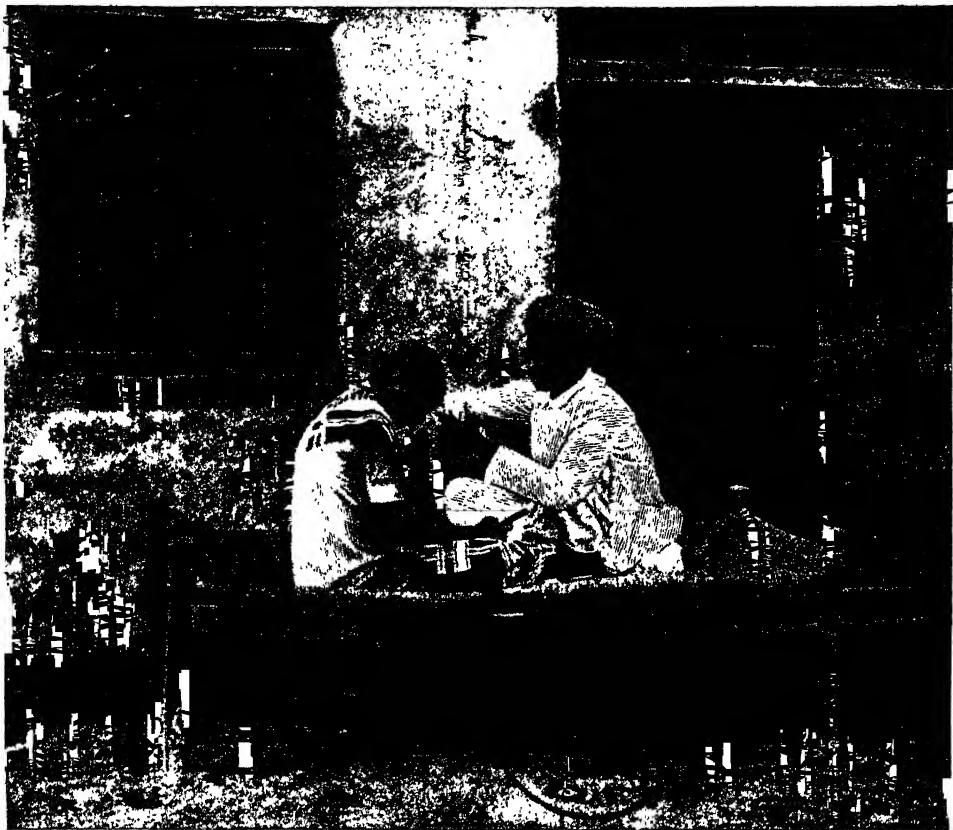
Coming in to Aden, there lies on the left the group of hills known as Little Aden (Jebel Ihsan). Here the inhabitants are mostly fisherfolk, and here is netted the dugong, the origin of the merman and mermaid. The average tourist believes Aden to be a coal depot only. He may land to see the Tanks (probably of Persian origin) situate five miles off in the Crater, or he may visit "Sarelas" for silks.

He cannot fail to see the heights of Shamsan, vulgarly called Shamsan, at an altitude of 1,725 feet. The charms of Aden are evident. The



CORRECT USE OF JAMBIAH

The jambiah is a much favoured weapon of the Lahej Arab. Behind its sheath he carries his store of treasures, including tweezers, leather-piercer, and an army razor—if he can get it —for use as a pocket-knife



HINDU BARBER AT WORK IN THE NATIVE QUARTER, CRATER, ADEN

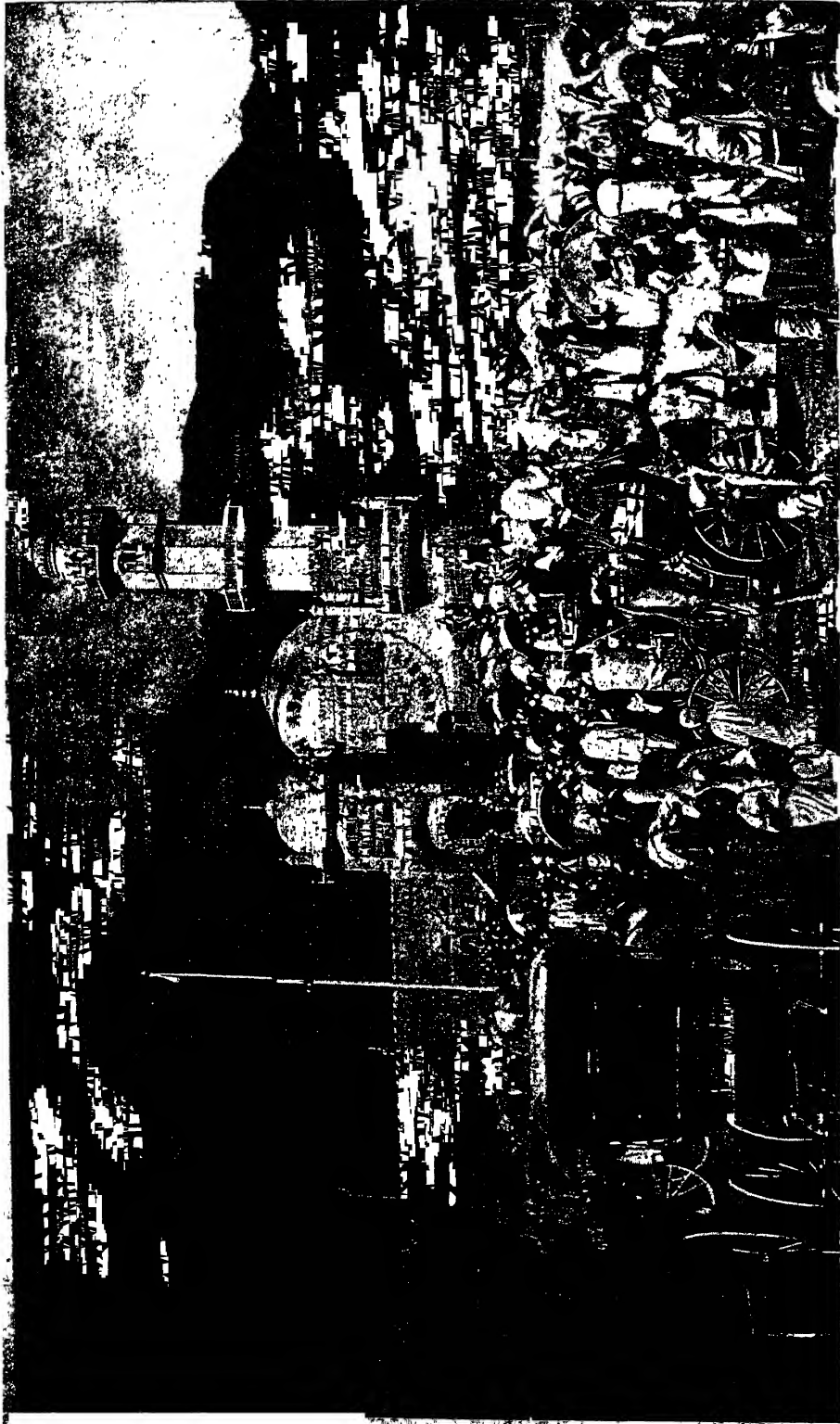
The Hindus who have made Aden their home are mostly Banian traders, artisans, and menial servants. Many of them have small unpretending shops, others carry on their particular trade in the open streets. The barber's profession is not to be despised in this hot and arid land, where, in conformity with custom and convenience, closely-shaven heads are favoured alike by those of high and low degree

caravans of 30 to 40 camels, strung together tail to head, are coming from the interior. The swarthy riders sway to and fro in their saddles. There is a sudden snatch of song—a tribute to some dusky damsel left in rocky fastness; calls on Allah to exterminate the slothful cameline brood, for did not the Prophet say "Verily in its hump resides Satan the stoned"? Indescribable is the desert's charm. One realizes the Presence of his Maker, and the littleness of life are forgotten as one harks to the music of "the tinkling of the camel-bell."

Surely there is a soul of Aden, as elusive as the soul of Egypt's Sphinx. Aden has yet to give up her secret. She has been the Cinderella of the East—just an ugly, desolate coal-dump; but to those who look below the

unreality of appearances, there is borne a feeling of the existence of the shades of long-past dynasties. Here, in truth, to quote Walt Whitman, are "living beings, identities, doubtless near us in the air, that we know not of, whose contact daily and hourly will not release us."

Landing at the Prince of Wales' Pier you are faced by a war memorial, all strangely out of keeping with its environment. On the right is the Jopp Promenade and garden, in memory of a former Political Resident. Here, of an evening, parade Arabs, Jews, and Indians, children at their games—the whole mingling with the strict observers of the sunset prayer. You pass the Union Club, your eye drawn up to the imposing residence on the hill of the First Assistant Resident, and the Hogg



MAHOMEDAN FEAST OF "BURRA DEEN" AT THE MOSQUE OF AIDRUS VALLEY IN THE CRATER, ADEN

This is the great local Mahomedan holiday to celebrate the arrival from Mecca of the Holy Carpet. The procession is about to be formed, and the crowds grow thicker with every minute. They come on foot, on camels, in carriages—an incongruous mixture of town and country Arabs, Somalis, Seedees, Persians, and Indians. Bigotry and fanaticism are chiefly confined to the lower and uneducated classes, and are perhaps especially apparent in the Somalis



CROWD FORMING UP FOR THE GRAND PROCESSION WHICH ESCORTS THE HOLY CARPET

The carpet is carried under a canopy of bright scarlet cloth ornamented with gold stencilling, seen to the right of the picture. This "Visitation" excites keen religious fervour among the Mahomedan population of Aden and the neighbouring districts, for all classes of Moslems in Aden are especially attentive to their devotions and pray the full five times a day, and a great religious ceremony, such as the Feast of "Burra Deen," has no lack of devout attendants.

BRITISH EMPIRE IN ASIA

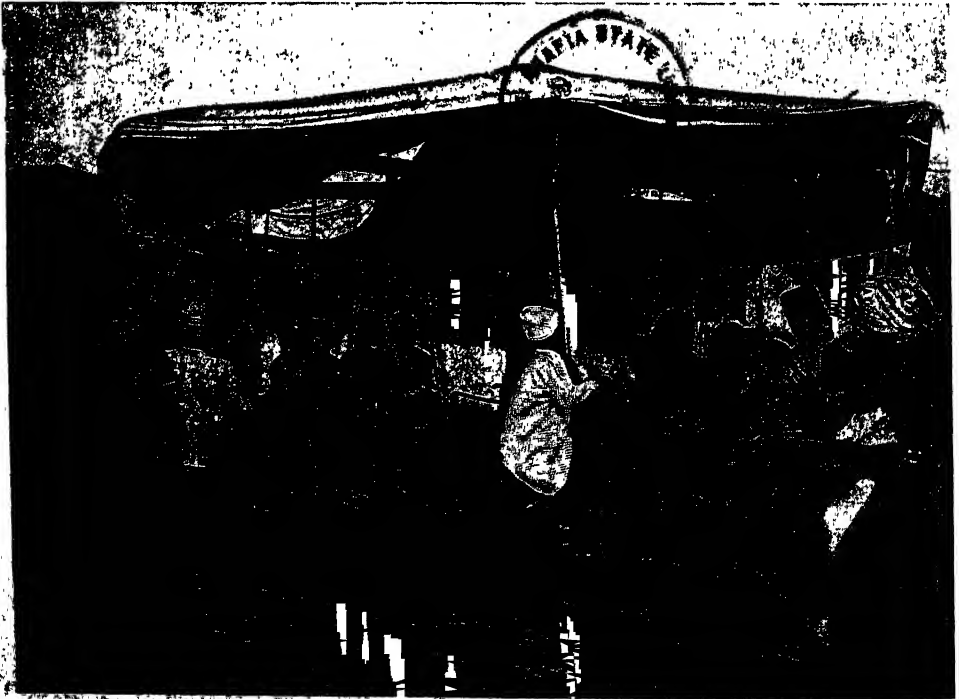
Clock Tower, a witness to the memory of another and bygone Resident. Leaving on your left the Roman Catholic church and school, and the civil hospital on the rocks, you pass the Anglican church and the Soldiers' and Sailors' Institute and swing past Morbat Fort on the right, as you emerge from under the over-bridge and debouch on the playing fields.

To your left, high on the hill, stand the barracks, to the right the soldiers' swimming bath in the historic "Khaisat Kamandar," or the "Bay of the Commander" (Haines). An incline will take you up to Tarshain Fort and the Residency. Going straight on, you swing round to more soldiers' playing grounds, and pass the bay and sands loved by white children; then the quarters of the Eastern Telegraph Company, the freshest site of Aden; on and down over a bridge to a bay and a swimming pool sacred to Europeans, where your journey abruptly ends at

Elephant's Back and the lighthouse flashing over the Indian Ocean. Over all these towers Shumshum.

Restarting from the Prince of Wales' Pier, you take a taxicab and strike to the left through the crescent. Here you first see Aden's coal on the premises of the P. & O. Company. Here are the hotels, the European shops, bank, post, trust offices, and cricket ground. Journeying rapidly on, you pass coal stacks galore along the shore, and driving up an incline through the Hejuf Gate you enter on the plain of Maala. Here is Aden's necropolis.

Hurrying along past the railhead of the Aden-Lahej railway, and the village of Somalipura, you see the dhow-building industry and timber yards, the Maala wharves, and Lodge Felix, where once a year the sweeper caste of African Jabertis are said by Aden folk to hand over for food the person of a succulent Arab child snatched stealthily from its parents. Again, over all, tower



FESTIVE AMUSEMENTS SUCCEED RELIGIOUS CEREMONY

After the procession a fair is held and kept up to a late hour. Numerous booths supply coffee, sweetmeats and toys, but the chief diversion of the elders is dancing, every tribe having its own dancers and a host of spectators. The whirling men gather in annas and rupees with avidity. Theirs is a game, and whatever their fortunes outside the fair, they "make up on the roundabouts"



ARABIAN CHILDREN ENJOYING "ALL THE FUN OF THE FAIR"

As is usual in Arabia on festive occasions, everyone puts on gay and clean apparel; even the smallest children wear little shirts or loin-cloths which, in the morning, at any rate, are of snowy whiteness. Swings are in vogue, and this primitive "Big-Wheel" is the centre of attraction. It revolves speedily or leisurely, according to the fancy of the men who manipulate its crude and creaky mechanism

the peaks of Shumshum, the tutelary deity of the rock. The Maala is truly a sombre locality. An Arab will curse with the fateful words: "May the Jinns snatch thee away to Maala!"

At the end of the plain, one road leads to the right and zigzags up to the main pass and into the Crater, while the left road turns round by the isthmus position and runs out some eight miles to Sheikh Othman, the frontier station. Yet another road leads through the

isthmus and passes through two tunnels to the Crater. Negotiating the zigzag incline, you pass on the right the ever-growing and yet never full Jewish cemetery, till you come to the main pass. From this point you see the beginning of the elaborate fortifications built at enormous cost shortly after Aden's capture in 1839.

Entering the main pass, you see ever-head an inaccessible headland where Cain, the Koranic Kabil, is said to be



TROUPE OF ITINERANT DANCERS PERFORMING TO THE MUSIC OF TOMTOMS IN THE STREETS OF ADEN

The amusements of the Arabs and Somalis are none of a violent character, as might be judged from the nature of the people themselves. Dancing, perhaps, requires the greatest amount of physical exertion. Some Arab women prefer this rough-and-tumble existence on the streets to the monotony of the harem, and the profession is the resort of the abandoned wives of Somalis who, having had their fill of a strange people, forsake them and return to their native country.



SOMALI HOUSEWIFE OF ADEN SMOKING THE WEED THAT SOOTHES

This is her favourite relaxation in the midst of arduous household duties. With the snake-like tube of the hookah in her mouth, she will smoke awhile and forget domestic troubles. Her necklace and bracelets are composed of amber beads, and the base of the hookah is formed from a coconut shell, inlaid with brass, gold, and silver. Beside it is a "coosa," or native unglazed pottery water-flask

buried. The car now dips down into the Crater—the real Aden, where live and move the teeming thousands of the settlement. Here is situate the old winter residence of Captain Haines, the first British ruler of Aden. The old yellow house is tucked up against the hillside, and is now fittingly used as the guest house for Arab chiefs and entourage.

Across the way stands a Hindu temple, one of two in Aden, its existence assured by the incontrovertible fact of the Pax Britannica. From this point a path straggles up the rock, and some 35 minutes later you are gazing from the top of Shumshum, both seawards and towards the imposing heights of Jebel Dubiyat, Warwa, the home of ibex, and Jihaf. The Aden hinterland is a congeries of hills and smiling vales, once visited by British troops as a sanatorium.

The Aden bazaars are a never-failing source of interest. Squalor there may be in parts, but there is life, and life that is full of joy and dependence on Allah—the Arabs' Predominant Partner.

The island of Sirah is now joined to the mainland by a causeway. It was the scene of much fighting long before Haines arrived with his ships. Aden is a volcano—extinct, we cannot say. In the bowels of Sirah is a raging fiery furnace, say the Arabs, which Allah will summon forth on "the day of gathering." Passing through the southern gates of Hokat, one drops down into one of Aden's earliest British cemeteries. Proceeding, we come to the end of the tour by ascending the incline, which brings us to Marshag light-house. In the Crater is the principal mosque of Al Aidrus, and around it the burial ground of Aden's elite. Here one

BRITISH EMPIRE IN ASIA

privileged few may hope for sepulture against the day when "the trump shall be sounded, and lo, they shall speed out of their sepulchres to their Lord!"

Driving back through the two tunnels, redolent of camels, we pass through the isthmus position where once British troops were quartered, now an arsenal and a dairy. We are out on the Sheikh Othman road, and pass rapidly Khor Maksar, where are quarters of the Aden troop, the polo ground, and the Khor Maksar golf club; pass the salt pans, one of Aden's remunerative industries, and after 20 minutes' run, arrive at the village of Sheikh Othman. The place was occupied in July, 1915, by Turks and Arabs, who were driven out on July 21st, 1915.

In Sheikh is the house of one of the assistant residents, who is superintendent of this now thriving centre, which was started in 1881 as a dumping ground for Aden's undesirables. You must not leave Sheikh Othman without inspecting the headquarters and the hospital of the Keith Falconer Mission. The founder lies buried in the Hokat Bay cemetery, but many have followed to take up his work.

The trade of Aden is largely one of trans-shipment. Hides and skins are brought from the interior and from Somaliland. Coffee (so-called mocha) is brought from the ex-Turkish district of Hujariya, from the hills of Menakha, and from the Yafa country within the Aden Protectorate. Ivory hails from Abyssinia. The majority of Aden's



MEMBERS OF THE BODYGUARD OF SULTAN OF LAHEJ

The turban of silk or cotton is rolled jauntily round the head, a white shirt-jacket may or may not be worn, the variegated kilt is kept firmly in place by a coloured waistband, which supports the favourite weapon, the jambiah or jumbia. In a real sense the Sultan is the father of his people, for a large proportion of the men are his sons by his numerous wives, of whom he is credibly reported to have over three hundred.



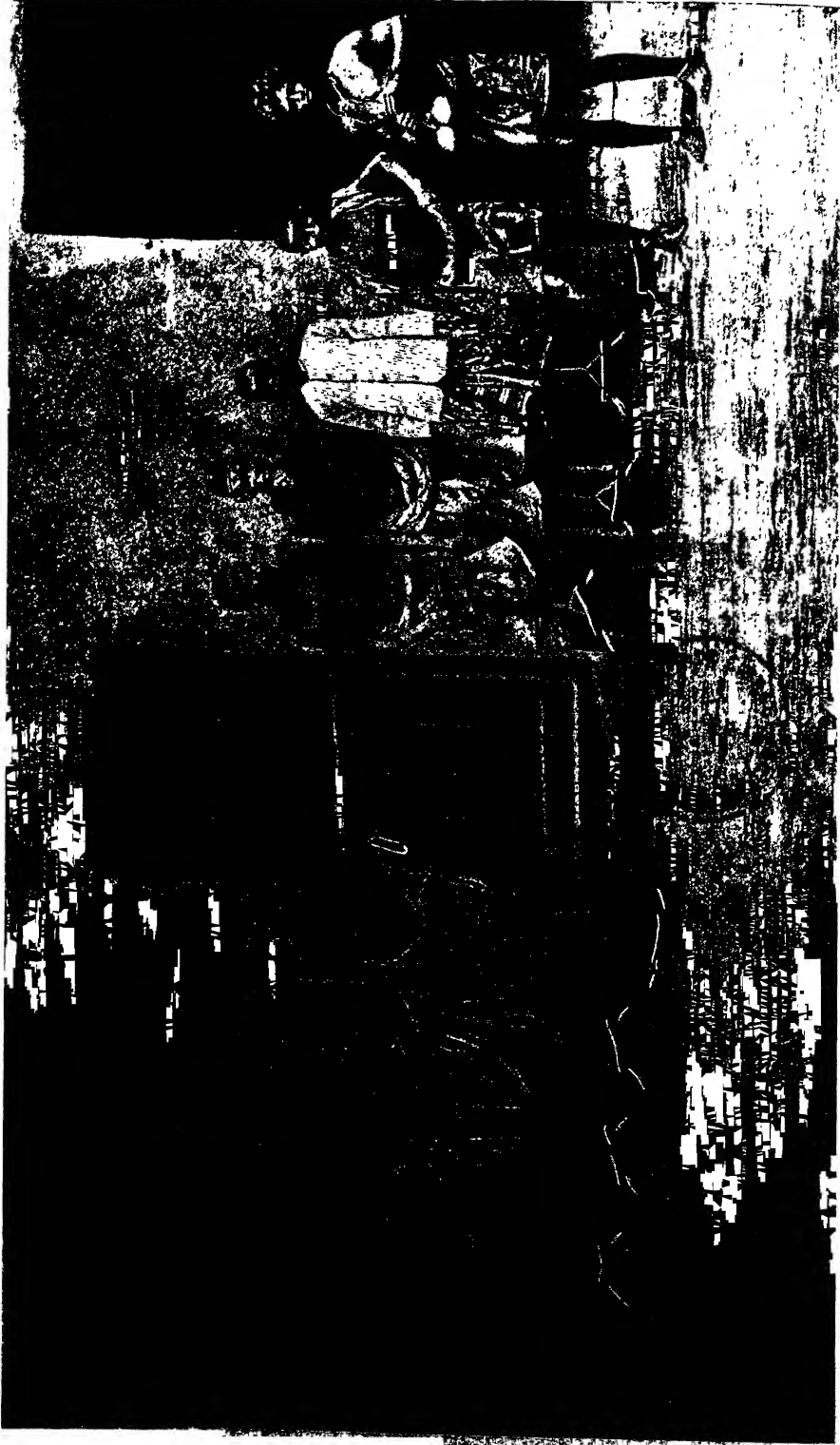
CAMELS LADEN WITH BRUSHWOOD ENTERING TAWAHI BAZAAR

Although Aden is a coaling station, yet for cooking purposes firewood is extensively used and difficult to get in so arid a district. Large quantities are brought from many miles up-country, and consist of either dried branches or logs of babool wood. They are sold by weight or can be bought by "the load," the latter method involving much bargaining and lengthy argument



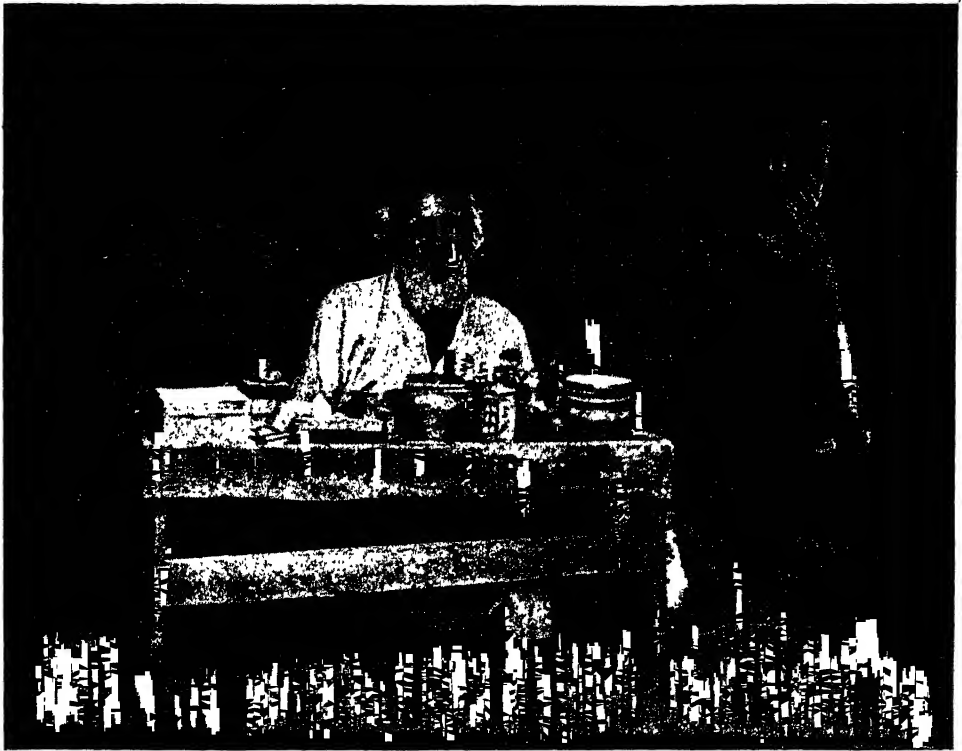
ARAB TREADMILL FOR THRESHING "JOWARI," LOCAL GRAIN OF ADEN

The bullocks are tethered to a central stake, around which the jowari is piled and beaten out by repeated treading of the hoofs. The Arab method of muzzling the bullocks during the threshing, to prevent their eating the grain, is in direct opposition to the Mosaic law, which says "Thou shalt not muzzle the ox when he treadeth out the corn." Three crops of jowari are raised from one sowing, and there are many quaint customs connected with irrigation and culture of grain.



JAIL-BIRDS UNDER LOCK AND KEY IN THE NATIVE PRISON OF LAHEJ

About sixteen miles north of Aden lies the district of Lahej, inhabited by the Abdall tribe. A glimpse into the criminal jail provides a gruesome enough picture. The majority of the prisoners wear iron anklets; those accused of murder must carry in addition heavy iron weights attached to an iron collar. The door in the centre gives access to the condemned cell. The bullet holes in the walls, at the height of a man's head, tell their own story



JEWISH SWEETMEAT SELLER IN LAHEJ BAZAAR

He is a petty trader, and sits outside his mud-clad home uttering intermittently his trade-call to attract attention to his merchandise. He sells scents, honey, and various sweetmeats, and the youth of the neighbourhood know him well, and are ever anxious to pursue their games in his vicinity.

A sweet morsel may come their way gratis, but his Jewish instincts forbid overmuch generosity

Arab labourers come from across the ex-Turkish frontier. They work as carriers of goods at the Maala Wharf and in the coffee and hides warehouses in the Crater. The wealthiest merchants of Aden come from the Hadhramaut. There is a large and growing traffic by dhows up the Red Sea, to both the African and Arabian littorals; away to the Somali ports, and, skirting the Hadhramaut littoral, to Shukra, Bir Ali Balhaf, Makalla, Sur, and Socotra. The salt pans of Khor Maksar employ numerous hands. In the Tawahi, or "Crescent," are Greeks and Hebrews employed in the cigarette industry. Jews also deal in ostrich plumes.

Among the disadvantages of Aden are its isolation since 1907, and the almost complete lack of greenery till you reach Sheikh Othman, while the knowledge that you cannot escape from the ever-present rock palls on you. There is, however, no lack of amusement—polo, cricket, football, hockey, stické,

and "gymkhanas" add a zest to life. The water drunk is sea-water condensed, but this is a blessing in disguise, as tending to minimise the chances of contracting water-borne diseases. Electric light is being tardily introduced, and this, with fans, will convert Aden into a comparative health resort.

There are, however, no good hotels, no public reading-rooms, no libraries. The roads are indifferent, the distances are long, though of recent years taxicabs have multiplied. The coal-dust, blown during the north-east monsoon, renders it difficult to keep the houses clean. On the other hand Aden is near home, and is a port of call for many liners. You see your friends weekly from India, Britain, and Australia, and the harbour is constantly visited by British and foreign warships.

Sixteen miles north of Aden is the straggling and ill-kempt town of Lahej. From an ancestor of these Sultans, or the Abdali tribesmen Aden was captured,



PIPERS OF LAHEJ EXECUTING A SERENADE

The glorified "penny-whistle" on the right can produce only three notes, and the holes are barely within reach. But the player would be perfectly happy to keep up the performance for several hours, unless forcibly stopped

in 1839. They are our best friends. By reason of proximity to Aden, the people are more "civilized" than others. Lahej is termed the "Gate of Aden," and for many years the influence of this house of "Al Mohsin" has furthered our more intimate acquaintance with the tribes within. Lahej is well watered by canals from the River Tiban, and the fertility of the soil ensures good gardens, healthy crops, vegetables, and fruits. Lahej, with attention, might become the garden of Aden. The palaces of royalty stand out in contrast with

the generally dilapidated appearance of the smaller houses of sun baked mud. Mosquitoes and sand-flies abound. The tribesmen are less warlike than others and the Pax Britannica gives them free scope to engage in husbandry and the breeding of camels. Other Arabs mockingly term them "eaters of sprats," for, unlike the ordinary inland Arab, they are fond of sun-dried fish, brought on camel-back from Aden. Many of the tribesmen ply camels to bring in daily supplies to the Aden market. The country, usually quiet, is at times raided by the surrounding and turbulent Subehi tribesmen, who own no allegiance, and live by petty pilfering on the trade routes.

British connexion with the island of Socotra, 500 miles from Aden, dates from 1834. It is under the ken of the Resident of Aden, and its ruler comes from Kishn, on the opposite Arabian littoral. The modern capital is Tamarida, on the northern side. The name was probably given

by Portuguese mariners. The Socotrans call it Hadibo. The old capital Shik still exists in ruins two miles to the east. The mountain range of Hajir will repay a visit. The old-world export trade of the dragon's blood tree and of aloes is well-nigh extinct.

The coast folk live by fishing, while the mountaineers are herdsmen. The two races are distinct. The dialect is akin to old Mahri, and is Himyaritic in origin. Tradition says that Alexander the Great planted a Greek colony here, and the women of the eastern heights

BRITISH EMPIRE IN ASIA

are said to be so beautiful that one cannot look on them. On this Eastern point many a ship has been wrecked in the south-west monsoon.

Kalansia lies to the west of the island, a small village with a group of mosques. Traces of Christian worship are found in Socotra. Till quite recently trade by barter prevailed, and money was discounted. Hadibo is very enchanting, with its lagoon and palm-groves, cleanly village, and bubbling cascades from the hills. The people are docile and shy. The hill folk are fair complexioned. Socotra is famous for a breed of donkey and for milch cows.

About 750 miles to the north-east of Aden, to which it is attached politically,

lies the group of the five Kuria Muria Islands ceded to Britain by the Sultan of Muskat for the purpose of landing the Red Sea cable. Mention may also here be made conveniently of the group of Bahrein Islands in the Persian Gulf, lying twenty miles off the east coast of El Hasa; Arabia, and ruled by a native sheikh under British protection.

Of these, Bahrein, Sitra, Nabi Saleh, and Jezeyra contain a population of about 100,000 Persians and Arabs, chiefly engaged in the pearl fishery. The islands contain an immense number of burial mounds, with masonry sepulchres in which relics pointing to a probably Phœnician origin have been found.



ONE OF THE MAIN STREETS OF LAHEJ IN THE ADEN PROTECTORATE

No attention is paid to architectural style in the construction of the houses, which consist merely of four walls and a roof, and are built either of mud-bricks or wattle plastered over with mud. One crack is sufficient to render a house unpleasantly leaky in the rainy season. The spouts protruding from the walls are to deal with the various systems of domestic drainage

Photographs of Aden and Lahej are by J. L. Dixon



OFF TO THE WEDDING: A DAYAK CHIEF ESCORTING HIS DAUGHTER TO HER NUPTIALS IN HIS WAR CANOE
Dayak war boats are about ninety feet long and are dug out of the trunk of a single tree. Planks, or gunwales, are lashed on the sides, and the seams are caulked to make the boat water-tight. Drawing very little water and very easily handled, these boats are propelled at considerable speed by paddles about five feet in length and are carried by a hundred men. A large war boat carries about a hundred men.

British Empire in Asia

II. The Jungle Folk of British Borneo

By Charles Hose, D.Sc.

Author of "The Pagan Tribes of Borneo"

With fifty-one photographs by the Author

THE prevalent idea of Borneo is that it is still a land of "wild men"—the head-hunting Dayaks—a country undesirable as a residence and incapable of development. It is necessary, therefore, in a short account of the British part of the island and its peoples, based upon close observation and study during many years' sojourn in this most interesting and attractive country, to say a few words to dispel that erroneous impression.

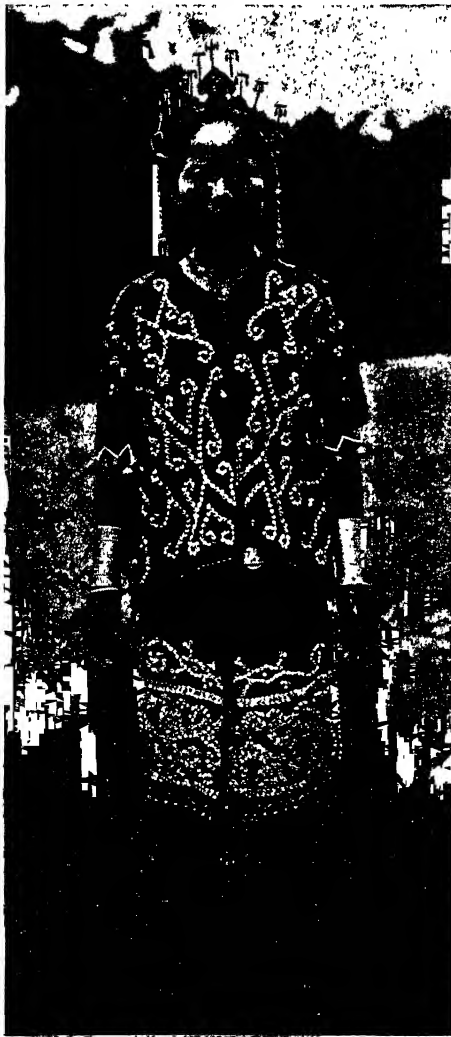
The whole country is a storehouse of Nature's treasures; the people, more or less "white folk," are well-formed and intelligent, and while they go about untrammelled by superfluous garments, show proper and due regard to modesty, and, withal, the garments are in themselves picturesque. Borneo has until recent years been comparatively neglected by the pioneers of industry and enterprise.

The wise rule of Britain in Brunei,

British North Borneo, and that of the independent State of Sarawak, with its British Raja, have made it a desirable place for commercial development, while the rights and well-being of the natives have been protected and fostered, securing to the inhabitants the maximum advantage of civilization with few of its disadvantages.

Borneo is the third largest island in the world. Its area is roughly 290,000 square miles, or about five times that of England and Wales. Its greatest length is 850 miles, and its greatest breadth about 600 miles. Crossed by the Equator near its centre, it is situated in the East Indian Archipelago, bounded on the north and west by the South China Sea, on the south by the Java Sea, and on the east by the Strait of Macassar and Celebes Sea.

The island is mountainous, and there is a central group of mountains from which other ranges radiate. Although

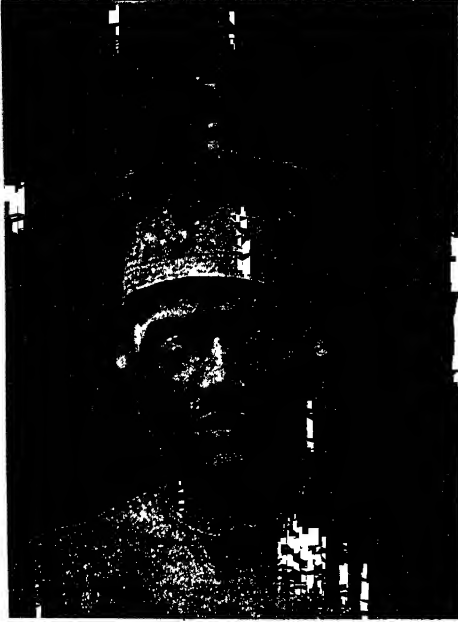


PRETTY SHELL EMBROIDERY

Sea Dayak women show great skill and taste in the designs which they trace in shells upon their short cotton skirts and long-bodied sleeved jackets

BRITISH EMPIRE IN ASIA

surrounded on all sides by islands of volcanic origin, Borneo differs from them in presenting but small traces of volcanic activity, which may account for the fact that Borneo is comparatively less fertile than the surrounding islands. But the northern portion is distinguished by isolated groups, of which the highest



KLEMANTAN OF BARAM DISTRICT

Fine, well-built people of high intelligence and sociable disposition, the Klemantans are skilful in handicrafts, most dexterous boatmen, and devoted to hunting

peak is Mount Kinabalu in British North Borneo, 13,593 feet. The northern coast lends itself more than any other part of the island to good and natural harbourage; the whole country is well watered by many navigable rivers of considerable size.

The small State of Brunei with its pile-built town of the same name is the old Malay capital of Borneo. It has a population of about 20,000, consisting chiefly of a few Klemantar tribes, known as Ibanas, Orang Bumis, Bisayas, and Malays. The Brunei people are

The capital of Borneo is large and the country is rich in natural resources. It is a land of many wonders, and is home to many of the most valuable animals of the tropics, including elephants, tigers, rhinoceroses,

wild cattle, deer, pig, bears, otters, cats, porcupines, squirrels, bats, rats, tree shrews, and the toothless scaly anteater. In British North Borneo herds of a small species of elephant are occasionally met with. The crocodile infests every river, and various species of tortoise, turtle, lizard, frog, and snake abound. Fish are very plentiful, and the whole forest teems with bird and insect life.

The land adjoining the coast consists of a low-lying swampy belt of the alluvium brought down by the rivers from the central highlands. Between the swampy coast belt and the mountains a zone of very irregular hill country intervenes, with an average height above the sea-level of about 1,000 feet. The climate is warm, moist, and very



PURE-BRED KENYAH OF BORNEO

This is Tama Bulan Wang, the Kenyah Penghulu of the Baram district, a man of real greatness as a leader of his people

equable. The whole country is heavily timbered, with many valuable trees of both hard and soft wood, suitable for any purpose. There is a wealth of ferns, beautiful orchids, and numerous curious plants.

The scenery is magnificent, and in every direction may be seen panoramas of the most luxuriant vegetation. At



BORNEO : YOUNG IBAN GRACE IN FESTAL ARRAY

Scarlet and gold, ivory and shell, silver and brass are employed with consummate artistry in the gala dress of the Sea Dayaks or Ibans. The costume well displays the beautiful lines of their figures

To face page 802

Photograph by Dr. Charles Hose



Sea Dayaks tattoo stars and rosettes on the breast and shoulders, and wear rings in the lobes and studs in the shells of their ears, and a hook design on the throat



Instead of wearing ear-rings, Orang Bukit (Klemantan) women drive a wooden plug through the lobes of their ears and cap it with a boss of silver filigree



Ukits of the Rejang tattoo extensively. A bold hook pattern covers the chest, and a pattern known as the lizard adorns the sides of the shoulders. They wear brass earrings



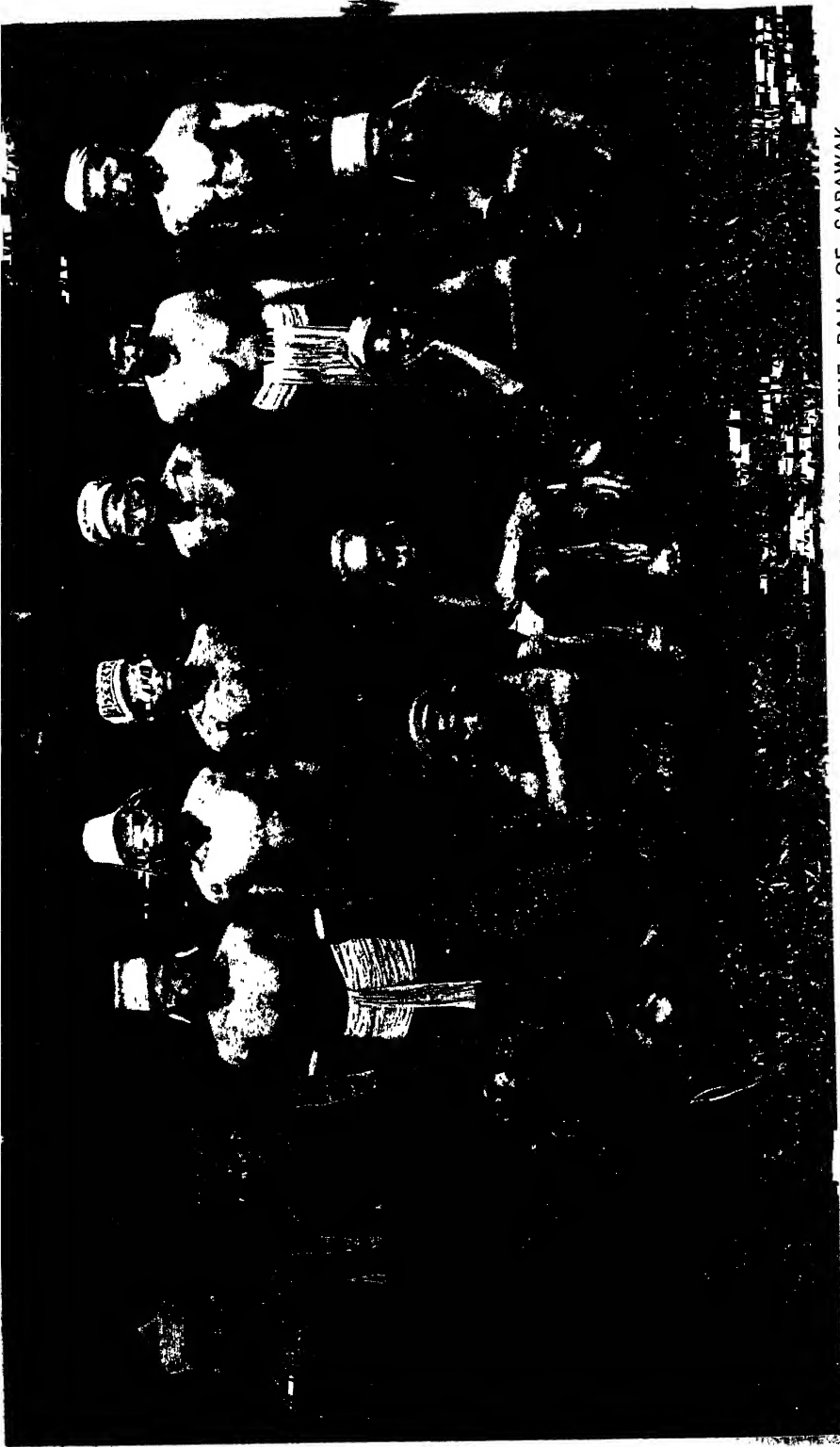
Every Kayan perforates the shell of his ears, and after he has been on the warpath and taken heads with his own hands, he thrusts through each the upper canine tooth of a tiger ear

EAR ORNAMENTS AND TATTOO MARKS OF PAGAN TRIBES OF BORNEO



PARLEMENTAIRES WHOSE PACIFIC INTENT IS BELIED BY THEIR FEROCIOUS DEMEANOUR

When a tribe wishes to renew friendly relations with another its chief, attended by an armed bodyguard, presents himself before the erstwhile hostile village, and the visiting party is admitted into the house, the affairs are suitably arranged. If affairs are suitably arranged, the chief and his five chiefs begin negotiations.



CHILDREN OF MOUNTAIN AND FOREST WHO ACKNOWLEDGE THE RULE OF THE RAJA OF SARAWAK
The interior tribes of Sarawak, such as Kayas, Klemantans, Kenyahs, and Punans, are represented in this group, the exceptions being the Dayaks, who are represented by the Dayak in the foreground. The picture shows the uniformity of male attire among the pagan tribes, the essential universal article being the waistcloth of cotton, or, in the remoter regions, of bark cloth. The tribes are chiefly differentiated by tattoo marks and ear ornaments



MEN WHO LIVE AS MANKIND LIVED TEN THOUSAND YEARS AGO

Punans, people of Malayan blood, live in the jungle-covered lands of Central Borneo. Well-built and vigorous, but shy and inoffensive, they are ignorant of agriculture, and move about in groups of twenty to thirty persons from one temporary shelter to another, finding their subsistence in the forest, and bartering its produce with other tribes for tobacco and salt

the higher altitudes the dense undergrowth gives way to an extraordinary and rank growth of moss which covers every form of vegetation. So rapid is plant growth that artificially cleared spaces are again overgrown within a few months. The network of rivers and their tributaries affords valuable means of transport throughout the country.

The native population of Borneo, which numbers about 3,000,000—if Chinese, Indian, and other immigrants are excluded—falls naturally into two

great classes: those who have accepted the Mahomedan religion and civilization, and pagans. With the exception of the Malays of the coastal regions, all the natives live under tribal organization. Some writers class these tribes together indiscriminately under the name Dyak, or Dayak, though many groups may be clearly distinguished by differences of culture, belief, custom, and physical and mental peculiarities.

The chief groups are: (1) Sea Dayaks, also known as Ibans; (2) Kayans;



DAYAK YOUTHS ENGROSSED IN A COCKING-MAIN

Cock-fighting, a popular pastime in all Eastern countries from time immemorial, is a favourite amusement of the Dayaks, and is an almost indispensable part of every social and religious feast. The birds, carefully bred and trained, are heeled with sharp steel spurs, and fight savagely



AT GRIPS: HOW KAYAN WRESTLERS TAKE THE HOLD

Wrestling is the most popular sport with the older boys and men of the Kayan tribe, and is regarded as training for the chase and war. Each grips his antagonist's waistcloth at its lower edge behind, and strives to lay him on his back



TRADITIONAL ENEMIES ASSEMBLED IN PEACE CONFERENCE AT CLAUDETOWN

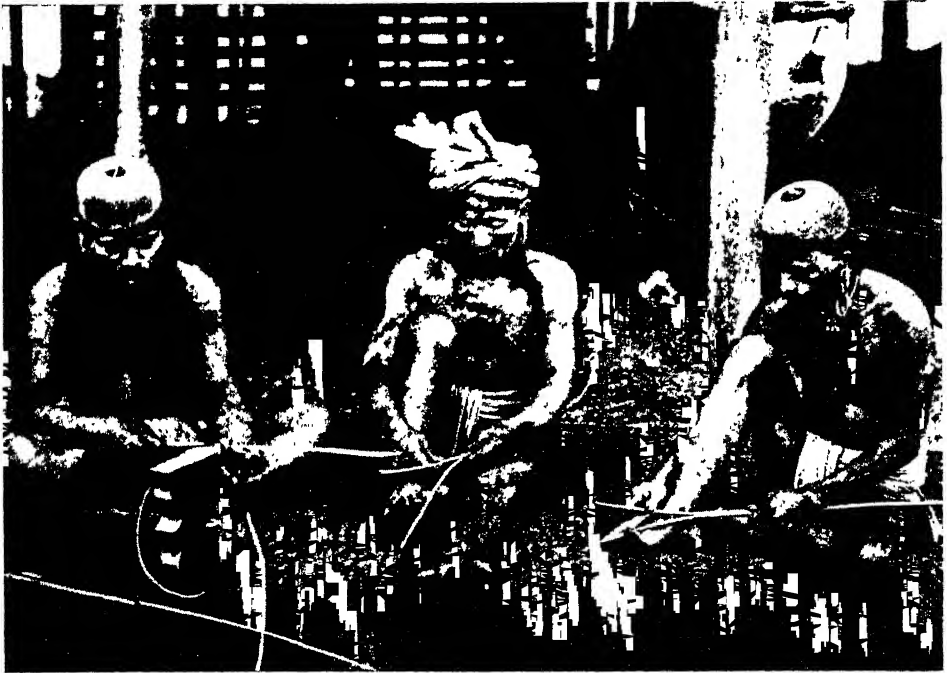
To put an end to the continuous warfare between the tribes of East and West Borneo, Dr. Charles Hose, in 1898, arranged a general peace-meeting at Claudetown, at which some twenty thousand natives were present. The assembly met in a great hall built for the occasion, and roared with palm mats. After much speech-making, toasting, and singing, mutual amity was sworn and has endured ever since.

BRITISH EMPIRE IN ASIA

interesting. The Punan's dwelling is a mere shelter of sticks and leaves, built in the dense forest wherever he can obtain the necessary supply of food from jungle fruits and whatever he can secure by hunting.

The Sea Dayak woman wears garments of homespun cotton thread woven in patterns of several colours, and an extraordinary corset consisting of many brass rings on rattan canes,

some forty or fifty families and even more, with a gallery the whole length of the house; in fact, it constitutes a village. The house is built parallel to the course of the river. The members of a village are bound together, not merely by the common bonds of kinship and allegiance to one chief, but also by more subtle ties, of which the most important is their sharing in the protection and warning afforded to the



KAYANS SPLITTING RATTANS FOR HOUSES MATS, AND WEAPONS

Of all the jungle plants of Borneo the rattan and bamboo are the most valuable to the natives, who employ them in more than half their crafts, and make of them most of their more important material possessions—houses, mats and caps, weapons (offensive and defensive), and implements

built up one above another to enclose the body from the thigh to the breasts. This is worn almost continuously, and rarely removed.

The principal garment of the women of all the other peoples is a skirt of cotton cloth. When working in the fields or travelling in boats, both men and women wear a long-sleeved jacket of white cotton, with a large mushroom-shaped hat, which serves chiefly as a protection against the rays of the sun.

All the tribes, except the Punans and Ukits, build houses of a special type; each house is built to accommodate

whole house by the omen-birds, or by the higher powers served by these.

All the peoples of Borneo, the Punans excepted, cultivate rice, which is the principal food stuff, and forms the bulk of every meal.

Before the preparation of the land can be begun, it is necessary to compute the time of the year, and to secure good omens, which is effected by an instrument resembling the Greek gnomon. During the growth of the rice various charms and superstitious practices are brought into use to promote its growth and keep away the pests. The



DAYAK BELLE ENCASED IN BRASS AND SILVER
She wears a comb of silver filigree and tinsel, silver-gilt bells for ear-rings and necklets, and silver bracelets. Her corset is made of rattan hoops, completely covered with brass rings and decorated with silver coins and filigree

preparation of the land consists in the felling of the timber, clearing the undergrowth, and in burning it later as completely as possible, so that the ashes enrich the soil. The fallen timber lies some weeks to dry. Choosing a windy day they set fire to it, and as soon as the ashes are cool seed sowing begins. Men and women work together; the men go in front making shallow holes with wooden dibbles, the women follow dropping in the rice seed. The harvest is ripe in some fourteen

to twenty weeks after sowing, and harvesting is the most important event of the year in which all take part. When the whole crop has been gathered, it is transported amid much rejoicing and merry-making to the rice barns adjoining the house, and the harvest festival, which is in fact the annual carnival, begins.

The festival starts with the preparation of the seed grain for the following season. Sufficient of the best of the new grain is carefully selected by the women of each room for the sowing of the next season. This is mixed with a small quantity of the grain of the foregoing seasons, which has been carefully preserved for this purpose.

While mixing the old with the new grain, the women call on the soul of the rice to cause the seed to be fruitful and to grow vigorously, and to favour their own fertility, for the whole festival is a celebration or cult of the principle of fertility and vitality of the woman no less than that of the rice grain.

These preparations having been completed, there begins a scene of boisterous fun. The women make pads of the boiled sticky new rice, and cover it with soot from their cooking vessels. With these they approach the men, and dab the pads upon their faces and bodies, leaving sooty marks that are not easily removed. The men thus challenged give chase, and attempt to get possession of the rice pads and to return the compliment.

The daily life of all the peoples of Borneo who live in the long houses that



Cheerfulness and shy timidity characterise these Lisum women of Central Borneo. The bangles they are wearing are made of real ivory



A ring-fenced garden of girls in the flower of youth. They are Sea Dayaks from the Rejang district of Sarawak, and immensely proud of their rattan corsets gleaming with brass rings and filigree adornments



Next, standing on a platform, he bores it by vertical blows with an iron rod, a mate ladling water into the hole to float out the chips



Slight curvature is given to the pipe so that only a half-circle of light is visible on sighting through the bore, which is next polished



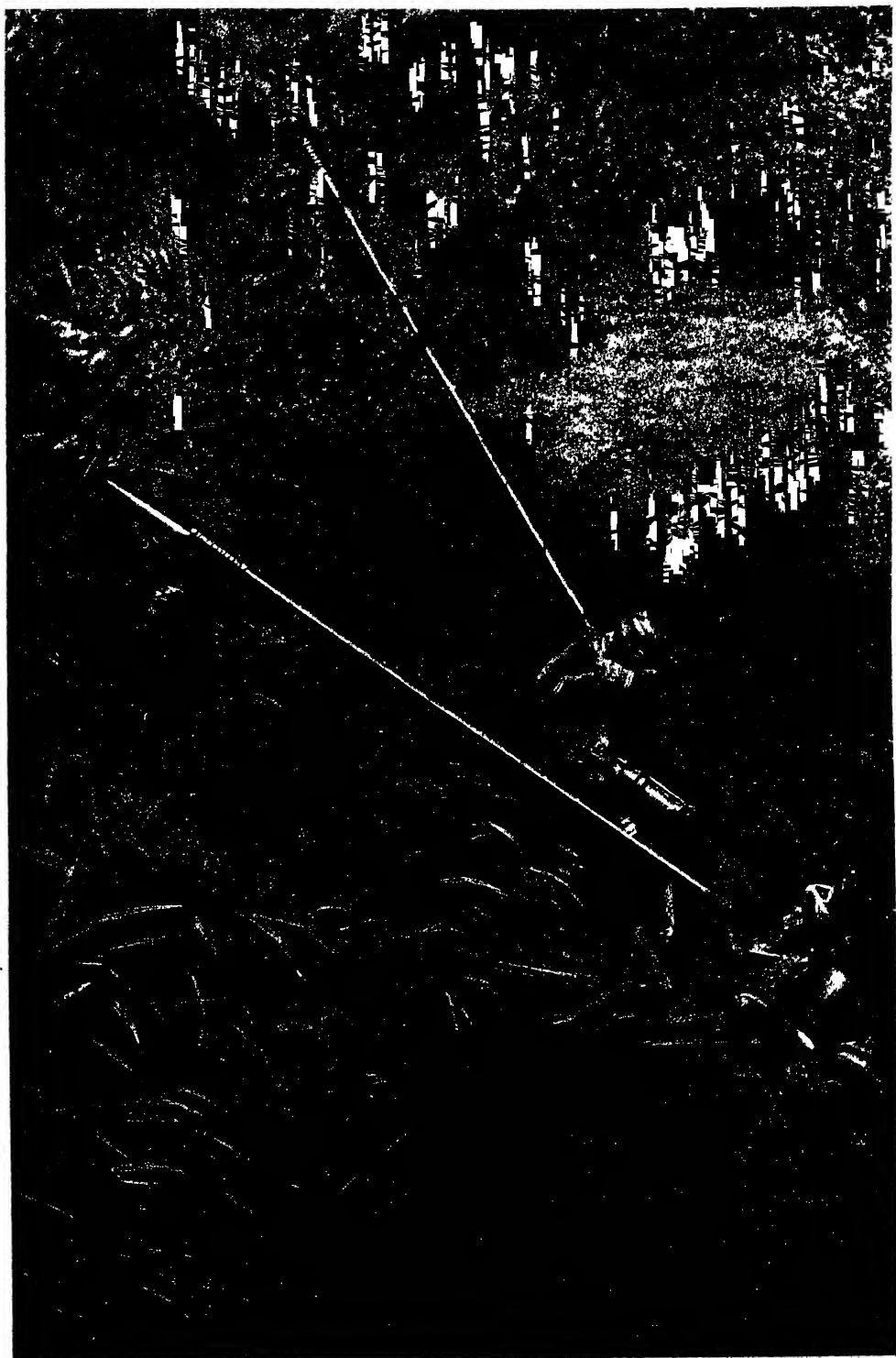
On to the shaft of a dart nine inches long he then fits a tapering cylinder of tough pith, the butt end of which exactly fills the bore



Poison for the dart is furnished by the ipoh tree. The native incises the bark and collects the milky sap that exudes in a bamboo cup



When a tree is cut, the sap becomes a thick, dark paste. This is
collected with a spade and then applied to the tip of the dart



Accurate, light, and noiseless, the blowpipe is particularly effective in dense jungle. Here are two Kenyah crack shots out after monkeys



Home from the kill. Obviously well pleased with himself, a Kenyah hunter brings home a young porker just shot with his blowpipe

are the usual means of communication between the villages, which cannot be reached by river. Where a route crosses a swamp, large trees are felled in such a way that they lie as nearly as possible end to end. In this way a rude, slippery viaduct is formed on which an agile and bare-footed native can walk in safety across swamps miles in extent.

The natural products of Borneo are very varied, and many of them occur in profusion. Large numbers of fish are caught and form an important part of the diet of the peoples. The Kenyahs fish with an ingenious hook made with a rattan thorn. Varieties of gutta-percha are obtained in the forest from trees of more than a score of species. Camphor is formed in the crevices of the stems of trees of the genus *Dryobalanops*. The tree is cut down, the stem split up, and the crystals shaken out. Wild sago is abundant, and is much used for food by Punans, and occasionally by the other peoples when their supply of rice is short. Edible nests of a species of swift, which builds in caves, are collected by the natives and sold to the Chinese in considerable quantities.

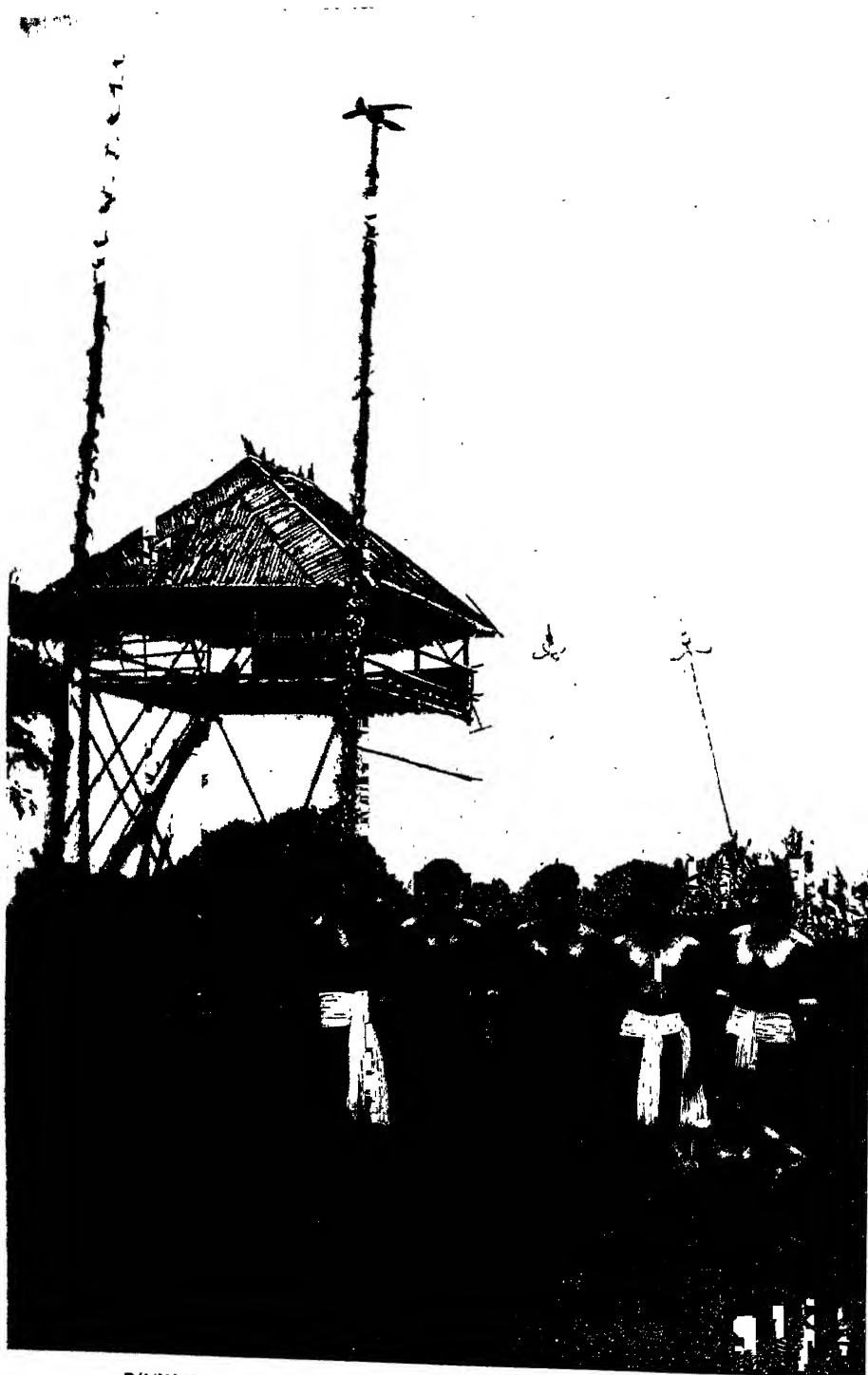
Warfare was in the old days almost the principal industry of the natives, but under the control and civilizing influences of the West, the avenging of injuries and the necessity for possessing heads for use in the funeral rites are now the principal



PROUD OF HIS ESCUTCHEON

Kenyah shields generally bear in front conventional designs of the human face picked out in red and black. They are often adorned and framed with tufts of human hair taken from the heads of slain enemies

grounds of warfare. An old dried head, however, will serve all the purposes of the rites that terminate a period of tribal or village mourning, and peace has reigned for more than fifteen years



DIVINATION FROM THE FLIGHT OF BIRDS IN BORNEO

Omen birds occupy a special place in the Pagan religion of Borneo. The carrion hawk is consulted before the sowing and the harvesting of the rice crop. An image of it surmounts a pole at the corner of a raised open building, whence watchers view the hawks as they come within the area of sky marked off for each observer.



WOE TO THE VANQUISHED! THE VICTORS' DANCE OF TRIUMPH

This Kayan woman is dancing with a recently-taken enemy's head. The hair has been removed to adorn the shield and sword-handle of the warrior who killed the man, and now stands proudly before his rejoicing mate. It is customary for the victorious warriors to spend the first night after their return encamped before the house, when the women dance with the freshly-captured heads, and the whole village rejoices

between the tribes of Sarawak and Dutch Borneo. When it is undertaken, war is generally carried out very deliberately after much preparation and in large, well-organized parties.

The weapons of war are the sword and the spear. Some of the tribes are expert

in the use of the blow-pipe and poisoned darts. This blow-pipe is a truly astonishing achievement of purely manual skill. With merely a knife and an axe, the native fashions a tube seven feet long with an external diameter of one inch, tapering to three-quarters of an inch

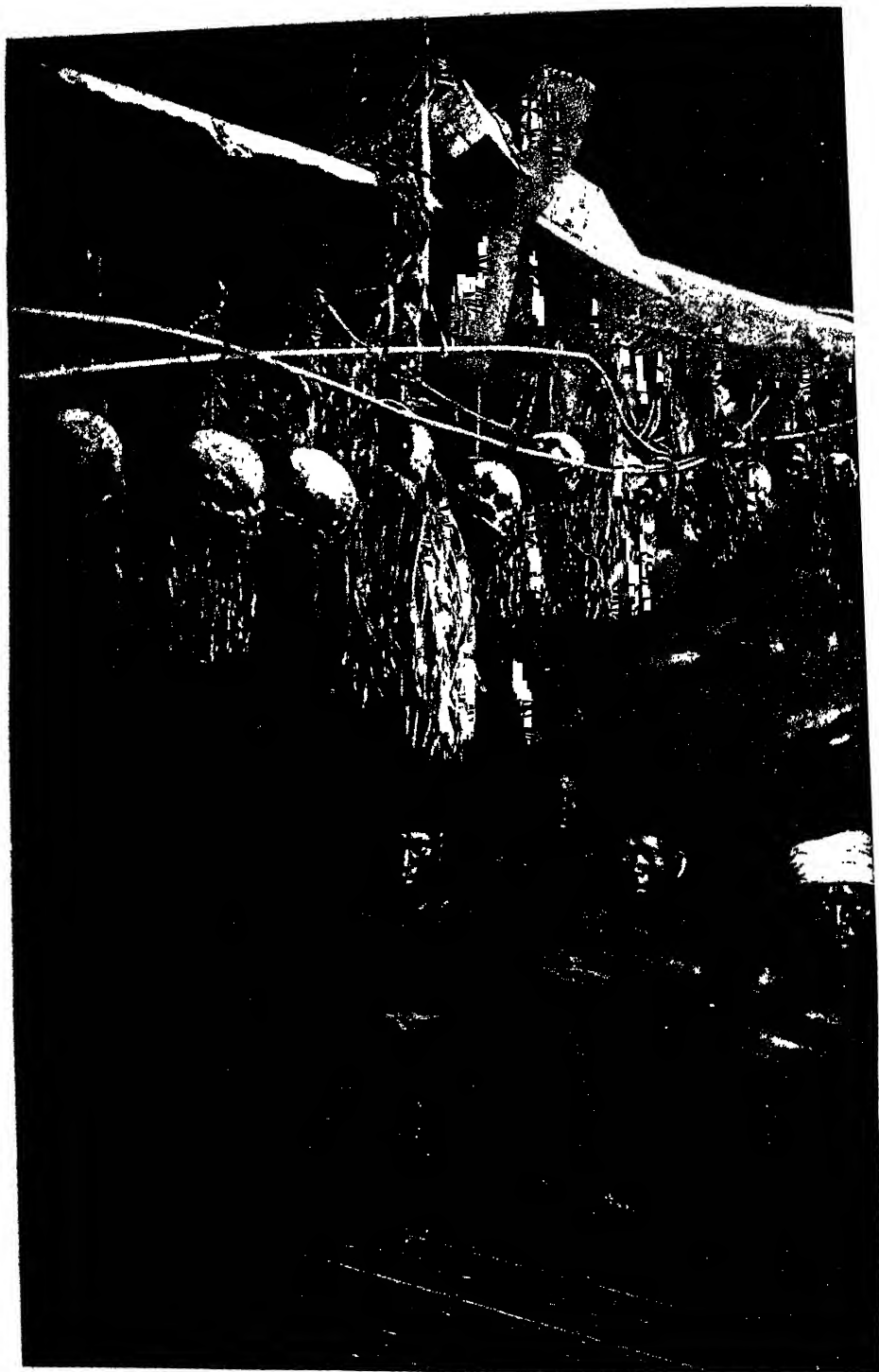


VERANDA, COMMON-ROOM, AND VILLAGE STREET IN ONE: THE GALLERY OF A KAYAN LONG HOUSE

Kayan houses are marvels of carpentering skill. Some are as much as four hundred yards in length, accommodating a hundred and twenty families, and constituting in effect a fortified village. A roofed gallery running the whole length is virtually the village street as well as the common sitting-room, from which doors on one side lead into spacious rooms that are each the private apartment of one family



INTERIOR OF A FAMILY APARTMENT IN A KLEMANTAN NATIVE LONG HOUSE
It serves as bed-room, dining-room, and kitchen. The fireplace is of clay, boarded round and set against the wall of the gallery, and is furnished with a few stones, baskets, cloths, and utensils of all kinds on which the pots are set for cooking. The family eat their meals squatting on the floor, and at night sleep on it on mats. Baskets, cloths, and utensils of all kinds are hung round the walls and from the rafters



GHASTLY WAR TROPHIES IN THE GALLERY OF A KAYAN LONG HOUSE

Heads of enemies killed in battle are hung by the Kayans in a single row from the lower edge of a long beam over the principal hearth. The brains having been removed, the head is dried over a fire and suspended by a rattan passed through a hole pierced in the vertex. The trophies are adorned with bunches of palm leaves

BRITISH EMPIRE IN ASIA

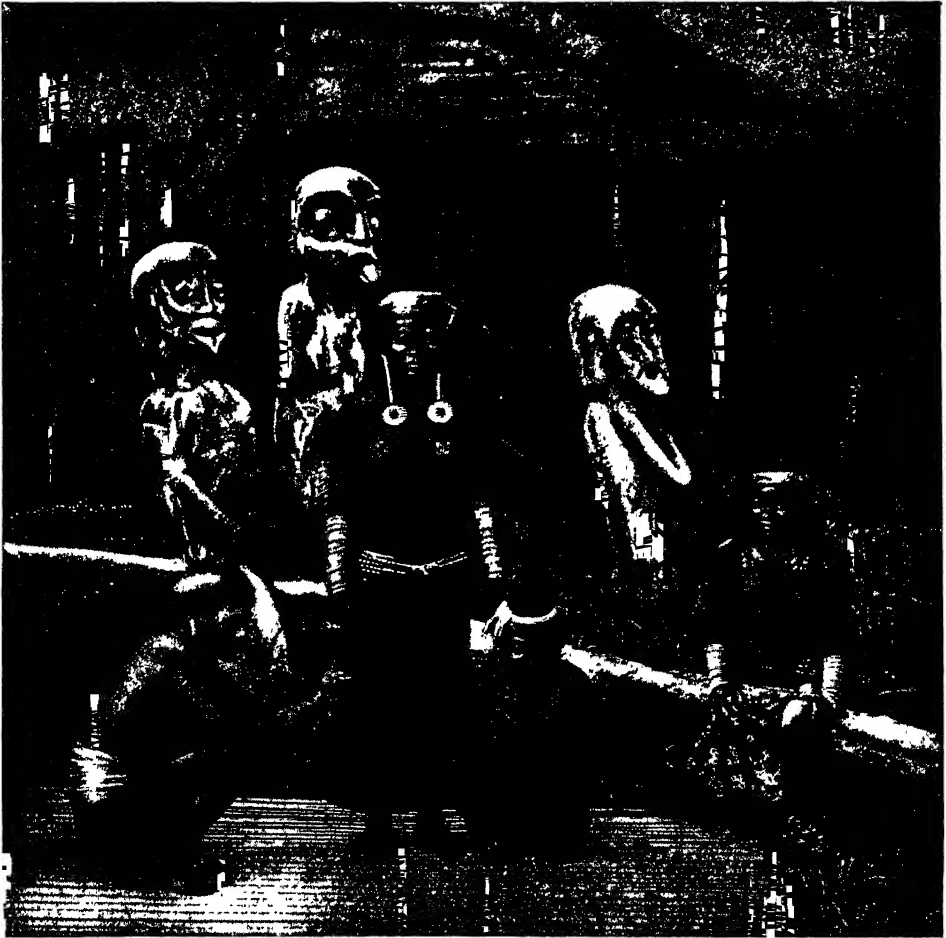
at the muzzle, and with merely an iron chisel he drives through this a perfectly true bore one-third of an inch in diameter. The weapon has a range of about seventy yards and the accuracy of a rifle. A short spear is lashed bayonet-wise to the end to provide a defensive weapon. Wooden shields are used by almost all the tribes.

Before attacking, favourable omens must be obtained, and men are told off for this work. When, in the early morning, the attacking party has quietly surrounded a village, bundles of dry wood shavings are ignited under the houses among the boats and timbers. Then ensues a scene of wild confusion.

The calm stillness of the tropical dawn is broken by the deep war-chorus of the attacking party, the crackling of the fires, and by the shouts and screams of the people of the house suddenly roused from sleep.

A war-party, returning home in its boats, makes no secret of its success. As the villagers come out to gaze at the passing boats those who have taken heads stand up while the others paddle the boat. The heads, slightly dried by smoke, are placed in the stern of the boat.

One plausible view of the origin of head-taking is that it arose out of the custom of slaying slaves on the death of a chief, in order that they might



PREVENTIVE MEASURES IN BORNEO AGAINST EPIDEMIC DISEASE

One of the minor deities recognized by the Kenyahs affords protection against sickness and attack. Images of him, not precisely idols, are placed at the principal landing-place in front of a village to ward off infection should an epidemic break out elsewhere in the district

BRITISH EMPIRE IN ASIA

accompany and serve him on his journey to the other world. The natives believe themselves to be surrounded by many intelligent powers capable of influencing their welfare for good or ill. Guidance is sought from the behaviour of the omen-birds and in the entrails of the slaughtered pigs and fowls, in regard to the wishes of the gods.

In a case of severe illness of mysterious origin that seems to threaten to end fatally, the theory generally accepted is that the patient's soul has left the body, and the treatment indicated is therefore an attempt to persuade the soul to return.

The professional soul-catcher is generally a person who has served a considerable period of apprenticeship, after having been admonished to take up this calling in a dream often experienced during sickness. He gives directions to be followed by the patient, especially in regard to articles of diet, and retires, leaving his fee to be sent after him, the

amount of which is left to the generosity of the patient.

Before the native house stand upright two or more great boles of timber; the upper end of each of them is carved into a rude face and crowned with a brass gong. When the gods are addressed, the ceremony usually takes place before one of these posts. A tall young tree, stripped of all but the topmost twigs, stands beside one of them, and is supposed to reach to heaven, or at least, by its greater proximity to the regions above, to facilitate intercourse therewith.

Whenever it becomes specially interesting or important to ascertain the future course of events—for example, when a village proposes to make war, or when two parties are about to go through a peace-making ceremony—a pig is caught, tied by the feet, and brought before the chief in the gallery of the house, who, speaking through the medium of the pig, consults the gods. The ceremony is prefaced by a prayer,



AUGURS OF BORNEO CONSULTING THE AUSPICES

Before embarking upon any public expedition the Kenyahs always consult the white-headed carrion hawk. Building a shelter of sticks and leaves on the river-bank, three men of the upper class watch the hawks, three of which must fly in a particular course to be propitious. Fowls and a pig are then sacrificed to the chief god, and all is well.



CHARGING A PIG WITH A MESSAGE TO THE GODS

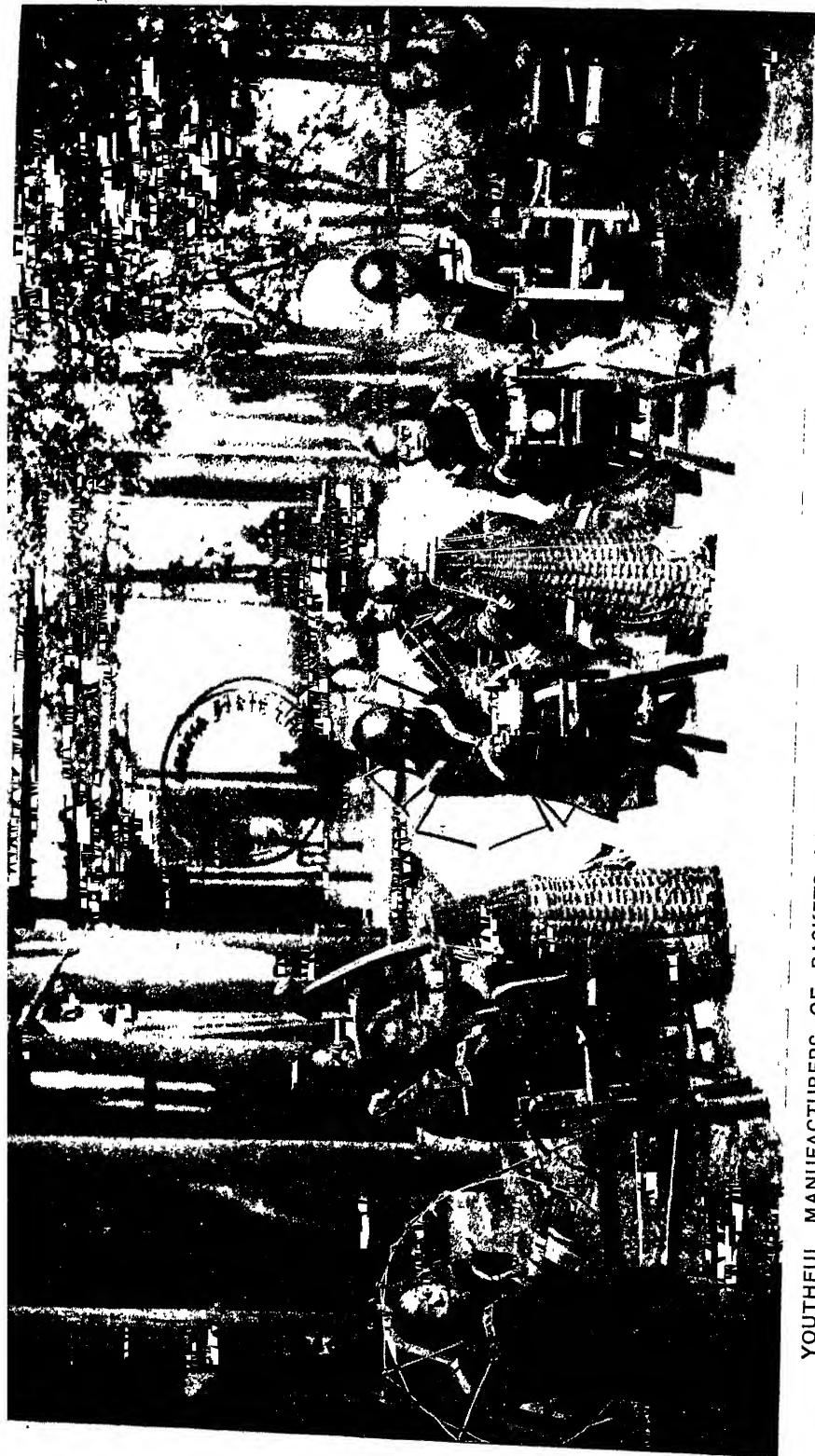
Whenever Kayans and Kenyahs kill a domestic pig they make it an opportunity for both prayer and divination. The live pig, bound, is prodded with a smouldering torch by the chief, who utters a prayer, which the soul of the pig, when released by a spear-thrust, shall carry to the god. Answer to the prayer is then found in the liver of the dead animal

when a fire is lighted, the belief being that the smoke is a vehicle of communication between man and the gods.

The pig is then slain, and the answer is obtained from the appearance of the liver. The omens thus obtained are held to be the answer vouchsafed by the god to the prayers which have been carried to him by the spirit of the pig. These rites afford an extremely interesting parallel with similar ceremonies practised by Greek, Roman, and other early Western peoples.

Natural death is recognized by the people of Borneo as inevitable in old age, and disease is vaguely conceived as the effect of natural causes. Cholera and smallpox have ravaged large areas of Borneo from time to time. The people

recognize that both these diseases spread up river from village to village, and to prevent intercourse with all villages lower down river the people of a tributary stream will fell trees across its mouth or lower reaches so as to block it completely, or will stretch a rope from bank to bank as a sign that no one may enter. Such a sign is generally respected by inhabitants of other parts of the river-basin, and ought to be strictly respected by all travellers. Disregard of this warning by European explorers, ignorant, no doubt, of its intention, has been the cause of many a hostile reception, and has led to bloodshed which might have been wholly avoided if the explorers had been equipped with some general knowledge of the principles of conduct of savage peoples.



YOUTHFUL MANUFACTURERS OF BASKETS INTENT ON THE PROMOTION OF THEIR TRADE IN HONGKONG

They have small hands, in very truth, but singularly nimble fingers, which have been carefully trained in one of the most universal of arts, and one that ranks among the most ancient of industries. Twigs, rushes, and other flexible material they can interweave into many useful and ornamental designs; they excel in wicker-work, and, with splits from various species of bamboo, baskets of unequalled beauty are fashioned by some of these small representatives of the Celestial Empire

British Empire in Asia

III. Hongkong: An Eastern Link of Empire

By H. B. Morse, LL.D.

Late of The Imperial Chinese Customs Service

ON the Kowloon territory of the colony of Hongkong is to be seen an inscription on the rock over a cave which is declared to record the otherwise unknown fact that the last of the Sung emperors, A.D. 1278, there found a refuge from the soldiers of Kublai Khan. If this is anything more than popular tradition, it is the only historical record of Hongkong until August, 1839, when the English community of Canton, driven from Macao by the truculence of Commissioner Lin Tsesü, found shelter there. Until that date no pen had had occasion to write of the place; and since then the meaning of the name has been in dispute. That most in favour has been *Fragrant Streams*, derived from the excellent quality of the water available for watering ships; but that in Cantonese is *Höngkūn*. In an official document the Chinese name is first found in the treaties of Nanking, 1842, and of the Bogue, 1843; the characters used therein are in Cantonese *Höngkong*, which may be rendered *Fair Haven*.

A Topaz Changed to Emerald

The island is a "precious stone set in the silver sea." Its glowing yellow topaz has, by the energy of three generations of British administrators and merchants, been transformed into emerald green; its hills once covered by grass, burnt yellow by the torrid sun, are now mantled with great forests, planted by successive superintendents of the Forestry Department. This is typical of Hongkong. It did not just grow; it has been created by the energy and enterprise of its administrators and its merchants.

Yet the island has many natural advantages. The tourist must go far afield to find a scene to be compared with the

beauty of Hongkong, when approached from the south-west or the north-east; the view from the harbour of the city of Victoria—by day of its houses terracing the hillside, surmounted by the green upper slopes, by night of its many lights twinkling in the amphitheatre to a height of a thousand feet—can only be equalled by the view from the Peak, looking down on the harbour with its shipping, and over to the busy suburb of Kowloon.

The Island City in its Early Days

When the English first arrived they found the island inhabited only by a few fisher-folk; there were no houses for them, and perforce they remained in their ships. When the proposal to obtain a depot, such as Hongkong was destined to be, was first made by James Bradshaw in 1781, it was only as a place in which the ships might be refitted; the imports left unsold might be stored until the next season; the supercargoes might abide between seasons instead of going to Macao; and the sailors in the ships might not be under Chinese jurisdiction.

These were the avowed objects in the instructions given at various later dates to ask for a depot, and on these lines the development of Hongkong began. The trade continued to be conducted at Canton, and Hongkong served only as repairing station, storage warehouse, and resting-place until, in December, 1856, the Chinese destroyed the Canton factories, and brought the British to realize that their only security lay in transferring the trade to Hongkong.

At first the merchants chiefly needed a place in which they could remain from March, when the last of the ships of the season ordinarily sailed, until September, when the earliest ships of



HONGKONG THOROUGHFARE CROWDED WITH SIGHT-SEERS ON THE OCCASION OF FAMOUS DRAGON BOAT FESTIVAL
Connected with one of the many religious festivals of the Chinese, this procession in its fantastic gaudiness, its oddity, and garish freakishness, attracts the resident white population—nearly one half of which is British, and one-third Portuguese—quite as whole-heartedly as the Chinese inhabitants. Through the streets filled by a promiscuous crowd, the "Dragon," about eighty yards in length, is seen laboriously making its way, numerous priests and acolytes in attendance, and in the background, symbolical of Britain's sympathetic interest, the Red Ensign waves to and fro in the breeze

BRITISH EMPIRE IN ASIA

the next season arrived. In those early years they established themselves in the narrow strip of gently sloping land, about 300 feet wide, between Queen's Road and the waterside, the Europeans between Pottinger Street and the City Hall, the Chinese to the west of them, the barracks and the Naval Yard to the east.

Business in a Hot-House

As the need for expansion came in 1857, they began to climb the lower slopes of the hill, culminating in Government House and the Public Gardens. The waterside proprietors controlled their own water frontage until 1860, when a modest reclamation from the sea gave Hongkong its Praya, now called Des Voeux Road; and a further, more ambitious, reclamation, completed in 1903, rescued a strip of level ground from West Point to the Naval Yard, with a new Praya which is named Connaught Road.

This constitutes the city of Victoria, the administrative name of the residential and business town of Hongkong. It lies on the leeward side of the lofty and steep ridge which forms the island, and is shut off from every breath of air during the long summer, April to October, when the trade wind, known on the China coast as the monsoon, blows steadily from between south and south-west. The summer is also the busy trading season, and the officials, the merchants, their assistants, and those who purvey to them, all swelter in a hot-house atmosphere.

Hongkong's Happy Valley

Then came the funicular railway, opened in 1888, from a point near the cathedral up to Victoria Gap, with a gradient in places of 35 degrees; and now from Victoria Gap to Magazine Gap is strung a chaplet of villas, providing, at a height of 900 to 1,000 feet, homes, often in the clouds, for the well-to-do among the Hongkong community.

A little more than a mile to the east of City Hall is Wongneichong Valley, also known as Happy Valley. Here, on the west side of a brook, a trickle of

water in the winter, a raging torrent in the summer rains, lie the cemeteries of the non-Chinese civilian population—in the order up-hill, Mahomedan, Roman Catholic, Protestant, Parsee, Hindoo, and Jewish; directly across the brook lie the inevitable concomitants of a British settlement in the Far East, the racecourse and the recreation ground; and east of these is the Chinese cemetery for those not wealthy enough to have their remains sent back to their ancestral home in China.

This brook was, before the day of the cemeteries, the Fragrant Stream from which the ships were watered for their five-months voyage to England, and the residents obtained their domestic supplies. But the rainfall is seasonal: a monthly mean average of 1,784 ins. in the five months November to March, and of 13,232 ins. in the five months May to September; and storage became a necessity.

Wonderful Harbour & Shipping Centre

Apart from small catchment basins on the northern slopes above the city of Victoria, the residents are supplied with water from the Pokfolum and Taitam reservoirs on the southern side of the island, and from one high up the Wongneichong valley, with a total storage capacity of 515,000,000 gallons. From Pokfolum, the first to be made, the water is conducted by a conduit around the western end of the island, carried by siphons under some of the ravines. The Taitam water is carried under the ridge to the northern side by a tunnel 2,350 yards long, and thence westwards by a conduit, 400 feet above sea-level and about four miles long, over which is built the Bowen Road. With its many bridges, this conduit road is a beautiful piece of engineering.

Across the harbour on the northern side lies Kowloon, sometimes spelt Kaulung. This was not included in the original cession, but in 1860 the four square miles of the Kowloon Peninsula were leased in the spring, and in October formally ceded to the British Crown. Here were established docks for

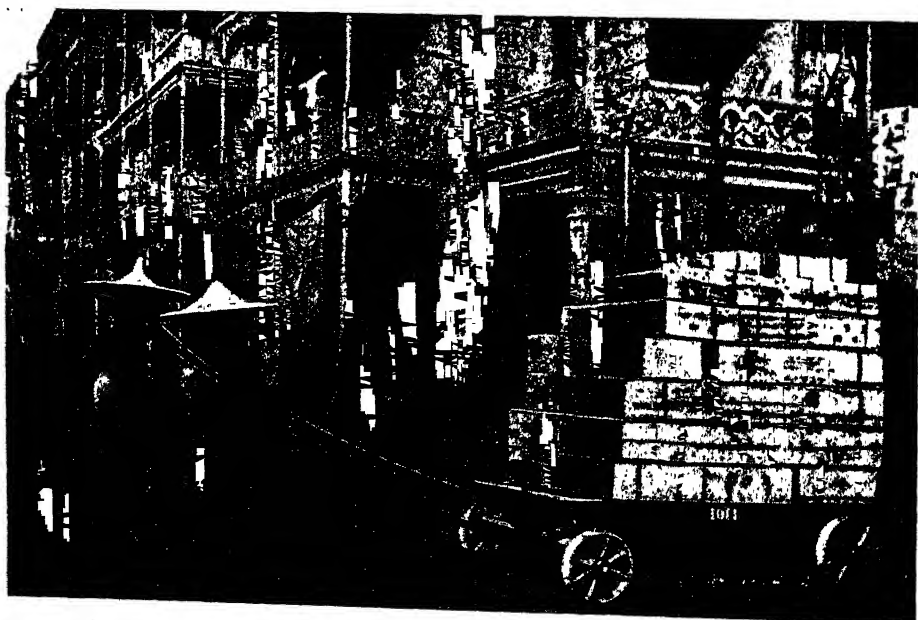
BRITISH EMPIRE IN ASIA

repairing ships, wharves, and warehouses, and a residential suburb open to the breezes of summer.

The clause in the treaty of Nanking by which the island of Hongkong was ceded to the British Crown, gave the reason for the cession in the following words: "It being obviously necessary and desirable that British subjects should have some port whereat they may careen and refit their ships, when required, and keep stores for that purpose." It was for their shipping that the British required a depot; and for that the harbour of Hongkong is perfect. With a general depth of six to eight fathoms at low water close to the shore, it is completely sheltered in all directions from wind and sea. Only the devastating typhoons can trouble it, and of them only the fiercest; such as that of September 18th, 1906, when in the space of two hours there were sunk or seriously damaged in or near the harbour 67 European vessels, 652 Chinese junks, 54 lighters, 70 steam-launches, and innumerable sampans. Ordinarily the harbour is one of the

safest salt-water anchorages in the world; and, in the day of the sailing ship, it had the inestimable advantage of having an entrance from the east and one from the south-west, so that it could be entered or left in either monsoon, and with the wind from any direction. In those days ships arrived at Hongkong as a terminus; but, with the opening of the Suez Canal in 1869, a great impetus was given to steam navigation to the Far East, and steamers bound ultimately for Shanghai and for Japan made it a port of call. This has made Hongkong a great shipping centre.

Contrary to the intentions of its godfathers, it is as a commercial mart that Hongkong has most distinguished itself. Its merchants were the most pronounced free-traders, before Cobden, before the policy was adopted in the United Kingdom; and from the first their competitors of all nationalities were admitted on an equal footing to all the privileges enjoyed by the British. Freedom of trade and an open market built up Hongkong and developed a commerce which places it in the first rank. This



HARDY AND ABLE-BODIED BURDEN BEARERS OF HONGKONG

With thews and sinews of steel, they easily accomplish the ponderous tasks of the horse. Nothing comes amiss to them, and proofs of their powers of endurance are daily in evidence in the streets of this island city, for the strength of the coolie is such as to enable him to raise, shoulder, and carry many a load which the average European porter could not hope so much as to move



CHINESE COUNTERPART OF WORLD CHILDREN'S FAVOURITE SHOW

Coolies and their children are here seen enjoying a Punch and Judy show in Old Kowloon City, for in the Orient, as in the Occident, this humorous puppet play is a reigning favourite of the masses. Ever ready for a piece of fun, they will stand for hours delighting in the buffoonery of a fellow-coolie; low jests, grimaces, and antic postures exciting them to a high pitch of enthusiasm

freedom means exemption not only from customs duties, but from all control or supervision, and even from reporting the imports and exports. There are therefore no statistics of the trade of Hongkong, and all that can be stated with any degree of certainty is that, in any given year, its buying and selling are about half of those of Shanghai.

The hospitality shown to foreign nationalities was also extended to the Chinese, who have flocked to the feast of trade; in the old territory alone, a hundred years ago almost uninhabited, they now constitute 96 per cent. of the civilian population, natives of India being probably three per cent., Europeans and Americans but little over one per cent. Here you may see the Chinese merchant, selling his silk, or buying Manchester cottons for distribution through Southern China; the shrewd, keen Chinese shopkeeper, displaying the silver and lacquered ware, the embroidered silks, the carved ivories, the choice furniture of his or

his father's native land; the alert huckster, bent on supplying every need of all customers; the servant, the porter, the hewer of wood and drawer of water for the motley population.

In industry Hongkong made a late start, the production of cement, and of cordage from Manilla hemp, being among the earliest enterprises. The repairing of ships led naturally to their construction, and several docks have been built for this purpose. Sugar imported from Java and the Philippines is refined in Hongkong, and sent thence to Chinese ports, the Chinese importation of Hongkong refined sugar in 1919 being 140,000 tons. Cotton-spinning mills were started in 1895, and run 55,000 spindles. To these must be added a flour-mill, a saw-mill, glass works, soap works, match works, and many others. All the prime materials have to be imported, but, subject to this restriction, there seems to be no limit to the industrial development of Hongkong under the security of the British flag.



GAUDY SIGNS AND VIVID FASCIAS IN MALACCA STREET IN THE CHINESE QUARTER OF SINGAPORE

Chinese carry on most of the shopkeeping and local trade in Singapore, and Chinese traders and retail dealers occupy a special portion of the town. Indefatigable in the pursuit of their own interests, they hurry to and fro in loose trousers and cotton jackets, remaining late at work long after others have closed their shops. The lower-class Chinese live closely herded together, but generally are law-abiding and hard-working

British Empire in Asia

IV. The Polyglot Life of the Straits Settlements

By Sir Frank Swettenham, G.C.M.G.

Late Governor of the Straits Settlements and Author of "British Malaya"

THE small island of Singapore, separated from the mainland of the Malay Peninsula, is only a few miles from the southernmost point of Asia. It is a great port of call, coaling and refitting station for shipping, a hive of industry, and market for the exchange of Eastern and Western produce. One hundred and twenty miles north-west of Singapore is Malacca, occupying a narrow strip of the peninsula bordering the Strait of Malacca. Another 240 miles farther north is the island of Penang, with another strip of the peninsula named Province Wellesley. These two islands and two strips of mainland constitute the colony of the Straits Settlements with other smaller islands and an insignificant slice of peninsula, seventy miles south of Penang. Speaking generally, the two islands, one at the northern and the other at the southern end of the Malacca Strait, are densely inhabited and important trading stations, while Malacca and Province Wellesley are agricultural districts, where Malays are in the majority.

Sixty-nine different languages are spoken by the people who, for various reasons, have

been attracted to the colony. The most generally spoken language is Malay—371 persons in every 1,000 use it. The next language in most general use is the Hok Kieu dialect of Chinese, by 218 persons in every 1,000. Only 23 per cent. of the inhabitants speak a European language. The immense majority of the inhabitants

of the British colony—inappropriately named the Straits Settlements—are Chinese, and it is not too much to say that the ever-increasing prosperity of the colony is mainly due to their industry and enterprise, in a climate congenial to them, and under an administration which, while imposing as few burdens as possible, has given equal opportunities to all comers. The fact that the founder of Singapore, Sir Thomas Stamford Raffles, made the ports of the colony free, attracted settlers from all neighbouring countries, and especially from China. They realized that the stations at either end of the Malacca Strait were ideal ports of call for all shipping between the West and Farthest East, and when the enterprise of European merchants and traders had supplied the necessary facilities for



ENGAGING MALAY GIRL
Her black hair, pulled off her forehead, is fastened neatly in a knob behind. Singularly winning is the smile with which the Malay girl confronts the world



SOOTHING CARE BY WANDERING MINSTRELSY

Her good-humoured face smiles out from the ample sari that drapes her head and shoulders and falls like a shawl over her flowered jacket and the cotton sarong that reaches to her ankles. On her single-stringed guitar she strums a monotonous melody. Malay wandering minstrels, known as soothers of care, repeat and perpetuate the folk-tales of the country



SON O' MINE: A MALAY GROUP IN SINGAPORE

Malays are devoted to their children, who up to the age of fifteen or sixteen are most engaging creatures. They trot about with their parents, and when a baby is tired, the mother swings it on to her hip and twists a sling for it out of her sari, in which it rides happily and comfortably

BRITISH EMPIRE IN ASIA

docking, coaling, and refitting, the prosperity of the Settlements was assured, and Singapore and Penang became great markets and storehouses for the exchange of every conceivable product of West and East.

Chinese who originally came to the colony as labourers grew to be rich merchants, bankers and capitalists, owners of lands, houses, plantations, and steamers, ready to finance any profitable scheme either in the colony or the neighbouring Malay States.

The shopkeepers of Singapore, Penang, and Malacca are in the main Chinese. The clerical services in Government offices, in banks, and in mercantile houses are largely staffed by Chinese, and their ability, honesty, and energy are universally recognized. Others are skilled mechanics, contractors, and builders, and there is no manual labour which they are not ready to undertake. Wherever physical strength is required, as in dock and warehouse labour or the coaling of ships, Chinese are employed. In the harbour they are excellent boat-

men; in coastal villages they are fishermen; and inland they are gardeners and plantation workers. As rickshaw pullers they hold a practical monopoly of a job which is too hard for persons of other nationalities.

Wealthy Chinese are almost invariably owners of landed property, and they are especially proud of their country houses, their gardens and their fish ponds, their motor-cars and their racehorses. Chinese established in the colony for more than one generation speak Malay—of a kind—as often as, or more often than, Chinese; because it is the *lingua franca* of the colony. This is the case with the boys of the well-to-do Chinese who have been educated in the best schools of the colony, and in Penang and Malacca it is probably true of the girls also. By far the majority of Straits-born Chinese are very proud of the fact that they are British subjects, and take little interest in China or her affairs.

Most of the Malays—who are next in numbers to the Chinese—are settled on the land in Malacca and Province



YOUNG KLING FEMALE IMPERSONATOR

He belongs to the ancient Dravidian race, perhaps the most primitive of all the Indian types distributed over Southern Hindustan and found in thousands in the East Indian seaports and the Straits Settlements. This lad earns his living by donning girl's costume and dancing in the streets of Singapore to the music of his older comrades' guitar and portable harmonium.

Wellesley, where they grow rice and fruit, especially coconuts, spend their days or nights in sea-fishing, or work spasmodically at any job to which a gentleman may turn his hand when he is in want of a little money. If the country was not made for the Malay—and there is evidence that he came originally from elsewhere—he has fitted himself exactly to the colour and atmosphere of his surroundings. He is equally at home in the jungle or on the water, but while the waters of the Malacca Strait offer him great opportunities by which he profits, the jungle has disappeared, and in its place are rice fields, coconut groves, and fruit gardens, where wooden cottages, the floors of which are always well above the ground, serve as convenient places to sit and watch how bountiful nature, in a warm, moist climate, rewards the smallest efforts. The Malay is a philosopher, and while he realizes that Chinese energy means the acquisition of many worldly goods, he smiles at the effort, and hardly envies the yellow man his possessions.

Natives of India—who come next—speak many tongues, worship many different gods, and follow many different callings. There are Parsee merchants and portly Hindu money-lenders, clerks and cattle-keepers and cab-drivers, estate labourers, road menders, barbers, and washermen, all small but necessary wheels in the machinery of a great and busy community. There are also many well-to-do Indian shop-



PLEASANT LITTLE MAIDEN OF MALAY

Large dark eyes, mouth well-shaped, if rather large, extremely white teeth, and abundant black hair, make the average Malay girl an attractive little person. Fine cotton cloths stamped with patterns such as this girl is wearing are made in Java

keepers who supply the wants of their fellow countrymen. More than other Asiatics the natives of India, especially of the humbler sort, are gregarious, and while their villages or streets are easily recognizable in the light of day, by night you know them from afar by reason of the strange songs or maddening drum beats which make their happiness till long after midnight. In this respect, however, the Chinese theatre orchestras can give the Indians a lengthy start and a beating. The Eurasian

BRITISH EMPIRE IN ASIA

population, though comparatively small, is interesting. It is seldom or never described, and that brilliant writer, Aberigh-Mackay, was possibly the first Englishman to devote an article to the Eurasian. His description remains inimitable, but written of the Indian Eurasian, it would not be a faithful picture of the Straits Eurasians. These are the descendants of the Portuguese and Dutch, who by turn occupied Malacca, and in more recent years there may be a few descendants of British men and Eurasians or native women.

To-day the Eurasians form a considerable society in all three Settlements of the colony. The men, after an education at one or other of the colony's

schools, seek service mainly with the Government, and largely in the clerical branches, where they do admirable work. Others qualify for medical work, or join European firms of lawyers, bankers, or merchants in some minor capacity. Eurasian girls, like their brothers, are educated at the English-teaching schools. In appearance they are often attractive, and they must have no difficulty in finding husbands among their own people, for it is rare for them to marry outside that circle.

As intelligent, reliable, and hard-working clerks it would be difficult to find the equals of the best Straits Eurasians. Comparing them with Eurasians from other places, say India

or Ceylon, it has often been remarked by those with long experience that Straits Eurasians hold their own easily. They are exclusive, and of their family life outsiders have few opportunities of judging. Born and bred in that climate, it would not be fair to expect Eurasian men to be distinguished by great strength of character any more than one would hope to find in Eurasian women an absence of frailties common to their sex. The colony could not do without its Eurasian community.

If the European population of the colony is one of the smallest in numbers it is by far the most important. Besides the fact that it comprises the senior Government officials, the garrison, the control of municipal government, of docks and harbours and submarine telegraphs, all the banks, mercantile houses, and representatives of great steamship and other companies are in the



CHINESE TAPPER INTENT ON HIS JOB
He is watching the latex flowing from the incisions in the rubber-tree. Presently he will go from tree to tree collecting it, when it will be taken to the rubber store to be coagulated and dried and prepared in ribbons, sheets, or blocks for export

Photo, L. Harland



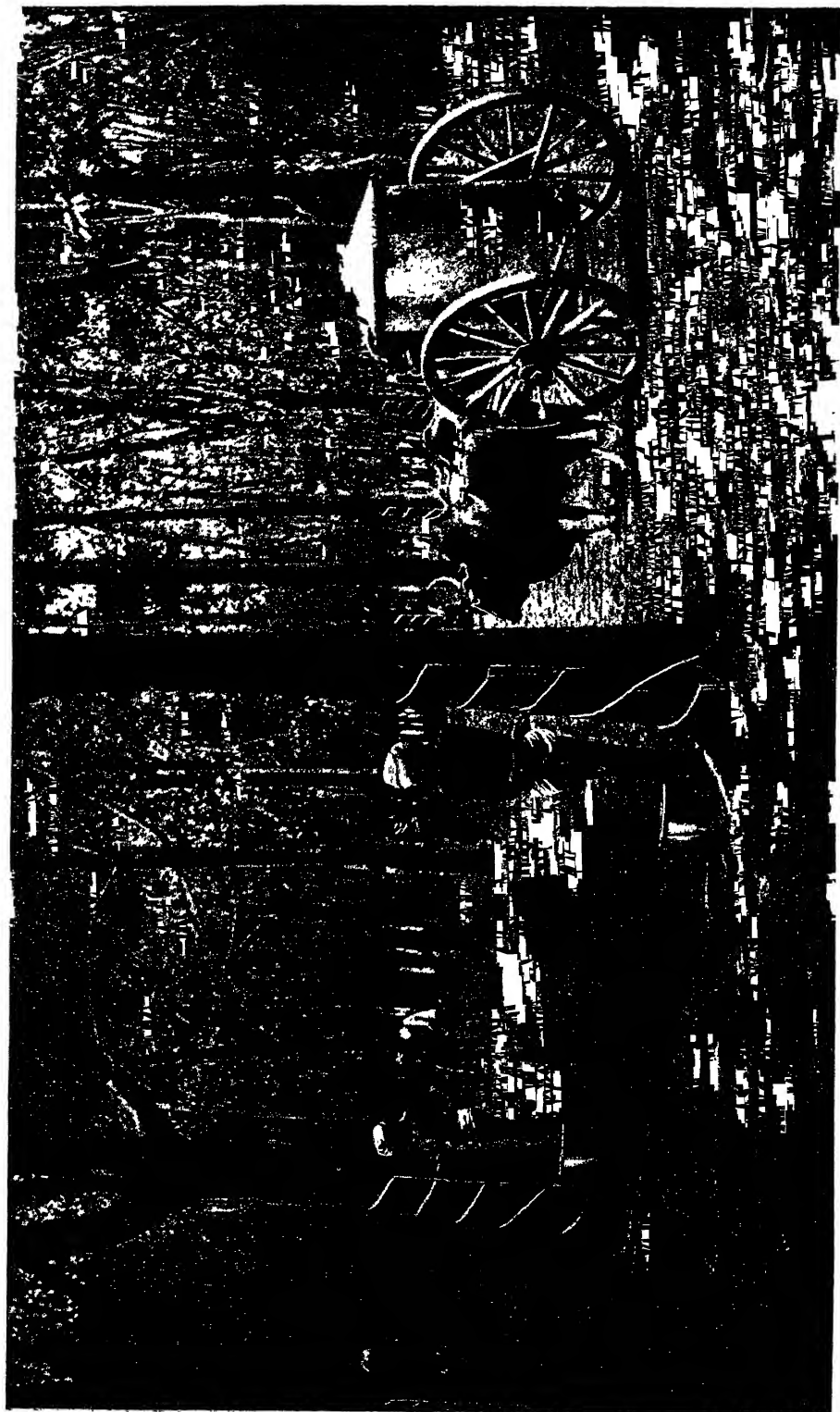
MALAY GIRL-WORKERS ON A RUBBER ESTATE IN SINGAPORE

Care and practice are required in the task of these girls, with their gay sarongs, for the trees may be badly damaged if cut too deep or tapped too frequently. The tappers use small knives so made that they cannot pierce the bark deeper than the layer in which the latex is secreted, and do not tap the same tree oftener than every other day



OVERSEER AND YOUNG WORKERS ON A SINGAPORE RUBBER ESTATE IN FRIENDLY COLLOQUY

Scientific rubber planting gives employment to scores of thousands of people—women and children, as well as men, being able to earn good wages in the plantations. Indian emigrants in particular prove themselves intelligent, industrious, and loyal servants to their employers, who, in turn, provide them with everything to conduce to their health and comfort in their work. Rubber plantations now occupy about two million acres in British Malaya



INDIAN EMIGRANT LABOURERS BUSY IN A RUBBER PLANTATION IN BRITISH MALAYA

Since 1905 the Malay Peninsula has become the chief centre of the rubber-planting industry, which is carried on scientific lines by an army of European managers and assistants and a vast host of native labourers, mostly Indian emigrants. The organization in effective operation in Malaya provides an interesting contrast to the cruder methods still necessarily practised in the undeveloped rubber belts of the Amazon valley, as illustrated on pages 496 and 497

BRITISH EMPIRE IN ASIA

hands of Europeans. None of these representative men are colonists, any more than the members of the garrison, which is constantly changing. They are simply birds of passage, temporary dwellers in an enervating climate, which necessitates periodical visits to a temperate zone.

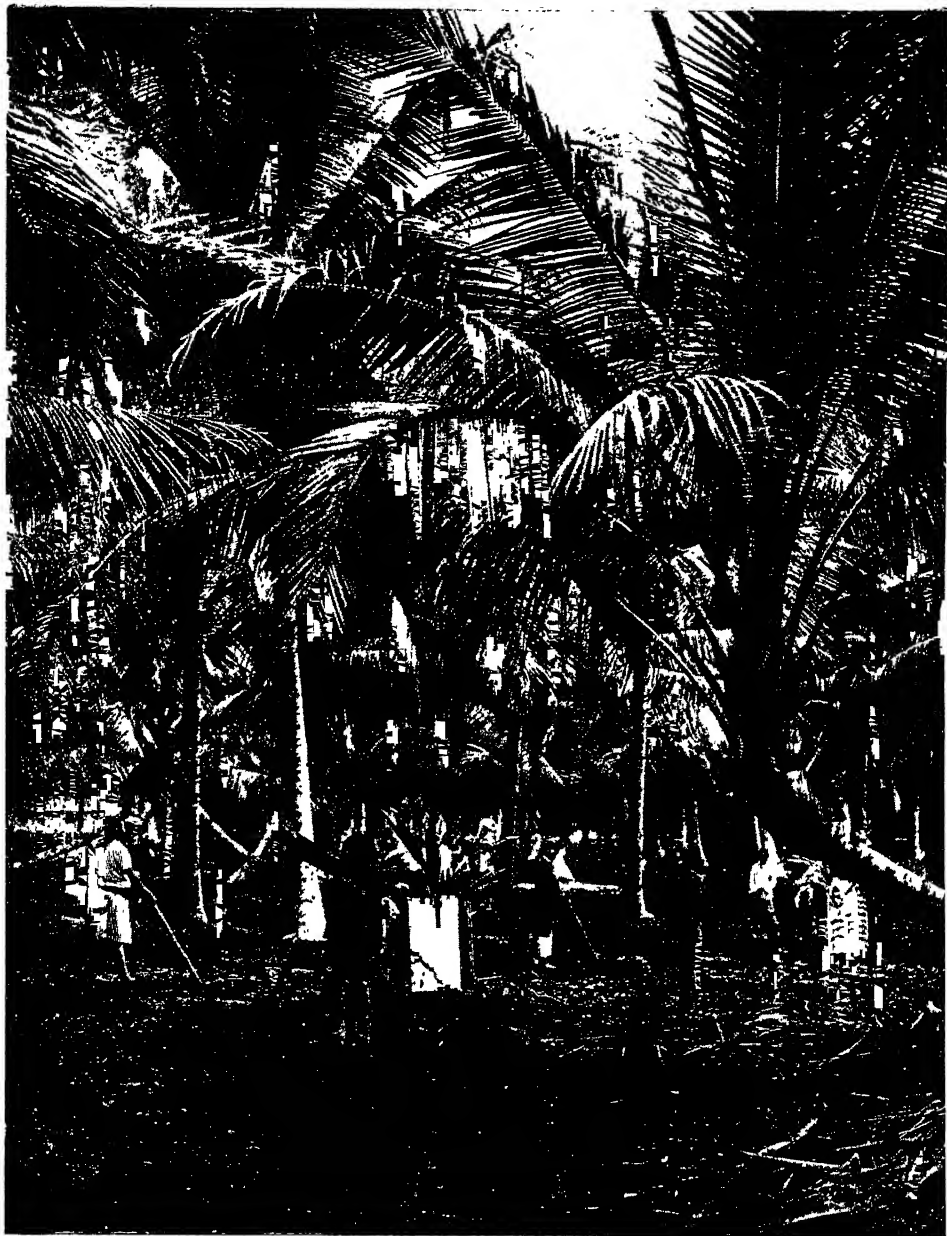
Europeans, even more than the Chinese, or any other immigrants, are in the Straits to work, but they manage to amuse themselves, when they can find

the time, with cricket, football, golf, polo, horse-racing, shooting, tennis, rowing, swimming, and, indoors, with dancing and billiards. In defiance of the sun, cricket matches are played all day. Otherwise, all the men are supposed to work from an early hour till 5 p.m., when they rush off to get the form of exercise which appeals most to each individual. European ladies have enough to do at home in the heat of the day, but the afternoons find most of



AMONG THE PEPPER VINES OF THE SPICY EAST

Penang and Singapore produce most of the world's pepper supply. In cultivation the vines are trained over rough-barked tree-stumps and produce two crops a year, gathered, if black pepper is desired, when the berries are full grown, but before the fruit is quite mature. The finer, but less pungent, white pepper is prepared from the ripe fruit



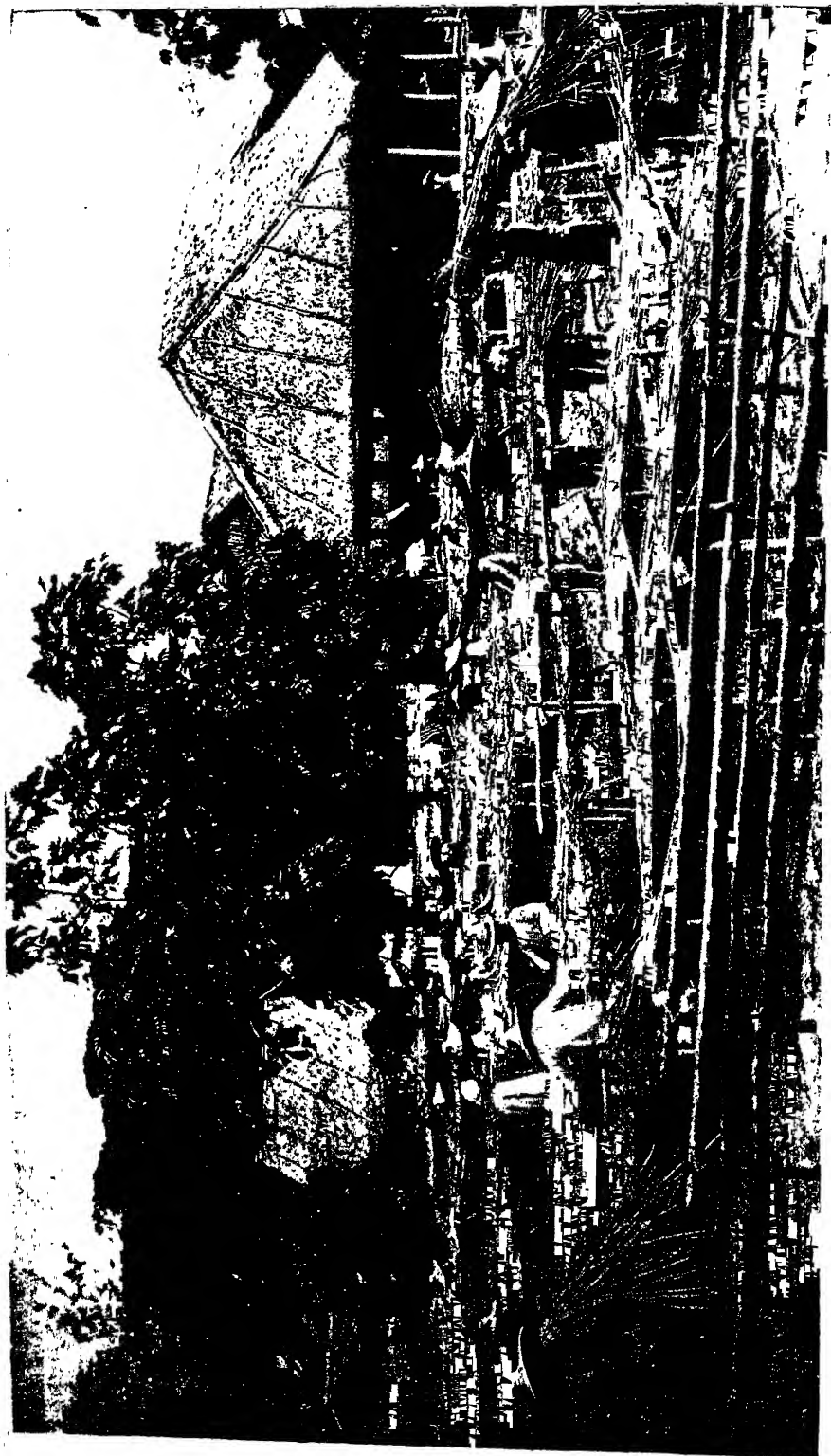
BEAUTY AND UTILITY IN PERFECTION: CHAMPION COCONUT TREES

In the coconut palm nature has produced a plant that satisfies almost every need of the peoples in whose regions it grows. It yields them timber, thatch for their houses, fibre for textile purposes, shells for utensils, food and drink. It furnishes more civilized peoples with materials to be put to innumerable uses, and is now cultivated by the million on scientific lines

them on tennis grounds and golf courses, while dancing in the evening is as popular one degree from the Equator as in the temperate climates of the West.

Christmas Island in the eastern part of the Indian Ocean and the Cocos or Keeling group, about 500 miles to the

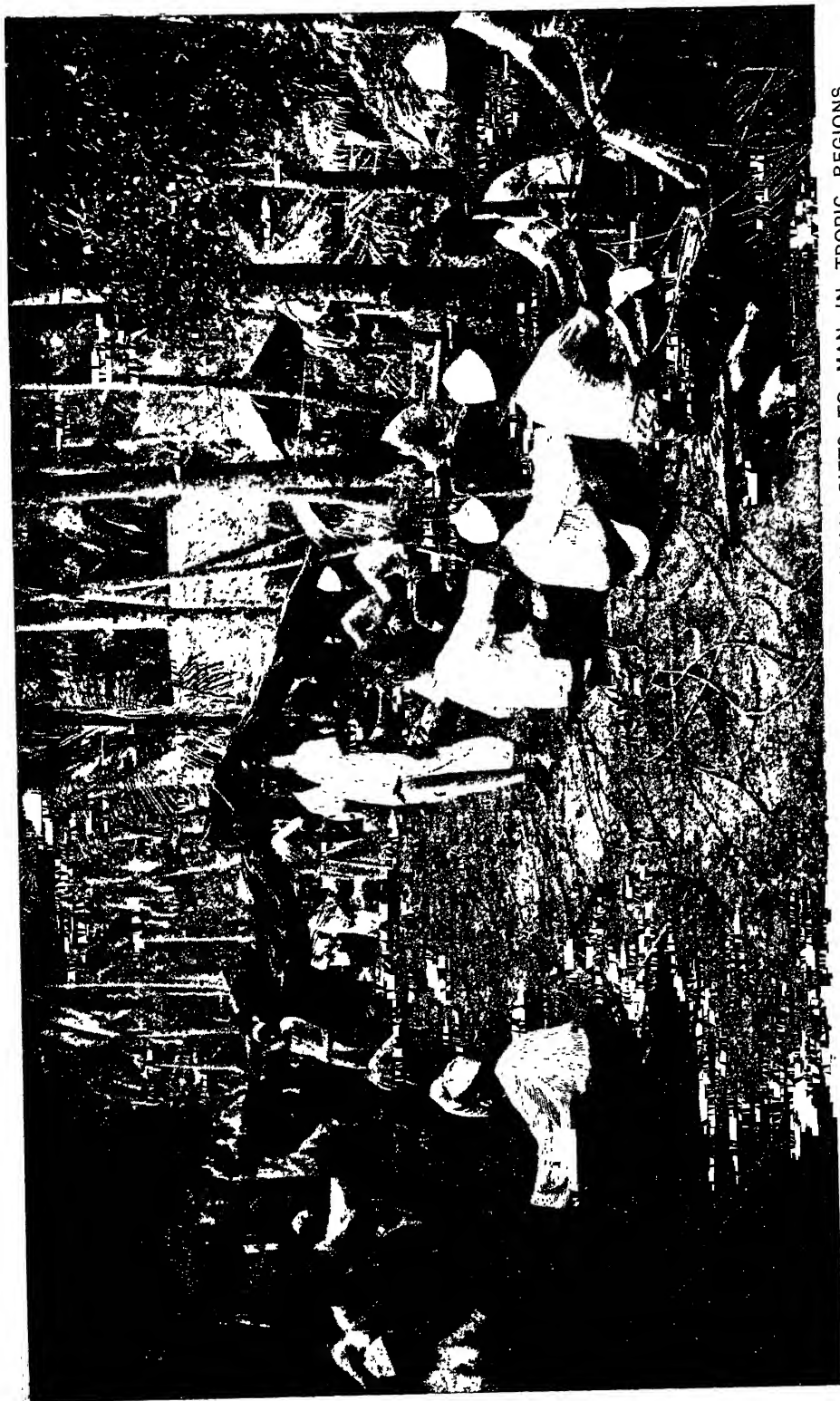
south-west of it, were annexed to the Straits Settlements in 1900 and 1903 respectively. In 1888 Christmas Island was uninhabited, but to-day it contains about 1,400 people, mainly Chinese, engaged in working valuable deposits of phosphate. About 1826 a party of



DRYING GROUND IN A RATTAN MATTING FACTORY AT SINGAPORE, THE WORLD'S CHIEF RATTAN MARKET

Rattans, or cane palms, have a very slender stem provided with hooked prickles, by means of which they creep up the branches of the jungle trees to reach the light. Some of these stems attain a length of six hundred feet. Having been stripped of their sheathing leaves by the natives, they are cut into standard lengths of fifteen feet and dried in the sun to free them from all the sap. The fruit, when boiled, provides a varnish colouring known as dragon's blood

Photo, Malay States Agency



PREPARING RATTANS UNDER OVER-ARCHING PALMS, NATURE'S KINDLY GIFTS TO MAN IN TROPIC REGIONS

Bundles of the canes are distributed among the factory hands, who pull them round posts to crack and peel off the outer skin to render them more supple, even rubbing them with sand with the same object. The canes are then ready for splitting into halves, quarters, and so on, according to the use to which they are to be put in the making of furniture, seats of chairs, matting, basket work of varying degrees of fineness, and so forth. Rattan sega is the best variety

Photo, G. R. Lambert & Co.



KEK LOK SEE, THE EXQUISITE SHRINE OF BUDDHA AT PENANG
 Approached by a massive granite stairway, the Chinese temple at Ayer Iram rises in terraces, temple after temple, to the summit of a hill. Each Buddhist race has here its own temple, and everywhere is Buddha, in alabaster, gold leaf, or brass. The raking gables of Chinese architecture, coloured tablets, carven figures, and terrace gardens, make this temple one of the marvels of the East

Photo, A. R. Hopkins



LABOUR IN A LOVELY SETTING: A BETEL NUT PALM PLANTATION

Plantations of Areca Catechu are very beautiful, the slender, unbranched stems tapering to a height of fifty feet and crowned with spreading fronds. The fruit is gathered from August to November, and the seed extracted from the fibrous rind, sliced, and dried in the sun, provides the betel nut which all Orientals love to chew

Malays from Sumatra, under the leadership of Alexander Hare, an Englishman, settled in the Cocos Islands and were shortly joined by Captain J. Chinnies Ross, his family, and some Malays. Since then the population has been increased by the immigration of Bantamese from Java, and at the present time may amount to about 1,800 people, engaged in the cultivation of coconuts and the manufacture of copra.

Though the Cocos or Keeling Islands and Christmas Island now form part of the colony of the Straits Settlements, they are so distant and unimportant that their connexion with the colony is hardly realized by those who live in the settlements on the Malacca Strait. The Cocos are 700 miles and Christmas Island about 200 miles south-west of

Java. A British Submarine Telegraph Company has a station on Direction Island in the Cocos group, and on the Cape to Australia route. Christmas Island forms the summit of a submarine mountain over 15,000 feet high.

Mention lastly must be made of Labuan, also administratively attached to the Straits Settlements. Off the coast of Borneo, it lies 725 miles from Singapore and about 40 miles from Brunei, whose Sultan ceded it to Great Britain in 1846. Its fine port, Victoria Harbour, is much used by coasting steamers. The native population consists mostly of Malays and of Chinese traders, and a handful of European residents, including the British deputy-governor, exists in the hot and humid climate.



RICH CARGOES OF TROPICAL FRUITS ON THEIR WAY TO THE MALAY MARKET
The more insignificant of the trading craft are employed for this purpose, and on market days a perfect fleet of small vessels may be seen plying up the river bound for some convenient centre where they may discharge their ripe cargoes. The craft, used are chiefly dug-outs, or light fishing boats—an amphibious creature like the Malay would trust himself in them

Photo, Malaya Steamers Agency

British Empire in Asia

V. The Malay States & Their Tropic Life

By Sir Frank Swettenham, G.C.M.G.

Author of "The Real Malay"

THREE small territories on the west coast of the Malay Peninsula, Province Wellesley, the Dindings, and Malacca, together with ~~the~~ ^{Penang} and Penang form the British Crown Colony named the Straits Settlements. The Malay States, Federated and Non-Federated, occupy the rest of the peninsula until the most northern of them, Perlis on the west and Patani on the east, march with Burma and Siam respectively.

A wide distinction must be drawn between the Federated and Non-Federated States. The former, three of which are on the western side of the peninsula, Negri Sembilan, Selangor, and Perak, invited or accepted British advice in the administration of their affairs as early as 1874, while Pahang, on the eastern side, did the same in 1887. In 1895 these four states became federated by treaty and, while maintaining their independence, accepted a certain amount of control in the administration of their affairs by the British Residents in each of the states, and by a British Resident General, then appointed, to direct the policy of the Residents under the general authority of a High Commissioner, who is also Governor and Commander-in-Chief of the Straits Settlements Colony. More recently

the title of Resident General has been changed to that of Chief Secretary. The actual result of this change has been that matters which formerly were settled on the spot by the Malay rulers, in consultation with their British Residents, the Resident General, and the High Commissioner, are now referred to the Secretary of State for the Colonies and are determined in Downing Street, as though the Malay



SAKAI NOSE PIPERS PERFORM A DUET

Among various primitive accomplishments of the Sakais that of music-making by means of blowing with their nostrils through a reed-pipe is not the least remarkable, and their delight in the two or three weird notes thus produced is unbounded

BRITISH EMPIRE IN ASIA

States formed part of the Colony. The Malay rulers still exist; there are sultans in Perak, Selangor, and Pahang, and a Yang di per Tuan in Negri Sembilan, but in the published administration reports there is little or no evidence of their authority.

A large Malay state, Johore, occupies the southernmost end of the peninsula immediately north of the island of

Singapore. Johore territory stretches from the Strait of Malacca to the China Sea, and therefore has a coast line on both western and eastern shores of the Malay peninsula. Johore also owns some considerable islands in the China Sea. The Sultan of Johore has been closely connected with the British authorities ever since Sir Stamford Raffles planted the British flag on the island of Singapore. For some years a British Adviser has resided in Johore, with excellent results; but Johore is not in the Federation, and its Sultan has still a large authority in his own country.

North of Johore, on the west coast, come Malacca and Negri Sembilan, then Selangor, then Perak, Province Wellesley, Kedah—an agricultural state till lately under the dominance of Siam, but now enjoying self-government with the advice of a British Resident—and Perlis. On the east coast, Johore marches with Pahang, north of which lie the states of Trengganu and Kelantan, and north of these there is the country Patani, which is still subject to Siam, and marches with the southernmost province of Siam, named Singora.

While, therefore, Perak, Selangor, and Negri Sembilan on the west coast, with Pahang on the east coast, constitute the Federated Malay States, there are Kedah and Perlis on the west, Kelantan and Trengganu on the east, and Johore right across the southern end of the peninsula which are not federated but



MALAY GATHERING HIS BREAD FROM A TREE

Valuable as food, ranging in weight from 10 to 75 lb., this is the fruit of the jack-fruit, or bread tree, which, "without the ploughshare, yields the unrequited harvests of unfurrowed fields, and bakes its unadulterated loaves without a furnace"

administered under the advice of British officers under the authority of the High Commissioner at Singapore. The distinction politically is considerable, but the natural features of the various states, the composition of their peoples, and the language and customs of the natives of the country, i.e. the Malays, do not greatly differ.

A long range of hills, from the interior of Kedah in the north to Negri Sembilan in the south, divides the western from the eastern states. From this range, which rises to 5,000 feet or more, large rivers run south and west into the Malacca Strait, or south-east and north-east into the China Sea. Until about 1880 almost the whole peninsula was roadless jungle, only excepting the strips which formed part of the Straits Settlements and a small acreage of rice-fields, in Kedah, Kelantan, and Perak, and some pepper and gambir plantations in Johore. To-day there is a west coast railway from Singapore to Province Wellesley, Kedah, and Siam, and an east coast railway, branching in Negri Sembilan from the west coast line, through Pahang, Kelantan, and Patani to join the Siamese southern railway to Bangkok. That means over 1,000 miles of

railway, with thousands of miles of excellent roads, large towns, docks and wharves at the seaports, waterworks, and every kind of public building. Outside the towns and villages the traveller



WHEN THE WILD DURIAN RIPENS

With pleasurable anticipation the Malays and Chinese await the ripening of the durian, when basketfuls of it are gathered from the large evergreen trees. A peculiar taste and offensive odour make this fruit most obnoxious to unaccustomed palates

might suppose that the country is still mainly forest, but nearly 2,000,000 acres are now plantations of rubber trees, the *Hevea Braziliensis* imported from South America—and the cultivation of this

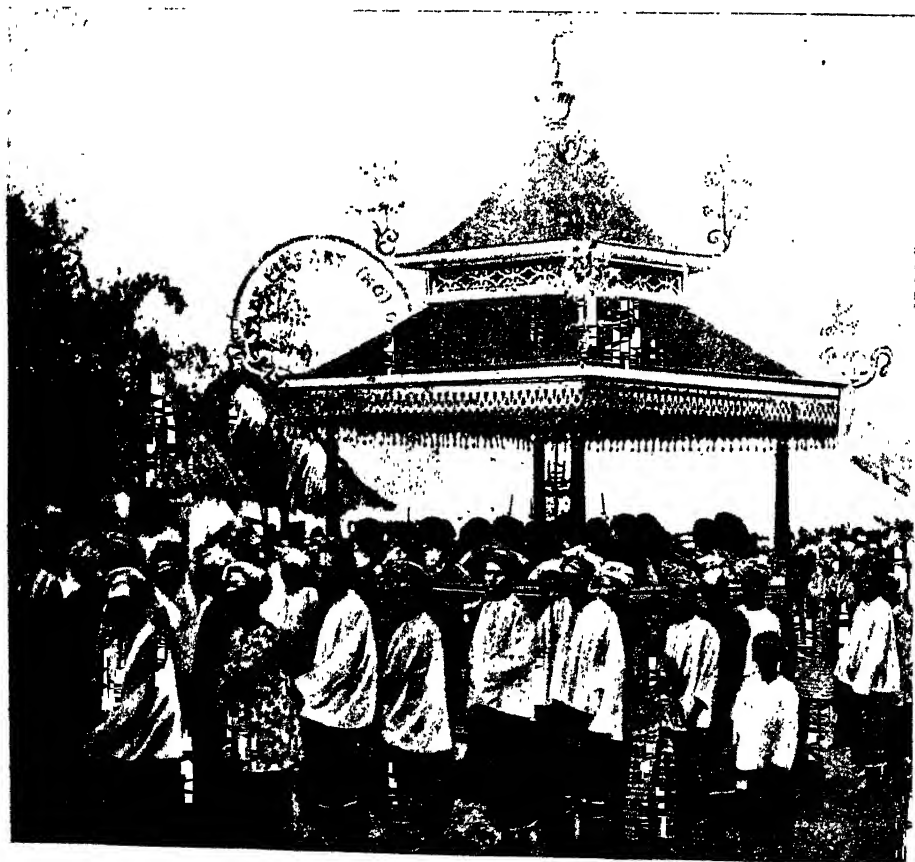
BRITISH EMPIRE IN ASIA

valuable tree is now by far the greatest industry in the Malay States.

The general features of the country differ when viewed from the Malacca Strait and the China Sea. In either case there is a very low coast line, mainly mangrove and mud flats on the west, with large tidal rivers, navigable for small steamers for thirty to fifty miles, flowing into the Malacca Strait. All the land lies under a haze of damp and fervent heat, while there is a vision of blue hills in the far distance. From the China Sea it looks much the same, but the coast line is fine sand, the sea is very shallow, there are few mangroves, the rivers are clear and shallow, not navigable to steamers, and the inland

hills are so distant as to be invisible. During nearly five months, when the north-east monsoon is blowing, this coast is practically closed to steamer traffic.

Up to 1905 the small European population of the four federated states was composed almost entirely of Government officials, their wives and families, and a few planters and tin miners. Since then the Federated States, and in a much smaller degree the Non-Federated States, have become the chief seat of the important rubber planting industry. That industry accounts for the great increase in Europeans, not only as managers and assistants on the plantations, but as agents for British and



BRIDE AND MAIDS BORNE IN STATE THROUGH STREETS OF PEKAN

Nowadays, the wishes of the Malay girls are generally consulted in the matter of matrimony. Society weddings are long, expensive affairs—a wedding-gift must always be money, but with the poorer classes the ceremonies are not nearly so numerous or costly. Like other Mahomedans, a Malay may have four wives at the same time, and, if he can afford it, he usually exercises his right

Photo, Malay States Agency



SIMPLE GRACE OF SARONG CLAD MALAY GIRLS

Malay girls are sometimes surprisingly fair for Easterns, but they vary from all shades of light to dark brown. The girls of the *raia*s, the people, as distinct from the ruling classes, are capable and domesticated. They have few of the joys and none of the social advantages of their more fortunate society sisters, and for them the only excitement in life is connected with religious festivals and marriages. Note the discarded wooden sandals and their toe posts

other European companies, as engineers in charge of factories, and as medical men to look after the native labour and the superintending staff. The vast sums invested in this industry have also led to the wide extension of Government and private works, railways and roads, water schemes, and new lines of telegraphs and telephones; to say nothing of the provision of greatly extended wharfage facilities for loading and discharging ocean-going steamers

at Port Swettenham, the principal port in the peninsula. Among Europeans there is no leisured class, but almost everyone seizes every available opportunity for recreation in the few hours when that is possible in the climate of a damp hot-house within a few degrees of the Equator. Cricket, lawn-tennis, golf, and even football are vigorously played; polo is the recreation of a few, while dancing is the chief indoor attraction. For those



RETURN OF THE SPOILERS
Roaming among the shady groves of coconut palms the Malay youth spend many a pleasant hour, and seldom return home empty-handed

who can spare the time there is big-game shooting; elephant, tiger, rhinoceros, and bison, while sambur and wild pig abound. In their season, snipe and green pigeon afford excellent sport.

The Eurasians, whose numbers are now considerable, have gone to the Malay States in the train of the European to help him as clerk, medical assistant, overseer, and so forth. They take with them the education and the qualities which make them so useful in the places of their birth, and in Malaya, as elsewhere, they remain in their private lives a people apart and somewhat inscrutable.

The Indian population of the Malay States has emigrated to the peninsula in search of better conditions than those which obtain in their native villages, and they have found them. Until the great wave of rubber planting spread over the land, there were comparatively few Indians in the Malay States, and they were employed as small shopkeepers, cart owners and drivers, or they supplied the Government with its labour for building roads and railways. Since rubber planting began on a large scale, Indian agriculturists and others, men, women, and children, have passed yearly in large numbers from Southern India to Malaya, to work on the plantations. In the autumn of 1920, when the crisis in the rubber industry was beginning to be acute, there were probably 200,000 Indians in the four federated states. Since then, owing to the stringent economies necessitated by the situation, large numbers have returned to India, and the labour problem will be difficult when the price of rubber enables the growers to produce all they can at a profit.

The supply of Indian labour has been of enormous benefit to rubber planters, because the labourers have emigrated with their families, and it is possible, on a rubber plantation, to give work at good wages to women and children as well as to men. They are all very amenable to discipline; good workers in the field, clever in the factory, and the best of them take an interest not only in their work, but in the people



LAZY MALAYS TAKE MUCH PAINS IN TILLING THE SOIL

The implements used by the Malays for agricultural purposes are primitive in the extreme; a plough is usually fashioned from a fork of a tree, and the harrow is of the crudest design. Long, weary hours must be spent by these land labourers in cultivating their own plot of ground, for they heartily dislike toil, and their indolent, pleasure-loving natures would always borrow rather than earn money



STATELY MEASURED MOVEMENTS OF MALAY DANCE

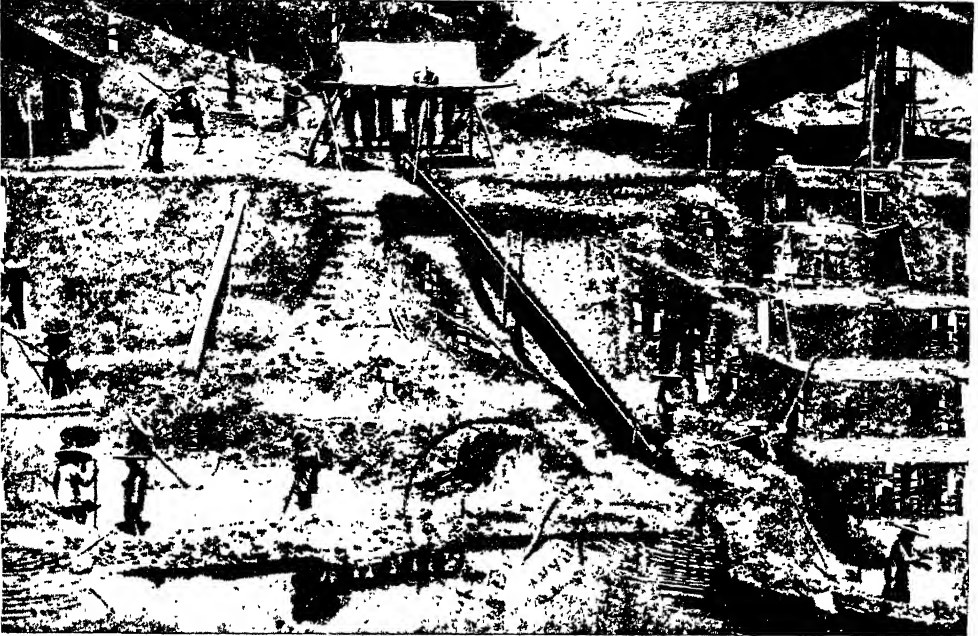
To the stranger the dance must appear decidedly monotonous—a constant repetition of the same gestures and movements; but the Malays appreciate these efforts on the part of their fellow-countrymen, and the hearty applause from the spectators is echoed and emphasized immediately by the tom-tom players who yell their cries of approval while beating a deafening tattoo on their hollow drums

Photos, Malay States Agency



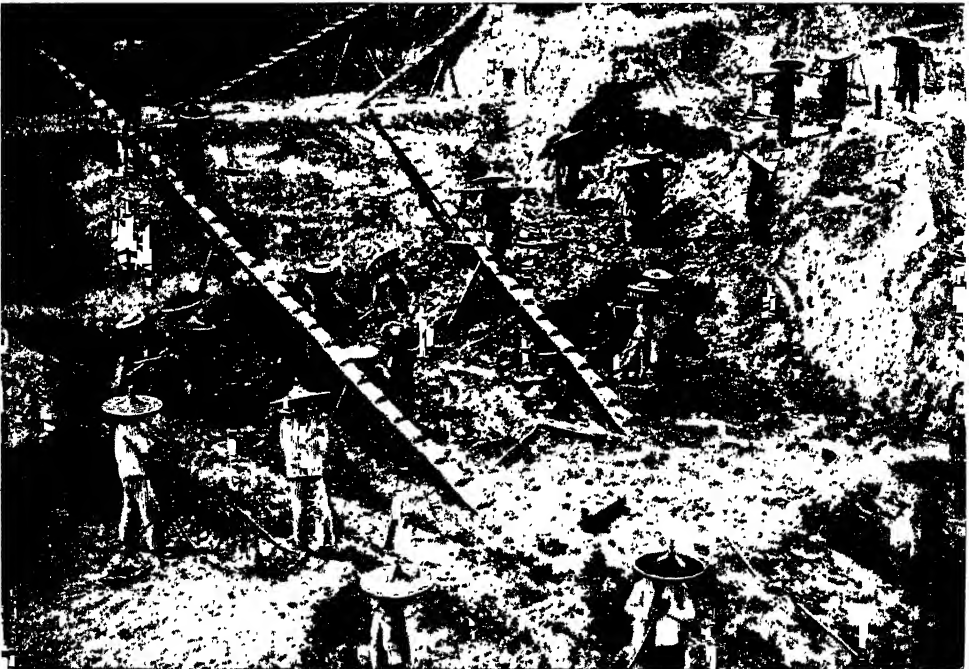
CHINESE COOLIES EXCEL IN THE STRENUOUS LABOUR OF TRENCH TIN-MINING IN THE FEDERATED MALAY STATES
The alluvial beds on the western side of the Malay Peninsula have since 1890 produced more than half of the world's supply of tin. Perak produces enormous quantities of this silver-white, lustrous metal, and its innumerable open-cast tin-mines are worked almost exclusively by Chinese capital and labour. The "lombong," or open-working system is usually pursued. It consists of digging, carrying, and throwing to one side the top soil until the tin-bearing sand is exposed to view

Photo, Malay States Agency



COOLIES WORKING A PUMP ON AN OPENCAST MINE

Through a long trough, or sluice, a stream of water is pumped on to the tin-bearing sand ; the sand and stones are then raked backwards and forwards with a long-handled species of hoe. The larger stones are thrown to one side, whilst the lighter ones and the sand are carried away by the water ; but the tin ore, being of a heavier specific gravity, remains and is collected and stored



SEEKERS OF TIN ORE IN FULL ACTIVITY ON A PERAK MINE

The miners, both men and women, carry away the earth in small oblong baskets, the handles of which are attached by lengths of stiff rattan to a carrying-stick. Placing the stick across his shoulders, the miner ascends the ladder, steadying the baskets to avoid spilling the contents

Photos, Malay States Agency

BRITISH EMPIRE IN ASIA

they serve. The fact that rubber growers had, for a long time, been producing at a loss, led either to a reduction in wages or in the labour force, or else to the closing of a plantation, and nothing could be more remarkable than the loyalty with which very many of these people recognized the situation and accepted a reduction in their rates of pay. Everything

introduced a great agricultural industry. The appointment of British Residents to advise the Malay rulers in Perak, Selangor, and Negri Sembilan dates from 1874. During the next thirty years it was Chinese capital and Chinese effort, employed in working the rich alluvial tin deposits of these states, which brought into the country this large Chinese population and enabled



SIMPLE CHINESE METHOD OF SMELTING ORE

The cylindrical-shaped furnaces are made of clay, round which sticks are placed perpendicularly and held in position by bands. The tin ore is placed on the top of the charcoal-fed fire, whence, melting, it trickles down through the burning charcoal and out at a small aperture, falling into a clay-lined pan dug in the ground, from which it is removed by ladles and poured into sand moulds, where it cools and solidifies

Photo, Malay States Agency

possible is done for their health and comfort on the plantations, but however long they remain on the estates, very few make Malaya their permanent home.

The Chinese—who, in 1911, outnumbered even the people of the country—by their enterprise, their industry, and their capital, under the guidance and administration of British Residents, made the Federated States what they were till rubber planting

the Government to raise from them a revenue more than sufficient to pay the costs of administration and to construct all necessary public works, including thousands of miles of excellent roads and a thousand miles of railway. Until 1900, or even later, the Chinese of the Malay States believed only in tin mining, just as the Mauritius planter believes in sugar. Times have changed, and the wave of rubber planting caught the



COOL BUT REMUNERATIVE OCCUPATION OF COOLIE WOMEN

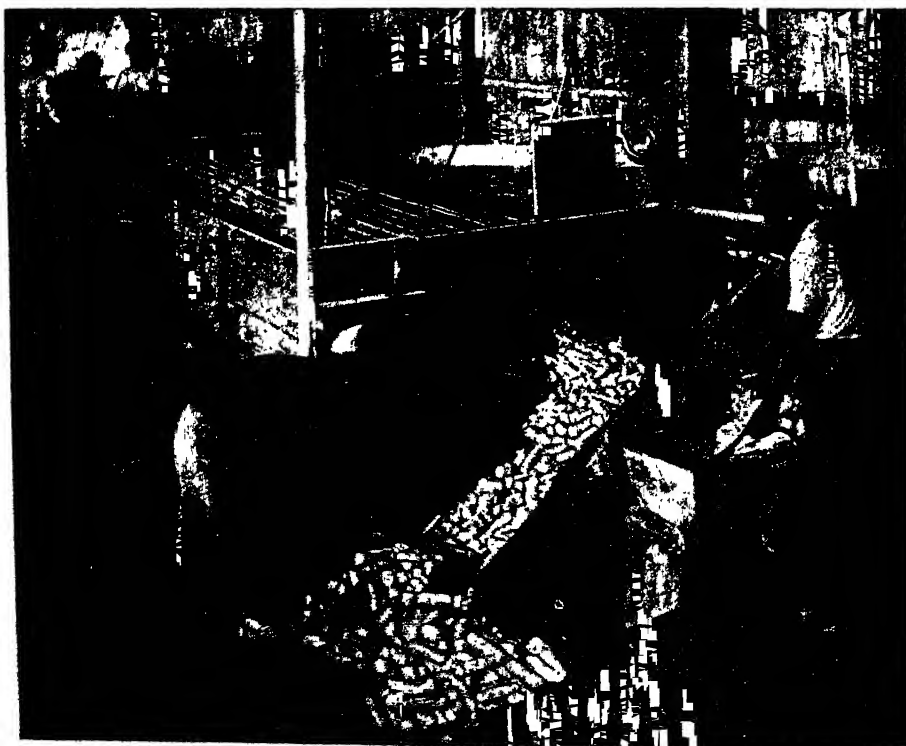
Chinese women obtain fair livelihoods by re-panning and re-washing the "tailings," or refuse heaps of tin-bearing sand, or by sifting the beds of the streams flowing from the mines. Standing in the stream, they scoop up some gravel, wash and pick it, and put aside the residue—perhaps a thimbleful of tin ore. Tin-washing is an industry in itself, and good Chinese washers are valuable acquisitions to a mine

Photo, Malay States Agency



NURTURING THE TAPIOCA-YIELDING PLANT IN MALAYA

Tapioca is a farinaceous substance obtained from the starch of the cassava or manioc plant, a native of South America. Cuttings of this perennial herb are planted at short distances apart, and soon grow to a height of several feet. The yam-like tubers form underneath the ground and usually reach maturity in a little more than a year, when they are uprooted and detached from the stalks



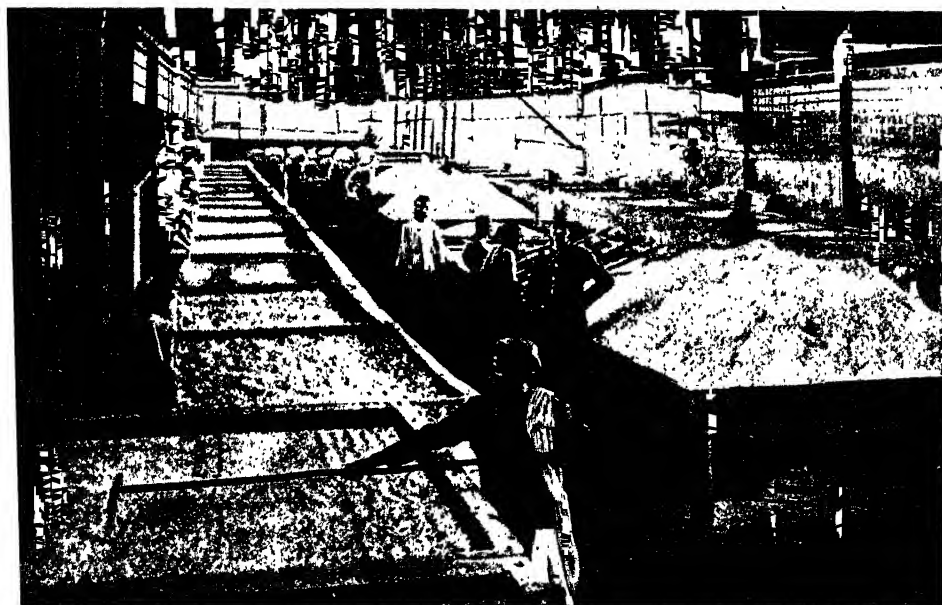
MALAYS CONVERTING POISONOUS ROOTS INTO NUTRITIOUS FOOD

In the factory the manioc roots are peeled and passed through a cylindrical machine in order to extract by pressure the bitter, highly poisonous juice. The roots are then reduced to powder which is placed in vats and mixed with water. A plentiful supply of water is an important requisite in the preparation of tapioca, for much depends upon its being thoroughly clean



MANY HANDS MAKE LIGHT WORK WHEN SIFTING TAPIOCA STARCH

After the juice of the root has been extracted by pressure the residue is carefully dried and sifted, and then baked in pans or on hot plates over a slow fire, thus freeing the flake entirely from the hydrocyanic or prussic acid that it contains. This exposure to heat causes a partial rupture of the starch granules which finally agglomerate into little irregular pellets



TAPIOCA IN FINISHED STATE, READY FOR CULINARY PURPOSES

During the heating process a constant stirring of the cassava starch is necessary. The agglomerated pellets, when cooled, become hard and translucent, and in this condition form the tapioca of commerce. It is interesting to compare these pictures with those on pages 490 to 493, where the primitive methods of the Amazon Indians in the preparation of manioc are illustrated



WILD MEN OF THE WOODS

The Jakuns, with their kinsfolk the Sakais and Semangs, may be regarded as the pygmies of the Malay Peninsula. Formerly they lived entirely aloof in the recesses of the forests, but latterly have associated more freely with settled communities

Photo, Smithsonian Institution

Chinese, who opened large estates of their own, or invested in locally-formed companies. While the well-to-do became owners, many of the labouring class left the mines for the plantations, where they earned higher wages with less effort. There are a few European owners and managers of tin mines worked with machinery on scientific principles, but with these exceptions mining in Malaya is in the hands of Chinese.

Though tin mining and rubber growing give employment to the great bulk of the Chinese population, these industrious people are the principal shopkeepers

and contractors; while Straits-born and Malay States-born Chinese, educated in the schools of the Colony and the Malay States, fill many subordinate posts in the Government service. As intelligent, hardworking, honest citizens of British Malaya, easy and pleasant to deal with, and loyal to the Government of their birth or adoption, the Chinese have won a deservedly high reputation, and their contribution to the public revenues is far higher than that of any other race.

Last, there are the Malays, most important as the real people of the country. They are the owners of the soil, whose numbers have, through unknown generations, waxed and waned, and they have lived their primitive and often picturesque lives hidden from the world, desiring nothing so much as to be left alone in undisputed possession of their beautiful country. While foreigners—barring a few thousands of adventurous Chinese—knew nothing of these people, perpetual

strife and disease so reduced their numbers that in several states they were approaching extinction. In 1874, for the protection of the British Settlements and at the earnest request of several of the Malay chiefs, the then Governor of the Straits Colony departed from the old policy of non-interference, and took steps which led to the appointment of British Residents to advise the Malay rulers in the development and administration, first of the western states, and, later, of all the states south of Siam, excepting only Patani. The Malay's characteristics are, in a

measure, the reflection of his environment. He is suave and courteous, like the zephyr which so constantly stirs the leaves of his orchard as he sits idly dreaming in the sunshine on the bank of one of his many beautiful and clear-watered rivers. In rare cases he is dangerous and desperate like the Sumatra whirlwind, which rises suddenly and in a space of minutes destroys everything in its path. That is the state of mind which leads to *meng-âmok*, a form of homicidal mania in which the demented one neither gives nor asks for quarter. Fortunately, this phase is rare, and every year it seems to grow less frequent, possibly because early signs of a tendency to mania are noticed now and steps are taken to place the subject of them under control. Indeed, this curious state of frenzy is only mentioned here because the old tradition was that all Malays were liable to *meng-âmok*, and that it was common among and peculiar to that people.

In many ways the Malay differs widely from other Easterns. The reason may be that, until recently, he lived apart and saw no foreigners except Chinese, and those only in a few mines or villages near the coast. What made him the innate gentleman he is would be hard to say, for the real origin of the Malay race is unknown, though there are strong probabilities that the people who in the course of centuries have spread over Sumatra, Java, the Malay Peninsula and Archipelago, came originally from India. Life in or on the borders of pathless jungles infested by dangerous wild beasts made him a sportsman;



STURDY WIVES OF A PYGMY RACE

A wild, primitive race of Negritos, the Jakuns have been driven from pillar to post by the more masterful Malay. Their women-folk now frequently intermarry with the Malays, and the Jakun population is slowly but surely dying out

Photo, Smithsonian Institution

and the use of rivers and the sea as his only means of getting about in comparative comfort made him a most skilful boatman and a marvellous swimmer and diver.

His main characteristic is an objection to continuous hard work; the climate and the soil encourage him in the belief that life can be supported with little effort, and he accepts the facts. In a climate where it is never really cold, where the means of making a wood fire are at hand, and where the materials for a suitable dwelling can be easily collected at small expense, life for the unambitious is never really hard for

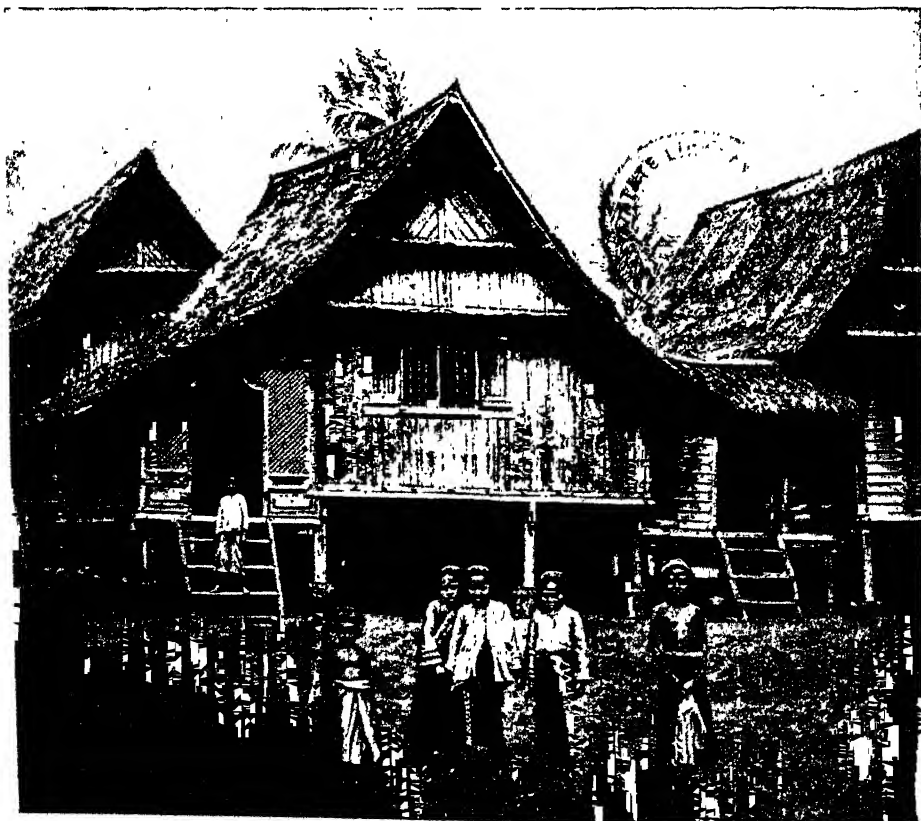
BRITISH EMPIRE IN ASIA

those in health. An acre or two of rice, less than that of orchard, and a river which supplies all the water needed and fish as well, make anything like starvation impossible. With a mean temperature of about 85 degrees, two garments for men or women—often only one—and none for children, keep down the cost of clothing. Malays are Mahomedans and do not drink intoxicants, but they smoke tobacco in the form of native or imported cigarettes, and that is almost their only luxury. The above applies only to the poorest class, though nearly all are landowners. They cultivate the soil in a very rude way, grow rice and coconuts and the many and excellent Malay fruits, and if there is a surplus they sell it and buy better clothes and little luxuries. Those who

live on the coast are skilful fishermen, and for the rest, a few keep small shops, or do odd jobs, at which they earn good wages by a short but violent effort.

The Malay is a strong, well-built, pleasant-looking person of charming manners, and when he feels inclined he can perform miracles of effort and endurance. Money does not often induce him to this endeavour, but the sporting instinct, or the desire to please someone he likes or respects, will bring out all his best qualities. To British men with wide sympathies the Malay is a very lovable person when they know him and he knows them.

The Malay upper classes are the same, only they have ambitions. They like office and titles and money, and all that it can buy. They are often highly



MALAY HOUSE ON PILES AND SOME OF ITS YOUTHFUL INHABITANTS
Malay houses are elevated some few feet off the ground and made accessible by steps. Every small house is divided into three parts with a narrow veranda in front. Strangers seldom pass beyond this veranda. Tacked on behind is a small room used as a kitchen; through the interstices in its plank floor the careless Malays throw rice skimmings, fishbones, and other refuse

Photo, M. S. Nakajima



COMMON COOKHOUSE IN A MALAY UP-COUNTRY VILLAGE

There is often a little shed in the village compound that shelters a fireplace and serves as the communal kitchen. Here is stored a motley collection of cooking utensils, chief among them being the cauldrons used by the Malay women to make their favourite sweet cakes of jaggery—a sugar obtained by inspissation from the sap of the palm trees that grow around

intelligent; almost always pleasant companions, hospitable, open-handed, and, when young, very extravagant. Like their womenfolk, they are fond of smart clothes and all sorts of entertainments, Malay and European. There is as much love-making, legitimate and otherwise, among the Malays as elsewhere in the East, and it leads to the same tragedies and comedies as in other parts of the world. Though the Malays

are Mahomedans, they are neither very strict in religious observances nor very bigoted in regard to other faiths. Their women have considerable liberty, and that is fortunate, for Malay women have attractions of which a gift for clever talk and a pretty wit are perhaps the chief. They have influence, too, even outside their own circle, and it is a great privilege and an education for either a European or a Malay to be on



MALAY STATES ABORIGINES EQUIPPED FOR THE CHASE

In former years the Sakais kept strictly to the mountains, where they found protection from the marauding Malay. Wild and untamed, they shunned the stranger, and were very little better than the savage animals amongst which they dwelt. Recently, finding that their persecution had ceased, many have come down and settled in the lower valleys, where they are acquiring the rudiments of civilization and the delights of opium smoking.

terms of friendship with a great Malay lady. Malay children, especially the boys, are often most attractive, both in appearance and in manners ; it is a sad fact that the almost angelic atmosphere by which these children are surrounded is transient, and seldom remains with them beyond the age of fifteen.

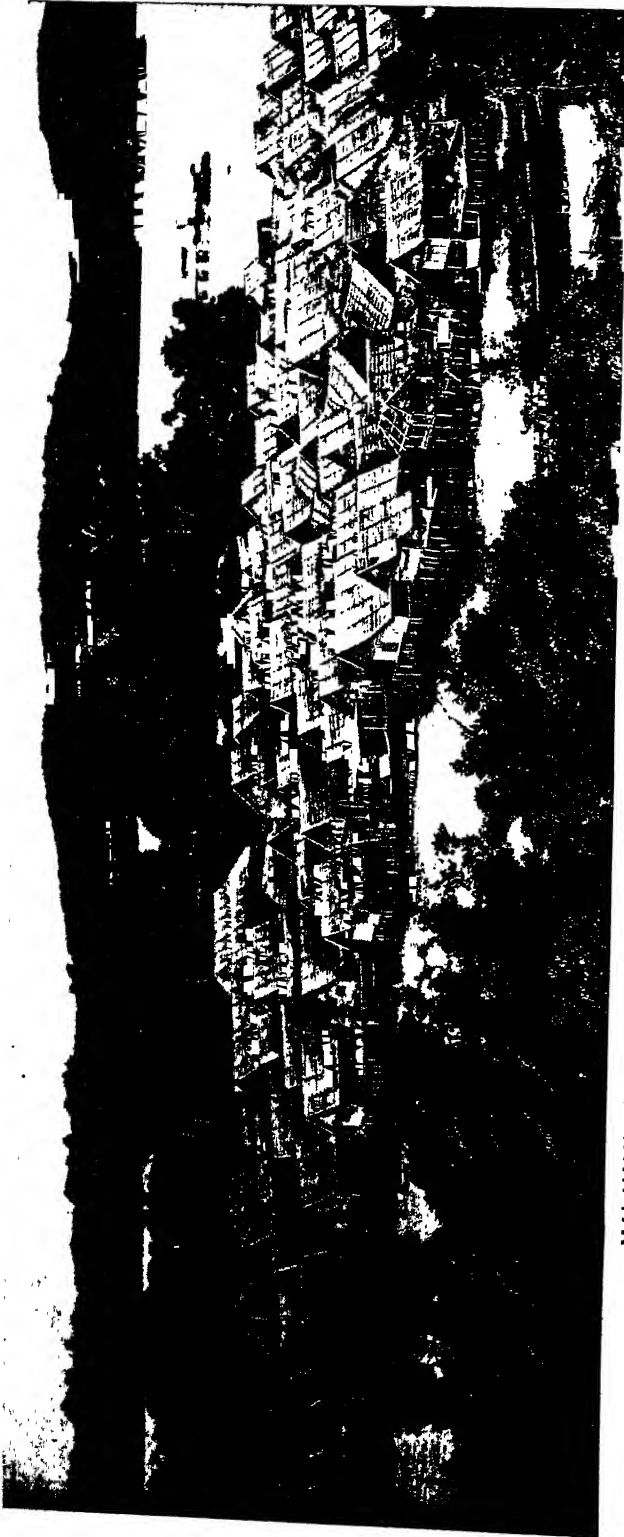
To describe adequately the arts of the Malays, men and women, would need a volume. As workers in gold, silver, and steel, the men have been pre-eminent among Far-Eastern people, and a few may still be found in Perak, Trengganu, Kelantan, and Kedah. As weavers of silk or silk and gold fabrics, the women



DESCENDANTS OF THE ABORIGINAL INHABITANTS OF MALAYA

The Sakais are a pure, unmixed branch of the Melanesian race, and quite distinct from the Malays. Among the Perak hills they are still to be found roaming at large, trapping and eating any kind of animal, and never without the long, wooden blow-pipe, or "sumpitan," through which they blow poison-tipped arrows. Their stone axes closely resemble similar implements in use in the Stone Age

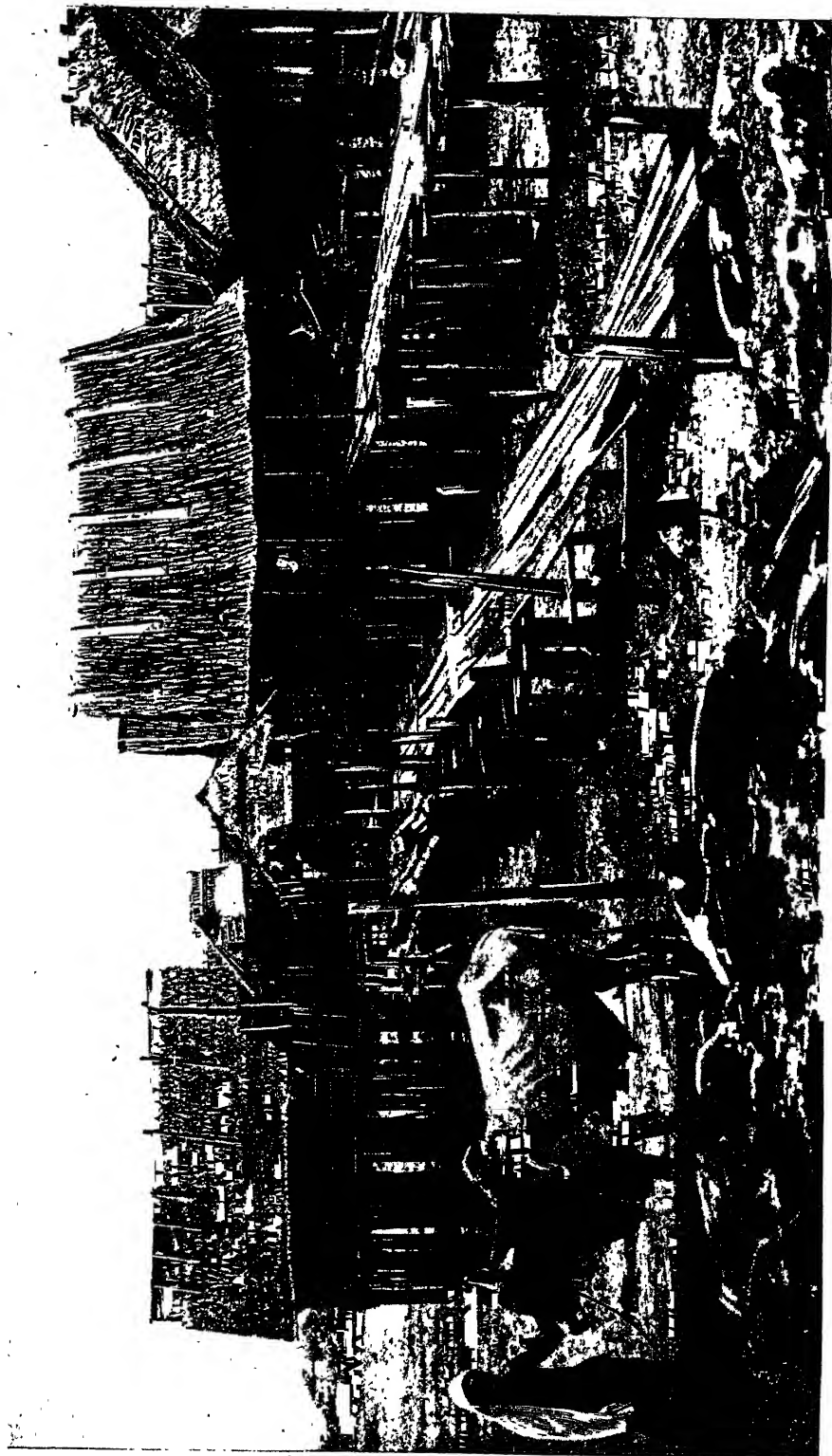
Photo, Miss C. J. Hunter



MALAYAN NATIVE VILLAGE BUILT ON PILES DRIVEN INTO THE RIVER-BED

Some of the Malay coast villages present a picturesque appearance, the huts—like so many compact little dolls'—houses—straggling off the land straight into the water, as though they had walked there on stilts. "Here fishes swim to the breakfast-table" is the proud boast of the inhabitants of this watery retreat, and they add that they are the cleanest people in the world, for they have "merely to step out of bed to plunge into the bath."

of Trengganu, Kelantan, Pahang, and Johore are still unrivalled, though it is necessary to go to the houses of the Rajas to find the best of them. Kedah is famous for the exquisitely fine boxes and baskets plaited from the inner fibre of the pandanus leaf, and coarser varieties of the same are made in Malacca. The smiths of Patani and Trengganu used to be famous throughout Malaya for their spears and the kris, with its snake-like blade, while Perak and Kedah produced less warlike implements. To-day there is no market for these wares, and the Malay is probably losing his gift for beautiful form and marvellous colour schemes. The potential worker in precious metals is probably a school-master or a Government clerk, while the man who would have produced the finest specimens of native weapons is driving a



SIMPLICITY AND INGENUITY COMBINE IN THE PILE AND THATCH ARCHITECTURE OF MALAY CREEK DWELLERS

Malays live by preference near water and build their fishing villages in this rough and ready style. Thanks to the countless firmly-planted stakes, the huts are of amazing durability, access being gained to them by means of a succession of planks ranged so as to form bridge-paths. Other houses are built out over the water and supported only by stout piles, while along the coast there are small homes which have one foot on land and one in the sea

Photo, G. R. Lambert & Co.



MALAY NATIVE COLLECTING THE SWEET WINE OF THE TODDY PALM

Equipped with cans and quiver of primitive tools, he is in readiness to collect his favourite toddy—the sap or juice that flows from the incised spathes of certain palm trees. Toddy is widely used in Malaya as a beverage, and in India is employed instead of yeast; when boiled it yields jaggery, or palm sugar and sugar candy; fermented and distilled, it yields the spirit known as arrack



THE SIMPLE LIFE AS SEEN IN A MALAY VILLAGE

A Malay cottage is usually the embodiment of untidiness, but there has been a marked improvement of late years in respect of hygiene. No furniture cumbers the interior, nor is any attempt made at decoration. The plank floor is covered with rush-woven mats, and the well-ventilated walls are of interlaced strips of bark. Ducks and fowls wander about the courtyard, and broody hens sit on nests beneath the houses

motor-car. If, ages ago, the ancestors of the Malays found their way to the peninsula from India, by way of Sumatra, there are a few hundreds of aborigines still occupying the remotest fastnesses of those forests and hills which have escaped the rubber planter, the railway, or other sign of the pushing white man. There are at least two distinct tribes or species of these wild people: one distinctly negrito, short, dark people, with woolly heads, and the other taller, fairer, with long, slightly waving hair. The former are called Semang and the latter Sakai. Both peoples lead a wandering life,

living in leaf shelters, in trees or in caves while waiting for the harvest of some field of hill rice which they have planted. They have their own languages and customs, and in neither case is there any resemblance to those of the Malay. Spirit worshippers, their burial ceremonies include provision of food and drink for the soul to feed on after death, and the Sakais further erect a little house on piles beside the grave for its occupation. They are very timid, quite harmless, and, except as a study for scientists, their presence in the peninsula is almost unrecognized.



CHILDREN BORN WITH SILVER SPOONS IN THEIR MOUTHS

Exquisite silk and satin fabrics are woven in many of the Malay States; many houses possess looms, and weaving is a favourite occupation of the women of all classes. The children of high-class and prosperous parents wear sarongs and jackets of beautifully coloured and finely woven materials, and quite small girls possess their own sets of jewels, consisting of many and varied precious ornaments

British Empire in Asia

VI. Planting Outposts of Empire in the Eastern Seas

By Demetrius C. Boulger

Author of "The Story of India"

THE quest of the Indies—the vaguely defined region whence had come from ancient days the silks and the spices, the gems and the treasure, that reached the Mediterranean overland through Syria and Egypt—was the dream and aspiration of all the maritime nations of Europe throughout the fifteenth century, and to Henry the Navigator of Portugal must be assigned the credit of the first successes in the search before 1450. The great triumphs of his two fellow countrymen—Bartholomew Diaz in 1486 in discovering, and Vasco da Gama in 1497 in rounding, the Cape of Good Hope—were the natural sequel to the Navigator's voyages along the west coast of Africa. But da Gama's discoveries were not confined to the sea. He was the first European to reach, in a European ship, the mainland of India in the year 1498.

While the Portuguese looked southwards for the solution of the problem, it was natural that other peoples should turn their attention to the West, and some time before the Portuguese success two Italians had independently conceived the idea that the route should be sought westwards across the great ocean of the classical authors. One, Christopher Columbus, asked and obtained the patronage of the King of Spain in his design; the other, John Cabot, obtained that of Henry VII. of England.

The Great Quest of the Indies

The results of their contemporaneous voyages were not less remarkable and epoch-making than da Gama's, for they discovered the great continent of America—Columbus in his four voyages between 1492 and 1502; John Cabot in his single voyage to Newfoundland in 1497. But so far as the quest of the Indies was involved they had failed. Portugal, and after 1530 her associate Spain, held the monopoly of trade and dominion in Asia, which da Gama had acquired for them, until the close of the sixteenth century.

Material success rested then in the first place and for many years with the Portuguese. Their great Viceroy, Albuquerque, took Goa in 1510, and made it the centre of a dominion which extended from Hormuz, in the Persian Gulf, to the coast of China. They not only enjoyed possession, but they denied access to

others, straining the prerogative that discovery meant exclusive possession to the extreme limits of arbitrary power. After the incorporation of Portugal with Spain, this policy of monopoly became intensified, and Philip II. demanded the punishment of the English adventurers who had begun to encroach on what he called his "divine rights." Then it was that Queen Elizabeth made her proud retort that "What Spaniards did it was lawful for Englishmen to do also, since the sea and the air were the common property of all men."

Singeing the Spaniard's Beard

The Portuguese and Spaniards with their formidable guardships closed the gate to the East by the Cape of Good Hope, but they could not prevent English mariners of the West Country from sallying forth to levy toll on the ships that carried the rich cargoes from the Indies, West and East. The toll was levied not merely on the high seas, but in the ports of Spain herself. These proceedings were designated "singeing the Spaniard's beard," but the first event that convinced Englishmen that they would yet acquire their full share of the trade and the dominion in spite of their rivals' veto was Drake's circumnavigation of the world in 1577-80.

Although he did not touch India or any other part of the Asiatic mainland, he brought back full accounts of the Celebes and Java, and in the hold of his ship, the *Golden Hind*, lay over a million pounds' worth of plunder as proof of what might be won. What Francis Drake began, Thomas Cavendish continued. In 1587 he flew St. George's Cross for the first time at the mouth of the Canton river, and bearded the Portuguese in the roadstead of their Far Eastern emporium of Macao. Yet these episodes might have borne small fruit if Spain had not submitted all her pretensions to the hazard of a single throw by the invincible Armada, and lost them with its destruction. The true starting point of the rise of the British Empire in Asia, then, was the overthrow of the Spanish Armada in 1588.

Having thus cleared the way, it only remained for the English to take advantage of the Cape route. But their expeditions did not begin well. In 1591 the first three ships sailed, but never returned. The second

BRITISH EMPIRE IN ASIA

expedition of 1596 was even more unfortunate. Fitted out at the expense of Sir Robert Dudley, and bearing a letter from Queen Elizabeth to the Emperor of China, nothing whatever was heard of its fate. It may be noted that China, rather than India, was the first objective of the English trader, and the main desire of the merchant adventurers of London long continued to be to gain a footing in the Spice Islands. That desire was intensified when the Dutch, who had taken advantage of the great naval victory of 1588 to establish themselves in Java and found their own East India Company, rather ungratefully doubled the price of pepper in 1599.

Rise of the Merchant Adventurers

The immediate reply of the City of London was to form an Association of Merchant Adventurers. Queen Elizabeth gave her approbation to the undertaking, and on December 31st, 1600, granted them a Royal Charter as the London East India Company. Their first expedition, composed of five ships, under the command of Captain James Lancaster, did not sail till February, 1601, and its principal success was to establish the first English factory in Asia at Bantam, in the island of Java. It also established friendly relations with the King of Achin, the northern province of Sumatra.

In the first stage of its activities the Company concentrated on the island groups rather than on the mainland and, although India figured prominently in its title, it was to Java and the Celebes that the adventurers mainly looked as their field of enterprise. A second voyage proved equally successful, and a close alliance was formed with the King of Bantam. The head of the Bantam factory became known as the President of the English Factories in the East Indies. But Dutch rivalry proved keen and ruthless. An English squadron was destroyed by the Hollanders off the coast of Sumatra, and the barbarous massacre of Amboyna in 1623 sullied Dutch fame. At last, in 1683, the Company, with a wider horizon opening before it in India, withdrew its agents and property to Surat.

Britain's Foot Planted in India

Before that year, however, it had made its first appearance in India. While the mariners had been exploring the seas, more than one Englishman had reached India overland. In 1583 Ralph Fitch, of the Levant Company, travelling by the Euphrates Valley, and in a native ship from the Persian Gulf, reached Goa, where the Portuguese promptly locked him up. Having succeeded in escaping, he continued his tour, visited Bengal and

Burma, and returned to London in 1591. The direct sequel of his tour was the dispatch of the two missions sent by James I. under Captain Hawkins in 1608 and Sir Thomas Roe in 1616 to the Court of the Great Mogul. As the consequence of the earlier of those missions, the company acquired its first factory in India, at Surat, in 1612, quickly followed by subordinate ones at Anjengo, Masulipatam, and Madras. The first sovereign possession was, however, the island of Bombay, which Charles II. received as the dowry of his bride, Catherine of Braganza, and to that acquisition must be traced the origin of Britain's secular power in India.

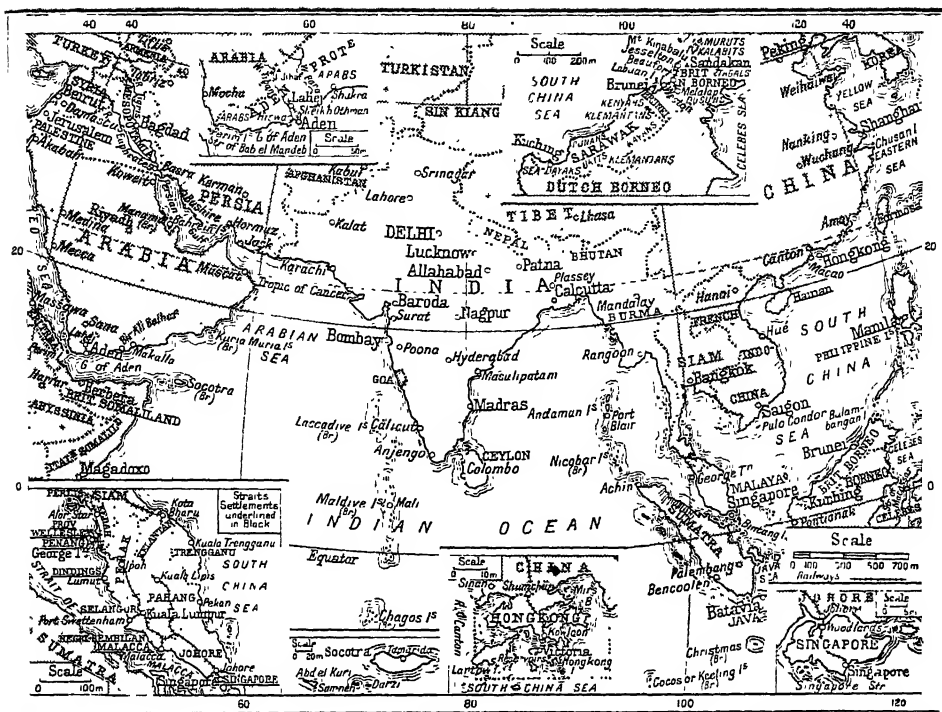
The Company's main efforts, however, were still directed to the acquisition of insular stations, rather than of permanent footholds on the mainland. Factories were established at Bencoolen in Sumatra, Banjermasin in Borneo, Pulo Condor and Chusan in the China Sea, and Hirado in Japan. One after the other these stations were abandoned or dropped, generally through the hostility or jealousy of the Dutch, but the hope of tapping the trade of China remained undiminished.

During fifty years more or less vain attempts were made to secure permission to trade at Canton, and at the end of the seventeenth century the only British factory in China was at Amoy. By an Imperial edict in Kanghi's reign, foreign traders were allowed to visit Canton and Amoy, but in the year 1755 this privilege was further limited by the Emperor Keen Lung to Canton alone. At that date all Britain's efforts to establish herself in any sort of security at Canton had completely failed owing to the unfriendly intrigues of the Portuguese at Macao.

Chinese Hostility to Foreign Traders

Lord Macartney's Embassy was sent to Peking in 1792 with the special object of obtaining better facilities for trade at Canton, but any improvement attributable to that effort disappeared when the British occupied Macao in 1808, believing that it was a Portuguese possession instead of a mere leasehold. The Chinese authorities boycotted Britain for violating their territory, and the British admiral sailed away without firing a shot after inspecting the Bogue forts, the Chinese defences in the Bocca Tigris. Britain's evacuation of Macao and the withdrawal of her ships left her merchants at liberty to come to the best terms they could with the Hoppo, or trade commissioner.

In 1834 the East India Company lost its monopoly of the China trade. Lord Napier was sent out by the Government to superintend the trade with China, in the foolish belief that the Chinese authorities were hostile to the Company rather than



BRITISH EMPIRE IN ASIA AND ITS PEOPLES

to trade with foreigners. He accordingly hastened to Canton, persuaded that he would be welcomed as the representative of the British Government. He was quickly disillusioned, for the Chinese, conceiving that his mission was as much political as commercial, refused to hold any relations at all with him, and suspended the trade until he had taken himself back to Macao. At this critical juncture two considerations weighed uppermost with the Chinese authorities: the import of opium and the export of silver through the adverse balance of trade. Shortly after Lord Napier's departure they took the law into their own hands and destroyed the opium in the British factory. The merchants were compelled to leave Canton and find what shelter they could in Macao. Their residence being deemed perilous to the Portuguese after the outbreak of hostilities, they removed to the island of Hongkong, opposite Macao.

This removal, regarded as only a temporary measure in 1839, proved highly beneficial. Hongkong possessed an excellent natural harbour for ships, and the climate was salubrious. After the destruction of the Bogue Forts in January, 1841, the Chinese authorities at Canton were constrained to cede possession of the island to Britain by a Convention, confirmed later by the Central Government in one of the Articles of the Treaty of Nanking, in August, 1842.

The island of Hongkong, in the estuary of the Canton River, is one of the Ladrões—a name given to the group by the Portuguese, because they were the haunt of pirates—and lies about ninety miles east of the city of Canton. In 1860, by the Treaty of Peking, the area of the original grant was increased by the cession on the same terms of Kowloon on the mainland, and still further in June, 1898, but on different terms, when a lease for ninety-nine years was made to Britain of a large tract of Chinese territory on the mainland, including the Isle of Lantau. This grant was the more important because it included maritime rights over the waters at the back of Hongkong. Various schemes are in active progress for the development of this territory. Land is being reclaimed from the sea, a new town has been built at Kowloon, the needs of the boating and fishing population have been provided for. The population of the settlement is rapidly increasing both naturally and by immigration from China.

The capital of the island of Hongkong is the city of Victoria, beautifully situated on the shore, and along the range of hills that look down on the magnificent natural harbour. Of the total European population more than half is British; of the remainder not less than two-thirds are Portuguese. On account of its strategic position, natural advantages for trade,

BRITISH EMPIRE IN ASIA

and as a naval station, Hongkong is Britain's most important possession in the Far East.

Britain's connexion with and interest in Borneo, the largest island in the world, after Australia and New Guinea, goes back to the very beginning of her enterprises in the East. The factories at Sukadana, 1610, and Banjarmasin, 1614, were among the first established by the Company, but after many vicissitudes, including their transfer to Balambangan, a small island off its north coast, the attempt to make Borneo the head centre of these activities was abandoned. It is true that during his Governorship of the Dutch possessions in 1811-15, Sir Stamford Raffles sought to stimulate British interest in the island, but his views found no support. Still, they bore fruit eventually, for when Raja Brooke sailed for Brunei in 1839, it was, he declared, for the purpose of carrying out the programme of Stamford Raffles. His ostensible mission was to aid the Sultan Muda against his rebellious subjects, but he aimed at smashing the power of the Dayak pirates as the preliminary to assured peace.

The White Raja of Sarawak

His success in the first part of his task was complete and immediate, and in reward for his services the Sultan bestowed upon him the district of Sarawak in 1843. His final triumph over the Dayaks was not accomplished till six years later when, with the cooperation of Sir Harry Keppel, he sank a hundred prahus in a single well-contested action. In his life Raja Brooke met with much detraction, but his work remains undisturbed, and even increased by subsequent additions of territory, eighty years after he laid the corner-stone of what may be termed the greatest individual achievement in State-making of the nineteenth century. In 1888 the second Raja of the Brooke family accepted the British protectorate for the external relations of his State, which with that qualification remains independent and autonomous.

Britain Acquires the Key to the Far East

In 1848 the island of Labuan on the north-west coast of Borneo was declared a Crown colony, and it was long regarded as one of the most important British coaling stations in those seas. In 1878 Sir Alfred Dent obtained an important concession in the province of Sabah from the Sultan of Sulu. This and other concessions were incorporated in a company which received a Royal Charter in 1882 under the title of the North Borneo Company. It was granted and still maintains administrative autonomy, which was only qualified in 1888 to the extent of placing its external relations under the

control of the British Government, as was done at the same time in regard to Sarawak.

Another great island of the Eastern Seas, Sumatra, was the scene of some of Britain's earliest efforts to expand her trade and influence, but she withdrew from it by treaty in 1824 with the Dutch on the principle of an exchange of territory. She surrendered the island and acquired Malacca, thus placing her in undisturbed possession of the opposite mainland, to which she had been strangely indifferent. Her first possession there, Penang, had been acquired in 1785 in peculiar circumstances. Captain Francis Light, a naval explorer, had married the King of Kedah's daughter, and received this island as her dowry. Wisely thinking that the charge was too heavy for him, he transferred his acquisition to the East India Company, being appointed in return its first Governor, whereupon the settlement was renamed Prince of Wales' Island in honour of the future George IV.

Before Malacca passed permanently into the hands of Britain in 1824—she had twice occupied it temporarily during the Napoleonic epoch—the outstanding step of occupying the island of Singapore at the extreme southern point of the Malay peninsula had assured not merely the future of her trade with the Far East, but the predominance of her influence over the whole of Malaysia. The key to the Far East then passed into British hands, to the lasting fame of its courageous and far-seeing founder, Sir Stamford Raffles.

Romance of Imperial Expansion

The circumstances in which Singapore was acquired belong to the romance of Imperial expansion. It was a race between the British and the Dutch, who were already installed in the island of Rhio, and it was won for Britain by Raffles in despite of dull officials at Calcutta and duller politicians in London. For some years its development was crabbed by the local jealousies of Penang and Malacca, but all the time its founder remained unshaken in his optimism, and to-day no one doubts that Singapore, commanding the sea route to China and the Pacific, supplies an essential joint in the framework of Britain's world system. The successive dates of the transactions connected with its acquisition were as follows: Union Jack hoisted by Sir Stamford Raffles January 29th, 1819; concession acquired from the Sultan of Johore by Sir Stamford June 26th, 1819; and a formal cession with all sovereign rights of the island and part of the mainland by treaty with the same prince signed August 2nd, 1824.

From the time of its occupation down to the Indian Mutiny, Singapore was

BRITISH EMPIRE IN ASIA

joined with Penang and Malacca in a single Governorship as the Straits Settlements, and formed part of the possessions of the East India Company. After its fall they were still subject to the Indian Government. But in 1867 it was decided to transfer them to the control of the Colonial Office as a Crown colony. The Straits Settlements are now composed of Singapore, Penang (including Wellesley province and the Dindings), and Malacca, to which were added in 1886 the Cocos Islands, in 1889 Christmas Island, and in 1907 Labuan.

British control of the entire Malay peninsula is established beyond dispute and in a formal manner by clear conventions and treaties. The peninsula is divided among two distinct groups of sultans and other chiefs.

The first group, termed the Federated Malay States, is composed of the four Sultanates of Perak, Selangor, Negri Sembilan, and Pahang. These states had been pacified by Sir Andrew Clarke in 1874, but the formal treaty assigning them the positions they were to fill in the Federation was not signed until July, 1896. By that treaty a Resident-General resides at Kuala Lumpur, and a Resident in each of the capitals of the Sultanates. The development in the prosperity of this

region has been unsurpassed in any other quarter of the world since 1890. The revenue has more than doubled, and the population now does not fall short of a million.

The second group is designated the Non-Federated Malay States. Of these there are five, viz., Johore, Kedah, Perlis, Kelantan, and Trengganu. With the first of these Britain has had relations since the occupation of Singapore, and on several occasions her local authorities had occasion to intervene in the affairs of the ruling family. The position was regularised by a treaty in 1885 which was supplemented by another in 1914. In regard to Johore the situation was not complicated by any outside pretensions.

Over the four others Siam claimed suzerain rights. With Kedah Britain had more or less continuous relations after the acquisition of Penang, but the others lay outside her influence, until the development of Pahang brought her to the eastern coast. After long and delicate negotiations Siam ceded her rights of suzerainty over these states to Britain by treaty in 1909, thus putting an end to all risk of complications and disputes. Britain then assumed the position towards them from which Siam had withdrawn. The Sultans were left undisturbed in their respective autonomies,



FRESH NUTS FOR SALE IN KAJANG

As here exposed for sale the familiar, hard, woody-shelled coconuts are still within the thick, fibrous husks, twelve to eighteen inches in length, in which the fruit matures in bunches of ten or more. The kernel and the milky juice of the nuts are important items of the native dietary

Photo, Malay States Agency

BRITISH EMPIRE IN ASIA

but they agreed to receive the assistance of a British official under the designation of a General Adviser.

We reach another and a different scene in the coast of Arabia, with three distinct sea fronts, towards the Red Sea, the Indian Ocean, and the Persian Gulf. The Persian Gulf represents one of the most fruitful scenes of British activity for three centuries. It began with the Shirley brothers, who helped the great Shah Abbas to expel the Portuguese from Hormuz. In the nineteenth century Britain cleared it of pirates, and then completed her task by aiding navigation with lighthouses and buoys. In the twentieth she has established a Persian Gulf Protectorate which some day or other will serve as a rallying point for the Middle East. The bulk of the trade is already in British hands. The Political Resident at Bushire is the decisive authority in all questions affecting navigation and piracy.

The Islands of Bahrein, the reputed original home of the Phoenicians, may be regarded as the centre of Britain's power, which reposes on naval supremacy. This group of eight islets lies halfway up the gulf, on the Arab coast, and is ruled by a Sheikh, who is a vassal of Britain. His nominal capital is Manama, where an Agent resides, but the Sheikh himself lives on the minor island of Muharrak.

"Seas sow'd with Orient Pearls"

Bahrein is the centre of the pearl fishing industry of the gulf, and the bulk of the exports, nearly a million sterling, are sent to Bombay. In addition, Bahrein possesses a vigorous local industry in boat-building. It is also the principal distributing centre for goods from Bombay to the interior of Arabia. Several old treaties with the chiefs along the coast

from Koweit to Muscat ensure to Britain the right of intervention in their internal quarrels and for the general peace. Under these privileges the Persians were prevented from seizing Bahrein in 1869, and the Turks from laying hands on Koweit in 1875 and since.

There remains Aden, with its dependencies. An Arab station and place of call long before Europeans appeared in the Eastern seas, Aden was discovered but not utilised by the Portuguese, although they found there the remains of artificial water reservoirs going back over 3,000 years. In 1799 Britain had occupied the islet of Perim in the Straits of Bab-el-Mandeb as a temporary measure in connexion with the expedition to Egypt, but she ignored Aden on that occasion.

Safeguarding Aden's Outward Walls

When she did take possession of it, in 1839, the idea was to turn it into a fortified naval station and place of call for her men-of-war. This was speedily accomplished, and Aden was rendered fairly secure against naval attack. When events made it necessary to look to the land side, she concluded an arrangement in April, 1905, with the Porte, demarcating the frontiers, and at the same time determining the boundary of the hinterland from Sheikh Murad, on the Red Sea, to the Bana River and the Great Desert.

A second convention in 1914 prolonged this boundary through the desert to a point on the shore of the Persian Gulf, opposite Bahrein. In 1857 Perim was formally and finally annexed, and the Kuria Muria Isles, ceded by the Sultan of Muscat, were added to the group administered by the Political Resident at Aden, who is nominated by the Government of India.

BRITISH EMPIRE IN ASIA: FACTS AND FIGURES

The Countries

Consists of Aden, Perim, Lahej, Socotra, Bahrein Islands, British Borneo, Hongkong, Straits Settlements, and Malay States. India, with the Andaman, Nicobar, and Laccadive Islands; Burma, a major province of India; and Ceylon, with Maldivé Islands, are described elsewhere.

Exclusive of India and Burma (area 1,802,657 square miles) and Ceylon (area 25,481 square miles), total area is upwards of 140,000 square miles. Population of India and Burma (1921), 319,075,312; Ceylon, 4,500,669; of areas here dealt with, about 4,900,000.

Government

Aden and its dependencies (Perim, Lahej, Socotra, and Kuria Muria Islands) are Protectorates with Political Resident; Socotra having a native sheikh. The Bahrein Islands have native sheikh under British protection. British North Borneo is a Protectorate with Governor under administration of British North Borneo Company. Brunei has a native sultan. Sarawak is an

independent state under British protection with an English raja (Raja Brooke). British Agent for North Borneo and Sarawak and High Commissioner for Brunei is the Governor of the Straits Settlements. Hongkong and the Straits Settlements are Crown Colonies, with a Governor and Executive and Legislative Councils. The Malay States have native rulers with British High Commissioner and Residents; Johore has sultan, assisted by British Adviser and Executive and Legislative Councils.

Aden and Red Sea Territories

ADEN. Area of Settlement and Protectorate about 9,000 square miles; town, 75 square miles; Perim Island, 5 square miles; population of Aden and Perim, 54,923. Fortified coaling station; transhipment trade with adjacent coasts. Exports 1919-20, £6,517,004; imports, £7,124,078.

LAHEJ. Arab town and sultanate in the Aden Protectorate, 18 miles north-west of Aden, connected by railway with Aden.

SOCOTRA. Area, 1,400 square miles; population about 12,000 (Arabs and Hindus). Industries, pastoral. Capital, Tamarida.

BRITISH EMPIRE IN ASIA

KURIA MURIA ISLANDS. Area 29 square miles. Largest Hellaniyeh. Contain guano deposits. Red Sea cable was landed here. Population a few Arabs.

Bahrain Islands

BAHRAIN ISLAND is 27 miles long by 10 miles broad; capital, Manama; population, 30,000. **MUHARRAK** is 4 miles long by about half a mile wide; chief town, Muharrak; population, 20,000. Other islands include **SITRA**, **NABI SALEH**, and the uninhabited **Jidi**, **Raka**, and **Um Nahsan**. Pearl fishery yields about £300,000 yearly; there is a fine breed of white donkeys. Population of group, about 100,000, mostly Persians and Arabs. Exports 1919-20, £946,344; imports, £1,414,423. Maria Theresa dollars (3s. 6d. to 4s.), Indian rupees and Turkish lire (about 20s.) are all in use.

British Borneo

BRITISH NORTH BORNEO. Area about 31,100 square miles; population about 227,000 (including about 400 Europeans and 30,000 Chinese); chief products, timber (1919 exports, £127,045), rubber (exports in 1919, £781,603), tobacco (leaf exports 1919, £222,261), rice, sago, spices, coconuts, camphor. Exports, 1919, £1,453,990; imports, £925,235. Chief towns, Sandakan, population about 8,000, Jesselton, Kudat, Tawau.

BRUNEI. Area about 4,000 square miles; population about 30,000; chief town, Brunei, population, 10,000. Exports, 1919, £132,000 (cutch, £35,000; coal, £35,000; rubber, £28,400); imports, £70,000.

SARAWAK. Area about 42,000 square miles; population about 600,000 (Malays, Dayaks, Kayans, Kenyahs, Muruts, and Chinese); capital, Kuching, population about 25,000; other towns, Sibiu, Rintula, Kapit, Sadong, Limbang, Kalaka. Large deposits of coal, gold, silver, antimony, mercury; petroleum oil-fields also being developed. Exports, 1919, £2,795,095 (sago flour, £495,807; pepper, £217,824; plantation rubber, £430,377; gutta jelutong, £249,622; and large quantity of liquid fuel); imports, £2,364,208. Currency as Straits Settlements.

Hongkong

Area of island 32 square miles; with Kowloon and New Territories about 391 square miles; population (1921) 622,000 (non-Chinese, about 12,500); capital, Victoria; population, 320,400; population of New Territories, about 94,000 Chinese. Exports, 1919, £103,942,934; imports, £90,651,708. Chief industries: sugar refining, shipbuilding and repairing (there are fine docks and 20,061,264 tons of shipping were entered in 1920), ropemaking, tin refining, manufacture of tobacco and cement, and deep sea fishing. Large trade in sugar, flour, rice, cotton, silks, leather, wolframite, iron and steel goods, tea, oils, matches, etc. Hongkong is headquarters of China squadron. Currency unit is dollar, worth about 3s. 8d.

Straits Settlements

Consist of Singapore island with small islands adjoining, at south-east point of the peninsula (217 square miles); Penang island off north-west coast (108 square miles); Wellesley Province on north-west mainland (280 square miles); the Dindings, including island of Pangkor and a strip on the mainland, (183 square miles) on west; Malacca on south-west coast (about 720 square miles). Also Cocos or Keeling Islands, about 700 miles south-west of Sumatra, Christmas Island, 200 miles east of Cocos Islands (about 56 square miles), and Labuan Island, about

43 miles from Brunei, North Borneo (about 28 square miles). Total area about 1,600 square miles; estimated population (1920) 876,160, consisting of 50 per cent. Chinese, 35 per cent. Malays, 10 per cent. natives of India, Europeans, etc., 5 per cent. Large disproportion of sexes, 65 per cent. male, and 35 per cent. female, due principally to fact that among Chinese only 18 per cent. are females, emigration among Chinese women being negligible. Also among natives of India and Europeans males largely exceed females. Exports, 1919, £99,320,000, include tin (about £18,000,000), rubber (about £20,000,000) gums, spices, copra, rattans, sago, gambier, tapioca, preserved pineapples, phosphates of lime; imports, £96,670,000 (rice, sugar, petroleum, cotton piece goods, coal, etc.).

SINGAPORE. Population (1921) 418,360 (about 6,000 Europeans and Americans). Chief town and seat of Government for Straits Settlements, Singapore (350,360). Harbour is one of greatest ports in the world and is port of call for shipping between Europe, India, and Far East, North Australia, and Dutch Indies. Port is free. Total of all trade (1910) about £224,190,000.

LABUAN, attached to Singapore. Population about 6,000 (mostly Malays). Exports in 1920 were £281,000 (coal, cloth, rice, sago, etc.). Victoria is a fine harbour.

COCOS OR KEELING ISLANDS, attached to Singapore, about 20 small coral islands. Population about 860. Export copra.

MALACCA, largest of Settlements, population (1921) 153,500. Total trade 1920 was £9,245,000 of which rubber exported was £5,043,000. Capital, Malacca.

PENANG OR PRINCE OF WALES ISLAND. Population (1921) 162,144. Total trade 1920 was £67,900,000 of which tin exported was about £6,875,000. Capital, George Town (101,200).

PROVINCE WELLESLEY, attached to Penang, population (1921) 130,340. Highly cultivated with many rice, rubber, and tapioca plantations.

DINDINGS. Population (1921) 11,850. Territory is undeveloped but contains fine natural harbour. Official headquarters, Lumut.

CHRISTMAS ISLAND. Population, 780. Large phosphate deposits (69,575 tons exported in 1920).

Malay States

Four are federated. **PERAK**, area 7,800 square miles; population about 494,000. **SELANGOR**, area, 3,156 square miles; population about 294,000; chief town, Kuala Lumpur, population, 80,424. **NEGRI SEMBILAN**, area 2,550 square miles; population about 130,000. **PAHANG**, area, 14,000 square miles; population about 118,700. Total area, 27,506 miles; total population (1921) 1,324,890 (upwards of 3,000 Europeans and Americans, rest Malays, Chinese, and natives of India). Exports, 1919, £32,565,762 (cultivated rubber, £22,059,244; copra, £600,434; tin and tin ore, £8,745,635; metals, £101,903; timber, £33,304). Imports, £13,866,412. There are 182,000 acres under coconuts; 955,960 tons of timber were taken from the forests in 1919.

FEDERATORY AND PROTECTED. **KEDAH** has an area of 3,800 square miles; population (1921), 338,000; capital, Alor Star, population about 12,000. **PERLIS**, area about 316 square miles; population, 32,740; capital, Kangar. **KELANTAN**, area about 5,870 square miles; population about 287,000; capital, Kota Bharu; population, 10,833. **TRENGGANU**, area about 6,000 square miles; population about 154,000. **JOHORE** (Protected State), area, 9,000 square miles; population, 282,244; capital, Johore Bahru; population, 15,312. Tin mines and rubber are important in Johore; rice, rubber, tapioca, and coconuts in Kedah; agriculture is the chief industry of Kelantan and Trengganu.



NIGHTMARE EFFECTS IN MURAL DECORATION: INTERIOR OF A MEN'S HOUSE IN THE PURARI DELTA, NEW GUINEA
 When about twelve years old the boys are sent to live in houses specially built for bachelors. In these, mats or leaves to sleep on represent the sum of the furniture, their other contents being weapons and boat-gear. Shields are ranged along the floor and on the upright posts are hung carved canoe ornaments and curios.

British Empire in Australasia

I. Island Life in the Strange South Seas

By Sir Basil Thomson, K.C.B.

Author of "South Sea Yarns," "The Fijians," etc.

The diverse peoples who inhabit those far romantic isles of the South Seas that enjoy British protection and comprise the oceanic portion of the vast British Empire in Australasia, are here described and illustrated. Separate articles on the Australian Commonwealth, New Zealand, and Tasmania will be found under their own headings

NATIVES of the Pacific Islands and New Guinea belong to three races — the Polynesian, the Melanesian, and the Micronesian. If a line were drawn north and south about the 170th degree of longitude W. the Polynesian race would be found throughout the widely scattered islands on the east of the line and the Melanesians on the west, though among the Melanesian Islands there are colonies of Polynesians, formed in historical times by castaways driven westward by the strong south-east trade wind.

How long the islands have been inhabited is as yet undetermined, but it seems certain that both Polynesians and Melanesians came from the westward in the region of the Malay Archipelago and that the Melanesians were established in their islands many centuries before the Polynesians passed through them to the islands beyond.

What privations and hardships they endured in their eventful voyages can never now be known. From time to time native canoes have been encountered

many hundred miles from land without food or water, full of men, women, and children doomed to die of thirst. Throughout Melanesia there was a well-established custom of slaughtering all strangers and castaways, and even eating them, because they landed "with salt water in their eyes." Traditions still exist among the Polynesians showing that they started on their travels because they were vanquished in a civil war in their own land and were doomed to destruction.

The origin of the Micronesians is even more obscure. They are known from Spanish voyagers to have been in their present habitat for at least three centuries, and they have preserved to the present day their very characteristic



A PERFECT DREAM OF A HAT

Feathers of the cockatoo, bird of paradise, and white crane, built up on a cane framework, form this headdress worn by a premier danseur of Ifuifu, Papua



ON THE THRESHOLD OF MANHOOD

Ceremonial masks attain the acme of the grotesque in New Guinea. This astonishing confection is worn by boys in the Gulf Division when being initiated into manhood

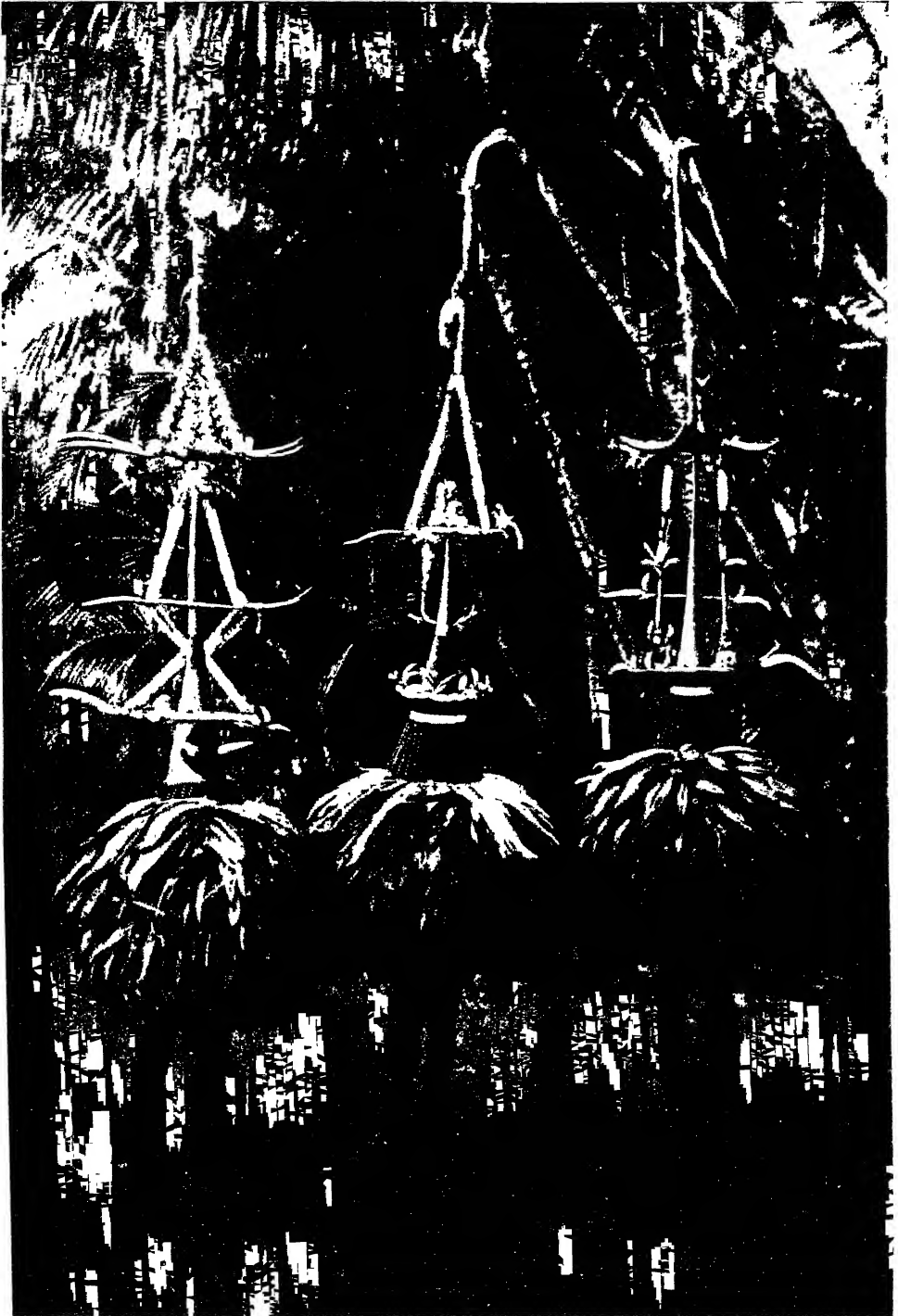
Photo, American Field Museum, Chicago

Malay or Mongolian appearance. Of all the Pacific races they are alone in making and drinking fermented liquor. Their islands are grossly over-populated considering the poorness of the soil and the lack of water, yet until quite recently they were alone in their rapid increase of population.

Broadly speaking, the Polynesians may be described as tall and handsome, light brown in colour, with wavy hair, which, naturally black, is dyed red with lime and cut short, until it stands erect like a barrister's wig. They are polished in manners, energetic in war, and dignified in deportment, but naturally indolent and prone to make a great show of civilization which they do not possess.

The Melanesian varies in colour. In some islands he is nearly black, while in others there is every gradation of colour, from black to reddish-brown, even in neighbouring villages. His hair is frizzy, he is shorter and stouter in build than the Polynesian, and far more energetic and industrious. The Polynesians have powerful chiefs with miniature Courts, the Melanesians are Republican by instinct. With the exception of the Maoris, the Polynesian can lay little claim to artistic skill. The Melanesian has a passion for decorating even his household utensils by carving and colouring. The Polynesian is far less conservative than the Melanesian. You will find him strutting about in the most unbecoming European garments, while the Melanesian, who has seen far more of Europeans on the sugar plantations, stoutly refuses to adopt trousers unless he is employed in a European vessel.

Midway between these two races stands the Fijian. Fiji is the meeting ground, because it was the most easterly point reached by the Melanesian population, and the natural target for Polynesian raids and conquests. The Fijian is of fine physique, muscular, athletic, and energetic. His colour varies like that of the Melanesian, and he knows how to make himself imposing by dyeing his hair with lime and dressing it until it forms an enormous golden aureole about his head. He is



FULLY FLEDGED DUKDUKS IN LODGE DRESS

Members of the Dukduk secret society, which has branches throughout Papua, cut quaint figures in their regalia. High masks, like fantastic extinguishers, made of wickerwork and decorated with leaves and cloth, envelop their bodies. Thus attired, they whirl along the paths, hopping and whooping, and then return to their sacred lodge to assist at the initiation of neophytes

Photo, George Brown, "Melanestians and Polynestians," Macmillan & Co., Ltd.

BRITISH EMPIRE IN AUSTRALASIA

remarkably conservative, for though he has been under the British Government since 1874, he still lives in the thatched hut which contented his fathers, and fashions a canoe out of a tree-trunk. Nor has he shown any desire to learn English or to adopt European food, except to a limited extent.

At the same time, he has taken very kindly to Christianity, and is only now emerging from the first enthusiasm of conversion. There is a strong histrionic vein in the native character, and the mysticism of the Roman Catholics and the revival meetings of the Wesleyans minister to this instinct. There are moments when there is a veritable Pentecost of religious excitement among the converts. With the adoption of Christianity most of the old heathen rites and superstitions have vanished, but secretly, no doubt, there remains a strong belief in the malevolent influence of unquiet spirits which have to be propitiated.

The native population of the British half of Papua (New Guinea) has been definitely shown to be of Melanesian origin: with a Papuan admixture growing stronger with every mile from the coast. The customs are almost purely Melanesian, for half the year the south-east trade wind blows from the Solomon Islands, and there can be little doubt that in the course of centuries Melanesian colonies were established on the coast, which drove back the native Papuans into the interior, where their descendants are now to be found.

To pass from Fiji to Papua is to step from the twentieth century into the Stone Age. Actually within the last twenty years the Papuans were still using stone tools in preference to iron. There was an extraordinary political parcellation. Each village was at war with its neighbour, and trade was carried on only by means of common markets, to which potential enemies



HANG UP YOUR BABY IN A STRONG STRING BAG

Papuan women in the Port Moresby neighbourhood have a remarkably simple and effective method of keeping their infants out of harm's way. Having fed her latest baby and hushed it to sleep, the mother puts it in a string bag, which she hangs from a rafter, while she attends to her penultimate arrival. The bag serves as rocking-cradle, mosquito curtain, and safe, all in one, and does not appear to induce curvature of the spine in the children

Photo, American Field Museum, Chicago



WORLD-WIDE PASTIME OF SIMPLE FOLK SAVAGE AND CIVILIZED

Kiwait children, living at the entrance to the Fly River, are very keen on cat's-cradle, and have a great number of varieties of the game, some of them very intricate. Anthropological students of folk-lore, investigating the games of uncivilized peoples, have found that this string game is one of the most widely-diffused amusements in the world, occurring in Australia and in Africa

Photo, W. N. Beaver, "Unexplored New Guinea"

might repair. The cultivation was carried on by the women under the protection of armed men, and no man in his senses thought of leaving the confines of his village unarmed. It is true that the battles were generally bloodless. It was enough to dress up and paint the face to look terrible and to make a strong indication of an attempt to charge, for the enemy to run away. If he stood his ground, you ran away

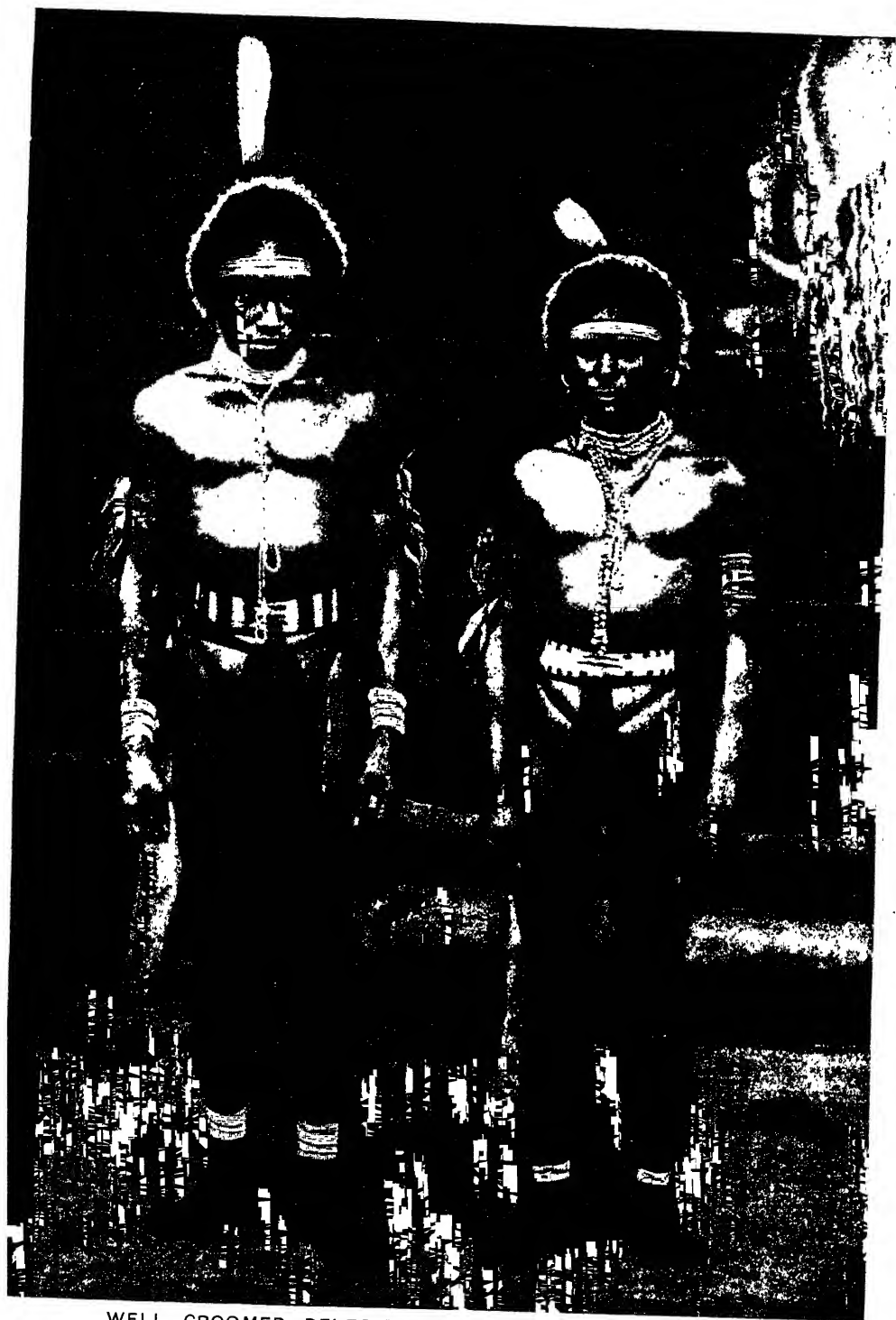
yourself. Consequently, the victims whose skulls were to be found decorating the eaves of the chiefs' houses were generally those of stragglers or women or children who were cut off unawares. Among some of the tribes a man might not wear the coveted decoration of the upper mandible of the hornbill in his hair until he had killed a man, and in one case a boy of eleven, the son of a chief, who was wearing this



YOUNG LADIES OF RIGO, DRESSED IN ALL THEIR BEST

They have donned their best skirts of fine fibre trimmed with strips of white cloth in which to pose before the camera. Both wear neatly woven fibre armlets, those of the girl on the left being embellished with tassels, or rosettes, of leaf. She also wears tortoiseshell bangles, cowrie bangles, and a necklace of red and white beads symmetrically strung

Photo, American Field Museum, Chicago



WELL GROOMED DELEGATES TO A PAPUAN CONFERENCE

They have come to make a ceremonial call upon a neighbouring village, an occasion requiring full dress. Both men wear shell frontlets, plumes in their woolly bonnets, broad beaded belts, garters and tails (without coats) of striped cloth, shell anklets, and leaf tassels attached to their armlets. The delegate on the left also wears bracelets of tridacna shell

Photo, American Field Museum, Chicago



TRAPPINGS OF WOE: WHITE SHELLS AND BRASSARDS FOR MOURNING WEAR

The etiquette of conventional mourning is as rigid in New Guinea as it was not long since in Old England, and perhaps not more unreasonable. At Basilaki, in the south-east of the island, the women wear shoulder-belts of ovulum ovum, white shells like huge cowries, and also wear white plaited armlets. It is a common custom for them to blacken their faces and bodies, and in some parts of the country they lop a joint off the finger

Photo, George Brown, "Melanesians and Polynesians," Macmillan & Co., Ltd.



WOMEN OF OROKAIVA ENJOYING A PULL AT A LONG PIPE

Their pipe is a length of bamboo open at the mouth end. Near the other, closed, end a small wooden tube is inserted containing the tobacco rolled into a ball. The smoker draws down the smoke until the bamboo is full, and then closes the orifice with the hand, removes the tube, and inhales the tobacco smoke through the hole. The pipe is passed from hand to hand till the smoke is exhausted

Photo, W. N. Beaver, "Unexplored New Guinea"



RINGLETED BABIRI BOWMAN FROM THE FAR WEST OF PAPUA

Babiri is the general name for the natives in the extreme west of British New Guinea. They wear their hair in ringlets rolled up with mud or grease, and lengthened with fibre to hang over the shoulders. Apart from a shell in front the men go naked save for fibre cross-belts and necklaces of wallaby teeth

Photo, W. N. Beaver, "Unexplored New Guinea"



FISH-FACED WEED-ROBED CELEBRANTS OF GHOULISH RITES

At specific dances and at initiation ceremonies, costumes are worn which represent various legendary and mythical figures, the precise significance of which has not been ascertained by ethnologists. These horrible fish-like masks, framed in white feathers, are used by the tribes along the Gulf of Papua

Photo, W. N. Beaver, "Unexplored New Guinea"

BRITISH EMPIRE IN AUSTRALASIA

decoration, had earned it by clubbing the life out of a wounded prisoner while his father was holding him.

Since the administration of Papua was handed over to the Australian Commonwealth with the additional territory taken from the Germans in the north-eastern half of the island continent, efforts have been made to colonise the Possession. The process must necessarily be very gradual. The country has scarcely emerged from the prospector state. A large part of the mountainous interior has not yet been explored. Even now species new to the zoologist and the botanist are being

discovered, and from the finds of gold that have been made it seems quite probable that great mineral wealth may be discovered at any time; but the European settler has many difficulties to contend with. Malaria is rife, the climate, especially in the period of the north-western monsoon, is unhealthy for Europeans, and the means of transport by land are almost non-existent.

The efforts of early administrators, such as Sir William Macgregor, had necessarily to be the pacification and exploration of the country. It was unsafe for Europeans to go from one tribe to another because neighbouring



"SHOCK TROOPS" THAT STRIKE TERROR INTO THE HEART

Warriors in the west of New Guinea are most ferocious figures when in war paint. They look like devils incarnate as they advance yelling to the attack in their headdresses arched with white cockatoo feathers and hung with tasselled cords, veritable breastplates made up of fibre cross-belts sewn with disk-like shell sections, and necklaces of tusks and repulsive nose ornaments

Photo, Universal Jewel Film



CAPTAIN OF A COMPANY OF CANNIBAL FIGHTING MEN

Black cassowary feathers form his headdress, proclaiming him to be a personage in his tribe. Similar feathers compose his ruff, the ends of which are held down on his chest by cross-belts of shell and rattan. His ear-rings are of cuscus tails stripped of their hair, and his armlets of tridacna shell

Photo, Universal Jewel Film



GRIEF FOR THE DEAD SHOWN BY HEMPEN HALTERS

Bundles of small cords suspended round the neck are worn by the women in some parts of New Guinea as a sign of mourning. Widows are strictly taboo, and there are specified periods during which they are secluded from the light, from being without a covering, from walking about to pay visits, and from bathing. Widows are also prohibited from wearing good dresses

Photo, Thomas McMahon



ARISTOCRACY UNADORNED BY ADVENTITIOUS TRAPPINGS

This is the chief of Dobu, in south-east New Guinea, with his wife. Even the grotesque nose ornaments—quills projecting four inches on each side of the septum of the nose—detract little from their austere dignity. Fibre armlets and shell garters complete his attire, while hers consists only of a skirt of pandanus leaf. His water-bottle is a calabash

Photo, George Brown, "Melanesians and Polynesians," Macmillan & Co., Ltd.

BRITISH EMPIRE IN AUSTRALASIA



MEN'S BONNETS IN NEW GUINEA

North coast Papuans wear a headdress of black woolly material sewn on to a frontlet of minute beads, fibre breast ornaments, and armlets of boars' tusks and tridacna shell

Photo, American Field Museum, Chicago

tribes were nearly always at war. Homicide was regarded by the native code as a mere matter of payment. Indeed, in one case, when a ship-of-war was sent to arrest the native murderers of a European, the murderer himself came on board and tendered the usual compensation of a pig, two spears, and a war club, and was astonished and indignant when his legal tender was rejected and he was put under arrest.

It was Sir William Macgregor who began the practice of converting murderers into policemen. The New Guinea murderer was generally the strongest and most enterprising man of his village. He was sentenced to penal servitude and sent to the gaol in Port Moresby. After a few months of labour on the road, if his conduct was good, his sentence was remitted, he was sworn in as a constable, clothed in uniform,

and sent back to his village to keep order. So proud was he of his new authority, and particularly of his uniform, that he proceeded to rule his village with a rod of iron, and in very few cases did he betray the confidence that had been placed in him. In a very few years it became possible for Europeans to travel safely from East Cape to the mouth of the Fly River.

The extraordinary conservatism of the Melanesian need not be enlarged upon, but it is worth noting that the Spanish discoverer, Catoira, has left us an elaborate description of the Solomon islander in 1567, and that in no particular, either in language or customs or behaviour, has he changed in the past three and a half centuries.

While the natives prefer their own customs to ours, they are by no means unteachable. In Tonga they have a college of their own with only one European teacher, where they learn history, mathematics, and



JEWELLED DANDY OF PAPUA

His trinkets include ropes of shells on his neck and breast, tortoiseshell ear-rings, and a frontal circlet of small white shells split and sewn on finely-plaited rattan

Photo, American Field Museum, Chicago



MANHOOD IN THE SOLOMON ISLES: A MALAYTA CHIEF

His frontal disk of wafer-thin tortoiseshell, intricately carved and set on tridacna shell, is distinctive of the Solomon Islander. Sharks, porpoises, and dogs have all supplied teeth for his necklace

Photo C. W. Collinson

To face page 912

shorthand. They take very readily to European drill. They are beginning to breed and ride horses, and in a few cases the natives keep cows and sell milk. In Fiji the government offices are served by native clerks. There is a medical school for native practitioners, and numbers of efficient smiths, carpenters, and fitters are turned out from the government technical school. In the management of European vessels they excel, and one may find them cooking, waiting at table, and minding the European baby. But let them once return to their village and the whole of this skin of civilization is sloughed off. A few of them live in weather-board bungalows built on the European style, but they live in them on principle rather than by inclination, and they are always happier in the native house of tree-trunks and grass thatch, which has been compared in outward appearance to a disembowelled haystack.

The economic progress of the natives is barred at present by a species of Communism. In Fiji this is called "kerekere," and it means that no native, unless he is a chief, dares to accumulate property, because his fellow-villagers descend upon him and ask for it. The kerekere carries a reciprocal obligation to return other goods at a later period, which are also asked for, but a native who refused such a request would be pointed at as a niggard, and would not dare to hold up his head. There is, besides, an institution known as "lala," under which a chief has a right to call on any member of the tribe to do work in the common interest.



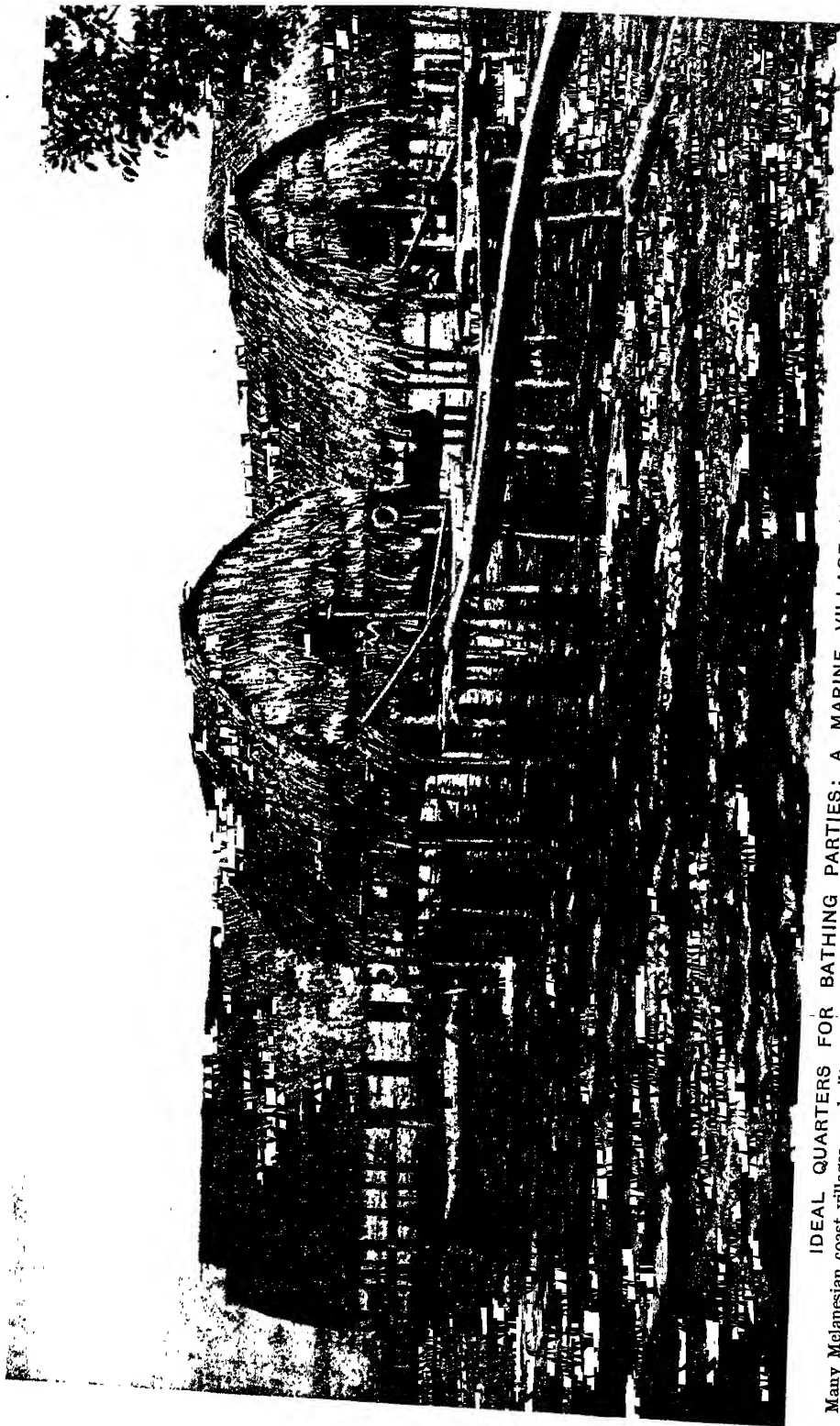
PIPING A SIMPLE MELODY

Musical instruments among the Melanesians are few, and, apart from the drums, show little ingenuity of construction. This flute, in use on St. Matthias Island, is a length of bamboo with only three holes besides the orifice

Photo, American Field Museum, Chicago

It is, in fact, the equivalent of local rates, but in practice, now that the chiefs have larger ideas, the lala is much abused in the form of collecting money for the purchase of a European vessel which the chief will use as his private yacht.

The dividing line between private property and property held in common is very difficult to draw. Land not under cultivation is the property of the community, and if a man wishes to fence off and cultivate a plot, he applies to the chief, who, learning that it is not claimed by anyone else, assigns it to the applicant. As long as he cultivates it, it is his private property, and should



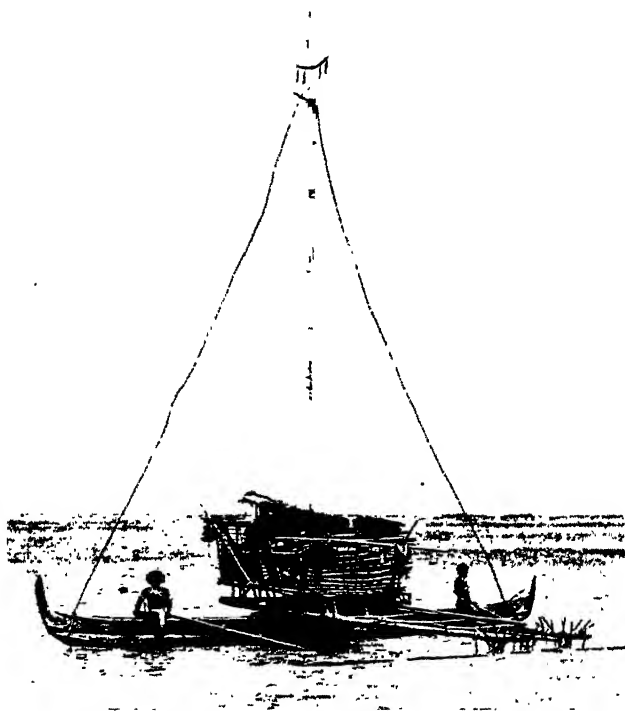
IDEAL QUARTERS FOR BATHING PARTIES: A MARINE VILLAGE IN THE ADMIRALTY ISLANDS
Many Melanesian coast villages are built actually in the water to guard against surprise attacks by hostile tribes in the interior. Piles are driven down into the hard bottom, and on these the houses are constructed. Domed thatch roofs come down almost to the floor, which is a foot or two above the water, and windows are non-existent. A narrow plank bridge without handrails gives access to the shore

Photo, American Field Museum, Chicago

he plant fruit-trees upon it, and the land afterwards be assigned to someone else, the fruit-trees remain his. Other communal property consists in meeting-houses, fish fences, communal vessels and canoes, roads and paths; but movable property belongs to the individual until it is begged from him by someone else.

As might be expected of a people who draw their sustenance entirely from the land and sea reefs, the Pacific islander is consumed by earth hunger. In the early days of Fiji, when the chiefs sold large tracts of land to Europeans, there was no end to the number of claimants who came forward demanding compensation or return of the land. After these early sales the government refused to allow the alienation of any of the native land except upon a lease, and in Tonga the native government had come to the same decision many years before the group became a British Protectorate.

The general policy of the British Government has been to govern the natives through their chiefs. This has led, perhaps, to an attitude among the civil servants of treating the natives like museum specimens in a glass case. They are not allowed, except for a very good reason, to leave their native place in any number; there is a stringent law against supplying them with liquor; they may not engage for service with Europeans except under strict supervision; even the rent paid by Europeans for their land reaches the natives through the government. In the British Solomon Islands the same policy is pursued, but here so small is the



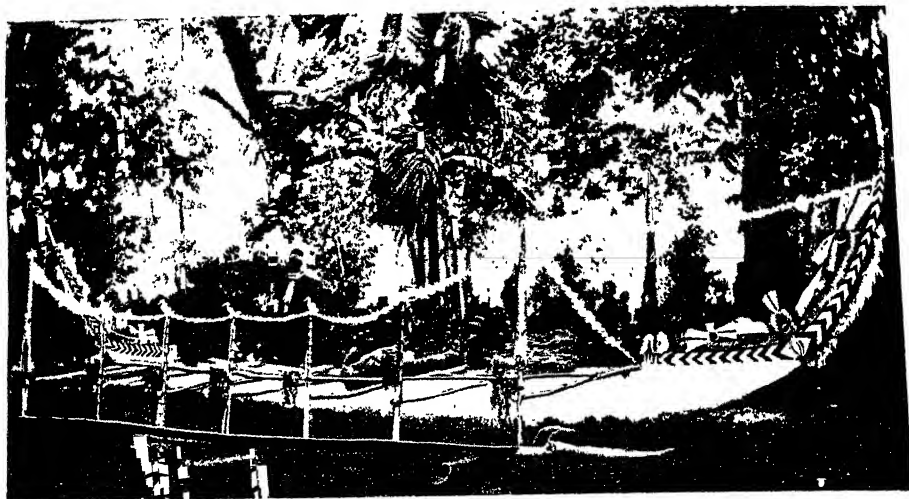
MELANESIAN SAILING CANOE BECALMED

It is rigged with a large leg-of-mutton sail made of mat, the ropes being of hibiscus bark. In a strong breeze one of the crew stands on the windward outrigger, stepping inboard as the wind slackens

Photo, American Field Museum, Chicago

European population that the chiefs are left with greater powers of self-government. But the whole system of government is in the melting-pot, and the tendency is towards some kind of representative institutions in all the islands, even though the people are not ready for them.

Their marriage customs, though not peculiar to themselves, are remarkable. In the New Hebrides the whole population is divided into two marriage classes. We will call them O and X. An O man must marry an X woman, and all the children of both sexes belong to the X class. The brother of the X woman must marry an O woman, and all her children are O. Speaking generally, it may be said that to a Melanesian man all



BEAUTIFUL VESSEL FREIGHTED WITH MYSTIC SIGNIFICANCE

In Duke of York Island a sacred canoe figures in the secret institutions. Strict silence is enforced during its building and decoration, after which, with Dukduks seated in it, it is carried in procession through all the villages, which make offerings of shell money

Photo, George Brown, "Melaneseans and Polynesians," Macmillan & Co., Ltd.



PALM LEAVES FROM OVERHEAD FOR CARPETS UNDERFOOT

Rough mats plaited from the leaves of the coconut palm are the only kind made by the natives of Duke of York Island. Most of their baskets are shaped and made from cords of some vegetable material, and afterwards covered with an outer bark of rattan

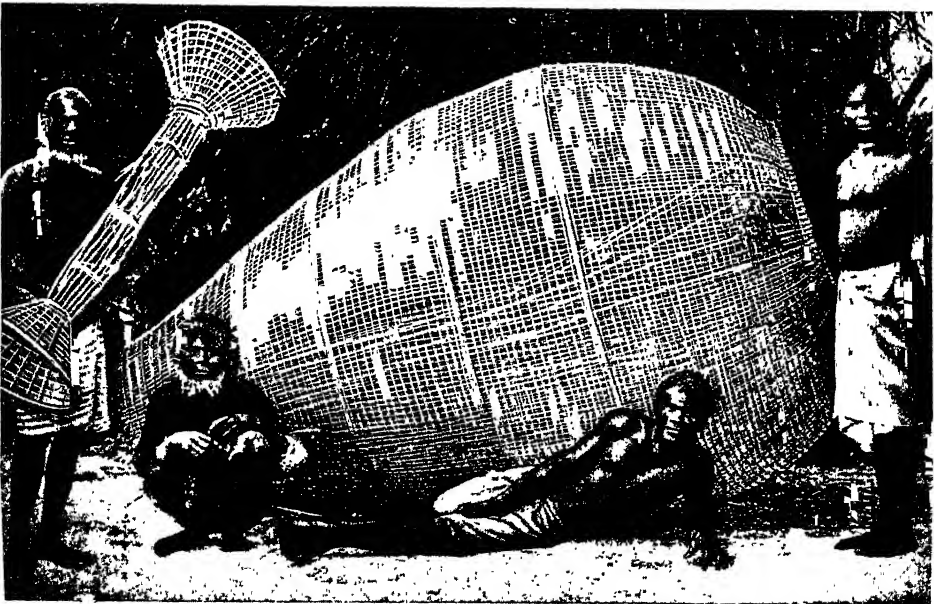
Photo, Thomas McMahon



YOUNG SEA-LORDS OF THE ADMIRALTY ISLANDS

Their canoe is a dug-out constructed to hold eight people besides the steersman. An outrigger, made of a log of light timber and fastened to the canoe by crossbars, makes it an admirable surf-boat. Sailing canoes, with an outrigger on both sides, a mat sail, and bark ropes, are also in common use

Photo, American Field Museum, Chicago



MONSTER DEEP SEA FISH TRAP OF NEW BRITAIN

It is made of split bamboos bound together with plaited rattan vines, and is about ten feet long and six feet in diameter. There is an opening at both ends, each of which converges to a hole in the centre, through which the fish pass but cannot return. The trap is anchored in deep water

Photo, George Brown, "Melanians and Polynesians," Macmillan & Co., Ltd.



FESTAL CELEBRATION IN THE TORRES STRAITS: DANCING THE PIGEON DANCE ON MARBUAIY ISLAND

Many of the Papuan dances are action dances imitative of the movements of birds that form the tribal clan badge. In the pigeon dance the movements are gentle and slow, those of the feet being a shuffle forwards, accompanied by a genuflection downwards and outwards, those of the head being a sedate nodding backwards and forwards. The dancers thus progress in lines down the village enclosure, advancing only two or three inches at each step

Photo, Thomas McMahon



SMILING MOTHERS AND THEIR WOOLLY-HEADED BROOD

Grass girdles constitute the sum of feminine attire throughout most of the islands in the Western Pacific. They evidence some manufacturing skill on the part of the women and some taste in coloration. These women and children live on Rambuzo, second largest of the Admiralty Islands.

Amiable as they look, they are people with an unpleasant reputation for cannibalism

Photo, American Field Museum, Chicago

women of his own generation are either sisters or wives; to a Melanesian woman all men are either brothers or husbands.

Among the Melanesian tribes in Fiji the custom is still more curious, for their marriage with particular women is obligatory—that is to say, every child is born into the world with his or her natural mate. The men must marry their first cousin, the daughter of their mother's brother. The daughter of the mother's sister or of the father's brother is absolutely forbidden to them. She is their sister, and regarded as being as closely related as the actual sister. And so for generations quite one-third of the people have been marrying their first cousins without, so far as can be ascertained, any ill result.

Generally speaking, descent is traced through the mother and not the father, and to this is to be ascribed the extraordinary custom of "vasu," which gives the son of a pair certain powers over

his mother's native place. He may go to it, take anything he covets from the houses, tear down the fruit trees, and behave generally in such a way that if he were a stranger he would be clubbed to death forthwith.

Among the Polynesians the old religion was ancestor worship, and there are traces of it throughout Melanesia as well. Every tribe believed in a future state, and the place to which the spirit went after death was the mythical land of origin. In some of the Melanesian islands they will still show you the path which the spirits take until they come to the cliff overlooking the Western Ocean. This is their jumping-off place, and from there they are carried swiftly to a land where the yams grow larger without tillage, the sun is brighter without burning, the winds are tempered to softness, the fruits of the earth ripen to the hand without labour, the spirits of the ancestors collect upon the beach



DRESSED FOR A DANCE IN THE ADMIRALTY ISLANDS

Men and women dance separately in Melanesia. The men wear feather-decked headdresses and commonly carry sticks, which they wave to and fro and raise or lower in the various movements of the dance. Music is provided by drums, the dancers keeping up a monotonous chant

Photo, American Field Museum, Chicago

and wave welcome to the new-comer, and the spirit enjoys all the delights of an eternal feast. He might never reach this Elysium if he had been cowardly in war, or a back-biter, or a sluggard, for on the one hand Tatovu, with his axe, lay in wait for him, and on the other the dread fisherwomen, who made sweeps in the air with their nets to entangle the unwary soul. If they caught him they bit him in the head as the human fisherwomen do and threw him into their basket, and that, so far as one can gather, was the end of him.

In certain sheltered bays the natives firmly believe that female spirits of transcendent beauty make love to unwary mortals and kill them at the first embrace. They will quote the cases of well-known men found dead in these spots.

In the old cannibal days there were traces of totemism. One tribe would

venerate the shark, because a shark had ferried their ancestress over the waters into safety, another the crab or a particular bird, and in one case even mankind in general. One might not eat the flesh of this protecting genius, and therefore the tribe whose totem was a man was debarred from cannibalism.

While the old cannibals were still living, many attempts were made to ascertain the origin of cannibalism. The argument that it was due to the absence of animal food will not hold good, for there was an ample supply of fish and pork in Fiji, where cannibalism was most developed. On the other hand, there were noted cannibal chiefs upon whom the custom grew until it became an obsession. Generally, however, men were eaten as an act of triumph, and one of the bitterest taunts that could be uttered was to say: "I ate your father," or, even worse, "I shall eat

BRITISH EMPIRE IN AUSTRALASIA

you." There was, besides, the belief that in eating the liver of a fallen warrior his courage entered into the eater.

The attitude of nearly all the Pacific Islanders towards death is not ours. They take it, so to speak, in the day's work. It is well attested that, in Fiji, the widows of a dead chief would think it the last dishonour if they were not strangled ceremonially to his Manes, for it would always be said that their escape showed that they had been unfaithful to him. The aged and the incurably sick took their end with the same philosophy.

Jackson, a truthful observer of the early 'sixties, was actually present when an old Fijian was buried alive with full funeral ceremony. The day had been fixed with his concurrence a week or two earlier, it being understood that he should show no sign of life after he had been properly anointed, shrouded, and laid out for burial. When the time came, the air was rent with wailing.

People amputated the first joint of their little fingers in token of mourning and cast ashes on their heads. The bier was carried to the grave and lowered into it, but when the earth pattered down upon the shroud the poor old gentleman was seized with a fit of coughing, and it was not until the grave was partly filled in and stamped down that he who had been officially, became actually a dead man. There is an old lament of the soul in a Fijian epic where they sing: "The rafters of our house (the ribs) are broken with the stamping of the mourners."

There is a strong neurotic tinge in the Polynesian and Melanesian characters. It is enough to prophesy that a man will die upon a certain day for the prophecy to be fulfilled. Thus, a few years ago, when a Fijian with the nightmare screamed out that he was possessed by the soul of a neighbour and that the neighbour would die on the following Thursday, the neighbour fell sick and came very near to dying. There is a



MEN OF A TRIBE OF SINISTER REPUTATION

Notwithstanding their adorned and peaceful appearance they are natives of Malayta, the island in the Solomons most notorious for the blood-thirstiness of its savages. Two of these men wear the insignia of the higher order, the crescent of pearl-shell. Both men and women have holes bored right through the tips of their noses, in which they insert spikes cut from the shell of clam

Photo, J. W. Beattie



THE HOME OF THE ISLANDERS' GODS

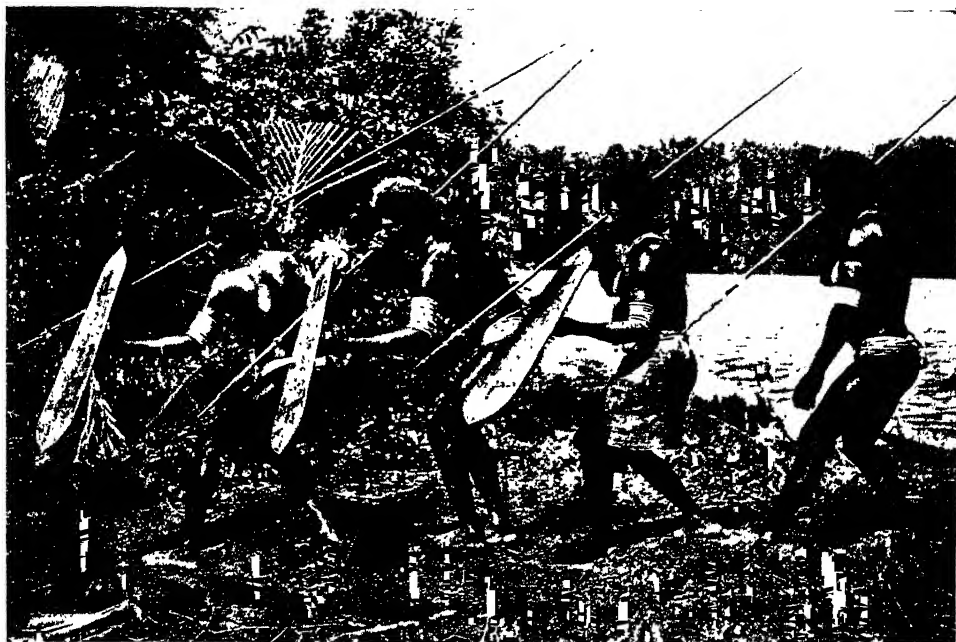
The ceremonies connected with Devil-Devil worship on the almost unknown ring of coral atolls named Ong Tong Java, which lie 200 miles north of the Solomon Islands, are shrouded in mystery, and little is known concerning them. The actual idols are here seen in front of their sacred "temple," or "tambu house." These unique photographs were taken unknown to the natives by the only white trader on the group



THE LAND-GODS' HOMAGE TO THE POWERS OF THE SEA

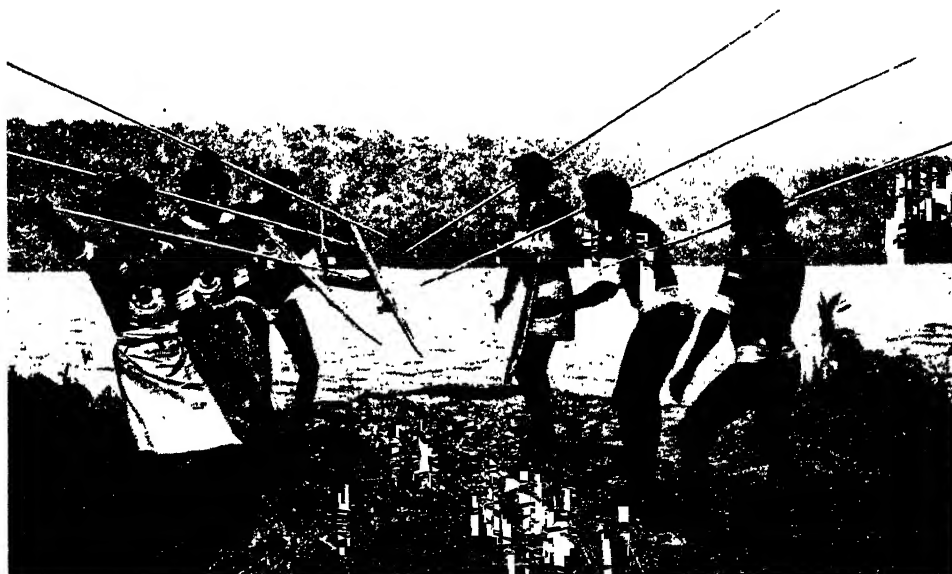
A Devil-Devil ceremony is in progress, and portrays the annual rite of "bowing the idols to the sea" in supplication for ample fishing harvests. On the very infrequent occasion of the arrival of the white trader's schooner from a visit to the Solomon Islands, the Devil-Devil priests board the vessel and exorcise, with many strange ceremonies, any foreign devil-devils that may be lurking aboard

Photos, Harold A. Markham



ON THE TRAIL OF AN IMAGINARY FOE

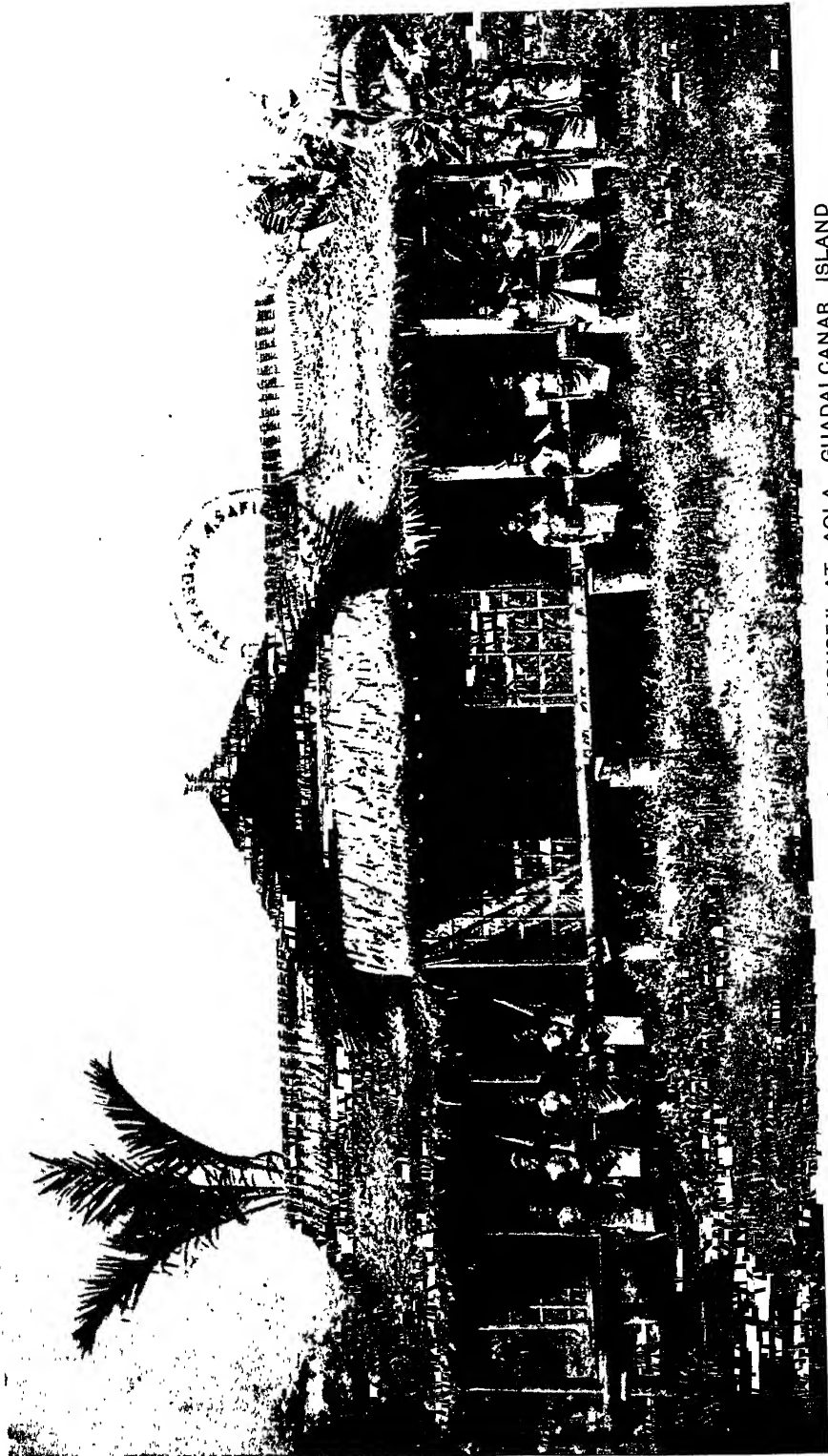
A most military spectacle, truly. This war-dance, for such it is in reality, is popular among the natives of the Solomon Islands, and to the unaccustomed eye has a distinctly menacing appearance, increased by the accompaniment of banging shields and punctuated by deep growls. The tactics employed in real warfare are those which cunning and treachery suggest, and it is very seldom that a fair open fight occurs



AT BAY! CRITICAL MOMENT IN THE DANCE

Each individual stands on guard, with shield up and spear held back at arm's length, his attitude imposing in the extreme. Considerable care must be exercised in using these formidable weapons in mock fights, for sharp fishbones are bound to the spearheads, and they are often poisoned by inserting them into a decomposed body, tetanus invariably resulting from a wound inflicted by them

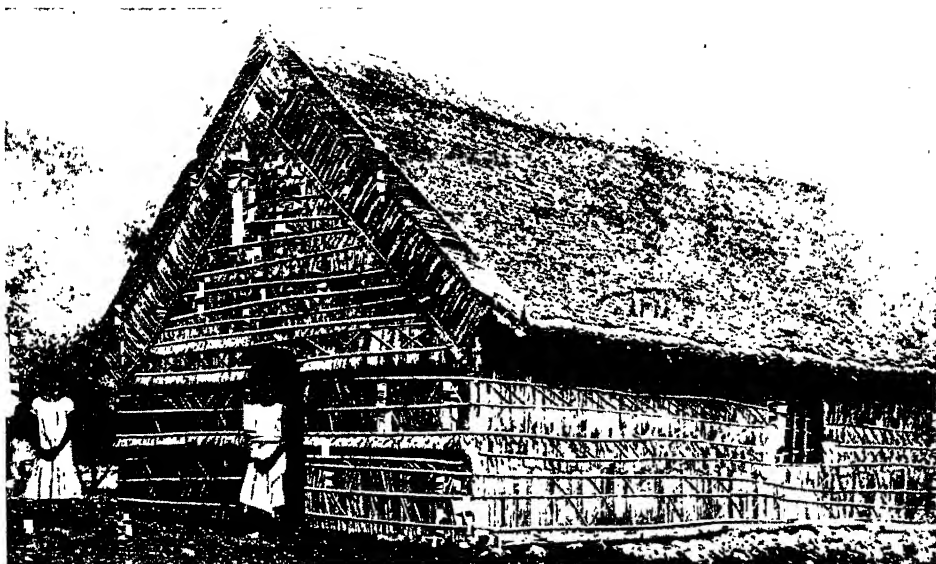
Photos, C. W. Collinson



COOL AND CLEVERLY CONSTRUCTED "COURT HOUSE" AT AOLA, GUADALCANAR ISLAND

In some parts of the Solomon group it is the custom to build houses on piles at a height of several feet above the ground. It is in this building that British justice is dispensed, and the District Commissioner deals with matters which range from the trial of a native murderer to the sale of a postage stamp. The Native Constabulary is well represented by the finely built and finely trained "Police Boys" lined up in military fashion in the courtyard

Photo, C. W. Collinson



ON THE SHORE OF THE RUBIANA LAGOON

Whilst more elaborate and imposing than the general run of native dwelling-houses in the Solomon Islands, this is an excellent illustration of the method of construction. The roof, thatched with palm and pandanus leaves, is supported on a row of posts, and much artistic taste is shown in the elaborate colour scheme of dyed and plaited palm-leaves composing the front of the building

Photo, J. F. Goldie



"THE HOTTEST ISLAND IN THE SHARKIEST WATER IN MELANESIA!"

This enticing appellation, together with that of "Chief centre of the Head-hunters," should render unnecessary any further description of the small (about fifteen miles round) island of Savo, lying to the north-west of Guadalcanar. With the acceptance of Christianity and the spread of trade, the sinister reputation of the Savoans as head-hunters is steadily disappearing

Photo, Douglas Rannie, "Adventures Among South Sea Cannibals."



BENIGN IN APPEARANCE, BUT BELLIGERENT BY NATURE
He is a veritable Berserker when roused, and his battle fury is such as to render him almost invulnerable and irresistible. The shield he carries is, with slight local variations, common amongst all the larger islands of the Solomon group. It measures three feet in length and about nine inches in breadth, and is made of a layer of light reeds or canes lashed neatly together with rattan

Photo, C. W. Collinson



AFTER THE BATTLE THE PIPE OF PEACE

"Killy-killy" and shield seem strangely out of place in Simbo Island, where nature, by reason of her very loveliness, might surely soothe and soften the most quarrelsome of natures. Rising two thousand feet from the sea, fringed about with coral reefs, the island is resplendent from base to summit with magnificent tree-ferns, flowering plants, vines, and orchids in endless hues

Photo, C. W. Collinson



OBSERVANCE OF STRANGE RITE AMONG YOUTHS OF BUKA ISLAND

Much forethought and artistic effort is bestowed by South Sea Islanders on the headgear worn on important occasions. On the islands of Bougainville and Buka, formerly German, now British possessions, the natives manufacture marvellous headdresses, and the boys of Buka sometimes wear these weird grass globe-shaped hats, to denote that they are not yet of marriageable age

Photo, Thomas McMahon



POWDER AND PAINT ARE SOCIETY'S ORNAMENTS ON SIMBO ISLAND

Natives of the Solomon Islands often smear their hair and bodies with a paste made from coral lime. Applied to the hair it serves the double purpose of bleaching it and destroying vermin. Throughout Melanesia women have but a small measure of liberty and responsibility. Women and rank may be purchased with pigs, a wife costing from one to twenty pigs according to her attractions

Photo, C. W. Collinson.



HEAD-HUNTERS IN QUEST OF ADVENTURE

Despite its fragile appearance, this war canoe from Vella Lavella Island in the Solomons is a remarkably sturdy sea-boat. The bow and stern are elaborately inlaid with pearl-shell and decorated with rows of large white cowrie shells. Just above water-line a grotesquely carved little deity is attached to the bow; he it is who spies out the hidden reef and gives warning of the approach of enemy craft

Photo, Thomas McMahon

disease well known in Fiji called "dongai," which can only be described as love-sickness. When two lovers are separated one, or both, falls into a decline and, unless drastic measures are taken, dies of dongai. The natives regard it as a form of "possession," and know of no cure for it.

It is this sort of fatalism which keeps alive the prevailing belief in witchcraft. In the Pacific the office of wizard is hereditary. He works for fees like any medical practitioner, with the difference that he is paid to help people out of this world rather than to keep them in it. His stock-in-trade is the clippings from the hair or nails or a fragment of the clothing of the person doomed to death, and with this and a few herbs and an

incantation or two the charm is buried in the thatch of the doomed man's house and almost invariably he dies. In most cases, no doubt, care is taken to convey to him that a spell has been laid upon him, and that is enough to accomplish the death by natural means, but in one famous case in Fiji that subsequently came before the criminal court, when the charm failed to work and the wizard's reputation was at stake, he lay in wait for the victim with a club, and then attended the funeral with his face blackened, which is the recognized method adopted by these practitioners for sending in the bill for their services.

The Fijian wizard has lamented more than once that his spells fail to work



AWAITING THE APPROACH OF PISCATORIAL PREY

Much skill is shown by most South Sea Islanders in the art of spearing fish; a quick eye and a quicker hand being the two great essentials. Off the islands of San Cristoval, where fishing scaffolds are erected along the reefs, a goodly collection invariably falls prey to the deadly four-pronged native spear, for mullet, bream, codfish, rays, and even small sharks can be "forked" by an expert

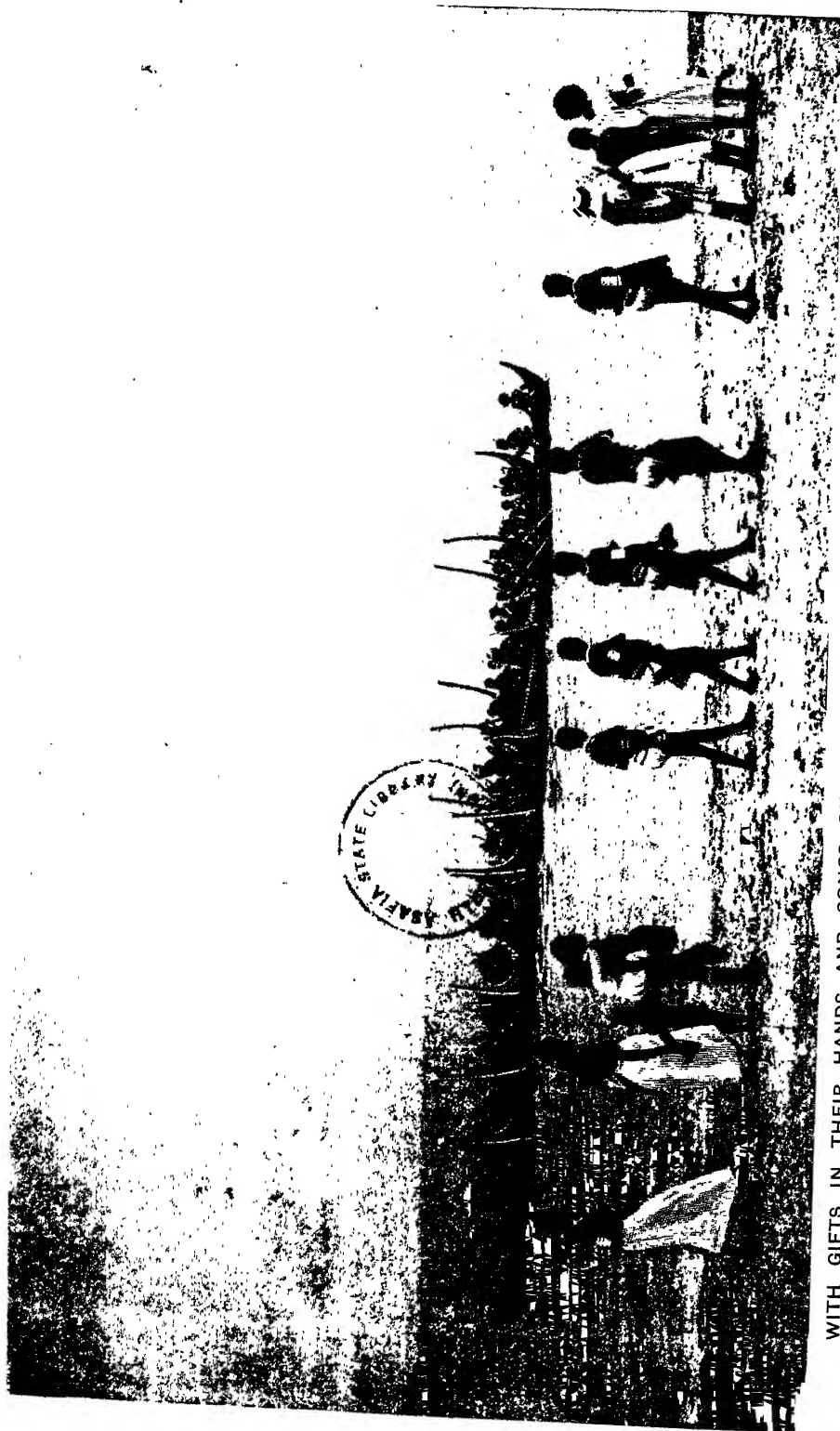
Photo, Douglas Rannie, "Adventures Among South Sea Cannibals"



CONICAL CAGES FOR UNSUSPECTING FISH

The various ingenious methods of catching and ensnaring fish employed by the natives of the Solomon Islands would furnish material for a volume. Nets of all descriptions and wicker contrivances, as seen above, are in common use. The fishers know exactly when the desired prey will come swimming to their doom—and a dexterous bite at the back of the head makes an end of them

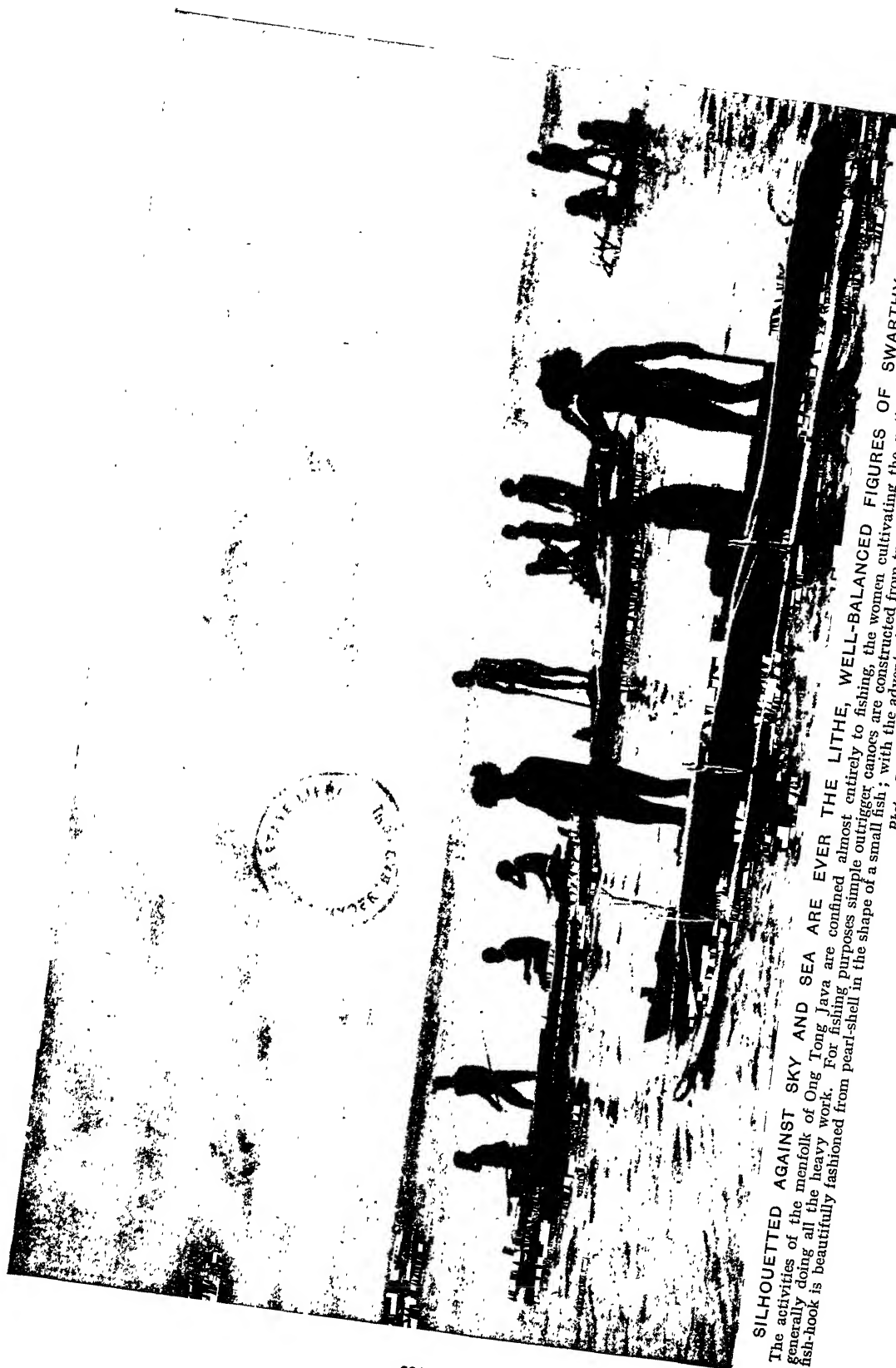
Photo, A. Turnbull



WITH GIFTS IN THEIR HANDS AND SONGS ON THEIR LIPS THE WOMEN AWAIT THE WARRIORS' RETURN

Mystery, romance, and blood-curdling adventures have ever been associated with the Solomon Islands. Discovered by the famous Spanish navigator Mendana in 1567, they were so named by him in order to entice his countrymen to these newly-found "Lands of Gold," which he avowed had provided King Solomon with material for the temple. After some murderous foray on the high seas a fleet of war-canoes is here seen approaching its native shore, where the women have assembled to celebrate the warriors' homecoming.

Photo, George Brown, "Melanesians and Polynesians," Macmillan & Co., Ltd.



SILHOUETTED AGAINST SKY AND SEA ARE EVER THE LITHE, WELL-BALANCED FIGURES OF SWARTHY FISHERMEN
The activities of the menfolk of Ong Tong Java are confined almost entirely to fishing, the women cultivating the native gardens, preparing the food, and generally doing all the heavy work. For fishing purposes simple outrigger canoes are constructed from tree-trunks with stone and clam-shell adzes. The native fish-hook is beautifully fashioned from pearl-shell in the shape of a small fish; with the advent of the white trader it has been superseded by the European article

Photo, C. W. Collinson



EXERCISING THE PROFESSION OF HIS ANCESTORS

He is practising his skill on an imaginary enemy, but in many ways this practice would seem superfluous, for heredity has bestowed on him gratis what many another South Sea Islander would take years of strenuous endeavour to acquire. The skill of the spearman of Malayta is proverbial, and this, coupled with another and less enviable character, causes no surprise that the neighbouring islanders should seek him as friend rather than foe

Photo, Douglas Rannie, "Adventures Among South Sea Cannibals"

upon Europeans, probably, he says, because they eat different food. The wizards are also diviners and, when a mysterious crime has been committed, it is not unusual to pay a fee for the consultation of the local oracle. He will ask his client to pronounce the names of all the persons who are most likely to have been implicated, and at the utterance of a particular name he will say that his flesh is tingling all over. In not a few cases it was afterwards proved that the wrong man had been accused.

Since the introduction of Christianity the Bible has been made to take the place of the diviner. The whole community is summoned, and each one is

required to take an oath that he or she is guiltless of the deed. Put to this ordeal, the guilty person will sometimes make a confession, but if not, and he takes the oath, he pines away under the load of his perjury and ultimately dies. When a person is attacked by a fainting fit, it is always presumed that he or she has been guilty of some moral offence, and this is usually sufficient to produce a confession.

The taboo is universal throughout the islands. From the day when the native is born until his death he must walk warily for fear of infringing some taboo, knowing that if, unwittingly, he commits one of these solecisms his liver



PADDLING HER OWN CANOE IN HARBOUR OF PORT ADAM

Bracelets, armlets, necklets, ear-rings, and nose-skewer adorn this woman of "the wild island of Mala," or Malayta, but her toilet boasts of nothing more. The personal adornments of the Mala native are really beautiful and surprisingly varied: nose ornaments comprise gilt nails, strings of beads, small tusks, carved shells, tufts of dried grass, rings, and long bamboo or bone plugs



BAMBOO WATERPOTS OF SALT WATER TRADERS

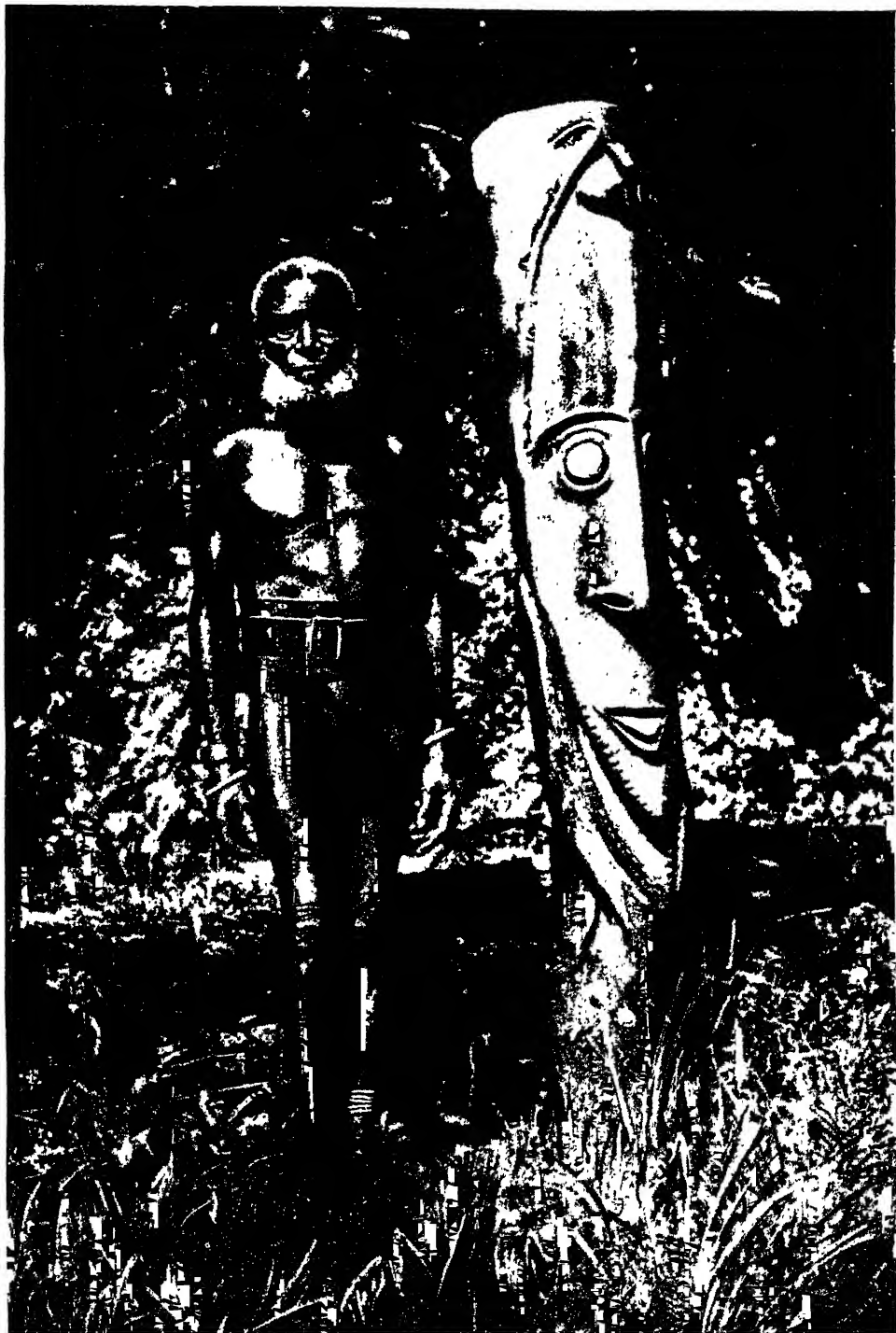
They are salt water purveyors, and, being members of a coastal tribe, encounter no difficulty in the trade. In return for fruits and vegetables, they convey salt water in bamboos to the inland bush natives, who obtain their much needed salt from it by evaporation. Betel-nut chewing is a delight of the Malayta native, and a small stick is used to manipulate the betel-nut about gums and teeth

Photo, Douglas Rannie, "Adventures Among South Sea Cannibals"



SUNSHINE AND SHADE RUN RIOT AMONG THE SILENT ROWS OF CORAL MONUMENTS IN THIS NATIVE "HAVEN OF REST"
 In this unique native cemetery on Ong Tong Java elaborately carved and painted tombstones of coral mark the graves. Here the widow of the deceased native must spend years of her life, brushing away each leaf or twig from the spotless white coral sand. Her food is brought from the neighbouring village, and she sleeps in a tiny leaf hut on the edge of the clearing. The more elaborate headstones are protected from the weather by leaf mats

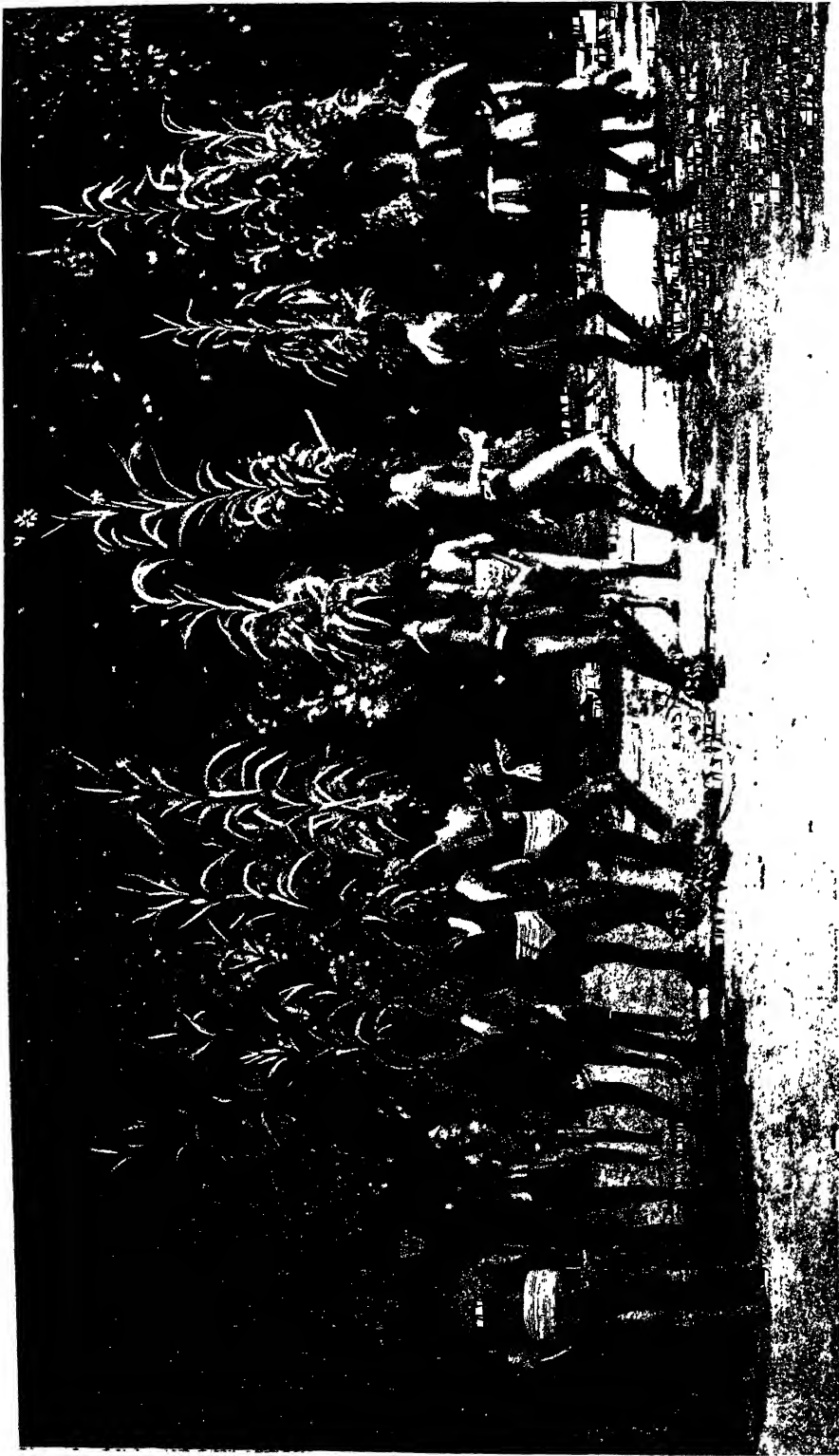
Photo, C. W. Collinson



A MAKER OF GODS: IMAGE CARVER AND HIS HANDIWORK

The sacred grounds of the gods are said to have existed from time immemorial, but missionary work is growing apace in Ambryn Island, and it is doubtful whether posterity will regard the ground or gods with the same superstitious dread as did their forefathers. This grey-haired native, however, knows all the prayers and charms which control and appease the 'spirits dwelling within these idols

Photo, American Field Museum, Chicago



IN MERRY-GO-ROUND FASHION THE MOVING GROVE OF DANCERS COMMENCE THEIR RHYTHMIC PERFORMANCE
There is no caste in Melanesia, but there are many ranks, and in the New Hebrides a man's prestige is still gauged entirely by his position in the secret society of which he is a member. This is indicated, for instance, by his cooking-place in the long row of ovens in the gamal or club-house, and also by his appearance in public dances, when, as illustrated, the picked dancer is painted, ornamented, and adorned with a leafy headdress of an amazing height
Photo, American Field Museum, Chicago



PLAYGROUND OF THE GODS IN THE CENTRE OF A VILLAGE NOTORIOUS FOR ITS CANNIBAL FEASTS

Witchcraft is rife in Melanesia, and the inhabitants of the New Hebrides are, for the most part, bound hand and foot by their superstitious fears and beliefs. In this sacred ground, on the island of Ambryn, where only the members of certain clubs may assemble, and where the foot of woman may never tread, weird images have been set up, which are believed to be the seat of spirits endowed with strange destructive powers

BRITISH EMPIRE IN AUSTRALASIA

will swell up and he will die. Tongans used to satisfy their curiosity by opening the corpses of the dead to ascertain by examination of the liver whether they had been guilty of one of these wickednesses, for it must be remembered that, according to native belief, no person dies a natural death—disease is always the work of an enemy.

Apart from the ancestor gods, there are a host of sprites to be propitiated. One of the cults that have survived to this day in Fiji is that of the Luvu-ni-wai (Children of the water). These little people are only half the natural size and, like Pucks, they take a delight in interfering with human affairs. They

inspire men to great deeds, and, when the young people took to resuscitating the rites, the Government had to step in with a law, making communion with the water-sprites an affair of two dozen lashes, for in these degenerate days the water-sprites inspired their votaries to burglary, incendiarism, and even murder, as a sort of escape from the deadly monotony of semi-civilized life.

In certain districts in Fiji an alien cult, introduced from the West, has led to a good deal of controversy. Tradition says that two old men were washed up by the sea and went through the country preaching the building of "nanga" (literally, "bed") of the ancestors,

an enclosure of erect stones, not unlike the cromlechs of Western Europe and North Africa. To this enclosure the whole population repaired to present the first fruits and invoke a blessing on the crops, and this annual festival was the occasion for making the boys into men by fantastic ceremonies of initiation. Two or three of the nanga still exist and are regarded with superstitious fear.

The natives, as a whole, were converted to Christianity with astonishing ease. All that was necessary was to convert the chiefs, the keepers of the people's conscience, and the rest followed as a matter of course. The great majority are Wesleyans, but the Presbyterians, the Church of England, and the Roman Catholics all have flourishing communities. They are doing invaluable work in the education of the people, but though they have been successful in putting down many barbarous practices it is



HIGH-CLASS CONTENTMENT IN SANTA CRUZ

The shining white disk proclaims him to be a man of some importance. From the septum of his nose a green stone ornament is suspended, and, having had the misfortune to break an ear-lobe, he can display but one tortoiseshell ear-ring

Photo, Douglas Rannie, "Among South Sea Cannibals"



DRAMATIC REPRESENTATION OF BOW AND ARROW AFFRAY

Until quite recently the natives of Santa Cruz practised the hideous custom prevalent in the Solomon Islands, of poisoning their spears and arrow-tips which is described on page 923. The preliminary figure of a war-dance is here illustrated; the chief taking the lead and personally conducting his own troupe. During the sham fight the poisoned arrow-head is carefully enclosed in thick leaves

Photo, Douglas Rannie, "Adventures Among South Sea Cannibals"

BRITISH EMPIRE IN AUSTRALASIA

not certain that they have really reached the heart of the people. As the conversion of the natives was to take place it was probably mistaken policy not to teach them English or some other European language, for their own written literature is very scanty. The missionaries preferred to make an elaborate study of the native languages themselves and employ native teachers, and perhaps, in the circumstances, it was all they could do, but they have



A FIJIAN'S GLORY IS HIS HAIR
The crisp mop of hair is one of the Fijian's most prized possessions; missionaries have tried in vain to cut it down

Photo, R. M. Clutterbuck

neglected, with very few exceptions, the technical training of the natives, from which very much might have been achieved.

The beach-comber has now passed into the region of romance and his place has been taken by the trader and planter, who passed through many lean years before they attained their present prosperity. The European population of the islands is still very small; in Fiji about 4,800, of whom 500 are temporarily employed at the sugar-mills as



RUDE MUSIC FROM CRUDE SOURCE

In the Fijians there is an intermixture of Melanesian and Polynesian blood. Until half a century ago they had a bad reputation for cannibalism; the present-day natives, however, are mainly vegetarians. They are fond of amusements and music of every description, and this Fijian's nose-pipe closely resembles the primitive nose-instrument of the aborigines of Malaya

Photo, American Field Museum, Chicago



THE DIFFICULT HALF-HOUR OF A MOSS-HAIRED GIRL

This Fijian girl has actually lived in England, but nothing could ever induce her to renounce her native style of headdress. Her enormous mop of black hair is manipulated by a wooden comb shaped like a spade, with teeth six inches in length. Its frizzy nature is due to each individual hair being elliptical instead of circular in cross-section, and thus tending to twist

BRITISH EMPIRE IN AUSTRALASIA

artisans, and are not permanent settlers ; 1,500 compose the population of the two towns, Suva and Levuka. The rest are missionaries, civil servants, planters and traders.

The white population of the Cook Islands is only 230, of the Solomon Islands, 307, and in the Protectorate of Tonga the whites number less than 100. In the less frequented islands there are white traders keenly competing with one another, but they succumb to some extent to the influences of a warm climate and an indolent population, and some of them lose their European

energy, smartness, and cleanliness. They sell the cheaper form of European manufactured goods and buy native produce, principally copra, the dried husk of the coconut, for which vessels call periodically. Most of them have native wives and half-caste families, but the small European trader is gradually being ousted by Indians and Chinese. The former were introduced in very large numbers from India to work as coolies on the sugar plantations, and under the terms of their indentures they were free after five years to settle down in the country and, after ten

years, to elect whether they would accept a return passage to India or make Fiji their adopted country. Not a few have done this and, though they and the native Fijians regard one another with mutual contempt and have shown no tendency to intermarry, there is no friction between them.

The Chinese have drifted into the Pacific no one knows how. They are to be found more in the islands near the Equator than in those to the southward, and wherever they settle they thrive. In the larger European settlements there is municipal government and a good system of education. The people live simply in weather-board bungalows, and there is a good deal of social life, with cricket, football, and tennis. Since the Great War a certain number of ex-officers have found their way to the Pacific, and in Tonga have taken up leases of small islands, where they ought to do very well, for the rich soil of the islands yields



A FIGHTER TO THE BACKBONE

This man's spears have more than once tasted enemy blood, but with all their treachery and cruelty, their cannibalism and head-hunting, the men of Malayta, or Mala, are the bravest and the strongest in the Solomons

Photo, Douglas Rennie, "Among South Sea Cannibals"

BY REEF AND PALM
With South Sea Islanders



Manhood is in the very look of these grim Solomon Islanders, whose chief wealth is their right good shield and their long barbed spear

Photo, C. W. Collinson



Papuan waterside villages look like clumps of haystacks perched on poles. In and out of the foundations the people paddle their canoes



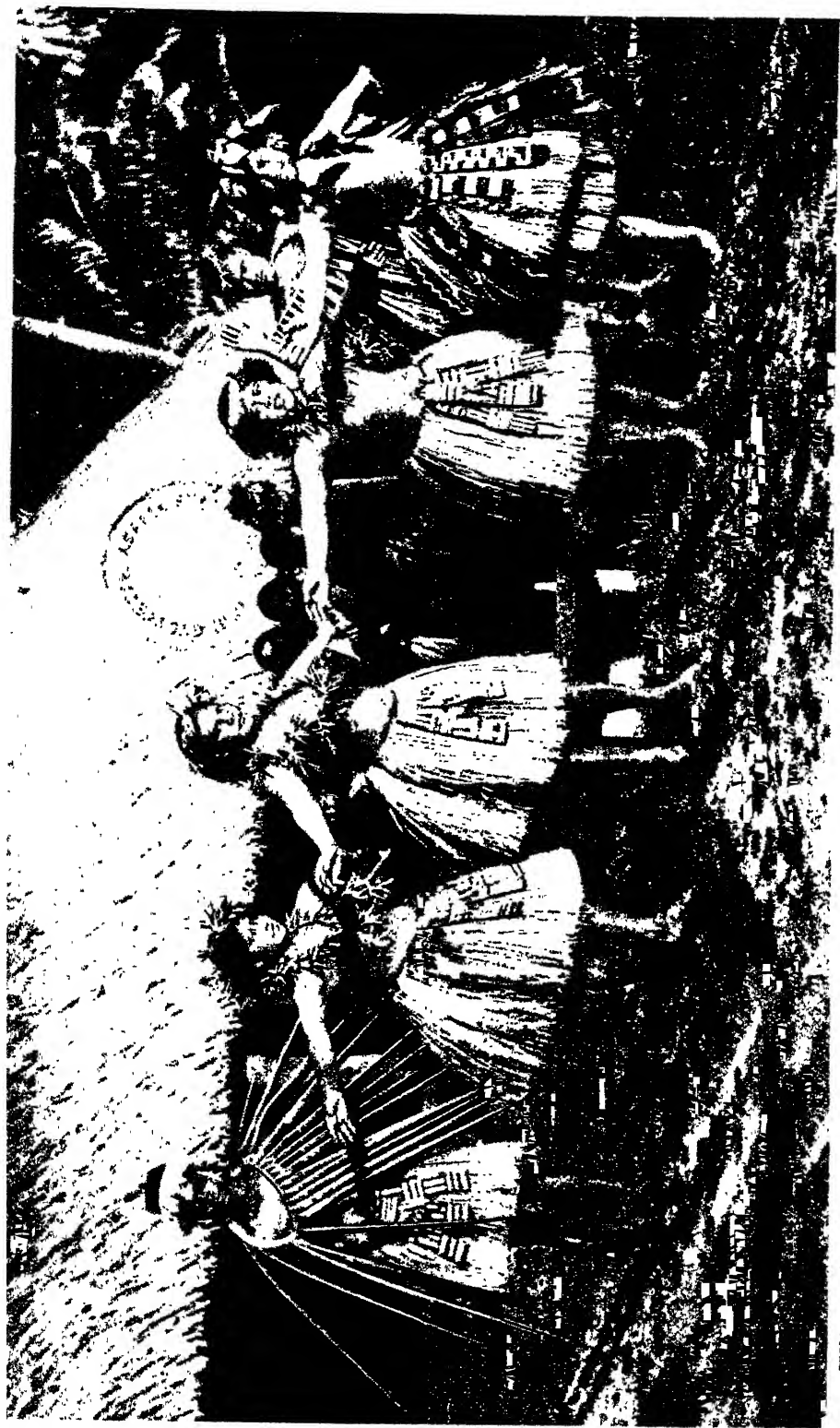
Colour is alive in the Solomon Islands—bronze folk in skirts, saffron, green, and blue, coral paths, verdant palms, white surf on azure sea

Photo, C. W. Collinson



Gilbert Islanders nearly always dance in a sitting position, keeping time by chanting. This dance consists almost entirely of lively and intricate movements of the hand and arms and particularly of the fingers

Photo, W. S. Knox



Ellice Islanders, on the other hand, dance in a standing position, swaying the hips and arms and meanwhile singing scriptural songs. They make a lusty noise, but a musically harmonious one withal

Photo, W. S. Knox



Light skinned and finely built, Tongan women are very prepossessing, amiable, and gentle, and with a flair for coquettish costume



Social rank and status are much revered by the Tongans, and hedged in by a rigid code of etiquette. This is a lady of high degree



It is a family heirloom this young dandy of Rubiana Lagoon so rakishly wears over one eye—an exquisite plaque of clam and tortoiseshell

Photo, J. F. Goldie



Father and son at their cottage door in remote Ong Tong Java. Much artistic skill is shown in the pandanus palm houses of these people

Photo, C. W. Collinson



Pipes of the great god Pan are known to savage tribes the world over. It is on that age-old instrument these Solomon Islanders are shrilling

Photo, C. W. Collinson



Almost all the Solomon Islander's skill in turning bead, shell, and fibre to artistic use is displayed on this fine native's person

Photo, C. W. Collinson



At the Horiomu ceremony at Mawatta, Papuan men dance swathed in coconut fibre, their faces masked with leaves, and carrying bows and arrows, thus impersonating the living spirits of the dead

Photo, W. N. Beaver, "Unexplored New Guinea"

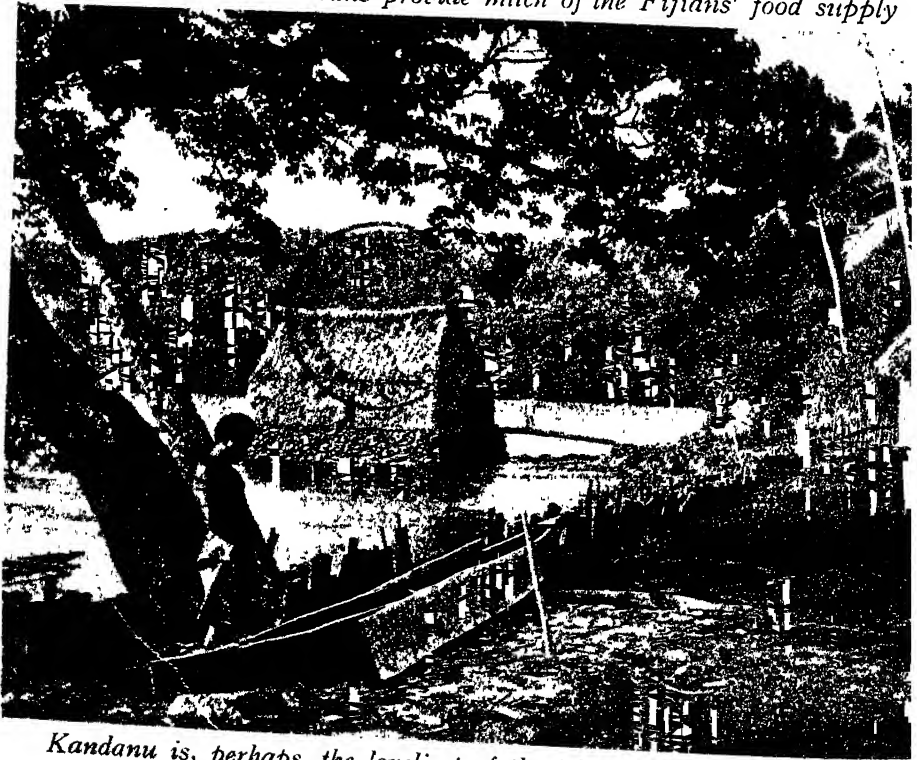


Much fiercer is this Fijian "meke," or war-dance. In this savagery appears in its most ferocious guise, killed, shell-hung warriors gyrating, brandishing weapons, and uttering blood-curdling cries

Photo, George Brown, "Melanesians and Polynesians," Macmillan & Co., Ltd.



Fishing on the coral reefs is a good and pleasant sport. Fishes, molluscs, and crustaceans provide much of the Fijians' food supply



Kandavu is, perhaps, the loveliest of the islands of Fiji. It is in conditions of ideal beauty that this native is building his canoe

Photos, Sir Basil Thomson, K.C.B.



Appetite and digestion are both good in Fiji, and when a feast is toward, an army of sturdy waitresses is needed to carry round the dishes



There is no mock turtle at a banquet in Fiji. The mouth of a City alderman might water at this prospect of real calipash and calipee

Photo, Sir Basil Thomson, K.C.B.



Rounding the mark boat in a race home from the coral reefs. Members of the Royal Yacht Squadron might admire the way Fiji Islanders, watermen from infancy, handle their double outrigger sailing canoes

Photo, Sir Basil Thomas Ltd, K.C.B.

BRITISH EMPIRE IN AUSTRALASIA

astonishing crops, and as long as the market for tropical produce remains good, a hardworking man can make more than a bare living.

The climate of nearly all the islands, except the Solomons and Santa Cruz, where there is much malaria, is not unhealthy for Europeans. White women suffer more from the tropical heat than men, but both sexes are healthy, and live to an advanced age.

There is no antipathy between the whites and the natives, but there is not much intercourse between them, chiefly because of the language difficulty. Each of the three races who are to mould the destiny of Fiji—British, Indians, and Fijians—lives its life aloof, each secretly regarding the other as a lower

form of humanity. In the islands where the whites are greatly outnumbered and scattered, the Europeans fraternise on more equal terms with the natives, and some of them acquire great influence over the chiefs. The others treat the chiefs with deference and take the native code seriously. A few believe firmly in the native superstitions and native medical practices. Besides the supernatural treatment of disease there are hereditary herb doctors, usually women, who hand on the secret of their drugs from mother to daughter. Many Europeans believe implicitly in the skill of these practitioners. Their surgery is very crude, but it is just possible that some of the herbs they use are unknown here and



"HOW SADLY OUR CANNIBAL FEASTS HAVE DEGENERATED!"

The flowers entwined in their bushy black mops indicate the festive spirits of these hungry Fijians who, around a ground-oven, are watching the various stages in the transformation of pig into pork. Not so many years ago their chief table luxury was "long pig," human flesh supplied by friends or foes; nowadays, thanks to missionary influence, mere "pig" provides the favourite dainty

Photo, American Field Museum, Chicago



EVOLUTION OF DRESS AMONG THE SOUTH SEA ISLANDERS

Before the missionary suggested dress, the primitive, natural, and healthy covering of the native of Oceania was generously bestowed by nature, and consisted of a scanty collection of leafy sprays and flowers. In his neat, but unhealthy, European clothes, the native finds himself at a disadvantage. He cares not whether they be clean or dirty, wet or dry, and the inevitable result has been that diseases and lung troubles have become very prevalent

Photo, Thomas McMahon

may have valuable properties. The diseases prevalent among the natives are whooping-cough, dysentery, influenza, and, in certain of the islands, malaria and elephantiasis. Leprosy is destructive only in the islands to which it has lately been introduced. Where it has been long established it remains stationary. Whooping-cough is responsible for an enormous number of deaths among infants. Generally speaking, diseases which we regard as mild are virulent where they find a virgin soil. Measles, when it first visited Fiji, carried off a third of the population. It is now endemic and far less destructive.

Elephantiasis is particularly prevalent in Rotumah, where Europeans suffer from it, but it is to be found throughout the islands. It is not yet

established how the *filaria sanguinis hominis*, the microbe of the disease, is introduced into the human body. The anopheles malaria mosquito is not found farther east than the New Hebrides; it is very active in Papua. Prone as they are to succumb to mild diseases, the natives are extraordinarily resistant to physical shock. It is quite a common thing to find a man who has had his hand blown off by dynamite, used to kill fish, and the stump has set naturally without any surgical treatment. Accidents that would kill Europeans are survived and recoveries are so rapid that the Europeans think the native to be insensible to physical pain.

Though the natives are not prone to suicide, there are a good many suicides in the aggregate. They are generally committed on a sudden



CIVILIZATION AS HASTENER OF SICKNESS AND DEATH

The first is a case where the man has proved "worthy of his cloth." Six foot six, and splendidly built, this sergeant-major of the Ellice Crown Colony Police Force served in France with much distinction. The thoroughly civilized dress of the second man, however, is quite unsuited to the climate, and the British administrators are advising the natives to return to their simple "ridis," or loin cloths

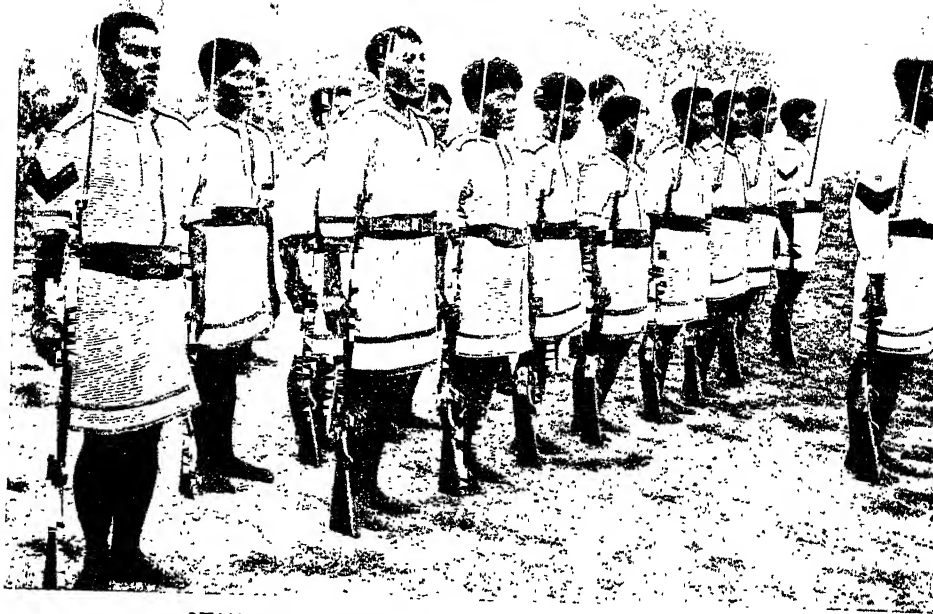
Photo, Thomas McMahon

impulse from a sense of shame at the discovery of a hidden liaison, or some other scandal. The common way is to climb to the top of a coconut tree and throw oneself down, but there are also poisonings by herbs, such as the langaingai.

The islands are passing rapidly from the phase of trading in raw material into that of agriculture. Before 1860 the natives only cultivated sufficient land for their own support, and the few European settlers lived as parasites upon them. As the settlers grew in numbers, the natives began to plant coconuts and to manufacture oil for export, but it was not until the American Civil War, when the price of cotton rose enormously, that there was any organized investment of capital in the islands. With the end of the war, cotton ceased to be profitable, and the

settlers fell back upon copra, the sun-dried kernel of the coconut from which the oil is pressed. Up to about 1900 the price of copra was so low that the plantations could scarcely be worked profitably, but from 1910, and especially since the Great War, the local price has risen, and the area under coconut cultivation in Fiji alone exceeds 30,000 acres. A number of small islands in other parts of the Pacific have been leased for a term of years to a British firm of soap makers to grow coconuts as material for soap. The rather desultory work of a copra plantation suits the Melanesian temperament very well.

As soon as Indian coolies were available the planters began to cultivate sugar. One by one the smaller companies failed, ruined by the bounty-fed beet sugar in Europe. In two years after the war sugar paid very



STAUNCH SUPPORTERS OF BRITISH DISCIPLINE

Although only five miles in circumference, Ocean Island, lying to the south-east of Nauru, may be reckoned as one of the richest islands in the world for its size. Its vast deposits of phosphate of lime render every acre of great value. The native police force is composed of fine, strapping men, possessing remarkable ability for acquiring the principles of European civilization



THE DRILL HOUR OF NAURU GUARDIANS OF THE PEACE

Nauru, or Pleasant Island, formerly belonged to Germany, but was made over by the Peace Treaty to Great Britain. Here is a squad of the new recruits of Nauru, and in these stalwart natives we see one of the finest, though one of the smallest, police forces of the British Empire

Photos, Thomas McMahon



PEACE AND WAR STANDING SIDE BY SIDE

The ceremonial costume and the war dress of the natives of the Gilbert Islands are remarkable for their scanty simplicity. Although the war costume is the more meagre of the two, it is by far the more important in their eyes, and stands for the stoutest plate armour. It is of plaited coconut fibre, and believed to be bullet-proof. For everyday wear waist-cloths of pandanus leaf are used

Photo, Thomas McMahon



REMARKABLE FLOWER, FISH, AND SHELL PARAPHERNALIA OF THE BALLERINA OF NAURU ISLAND

Conch and cowrie shells and brightly-coloured fish play an important part in the dancing costumes of these "fair maids all in a row", who are members of a royal ballet, and are excellent dancers. Crowned with dainty wreaths of papaw blossoms, with chains of the same tiny flower hanging round their bare brown bodies glistening with coconut-oil, they dance lightly and noiselessly over the ground to the soft, rustling accompaniment of their "ridis," or primitive skirt of nandanne leaves.

Photo, Thomas McMeekin



FESTAL ATTIRE OF PARTICIPANTS IN THE FISH DANCE

The dance trappings of the ladies of Nauru are both novel and picturesque, as is illustrated by the above extraordinary decorations donned by the dancers in the celebrated Dance of the Fish. These fish have a two-fold significance; brilliant ornaments during the dance, they form the "feast" at its conclusion, when the dancers, detaching them from their exhausted persons, regale themselves with this well-earned raw and ready refreshment

Photo, Thomas McMahon

well, but the industry suffered later in the universal world depression. Next in importance to the copra and sugar industries is the banana, which is grown near the seaports and exported to Australia and New Zealand. Oranges and pineapples are also beginning to pay. Among the minor products are coffee, quinine, and vanilla, and rubber is now beginning to be planted. The ivory nut, which is used for the manufacture of buttons, is peculiar to the Solomon Islands. The marine products are declining. Formerly, a sea slug found on the reefs and known as the *bêche-de-mer* was a profitable export to China, where it sold for more than

fifteen times the cost of production. Pearl shell and turtle shell and the dried fins of the shark are also marketable, but are becoming scarce.

A recent discovery was rock phosphate. Over many of the more lonely islands there is a bed of this valuable chemical manure from one to four feet thick. It is supposed to be formed by the filtration of rain water through guano into the loose-grained coral. It is very easy to quarry and collect, especially where there is a natural anchorage. Portable tramlines are laid down from the beds to the shipping place, whence the phosphate is transported to the ship in lighters. The discovery has resulted

BRITISH EMPIRE IN AUSTRALASIA

in a number of islets becoming British. This has caused a scarcity of native labour, but so far it has been possible to recruit natives from the more populous islands for short terms, and this may continue until the beds are exhausted.

It is a lamentable fact that the native population of the Pacific Islands continues obstinately to decrease, in spite of every effort made by the British government to arrest the decay. It is not so much the change of custom, though that has had its influence, as the ravages of imported disease against which the natives have not yet been

inoculated. Until recently, the birth-rate, where it was recorded, was above the European average, but the infant mortality more than swallowed it up. The chief reason for this was the absence of any kind of infant food. It was the practice in the old days for a mother to suckle her child for three years until it was able to digest ordinary food. The influence of the missionaries reduced the period to about a year, and most of the deaths take place between one and three years, when the children seem to be peculiarly susceptible to the European infantile diseases — whooping-cough, measles, etc. Gradually, however, the

population seems to be acquiring immunity, partly through their love of travel, and probably the time will come when the decay will be arrested and the population will begin slowly to increase.

It is difficult to predict how the various races will be found fifty years hence. So far, there has been no tendency towards inter-marriage, except in a very limited degree, between the white settlers and the Polynesians. The two most numerous races—the Melanesians and the Indian coolies—in Fiji do not inter-marry, but keep stolidly to their own kind, and the Indians are increasing far more rapidly than the natives. Whether the one race will oust the other, or they will intermingle, it is impossible yet to predict.

Nor is it possible to say what form of government will ultimately be adopted. Some of the groups have passed into the administration of Australia and New Zealand. Fiji, owing to the undertaking given to the natives at the time



A CHIEF OF THE "FRIENDLY" ISLANDERS

The men of the Tonga, or Friendly Islands, are noted for their fine herculean proportions and good-humoured, handsome faces. Nearly a hundred years ago the first Wesleyan Mission was established, and since then civilization has made gigantic strides



CIVILIZATION'S STAMP IS SEEN ON HOUSE AND INHABITANT

These Tongan children have come into the world at a happy period, for nowadays all natives of the Friendly Islands are taught to read and write, and there are many public schools and colleges in Tonga where the more persevering may satisfy their thirst for knowledge. They have discarded the native skirt of pandanus leaves, but still learn to plait this leaf—growing as long as a man—into thatch, sails and mats

of annexation, has remained a Crown Colony with limited representation, but the tendency everywhere is to demand representation and, though it cannot be said that the native population is ready for representative institutions, the demand may have to be met.

The question of administration is not very important in islands in which Europeans do not predominate, because the natives have contrived for so many generations to govern themselves with-

out much friction. Their internecine wars were a blessing in disguise, for they prevented the people from sinking into the lethargy which has beset them since the arrival of the missionaries. In former times a tribe had to fight for its existence and this brought out all the qualities of energy, courage, and self-sacrifice that were born in the native character. A tribe had to work hard on its plantation in order to lay up stores for a siege. Now it prefers a



CLUMSY AND CUMBERSOME, THE DUG-OUTS ARE HAULED TO LAND WITH CONSIDERABLE DIFFICULTY

Without the outrigger, which is generally used for fishing about the reefs and in the creeks, this small company of Tongan seamen would be obliged to exhaust a still greater amount of muscular energy, for only on the water is this strange craft amenable to the workings of the will of the individual, and then, sensitive as a feather in the breeze, it swings lightly to right or left, according to the fancy of the man with the paddle



IN THE SHADE OF THE SHELTERING CANOE

Great care is observed by the Tongan fisherfolk in the construction of canoes, and much time and patience are spent in seasoning and dressing the planks with which they are built. Many of the larger outrigger canoes have raised deck platforms attached to them, on which quaint little houses may sometimes be seen, with sufficient accommodation not only for the crew, but also for their wives and families

Photo, Osmonde Pope

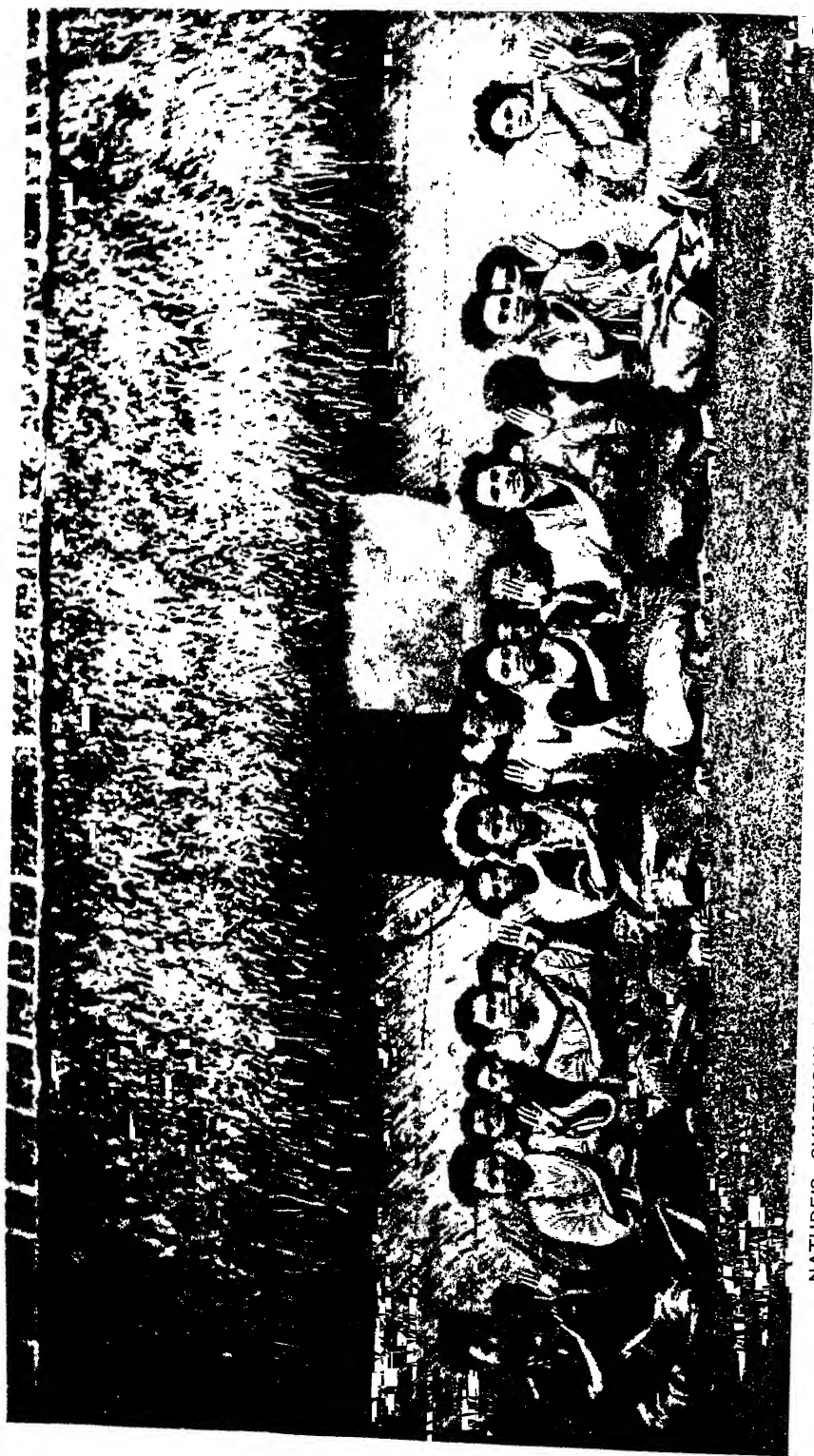
happy-go-lucky existence of travelling from island to island, sponging on the hospitality of unwilling hosts, spending the time in feasting and dancing and flirting until its welcome has been outworn.

Currency throughout the islands is British. Copper is scarcely ever used—the smallest accepted coin being a threepenny piece.

Speaking generally, there are no railways—except light railways on the sugar plantations—few roads for wheel traffic, and very few telephones. It is only within the last few years that Fiji became connected by cable and wireless with the outer world. These marvels of civilization leave the natives quite uninterested. If you ask them how the telephone they are using works, they

will say that it is the lightning. Fortunately for the well-being of the country, there has as yet been no mining except for gold in New Guinea—a gold rush would have a very demoralising influence—but the interior of the larger islands, such as the Solomons, may turn out to be rich in minerals.

Owing to the long-standing dispute between France and Great Britain on the subject of the New Hebrides—a dispute in which neither side will give way—a condominium (joint sovereignty), the most foolish and disastrous form of government ever devised by man, has been established. In spite of the tact of local officials, it is pretty certain that the disputes which are inevitable must before long put an end once and for all to this ridiculous arrangement.



NATURE'S SYMPHONIES PERFORMED BY HAND ORCHESTRA WITHOUT MUSICAL INSTRUMENTS

Hand-clapping as an accompaniment is rare enough, as a recognised art it is unknown; nevertheless, these girls of Tonga have acquired the mysterious talent of imitating musical sounds by the clapping of hands. And this orchestra's fame has spread abroad, and audiences in New Zealand and Australia have shown great enthusiasm at the skilful rendering of melodies produced in this simple fashion, some of which are wonderful imitations of running water, wind, and thunder

British Empire in Australasia

II. How South Sea Islanders Came Under the Flag

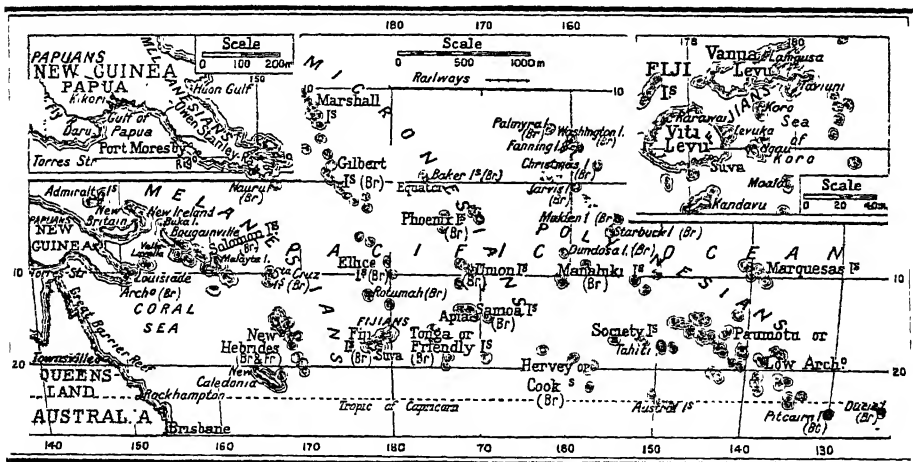
By A. D. Innes, M.A.

Author of "History of England and the British Empire"

THE expansion of the British Empire south of the Equator and in the Pacific Ocean did not, apart from the appropriation of the Falklands in the South Atlantic in 1765, begin until the last quarter of the eighteenth century. The Dutch and Portuguese almost entirely blocked the northern passage from the Indian to the Pacific Ocean, and though much of the western coast line of Australia was traced, chiefly by Dutch, but also by British sailors before the seventeenth century was ended, notably by Tasman about the middle and Dampier at the close of it, the land did not offer attractions for occupation and settlement. Portuguese, Dutch, and Spaniards had been in possession of the Spice Islands and the

two thousand, with which the Pacific is strewn, meeting his death at the hands of the Sandwich Islanders in its northern latitudes. The Pacific was by no means wholly unknown, for the world had been circumnavigated several times since Magellan had first sailed round it, and Robinson Crusoe's prototype, Alexander Selkirk, had been marooned on Juan Fernandez in 1704; but the route across the ocean had lain almost entirely north of the Equator. It was Cook who, broadly speaking, brought Polynesia and Micronesia within the ken of explorers and traders.

Before Cook had been ten years dead the Australian continent was claimed as a British possession, not a week before the arrival of French ships, which



OCEAN ISLANDS OF THE BRITISH EMPIRE IN AUSTRALASIA

Philippines for a century and a half or more before the voyages of Captain Cook led the way to the British expansion.

Here we can only touch upon the realms which now form the Commonwealth of Australia and the Dominion of New Zealand; their development is dealt with elsewhere. Their beginnings, however, mark stages in the general story, and of them therefore we shall have something to say.

Between 1768 and 1779 Cook, in a series of voyages, visited New Zealand and Tasmania, which had been discovered by Tasman in 1642, explored the eastern coast-line of Australia, and touched at many of the islands, numbering more than

may have intended to appropriate the country for France. But Britain and France were then at peace; the British priority and British rights according to European custom were indisputable.

The British flag was for the first time raised officially on Australian soil by Captain Phillip, January 18th, 1788. For a long time to come, Britain, secured by her naval pre-eminence, was to have no rivals in the Antipodes, and when in 1815 the European wars, which broke out shortly after the annexation, were ended, the British position was fully established. The formation of a New Zealand Company led to quarrels between the British settlers and the vigorous Maoris who held these

BRITISH EMPIRE IN AUSTRALASIA

which presented the intervention of a third authority and the annexation of New Zealand in 1835 by formal treaty with the Maoris.

During the latter part of the nineteenth century the European Powers showed little inclination to occupy and make themselves responsible for the Pacific Islands. Of political importance but without real interest attaches to the incorporation of Pitcairn Island by the national families of the mutineers of the *Bounty* 1790, who developed into a small but praiseworthy little community.

Missionary societies were very active in the Pacific Islands; otherwise the Europeans who settled on them were for the most part wastrels of the type who became known as beach-combers, and the trade carried on with the natives was as destructive to them morally and physically, as the work of the missionaries was beneficial. In 1842 France assumed a protectorate in the Marquesas and in Tahiti, and in 1853 she annexed the New Caledonia group, primarily for the purpose of penal settlement. It was perhaps from this time that the Australian colonies began to be moved by desire for annexation, not so much for the sake of possession as from suspicions that the islands might be occupied detrimentally by other

Powers. In the 'eighties, however, a wave of expansionist sentiment was passing over Europe, and the anxiety of the growing Australasian states was becoming acute in consequence. The general result was a partition of spheres inaugurated by the agreement, by no means satisfactory to Australians, between Germany and England, in 1884, which gave to Germany the Bismarck group, and divided between those two Powers the half of New Guinea, or Papua, which was not already under the formal sovereignty of the Dutch. The Fiji group, which formed a kingdom on its own account, had already offered itself to the British Government, which had persisted in fighting shy of annexation. The British reluctance, however, was now overcome, and Fiji, after a brief period as a protectorate, passed definitely under the British flag in 1886. In the new Hebrides a sort of condominium was presently set up between British and French. The Sandwich Islands, otherwise known as Hawaii, went to the United States, while Tonga sought and obtained British protection; the distribution taking place generally in the closing years of the nineteenth century. The Australian annexation of the German group at the beginning of the Great War belongs rather to the specific history of Australia.

BRITISH EMPIRE IN AUSTRALASIA: FACTS AND FIGURES

The Countries

Australian Commonwealth (with Tasmania), New Zealand and Pacific Islands. Last only dealt with here. Roughly grouped as Melanesia, Micronesia and Polynesia, they consist of colonies, protectorates and Australian territories, formerly German, with the New Hebrides and Nauru.

Total estimated area of the islands discussed here about 2,500,000 square miles. Largest island is New Guinea (second largest in world). Total area 122,000 square miles, of which British portions Papua and former Kaiser Wilhelm's Land are about 160,540 square miles. Total estimated population of Pacific Islands, 998,000.

Government and Constitution

British High Commissioner for Western Pacific has jurisdiction over the islands, except those assigned by League of Nations to Australia.

Papua has a legislative council, partly nominated by Governor-General of Australia; New Guinea is administered under Commonwealth laws, as are Papuan Islands. Fiji has governor and legislative council partly elected. Tonga has legislative council on similar lines, but financial affairs are supervised by High Commissioner. British policy, as in other parts of Empire, is to encourage native administration.

Papua and Papuan Islands

PAPUA (BRITISH NEW GUINEA). Australian territory, consists of south-east portion of New Guinea with D'Entrecasteaux and Louisiade groups. Area, 90,540 square miles; population, estimated 251,300 (1,000 Europeans). Industries: gold and copper mining, pearl-fishing, rubber, coconut, sago-bemp. Exports, 1920, £178,000. Trading centres: Port Moresby, Samarai. North-east portion of New Guinea, formerly Kaiser Wilhelm's Land, is also Australian territory.

Area, 70,000 square miles; population, about 120,000. Chief products: coconut, rubber, yams, bananas. Total area, 160,540 square miles; population, 371,300.

PAPUAN ISLANDS. Formerly Bismarck Archipelago, assigned to Australia. Largest island, New Britain; area, 10,000 square miles; population, 52,000. Chief town, Rabaul. New Ireland, area, 4,600 square miles; population, 28,000. New Hanover extends to 530 square miles. Admiralty Islands, group of about forty, area, 600 square miles; population, over 4,000, including Manus, Matthias, Long, Rook, Dampier, and Vulcan islands. Native industry: coconut growing. Total area of islands, about 20,000 square miles; population, estimated 190,000.

Solomon Islands Protectorate

British Protectorate includes Guadalcanar, Malayta, San Cristoval, New Georgia, Choiseul, Ysabel, and Lord Howe. Santa Cruz group were added in 1899. Bougainville, area 3,500 square miles; population, 15,000. Buka Island, area 300 square miles; population, 2,000, formerly German, assigned to Australia. Total area about 15,000 square miles; population, 150,000. Chief products: coconuts, rubber, pineapples, bananas. Exports, 1920, £212,542; imports, £181,162. Seat of government, Tulagi.

New Hebrides

Under joint British and French administration. Area, 5,100 square miles; population, estimated 66,000. Larger islands are Espiritu Santo, Mallicolo, Epi, Efate or Sandwich, Erromanga, Tanna, Futuna or Erromang, and Anietyum. Chief products: copra, maize, cotton, coffee. Exports, 1919, £150,000; imports, £120,000. Seat of government, Port Vila on Efate Island.

BRITISH EMPIRE IN AUSTRALASIA

Fiji

Crown colony of about 250 islands, 80 inhabited, including Viti Levu (area, 4,053 square miles, population, over 5,000), Vanua Levu (area 2,130 square miles, population, about 1,400), Rotuma (population, about 3,000). Total area, 7,083 square miles; population, estimated 161,000 (5,000 Europeans). Chief products: sugar, molasses, copra, rubber, bread-fruit, plantains, bananas. Exports, 1919, £1,371,052; imports, £1,042,390. Capital, Suva, where there are two government schools. The Wesleyan mission in 1919 had 863 schools, and the Roman Catholic 122.

Micronesian Islands

GILBERT AND ELLICE ISLANDS (Colony).—Gilbert or Kingsmill group, including Ocean Island (seat of government), is 166 square miles; population, about 27,000. Industries: phosphates, coconuts, and pandanus fruit. Exports, 1919, £139,183; imports, £92,351. Ellice or Lagoon group, area, 14 square miles; population, 3,100. Union or Tokelau group, area, 7 square miles; population, 900. Fanning Island, area, 15 square miles, and Washington Island, area, 6 square miles, have a population of over 400. Christmas Island, which has valuable phosphate deposits, annexed 1919. Area, about 56 square miles; population, 753. Total area, about 270 square miles; population, estimated 32,000.

NARU OR PLEASANT ISLAND.—Small coral island; population, 1,000. Has valuable deposits of phosphates. Formerly German, now administered by Great Britain, Australia, and New Zealand.

TONGA OR FRIENDLY ISLANDS.—British protectorate since 1900, consisting of Tongatabu, Haabai, Vavau, and smaller islands. Hereditary monarchy, reigning queen Salote (1918). Area, 385 square miles; population, estimated 23,600 (376 Europeans). Products: copra, kava, green fruit, tungus, candle-nuts. Exports, 1918, £169,737; imports, £177,151. Capital, Nukualofa. Natives are Christians, 16,000 Free Church of Tonga; rest Wesleyans and Roman Catholics.

PHOENIX ISLANDS.—Group of eight small islands. Area, 16 square miles; population, less than 100. The islands are Mary, Enderbury, Phoenix, Birney, Gardner, McKean, Hull, and Sydney.

Polynesian Islands

PITCAIRN ISLAND (Colony).—Pacific island, inhabitants mostly descended from Bounty mutineers. Area, 2 square miles; population, 140. Chief products: sugar cane, sweet potatoes, yams, pineapples, bananas, arrowroot, and coffee.

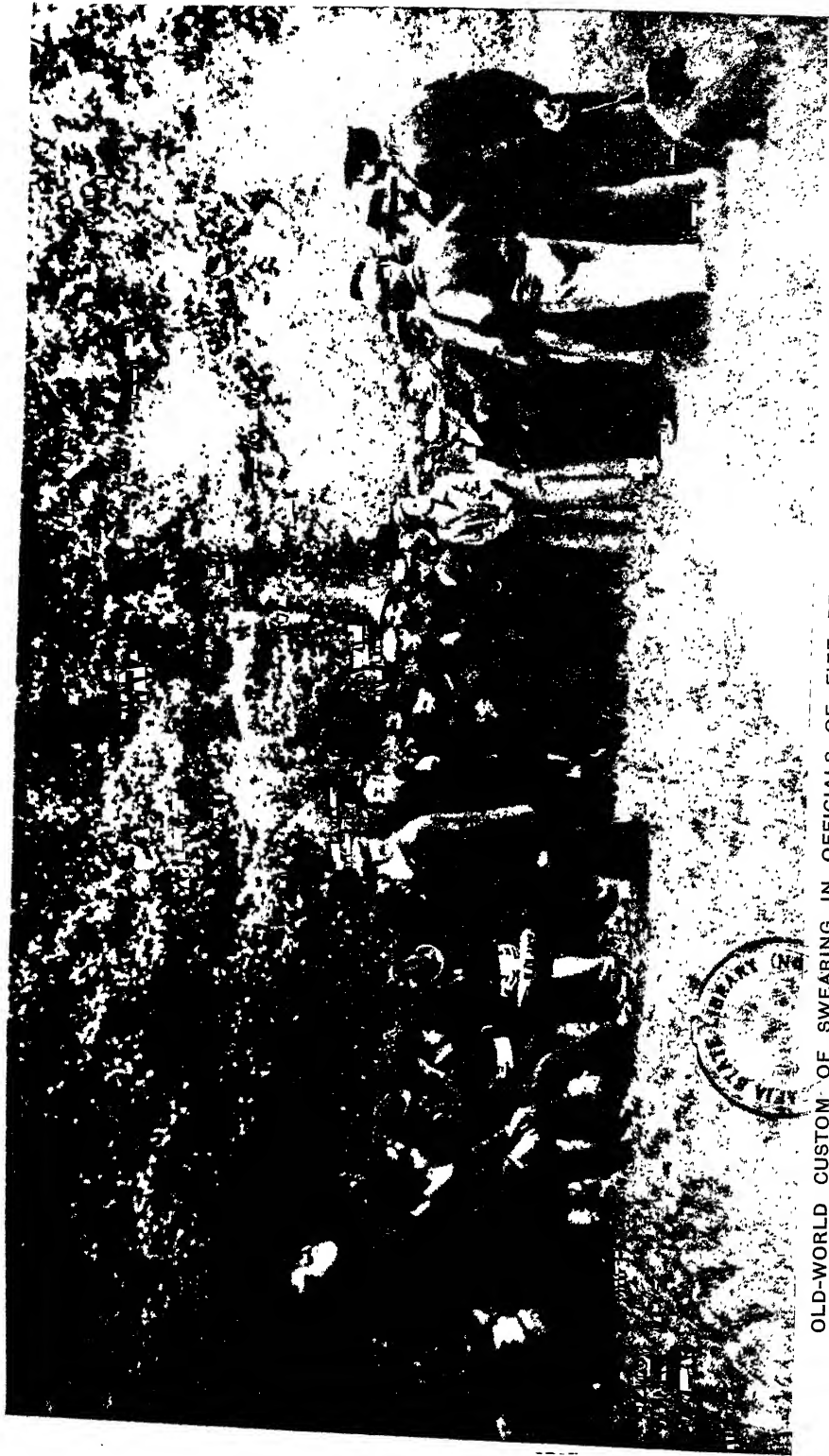
MALDEN ISLAND (Colony).—One of group of coral islands on Equator. Area, 35 square miles; population, 168. Also Jarvis Island, area, 13 square miles; population, 163; Palmyra, 13 square miles; Starbuck, 1 square mile.



ISLAND CHIEFS' ARTISTIC BADGE OF OFFICE

The ornaments, called tarkolas, seen hanging on the chests of these natives, are the peculiar property of chiefs on the island of Vella Lavella. The ring is cut out of clam-shell and backed by a circle of tortoiseshell, from which depend red, white, and blue beads in stripes, fringed with opossum teeth.

Photo, C. W. Collinson



OLD-WORLD CUSTOM OF SWEARING IN OFFICIALS OF FIEF BEUVAL IN OPEN-AIR COURT, GUERNSEY

In the Channel Islands ample evidence has been obtained that originally all feudal courts were held in the open air, usually near some consecrated site, such as sacred stones or wells. In Guernsey some of the smaller feudal courts still assemble in many of the spots that have been used for centuries past, and this scene shows us that the court officers—seneschal, greffier, and vavasseurs—still swear with uplifted hand to be faithful vassals to their liege lord

Photo, Mrs. F. Clark.

British Empire in Europe

I. To-day & Yesterday in the Channel Islands

By Edith F. Carey

Author of "The Channel Islands"

In this series of four articles are described the life and history of the peoples of the minor European possessions lying outside Great Britain: the Channel Islands, Gibraltar, Malta, and Cyprus. Descriptions of England, Ireland, Scotland and Wales will be found under these respective headings.

TWO utterly different currents of life prevail in the Channel Islands at the present day. One, the holiday existence led by the idler and the tourist; the other, the daily routine of the native. Underneath, is an under-current of the old passionate pagan existence: in the neighbourhood of the so-called "Druids' altars" comes the feeling of trespass where the old gods still claim homage.

Of the rude stone monuments of the Neolithic men who roamed the forests by which the islands were once surrounded, many have now been destroyed; but there are records of fifty in Jersey, and, until comparatively recent times, Guernsey had no fewer than sixty-two dolmens and thirty-three menhirs; while Alderney, Sark, and Herm were equally rich in them.

The forests, long since submerged, had been the connecting links of an Armorican peninsula with the mainland, but the difference between the configuration of that day and the present is shown

by the raised beach at South Hill, Jersey, which is no less than 140 feet above sea level. While part of the Roman Empire, the islands were said to have been named Caesarea or Augia for Jersey, Sarnia for Guernsey, and Riduna for Alderney. In Cyprus a tablet was recently discovered dated A.D. 71, commemorating the donation of the citizenship of Rome to Basilius, son of

Turbel, of Gallinaria, Sarniensis, for his good service in the fleet of the Emperor Vespasian. This "unknown warrior" would have been one of the aboriginal Celts whose descendants were, in the fourth and fifth centuries A.D., overwhelmed by a people who, though they eventually adopted the French tongue, did not become a part of the French State. That people, Normans of Scandinavian descent, brought England by force of arms under their own dukes. In continental Normandy, language and geography made them Frenchmen; in the islands, political traditions and inherent loyalty



GUERNSEY MILKMAID

The milk-can is peculiar to these islands. In miniature form, daintily fashioned in silver, visitors may purchase a similar article—as a "porte-bonheur," or mascot

Photo, Mrs. F. Clarke

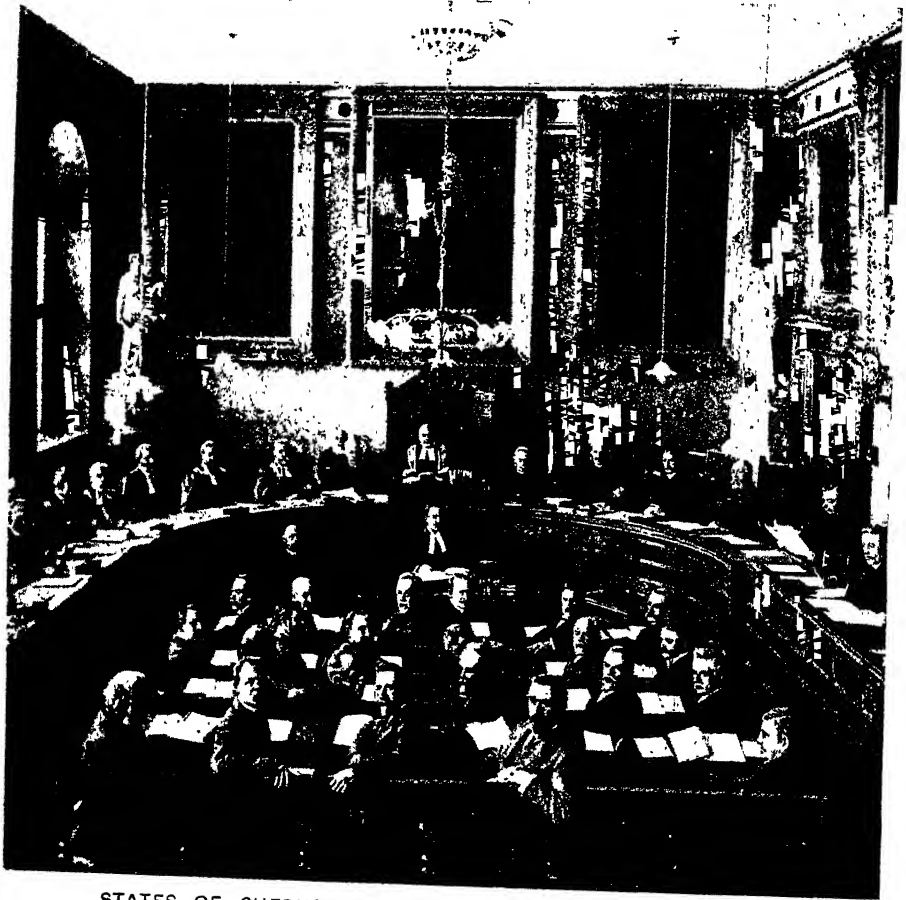
BRITISH EMPIRE IN EUROPE

prevailed against language and geography. Therefore the Channel Islander never became a Frenchman, though neither did he become an Englishman, but he alone remained Norman, keeping his own language, his own customs, and his own laws, independent of the English Parliament, but attached to the English Crown.

The islands annals are full of bitter warfare and invasions by the French and of the islanders' defence of their liberties against the encroachments of oversea representatives of the Crown. The spirit displayed was always the same—unswerving loyalty towards the

King, combined with no less uncompromising defiance of external foes and internal oppressors. Paradoxically they remained ecclesiastically part of the French diocese of Coutances. The conflicting interests which ensued were such that an understanding, confirmed by Pope Sixtus IV. in a bull dated March 1483-4, that the islands should be considered neutral ground, was arrived at between the English and French Kings, and this decree remained in force until the seventeenth century, when it was abolished by the islanders themselves.

The menace of France removed, the islanders extended their foreign trade. In



STATES OF GUERNSEY IN SESSION UNDER ISLAND LAWS

The administration of the Channel Islands is carried on according to their own laws and customs, and comprises two divisions called bailiwicks—Jersey by itself, and Guernsey with the other main islands. In each bailiwick there are two assemblies, one known as the States, and the other the Royal Court. The former is the administrative body, and consists chiefly of the bailiff, the jurats or magistrates, and the rectors

Photo, Norman Grui



FRILLS AND FLOUNCES OF OLD GUERNSEY FASHION

Ladies of a past generation, with their fans and mittens poke-bonnets, and silken scarves, they make a picturesque group in this tranquil, ivy-walled garden. And there are other "Voices of the Past" of which Guernsey may be justly proud. Tangible reminders of Stone and Bronze Age cults are everywhere in evidence, and sacred stones, wells, trees, and hills abound in this island charged with so many mysterious potencies

Photo, Norman Guit

small home-built ships they explored uncharted, unlit seas, regardless of danger. Only comparatively recently has the codfish trade with Newfoundland—of which they were the pioneers—and the shipbuilding therewith connected, been discontinued, owing to the inability of the small capitalist to tide over the transition from sail to steam.

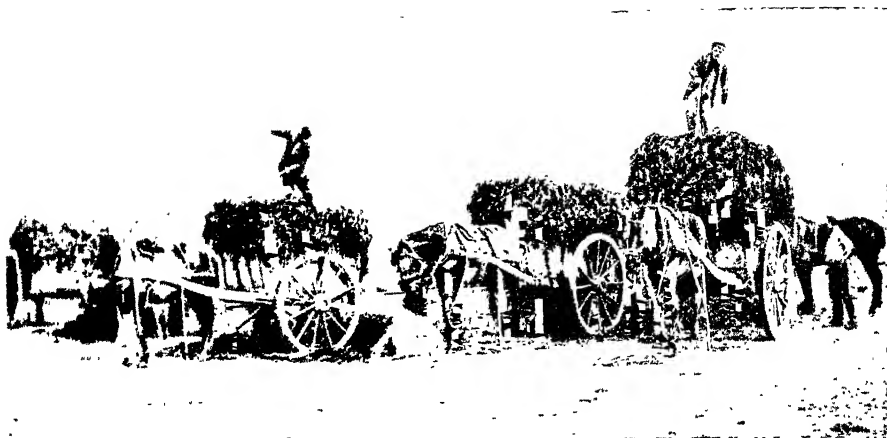
As the islands are neither a colony nor a conquest, their Constitutions are peculiar to themselves. The charge of the military forces is in the hands of the lieutenant-governors of Jersey and Guernsey respectively, but the care of justice and civil affairs is in those of the Bailiffs of the two larger islands, and although the Judge of Alderney and the Seigneur of Sark have jurisdiction in minor matters, all serious cases have to be referred to the Guernsey Royal Court.

In both islands both judicial and legislative powers rest with the States, consisting of the bailiff, the jurats, the rectors, and the deputies, or representatives of the people. The Crown appoints its own officials—the procureur, the contrôleur, the receveur

"du Roi," and the vicomte in Jersey, although, curiously enough, not the prévôt in Guernsey. In civil cases and in legislative matters alike the last word lies with the Privy Council.

French is still the official language, and in the country parishes a dialect of the *Langue d'oïl*—the Romance tongue of the Trouvères—is still spoken. Although British money is in everyday use, yet in Guernsey the official coinage—although it has long ceased to circulate—is the *Livre Tournais*, in spite of the fact that it was obsolete, even in the town of Tours, centuries ago.

The *Clameur de Haro*, which was abolished in Normandy as long ago as 1583, can still be resorted to by any Channel Islander who thinks his property is being encroached upon, or his rights infringed, by the action of another. In the presence of two witnesses he kneels upon the ground and cries: "*Haro, Haro, à l'aide, mon Prince! On me fait tort!*" and he then repeats the Lord's Prayer in French. On this being done, all proceedings must be stayed until the case is tried before the Royal Court. It has been supposed to be an



HARVESTING THE REFUSE CROPS OF THE SEA



COLLECTORS OF SEAWRACK ON JERSEY COAST

Seaweeds abound in the warm waters round the Channel Islands. The larger varieties were formerly used in the manufacture of kelp, and are still employed as manure. The incoming tide never fails to bring in its store of detached "vraic," which is eagerly raked together and carted away by the industrious Jersey folk, who have proved this waste seagrowth to be a most valuable fertiliser

Photos, Albert Smith

appeal to Rollo, Normandy's first duke, but it is now considered to be a survival of an even older custom which prevailed on the coasts before the invasion of Rollo and his Northmen.

Feudalism, though in a modified form, is another survival of medieval days. During the Royal visit of July, 1921, the lords of manors held "in capite" knelt before King George—"le Roi, nôtre Duc"—with their hands in

his, and did homage for their fiefs, saying: "Sire, je suis vôtre homme, à vous porter foi et hommage contre tous"; and feudal dues, such as mallards and spurs, were paid in 1921 as punctiliously as those owed by the original seigneurs to the dukes of Normandy or to the Plantagenets.

And not only was his Majesty received in either island by his two "hereditary cup-bearers"—the Seigneurs of Rosel

BRITISH EMPIRE IN EUROPE

and of Sausmarez—but by the “receivers” of his feudal rents, for he himself is an Island Seigneur and Lord of the “Fief le Roi.” In Jersey the smaller feudal courts have been abolished, but in Guernsey they still sit, and their officers—seneschal, greffier, and vavasseurs—still swear with uplifted hand to be faithful vassals to their liege lord.

Yet these survivals of the romantic days of chivalry do not interfere with the keen business instinct of the Channel Islander. Jersey's forty-five square miles of territory are cultivated to the utmost. In 1920 its exports were of a declared value of £2,153,956, consisting principally of over 61,000 tons of potatoes, 10,000 tons of tomatoes, and 1,170 head of cattle. During the war exiled Jerseymen sang a parody of “Tipperary” emphasizing their desire to go back to “nôtre petit Jerri, et nos pommes-de-terre,” and it is not surprising that such a beautiful island inspires the passionate devotion of its inhabitants.

Although St. Helier has been so modernised as to be spoilt, St. Aubin, the old capital, is wonderfully picturesque, nestling on the side of a hill, and overlooking miles of glistening sand and turquoise sea. Wooded, flower-laden valleys are surmounted by old manor houses, picturesque farms, gorse-scented cliffs, above all by the magnificent medieval fortress of Mont Orgueil.

A mild climate and no income tax—is it wonderful that harassed Englishmen have flocked over to buy up every available property? But the visitor cannot fail to be struck by the keenness and determination of the Jerseyman to maintain the traditions and the

individuality of his native island, and his patriotism is fostered by the splendid work of the Société Jersiaise, to which almost every resident belongs.

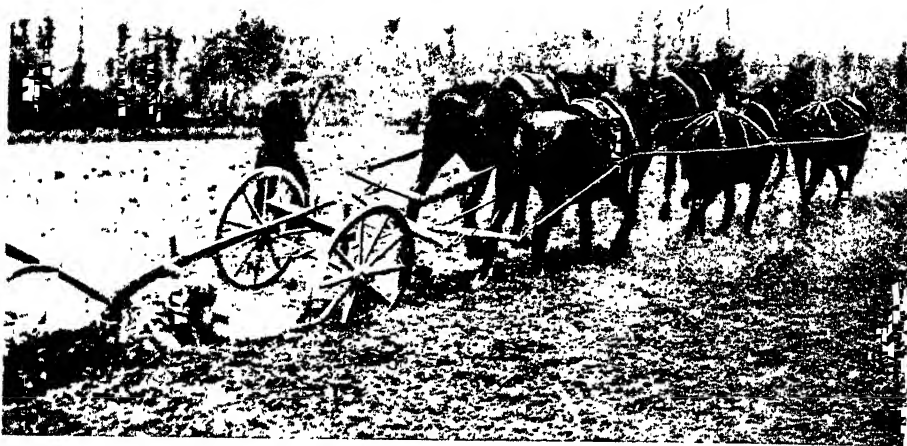
No one who has entered Guernsey harbour on a summer morning can forget the panorama, set in a sea of shimmering blue, of Sark, Herm, and Jethou, “poised wraith-like on the opalescent dusk,” with grim old Castle Cornet standing out against the slope on which the town of St. Peter Port is built. Tiers of red-roofed houses—from whose midst rise the spires of Elizabeth College and St. Joseph's Church—cluster down to the water's edge; long rows of carts heaped with produce are being unloaded by black revolving cranes; on the shining level of the harbour itself a fleet of white motor-boats, yachts, and



ONE OF GUERNSEY'S BEST

He is characteristic of the fine race of fishertolk who inhabit the small villages on the Guernsey coast. Hale and hearty, despite his three score years and ten, he still pursues his arduous occupation with surprising vigour

Photo, Norman Grui



HOW THE POTATO IS CULTIVATED IN JERSEY

During the latter years of the nineteenth century, which were marked by peace and prosperity for all the Channel Islands, potato farming brought great wealth to the inhabitants of Jersey, and the cultivation of the potato is still continued on the island with all its former vigour. Ploughing usually takes place in December with a special two-bladed plough, a team of six horses being in general use



GREAT CARE IS EXERCISED IN PLANTING EACH POTATO

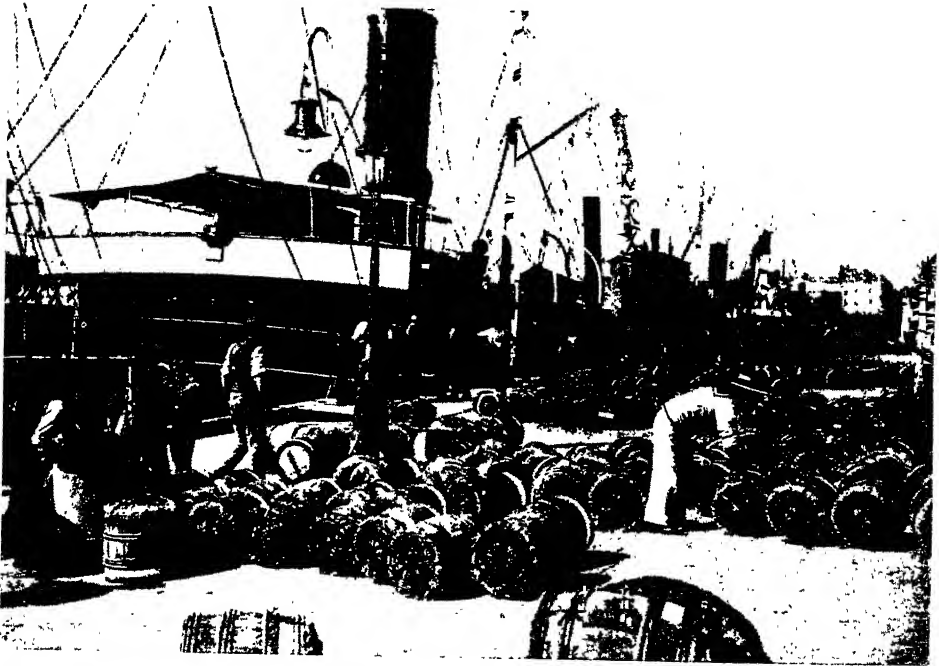
The lands of Jersey have always been owned by a race of peasant proprietors, and everywhere it is obvious that the country has been tended for its own sake by men who loved it and not by hirelings. The potatoes are carefully planted by hand, a small quantity of fertiliser added, and then covered with the earth turned from the next furrow made by a one-horse plough

Photo, E. F. Guillon



HUMAN TEAM OF SONS OF THE SOIL: JERSEY

They pick their way with care among the long rows of young potato plants, pulling along in their train a small V-shaped plough or hoe, which banks up the earth above the roots. They willingly take the place of the plough horse, and perform this long and tiring task themselves in order to safeguard the crop from any possible injury



POTATOES PACKED AND LABELLED FOR EXPORT TO ENGLAND

The most strenuous task has been accomplished, the potato crops have been harvested and sorted, and now, packed securely in these export barrels, each holding about one hundredweight, are stacked on the wharf in readiness for loading on the cargo vessels. The majority of new potatoes, so thoroughly appreciated in early spring, are due to the care and diligence of the Jersey landsman

Photos, E. F. Guiton



JERSEY MEN AND MAIDENS GATHERING THE EARLY TOMATO CROP

A very large portion of land in Jersey is given over to market-gardening, and many exotic flowers and fruit thrive in abundance in the soft, warm air of this beautiful island. In the valleys and on the hill-sides the tomato is extensively cultivated, and ripens easily here as in France. In 1920 no fewer than 10,000 tons of this luscious fruit were exported from Jersey.

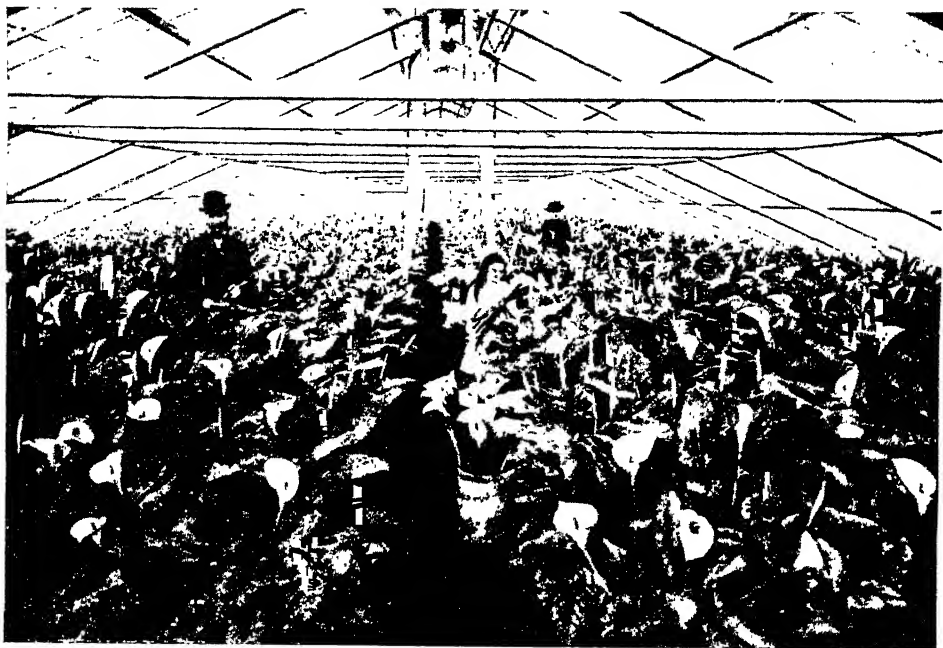
Photo, Albert Smith



WHERE THE MOST POPULAR OF AUTUMN FLOWERS IS NURTURED

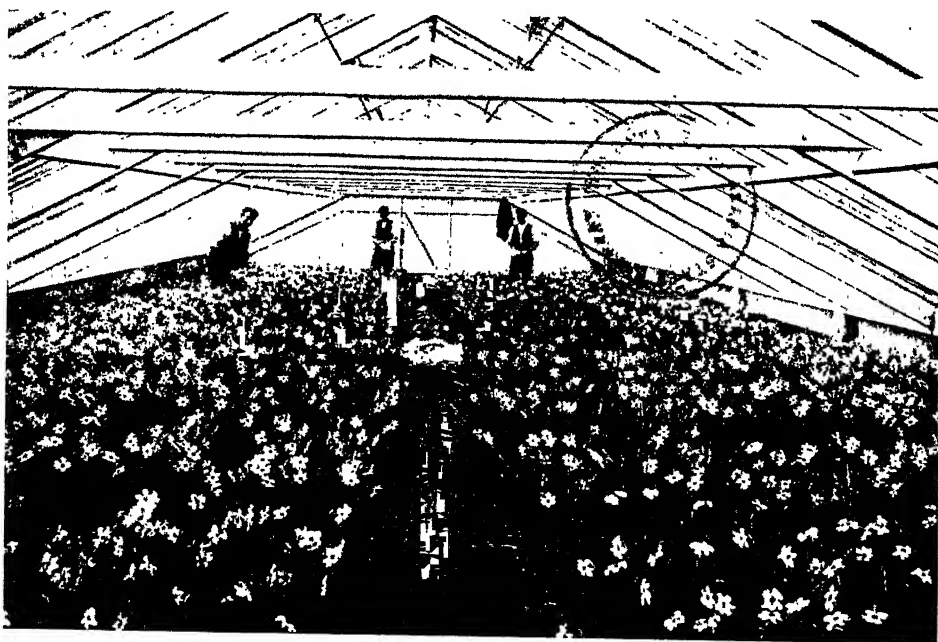
One glimpse of a Jersey chrysanthemum field will testify to the never-failing devotion of the landowners to their small holdings, every foot of which is carefully and intelligently cultivated. As in spring, so in autumn, the first-fruits of the flower-harvests reach English shores long before similar flowers have deigned to show themselves in the wayward English climate.

Photo, Norman Grut



IN HOUSES OF CRYSTAL STATELY LILIES THRIVE

Within the glasshouses a sea of flowering plants spreads away into the distance, and the air is laden with the strong, sweet perfume of the Arum lily. From out the dark green foliage it rises in solitary grandeur; the perfectly moulded chalice-flower breathing out such purity and majestic simplicity that one falls awondering whether there could be another flower arrayed with the glory of one of these



ENGLAND'S FIRST SPRING FLOWER IS BORN IN THE CHANNEL ISLANDS
Guernsey is well termed an island of glasshouses; on its twenty-four square miles of territory it possesses no fewer than 150 miles of greenhouses. Covent Garden does well to order immensurable quantities of this sweet-scented personification of spring, for who does not rejoice in the reappearance of the narcissus, the loveliest of lovely spring flowers?

Photos, Norman Gray



THE CHARM OF THE CHANNEL ISLANDS

Tradition is bound up in the lives of the older inhabitants, and thus venerable Guernseyman could relate stirring tales of witches, devil-worshippers, and sorcerers—nebulous shapes of bygone days that still linger in the dim recesses of his memory

Photo, Alfred Dobrée

trading vessels swing at anchor. Over two and a half million baskets of tomatoes alone are annually dispatched to England, and there are over 150 miles of greenhouses on Guernsey's twenty-four square miles of territory, while from the little trading port of St. Sampson's her very entrails, in the shape of granite, are being shipped away, having been torn from quarries sometimes hundreds of feet deep. These industries have ruined the beauty and sadly encroached upon the agricultural area of the island. The "grande charrue," or big plough, where the neighbours—a

survival of the old communal system—contributed cattle as well as manual labour, has almost disappeared; although another immemorial custom regulated by law—that of gathering *vraic* or seaweed to fertilize the land—still prevails in all the islands.

Alderney, wild and desolate, with its grass-grown streets, its abandoned breakwater, its wind-swept coasts, has always been the Cinderella of the Channel Islands. Neither cultivated nor built over as are the larger islands, nature, with a fierce savage beauty and a brilliancy of colouring she seems to have reserved for the Channel Islands alone, still holds sway here, and all Alderney's traditions are connected with storms and elemental forces. Unfortunately, she has had the misfortune to drift into the hands of the Office of Woods. It has starved the island of education, of drainage, of every form of public improvement, although, as an "absentee landlord," it collects large royalties

from the quarries, from the harbour, and from the pier.

Sark is an epitome of the beauty of all the islands: a verdant plateau, sloping into wooded valleys carpeted with wild flowers, and ending abruptly on rocky precipices golden with gorse, and fringed with ferns and heather, while at the foot of these cliffs are mysterious caves, filled with sea-anemones and swept by a jewel-like sea of turquoise, emerald, or lapis-lazuli. Colonised from Jersey in the sixteenth century, Queen Elizabeth created it as a special fief, and granted it to Helier de



"IT'S DABBLING IN THE DEW MAKES THE MILKMAIDS FAIR"

Victor Hugo, who lived for some time in the Channel Islands during his exile, described them as "Bits of France fallen into the sea and picked up by England." But the thoroughbred Channel Islander is neither French nor English, and typical English country maids as these two appear to be, could we hear their conversation, we should recognise the unmistakable "patois" of the Jersey peasantry



THE MILKING HOUR IN A JERSEY VALLEY

The breeds of horned cattle peculiar to Jersey, Guernsey, and Alderney—for each of these islands has its own variety, which is carefully kept from all intermixture—have been so increased and improved that they are in demand everywhere and are exported to the ends of the earth. The dairymen take great pride in these small, gentle animals with their glossy coats and soft, velvety eyes

Photos, Albert Smith



THE ROCK OF GIBRALTAR: A BRITISH COLONY DISCLOSED BY THE CAMERA COMPLETE IN A SINGLE PICTURE
Viewed thus from an aeroplane, looking southwards from the British lines, the raccourse is in the foreground, the Rock rising sheer beyond, with the Mootish castle on the right. Beyond again, with the Signal Station in between, O'Hara's Tower rises in a peak, with Windmill Hill, the flats, and Europa Point at the extreme south. The fine harbour is on the right, the Atlantic shore; on the left the Rock presents an inaccessible front to the Mediterranean.

Carteret, Seigneur of St. Ouen. To this day the seigneur enjoys unusual privileges and administers justice in the parish school, assisted by his seneschal and his "tenants"—farmers and fishermen.

Herm, with its satellite Jethou, is famous for its shell-beach, the luxuriance of its wild flowers, the beauty of its outlook, the wonder of its air.

The islands are a small group and are closely allied, yet each has produced a distinct type. But soon inter-marriage with the outer world and alien immigration will do away with the purity of the race, and Channel Islanders will be Jersey-men and Guernsey-men in name only, and not as hitherto, a race apart.

II. Gibraltar: The Western Gate of Empire

By Major C. W. J. Orr, C.M.G.

Colonial Secretary, Gibraltar

GIBRALTAR is a rocky promontory jutting out from the coast of Spain at its most southerly point, and commanding the entrance to the Mediterranean. The Rock rises sheer from the water, and is connected with Spain by a narrow sandy isthmus. The highest point is 1,396 feet above sea-level, the eastern and northern faces forming inaccessible precipices; the town lies on the western side overlooking the bay of Gibraltar.

Gibraltar, known in ancient times as Mons Calpe, is one of the famous Pillars of Hercules, the other being Mount Abyla, or Apes' Hill, on the opposite coast of Africa, the breadth of the Straits at this point being only nine miles. It was known to, and held by, Phoenicians, Carthaginians, Romans, and Visigoths in turn, but remained uninhabited till the Mahomedan invasion of Spain in the eighth century A.D. The first landing-place of the Mahomedan invaders of Spain, it is also the point from which the last remnant of a once glorious empire retired, when the Moors were driven back to Africa in 1610.

Moorish Cuckoos in Gothic Nests

In the time of the Carthaginians Gibraltar was used as a watch-tower from which the Roman galleys might be observed, but the elder Scipio wrested it from them, and it was held by the Romans until the fifth century A.D. It then fell into the hands of the Goths, who built on it a chapel, to which pilgrimages of penance were made from

the neighbouring districts. In A.D. 710, when the Gothic kingdom in Spain was distracted by intestine quarrels, the Governor of Ceuta called in the aid of the Saracen Governor of the Western Provinces. In response to this appeal the Moorish chief, Tarik-Ibn-Zeyad, was dispatched from Tangier and landed at Algeciras with 12,000 men early in A.D. 711 and entrenched himself there; he then sent a detachment across the bay with orders to erect a castle on the rock of Calpe.

When the Rock was First Fortified

The present Moorish castle is what remains of this tower, and the name of Gibraltar, a corruption of Gebel-Tarik, or Mountain of Tarik, recalls the name of the general who first fortified the rock. From this position of advantage the Moors proceeded to overrun the neighbouring district, and finally met and defeated the Gothic army under Roderick, King of the Visigoths, and took possession of his kingdom.

Gibraltar henceforth became a stronghold of importance, the primitive defences constructed by Tarik being greatly strengthened in 1161 by Abd-el-Mumin, caliph of the Almohades. In 1309 the Rock was for the first time subjected to a regular siege, and was captured in the reign of Ferdinand IV. of Spain by Alonzo de Guzman, but was recaptured by the Moors in 1333 after a gallant defence of four and a half months. During the next 150 years Gibraltar was besieged several times, and in 1462

It was once more captured by the Spaniards, and was for some years in the possession of the family of the Duke of Medina Sidonia, but was subsequently annexed to the Crown of Spain. An abortive attempt in 1504 by the then Duke of Medina Sidonia to regain possession of Gibraltar entailed a further siege, the loyalty of the inhabitants to the Crown earning for them the distinction, bestowed on them by the Queen of Spain, of the title "Most loyal." At the same time a coat-of-arms was granted to the city, consisting of a castle with a golden key pendant, with the following inscription: "Seal of the Noble City of Gibraltar, the Key of Spain."

Britain Takes the Key of Spain

Gibraltar remained in Spanish hands until 1704, when it was captured after a siege of three days by a British squadron under command of Sir George Rooke. From that date the British flag has flown over the fortress, which was formally ceded to England by the Treaty of Utrecht in 1713, renewed by the Treaty of Versailles in 1783. It has, however, been subjected to attacks from Spain on many occasions, the most celebrated being the famous siege lasting from 1779 to 1783, known in the history of Gibraltar as "The Great Siege." The fortress was defended by General Eliott, who was Governor at the time and who was afterwards raised to the peerage as Baron Heathfield.

Wonders of the Great Siege

On November 27th, 1781, in a great sortie made by night, the enemy's parapets were levelled to the ground, magazines exploded, gabions and platforms fired, and cannon and mortars spiked. In April of the following year the combined fleets of France and Spain arrived in the Bay and a terrific bombardment took place both from sea and land, but the attack failed. Finally, peace was concluded between France, Spain, and England, Gibraltar remaining in British hands.

On the capture of Gibraltar by the British in 1704, the Spanish inhabitants moved with their families to the neigh-

bouring Spanish towns, particularly to San Roque, a small town a few miles to the north of the Rock. Settlers were brought from Italy to carry on the trade and business of the fortress, and the little fishing village of Catalan Bay, which lies on the eastern side of the Rock, is inhabited by the descendants of Genoese fishermen who settled there after the British occupation. The present inhabitants of the town of Gibraltar are the descendants of Italian and British immigrants. The fortress is strongly defended, and has also developed into an important naval base, a fine Admiralty Harbour and dockyard having been constructed within recent years. The bay, outside the Admiralty Harbour, provides a safe and commodious anchorage, and is used by ships of all nationalities, the port being famous as a coaling station.

Gibraltar is dependent on outside supplies for its existence. The inhabitants, numbering about 19,000, exclusive of the military forces, are engaged almost entirely on the shipping and coaling business and the supply of stores to ships.

Pride that Outdoes the Don's

The Spanish language is spoken, although all the Government-aided schools teach their pupils in English, which is the official language and is spoken by all the educated classes.

The temperament of the Gibraltarian is emotional, impulsive, and easily influenced by environment. Like the Spaniard, he is proud, indeed, even prouder than the Spaniard. He will starve himself rather than appear in shabby clothes or own to having accepted charity. The Gibraltarian woman is expert with the needle, and keeps herself and her house spotlessly clean, no matter how humble her surroundings; she will wear her fingers to the bone to provide neat and tidy clothes for her children, whose outward appearance is everything, for pride demands it.

The Spanish town of La Linea has sprung up just across the frontier, and supplies a large amount of Spanish labour for work in the dockyard and



THE LION THAT GUARDS THE GATE OF THE MEDITERRANEAN

Gibraltar town stumbles up the north-west steep of the Rock. Tank's Keep still frowns over the huddled houses, but its strength is made ridiculous by the batteries of modern artillery above it, while the Power into whose hands it passed is symbolised by the Rock-Gun, famous in the great siege, that still stands on the summit of the mountain mass

in the coalheaving trade. For military reasons no person other than a native of Gibraltar or official in Government employment may enter or reside in Gibraltar without the Governor's permission; it is essential to keep the civil population within reasonable numbers, and the Spanish workmen who reside in La Linea are obliged to obtain a pass daily at the gates of the fortress before they are allowed to enter. A number of British Indians have set up shops in the town, having obtained temporary permits of residence, and they do a brisk business in silks, curios, etc., with the passengers of ships which call at the port to coal.

The Roman Catholic religion prevails in Gibraltar, the number of persons of other Christian denominations being small, though there is a considerable

element of Jews professing the Hebrew faith. The love of the Gibraltarian for his native town is very marked. Emigration is unpopular, though some few of the inhabitants go each year to the Western Hemisphere to seek their fortune, either to the United States or to the Spanish-speaking states of South America. Many of the poorer classes have never travelled beyond the neighbouring Spanish towns; the richer classes take their holidays mostly in England, and many send their children to be educated there. The population of Gibraltar is a curiously cosmopolitan community, living entirely on its trade with the outside world but wedded to its beloved "Rock," proud of its history, proud of being an integral part of the British Empire, and happy in its southern environment and beautiful surroundings.



MALTESE GARB AND ENGLISH SPEECH ON VALLETTA'S STAIRWAYS

This, the Strada San Giovanni, is one of many streets of Valletta that ascend steeply from the harbour in flights of steps. With its broad stones trodden by sandalled monks and cloaked women, its projecting windows and high lights and deep shadows, it is utterly un-English in appearance and the advertisements and shop signs written in English look quite incongruous

Photo, R. L. Morgan

III. Malta and the Maltese

By Prof. J. L. Myres, M.A., D.Sc.

Writer on Mediterranean Geography and Archaeology

THE Maltese Islands have a historical and political importance out of all proportion to their size owing to their geographical position and their possession of one of the best natural harbours in the Mediterranean. They lie about 60 miles south of Sicily, and 180 miles east of the nearest point of Tunis, on an extensive bank of soft tertiary limestones such as form much of the coastland of the Mediterranean and are still being deposited on its bed; and they have formed in the past a prominent feature of the broad natural causeway which this bank furnished, before its subsidence, between Sicily and North Africa, whereby plants, animals, and early types of man passed between north and south, as is shown by the fossil remains of elephant, rhinoceros, and other species long extinct even in Northern Africa, which are found in the caves with which the Maltese limestones are honeycombed.

Evidence of the earth's movements which broke down this causeway, leaving only these minute islands exposed, is the great fracture which crosses Malta diagonally along the steep face of the Bingenma Hills, dividing the island into a south-eastern plateau sloping gently to the north-east, and a low-lying northern region almost intersected by the deep bays of S. Paul and Melleha, and wholly separated from the steep-fronted and level-topped Gozo by the strait in which the third island, Comino, lies, along the line of similar faults parallel with the main fracture already mentioned.

Malta itself is about $17\frac{1}{2}$ miles long, and $8\frac{1}{2}$ miles broad: Gozo about $8\frac{3}{4}$ miles by $4\frac{1}{2}$ miles. The highest point in the Bingenma Hills is 726 feet above sea-level. There are good anchorages in the bays and the two Comino channels, but the rest of the coasts rise steeply from moderate depths, and are



PROUD OF HER "HOOD OF SHAME"

Hood and cloak in one, made invariably of black cloth gathered on to a frame held in the right hand. Tradition says that the Maltese women adopted the faldetta to hide their faces from their French conquerors

unencumbered by reefs, except the minute islet of Filfolà, about three miles off the south coast of Malta. At the south end there is a deep bay, Marsa Scirocco, and Gozo has a fishing cove.

But the importance of Malta depends not upon these minor facilities but on those half-drowned valleys which drain

about one-third of the whole area of the island, and converge on the middle point of the north-east coast, forming a natural harbour unrivalled in these waters for security from storms, and for natural facilities for defence.

Here, between two main inlets, the Grand Harbour on the south, and Marsa Muscetto on the north, the steep-sided promontory called Sceberras, on which Valletta stands, runs out, a mile long, to St. Elmo's Point at the very entrance, and is prolonged seawards by the Menarch Shoal, on which stands the modern break-water. As the double mouth is hardly a mile in width, and the flanking promontories, Dragutto and Ricasoli, are steep-fronted likewise, access from the sea is easily controlled, and it was the resistance of St. Elmo's Fort that baffled the Turks in the great siege of 1565.

Into Marsa Muscetto descend three tributary valleys from the north, forming inner creeks of what is now the Quarantine Harbour, below the pleasant suburbs of Sliema, Lazzaretto, and Pietà. The Grand Harbour has no fewer than four such inlets, narrower and steeper-sided than those on the north, so that the promontories of St. Angelo and Senglea, between

them, repeat in miniature the fortress-profile of Valletta itself.

Indeed, it was on this side, behind St. Angelo, and overhanging the Arsenal creek, that the Knights of St. John made their first settlement, the Borgo Vecchio or Vittoriosa, St. Elmo serving at first only as an outpost to watch the harbour mouth, and the Sceberras ridge being unoccupied until after the great siege had proved its military value. Senglea Point, and the

high ground of Burmola, or Cospicua, south-west of the Arsenal creek, were occupied later by sister-cities of Borgo, and included in the eventual fortifications.

It was not, however, till a comparatively late period in the island's history that the advantages of the harbour site were appreciated. Malta has passed through five main phases of human occupation, and in three of them the centres of its activity have been elsewhere. The imposing ruins of prehistoric sanctuaries at Hagiar Kim, Mnajdra, and Hal-Tarxien, the still grander monument of Gigantea in Gozo, and the contemporary cave-shrine and ossuary at Hal-Safieni, date from the Later Stone Age, and represent a late and special offshoot of an



LITTLE BLACK RIDING-HOOD

As other children love their "Red Riding-hood," despite its fearful associations with a wolf, so Maltese children love their black faldetta, despite its reminder of foreign ogres—and look as winsome in it as the child of the fable

Photo, Donald McLeish



POPULAR WARES: A SWEET STALL AT A COUNTRY FAIR

Women and girls of all classes and all ages wear the faldetta out of doors. Viewed from behind, youth thus cloaked is indistinguishable from age, unless perhaps by its more erect carriage, and the traveller's curiosity is constantly piqued as to what type of face a turning figure will disclose beneath the over-arching hood, what figure within the black, enveloping folds

Photo, P. Agius-Catania

essentially West Mediterranean culture represented by the "Giants' Graves" of Sardinia, the megalithic monuments of Spain and Corsica, and cave-deposits and occasional ruder monuments in Sicily and South Italy. In Malta, such early settlements are widely distributed, and their remains indicate a large population, pastoral and agricultural, with considerable skill in pottery, sculpture, and architecture, and extensive intercourse.

These first occupants were of purely Mediterranean stock, and differ wholly from their successors, the Phoenician settlers of the Early Iron Age (1000-700 B.C.), from whom the later inhabitants seem to be mainly descended. Between the Stone Age culture and the Phoenician occupation lies a long interval of desolation, due, as the condition of the early ruins suggests, to prolonged drought and desert conditions, so that

the islands played no part in the Minoan civilization of the Bronze Age.

The principal Phoenician settlement seems to have been at Marsa Scirocco, though there are remains also elsewhere; and it lasted long after the surrender of the islands to the Romans in 218 B.C. at the outbreak of their second war with Carthage. Under Roman rule the islands, still essentially Phoenician in culture, were attached to the Sicilian province, but had their own municipal administration, and enjoyed considerable prosperity. The shipwreck of S. Paul off the bay which bears his name, on his journey from Caesarea to Rome, probably in A.D. 58, gives a momentary glimpse of a friendly people speaking an unfamiliar language, presumably a Phoenician dialect.

The traditional residence of "Publius, the chief of the island," was long shown



DAINTY WORK FOR LITTLE FINGERS: CHILDREN MAKING LACE

Malta has long been celebrated for its silk pillow-lace of black or white, or sometimes red threads, characteristic designs being circles, wheels, and wheat-ears. In the interior of the island nearly every household is thus employed, even the smallest children showing great skill in the craft. Maltese lace has notably influenced English lace design, and lace of Maltese type is made in Bedfordshire

Photo, Donald McLeish

at Notabile, on the higher edge of the plateau, which is proved by remains of Roman buildings to have been then the principal town, as it still was after the Saracen Conquest in A.D. 870, and under the Norman Count Roger of Sicily, who expelled the Saracens in 1090, and built his cathedral on the site of the "house of Publius." Neither these, nor the numerous later changes of overlord during the Middle Ages seriously disturbed the native population, which managed its own affairs under charters from successive conquerors.

But in 1530 the knights of St. John of Jerusalem, who had withdrawn from their last foothold in the Holy Land in 1291, and had been expelled by the Turks in 1522 from their fortress in Rhodes, received from the Emperor Charles V. the grant of Malta, Gozo, and the African district of Tripoli, and established themselves first on the south side of the Grand Harbour, then, after the great siege of 1565, under Grand Master Jehan de la Vallette, in the "city built by gentlemen for gentlemen," which bears his name.



WEAVING FILMY THREADS OF LACE IN THE HOT SUNSHINE

Out of doors as well as in, Maltese women can be seen busy with their bobbins and pillows. In the country places they sit by the limestone walls that buttress up the terraced fields and are overhung by juicy cactus plants, and there ply their delicate craft surrounded by their numerous progeny.

Photo, P. Azius-Catania

Planned on uniform rectangular street lines, irrespective of the contours of the promontory and ascending its steep sides by long flights of steps, and rapidly completed with numerous stately auberges or hostels for knights of different nationalities, and a central group of buildings, palace, arsenal, and cathedral, Valletta has had little need for change since its creation, and remains a masterpiece of civil and military architecture.

Its landward fortifications, largely rock-cut, and screened by an outer line of works enclosing the parade-ground and excavated granaries of Floriana, are unrivalled in this style, and have been but little damaged. For Napoleon obtained the surrender of Malta in 1798

by intrigue, and in the same winter a general insurrection of the Maltese had made the French position untenable before the British counter-attack developed. Other strong defences executed by the knights enclose Ricasoli—where Napoleon planned and partly built a conspicuous palace, now the Naval Hospital—and the Three Cities. Sliema and adjacent districts to the north of the Quarantine Harbour have only been developed into an open residential quarter during the nineteenth century.

Like most parts of the Mediterranean, Malta has a cool, moist winter, with an average temperature of 56° F. from December to February, and 13 inches of rain out of the annual total of 20 inches. Between May and September,



LIGHT AND SHADE IN OLD-WORLD BIRCHICARA

There is an air of indolence about the quiet street, with the nun-like women creeping along the shadows and the children gathered at the yawning door. The square, projecting windows are common in Maltese architecture, and the sculptured group on the corner plinth reminds one of the islanders' religious temperament and their devotion to the Roman Catholic faith.

Photo, Donald McLeish

on the other hand, no rain falls, and the summer is warm and dry, with an average of 77° F. in August. Gales from the north-west and north-east are frequent, but are soon over; the moist southerly "sirocco" wind is oppressive while it lasts. The porous limestones, in such a climate, afford but scanty soil, and the natural vegetation consists of evergreen scrub and wild locust-trees, with a brilliant outbreak of flowering annuals

in spring, yielding much honey, and temporary pasture for sheep and goats.

For cultivation, the light dusty soil must be concentrated by terracing, protected against dry winds by high walls, and irrigated from wells, as there are no perennial streams. Harvest is in May and June, but the grain crops are quite insufficient to maintain the present population, and a large proportion of the land is devoted to potatoes,

BRITISH EMPIRE IN EUROPE

fodder crops, garden produce, and tree fruits such as oranges, pomegranates, figs, and grapes. Malta oranges are famous, and a principal export, with potatoes and other fruit and vegetables.

Cotton was grown formerly, but has been neglected since Egyptian cotton-growing increased. About seven-tenths of the land surface are cultivated, mostly in holdings of three or four acres. To economise the better land, dwellings are concentrated in large villages, on barren ground, and watered from rain tanks, deep wells, or the springs along outcrops of the blue clay which separates upper from lower limestones. From such springs, supplemented now by wells and pumping, the water for the capital is collected near the old capital Notabile,

and conveyed by an aqueduct eight miles long, constructed in 1610-13. Wine is made, but carelessly, and a good deal is imported from Sicily.

There are no mineral products, except limestone, and few industries. Weaving has lapsed since the neglect of local cotton; but lace and filigree silver are still made, mainly for export. There is fishing for tunny, mackerel, and sardines, and some fish is exported. Valletta has a fair number of sailing vessels engaged in small traffic with Mediterranean ports. But the large majority of the people are concentrated in the capital, and depend for their living on occupations subsidiary to the arsenal and garrison.

The picturesque costume formerly worn by Maltese men is now seldom



GOSSIPS LIKE HOODED CROWS FOREGATHERING IN THE SUNSHINE

This is a very characteristic view of the general planning and architecture of Valletta, the rectangular open space approached by flights of steps and flanked by right-lined, flat-roofed stone buildings. Incontrovertible identification of the spot as Maltese is furnished by the faldetta-enveloped women gathered round the central stone for a few minutes' rest and conversation.

Photo, H. B. Crook

BRITISH EMPIRE IN EUROPE

seen; it consisted of cotton shirt, full trousers held by a girdle, large waistcoat with ornamental buttons, a very short cloak and a coloured cap. The women, too, only wear their full costume for festivals—blue skirt, open at one side, over a white undergarment, a low-necked corset with sleeves, buckled shoes and hair dressed high above the forehead. But the black faldetta is still commonly worn by women of all classes out of doors. It is a loose cloak covering the whole figure, and gathered, as its name implies, into a stiff hood, which is worn on one side of the face as a screen against passers-by. The faldetta is said to have been of Sicilian or Spanish origin, and its use recalls a period when the women of Malta were secluded with almost Oriental strictness.

Since the British occupation the Maltese have quite outgrown their means of subsistence, and even the needs of the naval base. Many Maltese have therefore emigrated to find similar urban and maritime occupations in the larger ports of the Mediterranean. In Tunis, for example, there are over 10,000 of them. When employment is

slack, many go temporarily for work to the United States of America.

Both economically and politically, the Maltese population depends partly on the value (which is permanent) of the harbour as a port of call on the direct route between the Atlantic and Indian Oceans; partly on the naval base which protects British interests on this route. The risk that this traffic might be diverted from Malta as ships became larger has been partially met by the construction of a breakwater which makes the Grand Harbour itself, as well as its creeks, safe in all weathers.

The importance of the naval base necessarily varies with political and strategical considerations. During the nineteenth century, the unstable equilibrium of the Near East, as Turkish power failed, increased the naval responsibilities of Britain in the Mediterranean, and therewith the value of Malta as a garrison no less than a naval base, as is shown by its utility in the Crimean War, and during the Russo-Turkish crisis of 1878. But the redistribution of forces during the period of German naval menace reduced its significance, and it was only during



PROCESSION OF ECCLESIASTICS IN HONOUR OF THE VIRGIN
September 8th is annually observed in Malta as the anniversary of the final overthrow of the Turks in 1565. In 1921 a unique religious festival marked the event, when a statue of the Virgin Mary was borne through the streets by the Archbishop of Malta, bishops, clergy, and religious orders to be crowned with a golden crown.

Photo, T. J. Boulton



SOLEMN ACT OF PRAISE AND WORSHIP

Mounting a tribune, which had been specially erected for the occasion, the Archbishop, supported by the bishops, solemnly imposed the crown upon the head of the statue. At the conclusion of this historic ceremony the statue was borne back to the church at Senglea, of which the Virgin Mary is the patron saint, never again to be brought out in procession

Photo, T. J. Boulton

the war of 1914-18 that submarine activity in the Mediterranean restored its naval value; while its central position and favourable climate made it a vast hospital and convalescent camp for British forces at Gallipoli, at Salonica, and in Palestine.

The abnormal relations between the native population and the naval and military masters of the island have at all times made administration difficult. Besides the main issues of constitutional government, and local taxation and expenditure, principal controversies

during the past century have been aroused by the languages—Maltese, Italian, or English—to be taught in schools, or recognized in the courts; by the mixed marriages, and other problems of incompatible codes of law; by attempts to simplify procedure, to co-ordinate the military and the civil police, to restrict the special temptations to crime which all fortress-cities offer, and to revise the composition and functions of the administrative staff.

Successive Constitutions, combining military administration of the fortress

and arsenal with the legislature and judicature of a Crown Colony, have all developed defects which are perhaps inevitable, and the economic problem remains, underlying all, of a population of nearly half a million supplied with the necessities of life from abroad for nearly ten months of the year, and paying for those necessities with the proceeds of services rendered to a great naval station maintained for purposes which

are necessarily distinct from local needs and convenience.

Under the Constitution, as revised in 1920, the Governor, who is also commander-in-chief of the fortress, is responsible for all the Imperial affairs of the islands, and has the assistance of an Executive Council. Purely Maltese business is transacted by a Legislative Assembly, popularly elected, with a responsible Ministry.

IV. Cyprus: Greek & Turk as British Subjects

By Major C. W. J. Orr, C.M.G.

Author of "Cyprus under British Rule"

THE earliest authentic information concerning Cyprus recorded by history is its conquest by the Egyptians during the reign of Thothmes III. of the eighteenth dynasty (c. 1500 B.C.). After the Egyptian conquest, colonies were founded by Phoenician traders, who came to the island to work the copper deposits which soon became famous. Egyptian influence gradually waned, and was replaced by Phoenician, which in turn became overshadowed by Assyrian. During a period of many centuries, Phoenicians, Assyrians, Babylonians, Egyptians, and Persians fought at intervals for supremacy in Cyprus, with varying success, but about 400 B.C. fresh competitors arose.

Settlers arrived from Greece and founded Greek colonies, and soon Cyprus became involved in the great struggle for mastery between Greece and the Phoenicians and their masters, the Persians.

Gem Set in Many Crowns

Finally, the victories of Alexander the Great put an end to Persian domination and Cyprus became a part of his vast dominions. On his death in 323 B.C., Cyprus fell to the share of one of his generals, but it was wrested from him by Ptolemy of Egypt, and remained in Egyptian hands until the first century B.C., when it became incorporated in the Roman Empire.

On the partition of the Roman Empire in A.D. 395, Cyprus was assigned

to the East Roman Emperor, and remained Byzantine until the twelfth century, when its then Governor, Isaac Comnenus, revolted and declared himself Emperor of Cyprus. Richard I. of England, however, passing by Cyprus on his way to the Crusades, and landing to avenge an insult, defeated this tyrant and handed over the island to the Norman Guy de Lusignan as compensation for the loss of the kingdom of Jerusalem.

Quarrels of Greek and Turk

The Lusignan dynasty reigned over Cyprus for 300 years, although the principal port, Famagusta, was wrested from them by the Genoese. The latter were succeeded by the Venetians, who obtained the mastery of the whole island.

In 1570 the Turks invaded Cyprus, defeated the Venetians, and established themselves in the island, since which date until recent times it formed part of the Ottoman Empire. In 1878 an agreement was concluded between the British Government and the Porte, whereby the administration of Cyprus was to be handed over to Great Britain in return for certain guarantees. The island was administered by Great Britain until the outbreak of war with the Ottoman Empire on November 5th, 1914, when it was annexed, and now forms part of the British Empire, being administered as a Crown Colony.

The Greek-speaking inhabitants, who outnumber the Turks by about four to



FIVE HAPPY YOUNG CYPRIOTS WHO APPROVE OF THE TOURIST

Visitors to the famous salt lakes near Larnaka are highly approved by the native children, who often come by delicious morsels from the picnic baskets. This gratification has just befallen these five young Turks, whose gradation of skin colouring well exemplifies the mixture of black and white strain in the Cypriot, dating from days when African slaves were imported into the island

Photo, George A. Williamson

one, claim to be of Greek nationality and have perpetually urged that the island should be united to Greece, which they look upon as their Mother Country. Ethnologically, their claim to Greek nationality is open to question, but they are undoubtedly Greek in language, custom, character, and tradition. The Turkish inhabitants have preserved intact their language, customs, and religion, and the two races are for

historic reasons bitterly antagonistic. Under forty years of British administration this innate hostility has remained latent, but it is ever ready to burst into flame, all the more so since the Greek nature is excitable and passionate. The easy-going, slower-witted Turk is far less emotional, but once roused is apt to give vent to ruthless fury, which can only be assuaged by blood. Shortly after the British Government undertook

BRITISH EMPIRE IN EUROPE

the administration of Cyprus a liberal constitution was granted to the island, and Legislative and Executive Councils were set up. The Legislative Council, over which the High Commissioner presides, consists of eighteen members, six of whom are Government officials and the remaining twelve elected by the people on a broad franchise, each of the three districts into which the island is divided for the purpose electing three Christian and one Moslem Deputy. Debates are carried out in the three languages—English, Turkish, and Greek—each member speaking in his own tongue, the official interpreters translating into the other two languages. The proceedings of the Council are, therefore,

somewhat protracted, and the preponderance of elected over Government members might in any other country render administration difficult, but the elected Turkish members seldom see eye to eye with their Christian colleagues, and usually take sides against them. Thus the Government policy generally holds the field. On the whole, the Legislative Council has worked well, and has formed a useful means of allowing the inhabitants to express their views and influence legislation.

The island is almost entirely agricultural and sylvan. The once famous copper mines have been almost entirely worked out by the Phoenicians and Romans, though a large amount of low grade ore with by-products of some

value still remains and can be worked on a large scale at a profit. There are also large deposits of asbestos, and a few other minerals have been worked. The main product of the island, however, is its carob beans, which are exported in large quantities to Europe for use in the preparation of cattle food. Wheat and barley are grown in the plains, and vine cultivation is carried on to a large extent in the hilly districts, while fruit and vegetables are increasingly grown and find a ready market in Egypt. Timber exists in large quantities in the pine-clad mountains, but its commercial development is rendered difficult by the scantiness of forest roads. There is some horse-breeding in the island, and flocks of sheep and goats roam the countryside, picking up what nourishment they can from the scanty vegetation. The climate is similar to that of Syria



SLIPPED EASE UPON A PATIENT ASS
Pottering thus round his land, this bare-legged, full-breeched Turkish farmer seems a benevolent old gentleman. But there is a cruel side to his nature, and he hates his Greek neighbour, represented on the opposite page

Photo, Major A. S. Meek

and the Southern Mediterranean. Rain falls at intervals from October to May, but the rest of the year is rainless, and in the summer months very hot except in the hills, where almost ideal conditions prevail. In the winter the mountains are covered with snow, but in the plains the thermometer seldom falls to freezing point.

Turks and Greeks, in the rural districts, live apart from one another, each village being composed of either one or the other. In the towns, the two races live in separate quarters and are represented on the town councils proportionately to their numbers. Village administration is based on an excellent system, which has probably prevailed in something like its present form for centuries. Each village has its head-man, called by the old Turkish title of Mukhtar, who is assisted by a council of elders, called Azas. In Turkish times the Mukhtar was appointed

to his post by the Government, but after the British occupation, owing to the passion of the Greek-speaking population for democratic institutions, a law was passed providing for the election of this functionary by the villagers. Elections take place every alternate year and are often the cause of much strife, bad blood, and intrigue in the villages.

Many duties and responsibilities devolve on the Mukhtar and his Council, connected both with the prevention and detection of crime and the assessment and collection of taxes, and an unscrupulous or dishonest man has many opportunities for mischief. Although the Governor has the power by law of



SHOULDER THE TOOLS YOU CAN HANDLE

Greek-Cypriot farmers take no interest in modern agricultural implements. Their plough is an iron spike attached to a wooden handle, quite easily shouldered when the season comes round to scratch mother earth with it once more

Photo, Major A. S. Mee

dismissing a Mukhtar for misconduct, there is nothing to prevent the same man being re-elected by his party if in the majority, nor are the qualifications for the post of an exacting description. There is a further element of trouble in the village communities, namely, the election by the inhabitants of "field watchmen"—a kind of rural police—and the assessment by the villagers of their wages. Theoretically, the custom has much to recommend it besides its antiquity; but, in practice, it is the cause of much intrigue and jealousy, and the field watchmen frequently require as much watching as the property they are supposed to guard. Another cause of friction in the villages is



PACK CAMELS BRINGING FORAGE TO MARKET IN CYPRUS

Owing to shortage of green food, cattle in Cyprus are fed most of the year on dry food with chopped straw as a basis. It is packed in sacks, brought in by camels—here used only for pack purposes—and sold by the load

Photo, George A. Williamson

the perennial enmity between the shepherds and the farmers. No walls, hedges or fences exist in the rural districts of Cyprus, and there are few tangible or visible boundaries to the fields or orchards. The flocks of the shepherds, driven hither and thither in search of pasture, are apt therefore to trespass on the farmers' lands and damage the crops and trees, and a constant feud between the flock owners and the agriculturists is almost inevitable.

A military police force, under the command of British officers, recruited from both Moslem and Christian inhabitants, keeps order efficiently in the towns and has small detachments in the districts, which supply mounted patrols and orderlies. This admirable force constitutes the machinery for maintaining law and order throughout the island, the only military force being a small detachment of British troops, furnished from the army in Egypt.

An excellent law exists in Cyprus, by which every able bodied adult male in each village is obliged to give a certain number of days' labour every year on roads and public works within the

boundaries of his village. By this means a great deal has been done at very small expense towards improving village water supplies and sanitation. The main roads throughout the island are constructed and maintained by the Government, but the subsidiary roads and tracks are to a great extent made and kept in repair by the villagers themselves. Three centuries of Turkish rule effectually prevented any progress being made by the population of Cyprus, which was mercilessly taxed for the benefit of its Ottoman masters at Constantinople, and when British administration was introduced in 1878 the island was in a very backward state. Even now the peasants use the most primitive implements and methods in their agriculture, and adhere to them tenaciously. The plough in use—an iron spike attached to a rough wooden handle—is practically identical with that used by the ancient Egyptians; harvesting is carried out by hand sickles; the corn is threshed on open floors by driving over it a couple of rough boards, studded with flints; it is winnowed in the evening breeze, and the grain stacked in heaps in the open, ready

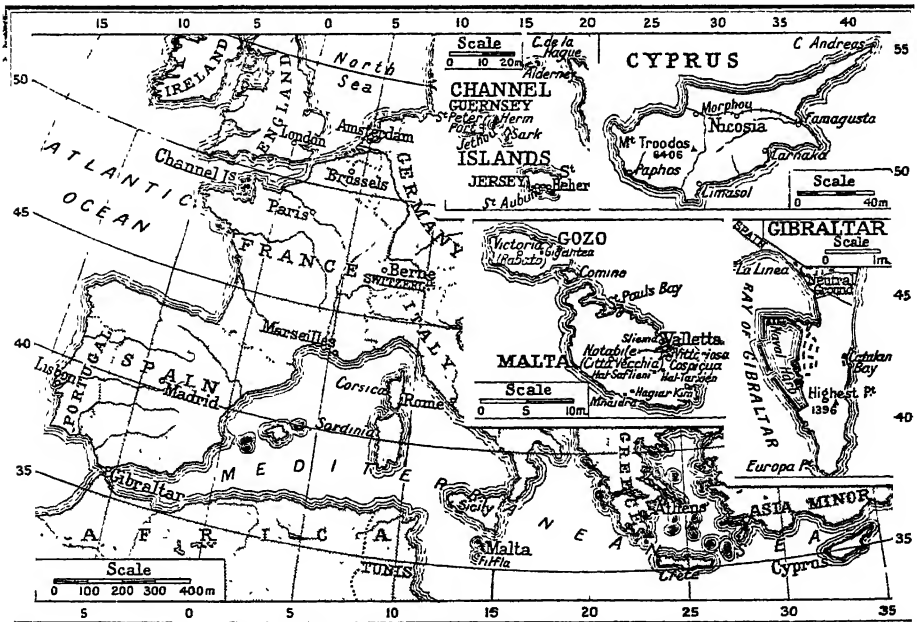
BRITISH EMPIRE IN EUROPE

for the Government tax collector to come and measure and claim the tithe. The peasant wears the same picturesque costume that he has worn for centuries ; the Greek, a white shirt, baggy black breeches, and wide straw hat ; the Turk, bright coloured shirt, white baggy breeches, ornamental stockings, and scarlet fez.

In the towns there are now a number of Cypriots who have graduated at the universities of Athens, Paris, and elsewhere in Europe, and who practise the professions of law, medicine, and other learned sciences. The Greek-speaking population shows great enthusiasm for education, and there is an elementary school in almost every village throughout the island. In the rural districts, however, the peasant still retains to a large extent his primitive character and qualities and resists change. The crime passionnel is by no means uncommon, and murders take place from time to time, which turn out to be a form of village execution, the murderer being hired at a small price by the villagers to get rid of a bad character. The Greek-speaking peasant observes with great devotion the formalities of his

religion, and Greek Easter is the time when village life is seen at its best. With the villager, however, superstition is mingled with his religion, and it is difficult to say how much ancient mythology has not survived among his rites and ceremonies.

The soil of Cyprus is redolent of ancient and legendary times. It was from the waves that beat on the shores of Paphos that laughter-loving Aphrodite sprang, and there stood her temple. Gods and goddesses had their shrines in sacred spots, many of them now unknown and unrecognized. Two thousand years ago Cyprus was the centre of civilization, but now it lives chiefly in the past, though it retains much of its old beauty and charm. Since the British occupation, railways, motor services, modern harbours and anchorages, and electric light have been introduced, and a weekly mail service with Egypt—eighteen hours steam away—links it with modern civilization. But the peasant still retains his old simplicity, and village life varies little from what it must have been when S. Paul visited the island nearly nineteen hundred years ago.



BRITISH POSSESSIONS IN EUROPE OUTSIDE OF THE BRITISH ISLES



BULGARIAN MILK-WOMEN BARGAINING WITH WAYSIDE PEDLARS ON THE OUTSKIRTS OF SOFIA

Fancy goods, jewellery, cakes, and sweetmeats appear to grow wild along the main road into Sofia, for, despite the many customers, the small mobile stalls of the hawkers are ever overlaid with objects likely to incite covetous feelings in the hearts of the passers-by; and these farmers' wives, having successfully disposed of their supplies of milk, cheese, eggs, and other country produce, have no scruples about purchasing some sweet cakes and crisp brown rings of bread

Photo. E. G. Popoff

Bulgaria

I. Picturesque People of the Peasant State

By H. Charles Woods

Author of "War and Diplomacy in the Balkans"

THE Bulgarians are a quasi-Slavonic people grown out of the fusion of certain Mongol or Finnish tribes, called Bulgarians, who came from Asia during the seventh century, with a larger number of Slavs at that time already in the Balkan Peninsula. Almost crushed out of existence by five centuries of Turkish rule, they occupy a considerable part of the Central Balkans, for in addition to constituting two-thirds of the population of their own country, they spread over into the kingdom of the Serbs, Croats, and Slovenes, who are pure representatives of the Southern Slavs, into Greece, Rumania, and even Albania. For this reason the position of Bulgaria is different from that of the neighbouring countries; for whereas each of those countries has now been so augmented in size that at present they are faced by racial and religious problems of far greater importance and difficulty than heretofore, Bulgaria, practically unhampered by

home ethnological difficulties, is surrounded by terra irredenta to a degree unequalled elsewhere in the Near East

The Bulgarians are a healthy, sturdy, peasant people, the physique of the rural population being markedly superior

to that of the townsmen or upperclasses. Short in stature, thick-set, and muscular in build, the height of the men (usually about five feet eight inches) is out of proportion to that of the women, who do not average more than five feet four inches. Without any claims to smartness or good looks, the Bulgarians are clearly not of a true Slavonic type, and a sort of Finnish appearance is often noticeable in them. Both sexes, but particularly the men, have large bones, hands, and feet in proportion to their size, their wrists and ankles being noticeably thick. With somewhat square heads, the face is usually oval, the features large and rugged, the skin rough and the complexion swarthy. Usually dark and never red-haired, the eyes generally grey, the nose straight and



BEAUTY OF THE SOUTH

The corset-like bodice and skirt are of brightly-coloured material. Silk stockings and dainty Viennese shoes complete the pretty costume of this attractive maid



NOVEL METHOD OF FORDING RIVERS IN SOFIA DISTRICT

In early spring, when the snows have melted and the riverbeds have become dangerous to pedestrians, the peasants resort to many ingenious methods in order that their business routine shall not suffer hindrance. Here are two Bulgarians mounted on stilts, and although their progress be somewhat tardy, they nevertheless succeed in crossing many an inundated piece of land which would be quite untraversable to their less venturesome fellows

Photo, Balkan News Agency

the jaw rather heavy, the women as well as the men are extraordinarily strong and hardy, and are capable of withstanding privations and overcoming difficulties in a manner which has largely contributed to the continued existence of their race and nationality.

Although an educated Bulgarian can understand an educated Serbian, and although the Cyrillic alphabet is used by both peoples, there are certain distinctions between the languages spoken in the two countries and by the two races. In Bulgaria, Turkish is much more widely understood than in old Serbia, that is, the territory which was Serbian before the Balkan Wars, because

there are more Turks in the country and because all its older generation were brought up under Ottoman rule. Again, whereas the Slavic form of speech was thoroughly assimilated by the original Bulgarians, their present day representatives postfix the article and employ certain other modifications not known elsewhere. In disposition, too, even more than in language, the Bulgarians as a race are different from their pure-blooded Slavonic neighbours. They are less quick-witted, less excitable, and less vivacious than the Serbs. But nobody who has seen the former people, as the writer has, in their earlier days of rapid advancement and in their

BULGARIA & THE BULGARS

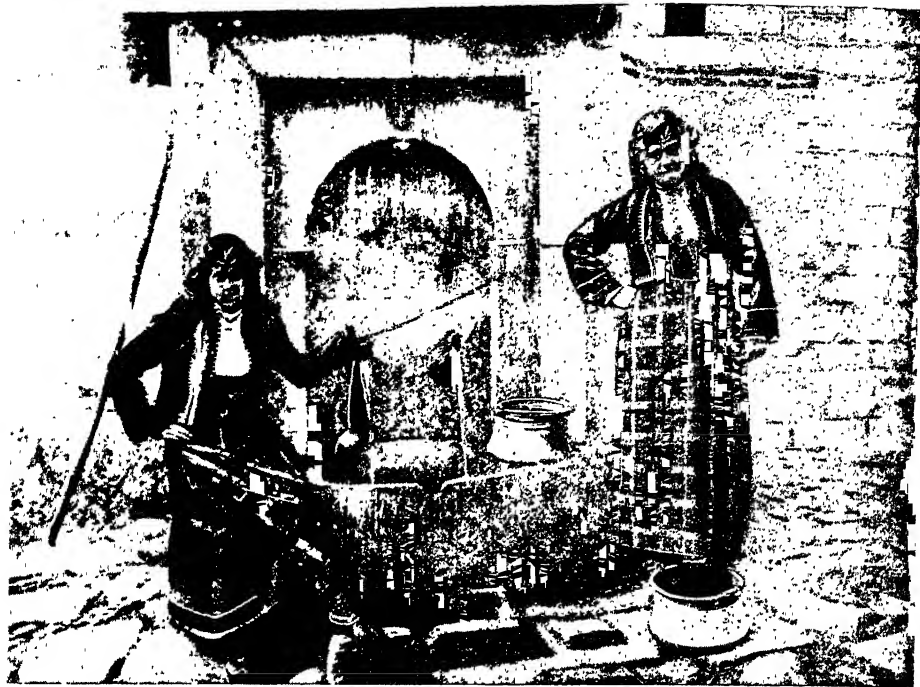
post-war hours of adversity, can fail to recognize that hard work, patience, and determination are among their outstanding characteristics. Silent, dogged, and proud, they are resentful rather than complaining, and these traits, together with a sort of feeling of superiority, make the Bulgarians callous as to the attitude of foreigners and indifferent whether or not they and their national problems are understood abroad. On the other hand, the energy and efficiency of all classes account for the facts that Bulgaria became a prosperous country within a few years after her liberation, that she was the first of the Balkan States to organize a modern army, and that the administration has always been above the Near Eastern average. The conduct of the population is that of bluff peasants.

Neither the men nor the women are ingratiating, but they are not affected or repellent. Simplicity and thrift are exceedingly marked. Temperance among all classes is very noteworthy, and drunkenness is practically unknown among a people who, for the most part, only imbibe very small quantities of raki. All forms of sport, such as hunting, horseracing, football, and other games are at a discount; the young people amuse themselves by the performance of the national dance, and by singing on the village greens to the strains of native bagpipes, violins, and flutes, the older generation contenting themselves with reading and talking in the cafés which are to be found in every town and village. With a very high standard of morality, the streets are quiet and orderly at night, and young marriages, generally between



ROUGH-SHOD COUNTRY COUSINS ON SOFIA'S TILED TROTTOIR

The husband is generously sharing the family load with his wife—rather an unusual sight in Bulgaria. On market days, in particular, the peasant families may be seen trudging along in true Oriental fashion—the men in front walking unloaded, the women behind carrying the goods for sale. Their footgear is by no means cumbersome, and this quaint one-piece leather shoe is much favoured in many of the Balkan States



IN THE HEYDAY OF HEALTH AND HAPPINESS

Cool and composed, these comely sisters probably know what a pleasing picture they make by the side of the old village well. This costume, one of the many varieties of Bulgarian national dress, is home-spun and home-made, and displays its owner's love of gaudy colours



THE STURDY MEN AND WOMEN WHO MAKE "THE PEASANT STATE"

The Bulgarians, or Bulgars, are said to be descended from a Tartar tribe, who, towards the end of the seventh century swept over from the East and took possession of most of the Balkan territory. When the Turks appeared in the fourteenth century, Bulgaria became a province of European Turkey

Photos, Balkan News Agency



SPICK AND SPAN NATIVES OF BELOGRADCHIK DISTRICT

Bulgarian peasants lead a simple existence. They are thrifty, and work hard, but they generally work for themselves, the proportion of labourers who work for wages on other men's lands being extremely limited. They have their few acres to till, and on the produce manage to live



BULGARIAN MOTHERS' PRIMITIVE METHOD OF BABY-CARRYING

These young mothers realise that the ancient custom of carrying their babies behind their backs in slings leaves the arms free to undertake household duties. The peasants marry early in life, and large families are common; a household numbering only two or three children would be quite an exception

Photos, Balkan News Agency

BULGARIA & THE BULGARS

twenty-five and twenty-eight years of age, are usual. Indeed, the ideal of the ordinary Bulgarian is to become engaged to a girl, and then to go to America with a small party of friends in order to earn sufficient money to stock a farm.

Meanwhile, the girl, who is seldom allowed to go into domestic service, spends all her time in spinning the flax, weaving the material, and

sleeves, and skirt. Barefooted and barelegged in summer, she wears only this chemise and a handkerchief tied over her head, which carries two long plaits of hair, in many cases reaching below the waist, and frontals made of gold coins ploughed up in the fields. In winter and for best occasions this meagre covering is augmented by a pelisse of thick woollen cloth, usually dark blue, braided with red, and richly embroidered on the breast and cuffs, by socks of hideous modern colours, and by clipjas—home-made sandal-like shoes. When the weather is severe a sheepskin, wool inside, is donned, and the head, throat, and bosom are wound about with a warm woollen scarf.

The men wear a thick, blue embroidered shirt, a cummerbund, and fairly tight, rough, white trousers with blanket leggings which, forming the sock, are kept in position by crossgartering. In addition, there are the coat-like jacket, embroidered on the sleeves and front, the Bulgarian kolpak (headdress), and the native clipjas. In winter the men, like the women, have sheepskins, cured with the yolk of egg to make them soft and pliable, and ornamented on the raw skin outside by stitches.

The kingdom of Bulgaria, shorn of its Aegean littoral by the

Treaty of Neuilly, is now the smallest Balkan country except Albania. It forms a sort of oblong, wedged in between Rumania on the north, Yugo-Slavia on the west, Greece on the south, and the Black Sea on the east, and therefore occupies a more or less middle position in the peninsula, controlling not only part of the great highway from Central Europe to Constantinople, but also



ORIENTALISM IN THE STREETS OF BULGARIA

The vanity of youth is apparent in the headdress of young Bulgarian women and those who possess fine heads of hair, by no means an unusual thing among the peasants, delight in long plaits and coin adornments

cutting out and making up the clothing for her trousseau.

The artistic temperament of the people, if it can be said to exist at all, comes out more clearly in their costumes than in any other way. The attire of the peasant woman, who spins with a distaff as she walks, consists of a chemise or dress elaborately embroidered in countless colours upon the breast,



FLORAL MASKS HIDE THE BLUSHES OF SOME BULGARIAN BRIDES

All the bride's artistic taste is centred in her headdress; be she poor or rich, she endeavours to make it as gorgeously ponderous as the strength of her head will allow. Fortunately, this gigantic floral burden and cap of coins are not worn for long but are soon replaced by the popular, and certainly more effective headdress—the simple wreath of flowers and leaves

Photos, Balkan News Agency



RADIANT MAY QUEENS IN FESTOON AND FINE FEATHERS

On Sundays and holidays in Bulgaria, gala costumes and handsome headdresses make their appearance. For very important events the flower-wreath is considered inadequate, and on an occasion such as this, when the most beautiful girls of the village have been chosen to dance a favourite ring dance, a profusion of coloured beads and jingling coins hang about the head and shoulders, while trails of brilliant flowers depend from a crested headdress.

Photo, Balkan News Agency

sections of the natural routes leading from the southern bank of the Danube to the Adriatic and the Aegean. While one still hears talk of Bulgaria and of Eastern Rumelia, which have been united since 1885, for present-day purposes the country may be said to be divided into two principal parts by the Balkan range, which extends from the Black Sea on the east to the Yugo-Slav frontier on the west. To the north of this range the area, cultivated especially for wheat and maize, slopes down towards the Danube. To the south there are the tableland of Sofia and the plain of Eastern Rumelia, both of which are highly productive, and the confused district which goes to make up the Rhodope Balkan system.

Compared with England, Bulgaria is distinctly mountainous, for, in addition

to the Balkans proper, the western, south-western, and southern parts of the country are occupied by various groups or ranges, the most important of which are the Rila Planina to the south of Sofia, and the Rhodope Balkans which run parallel to the Aegean. But if there be few points of view which are not dominated by the "Balkans," i.e., the mountains, to the traveller who is accustomed to the sculptured forms of the Alps or the Apennines, or to the dazzling pinnacles of the Canadian or American Rockies, the eminences of Bulgaria are almost dull at first sight. Nevertheless, rising sometimes to elevations of nearly 10,000 feet and running to hogs' backs rather than to sharp peaks, these enormous, sometimes heavily-wooded bastions grow gradually more and more impressive. Consisting



AN OASIS IN THE DESERT FOR THE WEARY TRAVELLER

On the scorched hillside, where the blazing sun beats mercilessly the livelong day, and the rough road winds endlessly through parched pasture lands and crops of Indian corn, the wayside spring surrounded by cool, shadowy trees must come as a veritable godsend to the traveller in Bulgaria. Many of these wells are erected to the memory of some departed soul.



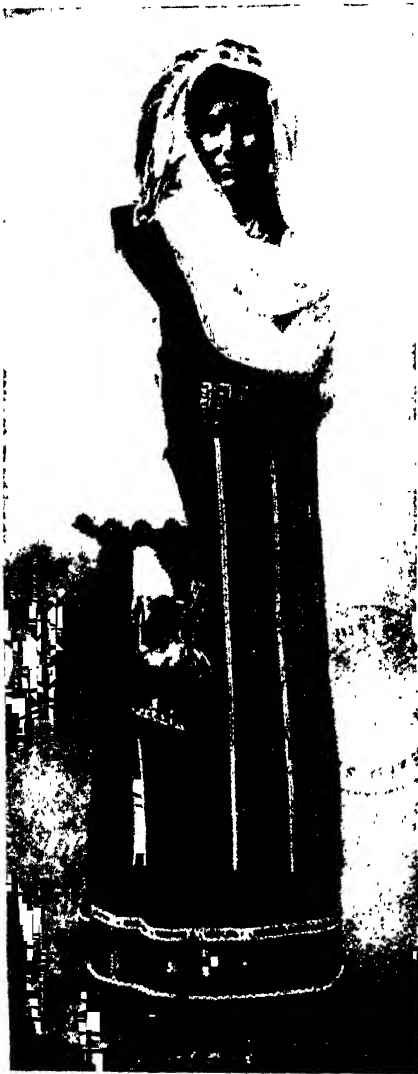
PRACTICAL REMNANT OF THE OTTOMAN RULE

A Turkish custom still prevailing in Bulgaria is the erection of a fountain by some prosperous person as a memorial of his name. Sometimes it may be seen outside the village, in a prominent position near the road, that the eye of the traveller may easily detect it. In the village it is the centre of activity; housewives come and go, and the leisured villagers meet for a friendly chat.

Photos, Balkan News Agency

BULGARIA & THE BULGARS

often of what appear to be chaotic masses rather than of regular lines, the flanks of these mighty bulwarks are seamed by deep-cut glens or valleys, some of which are followed by railways



WHERE TASTE AND GRACE UNITE
Bulgarian costumes are well diversified. The silver waist-clasp is a noteworthy feature, as also the silken scarf thrown with such careless grace round her head

or roads, while others are traversed only by swift, often unbridged streams, which gush from fall to fall.

The climate is of the continental type, made up of extremes and contrasts, the

degrees of which are governed largely by the elevation of the particular district. In summer I have met with an intense tropical heat, especially in the sheltered Maritza valley, yet even at that season the temperature is often cooled by rain, and in the more mountainous districts, for instance at Sofia, the nights are cool and fresh. The winter is short but severe, and there are biting cold winds from the north and north-east, a zero or even lower temperature at night, and at the higher altitudes snow falls freely between November and April. This means that bird life moves south towards the Aegean, that domestic animals, which are often clothed in ear lappets and wadded blankets, have to be housed, and that the ploughs are stopped for about four months. Moreover, even as early as November I have known the telegraph lines broken down and the railways stopped by storms and snow, and the cold is such that the Danube is often blocked by ice and frequently even frozen over. Nevertheless, with the better-class houses provided with double windows and perhaps central heating, with a generally brilliant sunshine, and with a snow as dry as powder, the winter, as in Russia, is a season to be enjoyed. Sledges are the order of the day, the country people have leisure for indoor work which otherwise would go undone, and sanitary conditions, which in other circumstances might prove too primitive, seem adequate to meet the requirements of the situation.

Partly because of the great difference between the amount of water after the melting of the snows and at the end of the dry season, and partly owing to the lack of public works, the rivers, except the Danube, are not systematically navigated. The streams of the Rhodope Balkans and also the Maritza, the most important Bulgarian river after the Danube, are sometimes employed for floating logs and trees from place to place, but beyond that water communications have not yet been employed for the furtherance of trade. Moreover, irrigation, which might be difficult in view of the usual swiftness of the



THE BOOTBLACK IS A RECENT ADDITION TO SOFIA'S STREET CHARACTERS
Costumes, customs, and creeds vary in Bulgaria, but the opposition between the followers of the Crescent and the Cross appears to have been less severe and embittered in this country than in other parts of the Ottoman Empire. History proves that the Bulgarians held steadfastly to their own creed, and lived on fairly friendly terms with the Tomaks, those of their fellow-citizens who had accepted the religion of the Prophet



THE THRESHOLD OF THE FACTORY IS SPREAD WITH THE FRAGRANT CONTENTS OF THE ROSE-GATHERERS' BASKETS. Roses constitute the wealth of the Kazanlik district; they are picked by the peasants and taken to the factory, where the juice is squeezed out in wooden presses. The weight of rose-leaves collected is enormous, and about 200-300 lb. of flowers yield one ounce of oil. Eastern Runcilia exports annually about 6,000 lb., valued at £12 to £14 per lb., of the rose essence, an infinitesimal quantity of which is sufficient to saturate a two-ounce bottle of pure alcohol.

Photo, C. Rider Noble



COLOUR AND FRAGRANCE VIE WITH EACH OTHER IN RUMELIAN VALLEYS

In Rumelia, rose-farms cover great stretches of country, and Kazanlik is the centre of the popular and picturesque industry of rose-growing, and of the manufacture of the world-renowned otto of roses. On the sunny slopes of the Balkans, as far as the eye can reach, and in the sheltered valleys between the Balkans and the parallel mountain chains, lie resplendent rose-gardens.



DAINTY ROSE-MAIDENS OF EASTERN RUMELIA

Like the rose of the French poet, the damask Queen of Kazanlik exists but "l'espace d'un matin." During the height of the season, three or four weeks in May and June, the blooms are gathered every morning before they are fully blown, an acre of ground producing about 100 lb. daily. To one who has visited these rose-gardens, the memory is for all time fraught with the splendour of their fragrance.

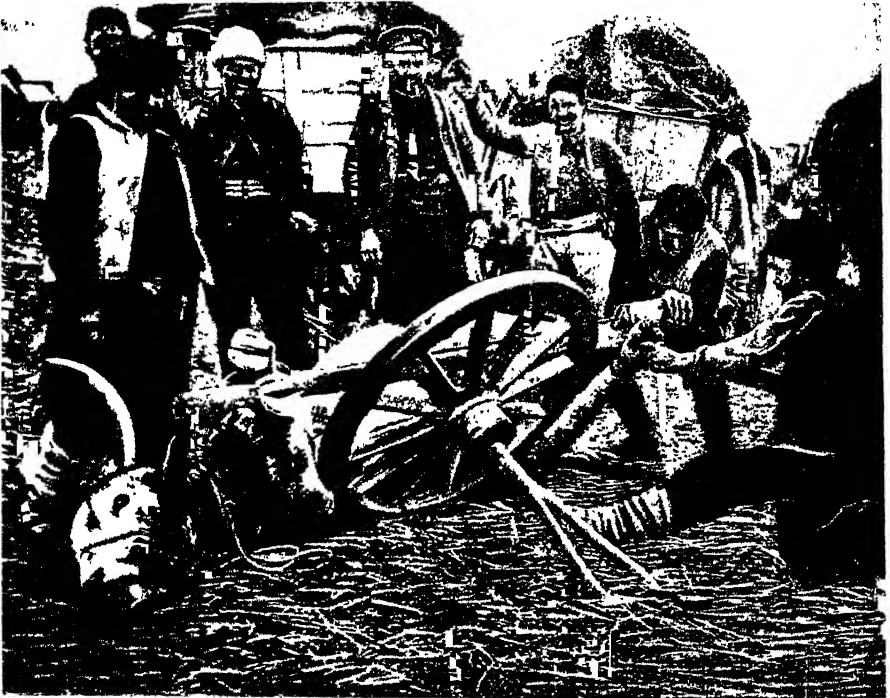
Photos, C. Rider Noble

BULGARIA & THE BULGARS

currents and of the often deep furrowing of the channels, has not been carried out except in the immediate neighbourhood of Philippopolis.

Similarly, although one sees an endless succession of primitive mills, the Bulgarian, who is a plainsman, farmer, and peasant, has little or no appreciation of the value of water-power which is running to waste throughout the country. With a possible era of peace and retrenchment ahead, and with the example

have for years been maintained in a passable state of repair. With railways, comparatively extensive progress has been made, for whereas at the time of her liberation in 1878 the country only possessed just over 300 miles of line, at the present moment approximately 1,500 miles are open. These railways, which are single lines, are all State-owned, well equipped, and efficiently run. This has always been particularly noticeable, for while before the war the visitor who



HOW THE PEASANTS SHOE THEIR TRANSPORT OXEN

As shown here, "horseshoes" are not the exclusive privilege of horses. In countries like Bulgaria, where the ox and the buffalo are the principal beasts of burden, shoes are likewise necessary; and this poor creature, with its usual dumb servility, patiently submits to the ordeal, made the more uncomfortable by the many precautions which the wary blacksmith has taken to insure that his person suffers no harm

and policy of Italy in the foreground, the present or the next generation will perhaps realize the desirability of and possess the funds necessary for harnessing the inexhaustible forces which exist in this direction for the purpose of making "white coal."

Although inadequate to her requirements, the communications of Bulgaria compare favourably with those in other Balkan countries. The roads, which are divided into national and district routes,

took the principal routes could be really well accommodated, even in the winter of 1920-1921, when transportation was in a terrible state throughout Central and Near Eastern Europe, the trains in Bulgaria were running better and more regularly, and were less dark, less cold, and less dirty than elsewhere.

The King, the system of government, and the people are democratic first, last, and all the time. Boris III., who honoured me with an audience of two



GATHERERS OF THE GRAPE IN A BULGARIAN VINEYARD

Grape-vines abound in Bulgaria, and especially in the district watered by the Blue Danube. The fruit is small but luscious, and grows in good-sized clusters. Harvesting the grape is a beloved occupation of the peasants; then, as never, they realize the significance of their proverb, which says "Song has no master," and the vineyards resound with lighthearted and joyous melodies



SUMMER SCENE IN THE "COUNTRY OF SMALL PEASANT FARMERS"

The land in Bulgaria is carefully cultivated; although manure is seldom or never used, the soil is so rich and the climate so clement that two crops are often harvested against one in higher latitudes. Even in their proverbs the Bulgarians pay tribute to the tiller of the soil: "You want wisdom to sit on a throne you want wisdom to drive the geese, but a hero to plough the fields"

Photos, Balkan News Agency

BULGARIA & THE BULGARS

hours' duration, lives in the spacious but half-closed palace, and is attended there by only a small staff. Whilst he does not attempt to control the Government, or to interfere with any measures which it may think necessary, he devotes his whole life to kingly duties. But instead of invariably summoning ministers to the palace, he often goes to their offices, and since his accession, at the end of 1918, he has been gradually getting into direct touch with many of his people, not only in the towns, but in the villages.

The Prince and His Peasants

With this object he spends a great deal of time motoring and riding through the country, where he talks to the inhabitants, particularly to the women and children, gives weary travellers a lift in his car, and calls upon local officials. This conduct, coupled with a simple, easy manner, is rapidly identifying him with the population, and, whereas the palace and everything emanating from it grew gradually more and more unpopular during the autocratic regime of King Ferdinand, the exact opposite is now the case.

Bulgaria, which is a strictly Constitutional monarchy, is governed in a manner suitable to the history and spirit of the population. The Cabinet is responsible to the King and to the *Sobranje* (National Assembly), a body made up of one Chamber only, elected by manhood suffrage and upon the principle of proportional representation.

Real Equality and Fraternity

The administration of justice is vested in the Law Courts, which act in the name of the King, and the Greek, Mahomedan, and Jewish communities possess special autonomous rights with regard to questions of marriage, divorce, and inheritance. The people really consist of only one class, part of which occupies a different position owing to superior education, for, with the complete disappearance of a royal house, of an aristocracy, and of all tradition, there are very few rich. Consequently, even if the existence of almost universal peasant proprietorship constitutes an

obvious guarantee against Bolshevism and against the tenets advocated by city and other workmen, there is in Bulgaria a fundamental atmosphere of equality unknown in almost any other Balkan country. For instance, whatever political party may be in power, statesmen have relations among the populace, ministers talk on terms of friendship with men in sheepskins, and the Governmental services are filled by functionaries of almost peasant origin. And then, while the law on compulsory labour, voted in 1920, is widely criticised from the political, economic, and international standpoints, the fact that a legislative measure, having for its objects education, increase of production, and imposition of a sort of tax in the form of labour, has in fact been passed, proves the democratic attitude of a people who are prepared to make almost any personal sacrifice for the good of their country.

Where all Religions are Free

The great bulk of the population belongs to the National Church, which does not differ in its doctrines from the Greek Orthodox Church, but the people are attached thereto on patriotic rather than religious ground. This attitude arises partly from a universal knowledge that the actual independence of the country was really won by the struggle which resulted in the recognition by the Sultan of an independent Bulgarian Church in 1870, and from the fact that from then the Church, especially in Macedonia, became one of the strongest instruments in the development of Bulgarian power in the Balkans.

The Church has, no doubt, lost much of its spiritual control because, when it dropped the Greek liturgy, it substituted an old form of Slavic which is equally unintelligible to the vast majority of the people, and because the priests are uneducated and too often greedy for money. But if religion plays no very real part in the life of the average Bulgarian, tolerance exists to a degree unequalled in many a more strict country. Guaranteed complete liberty by the Constitution, there are no

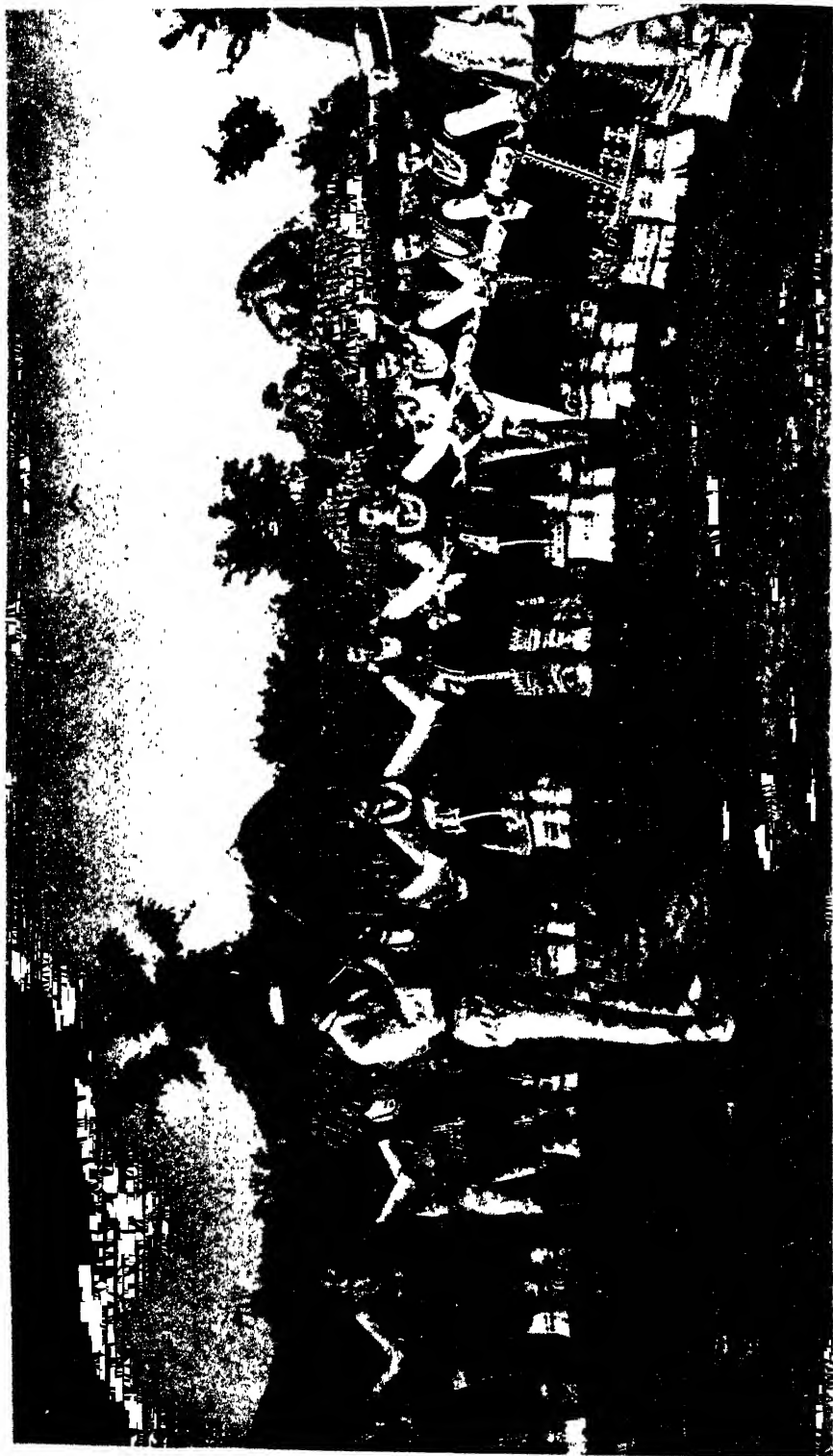
BULGARIANS

In Days of Peace



In her broidered gown the Bulgarian peasant moves a very goddess of fruit and flowers as she garners the ripe harvest of wild berries

Photo, Balkan News Agency



Holding one another's girdles these girls are about to dance the Horo. Timed by the pipe they will step to and fro and then revolve, slowly at first, but ever more quickly as the dance proceeds

Photo, C. Elder Noble



Silver, ribbons, and lace have been hoarded since the day of her birth that at sixteen she might shine in this sumptuous gala dress

Photo, C. Rider Noble



Though now freed from Turkish rule this view of Melnik illustrates the proverb, "grass never grows where the Turkish hoof has trod"

Photo, Balkan News Agency



Small single roomed huts make up the typical Bulgarian village, lining a muddy road among bleak hills and in winter often snowed in

Photo, Balkan News Agency

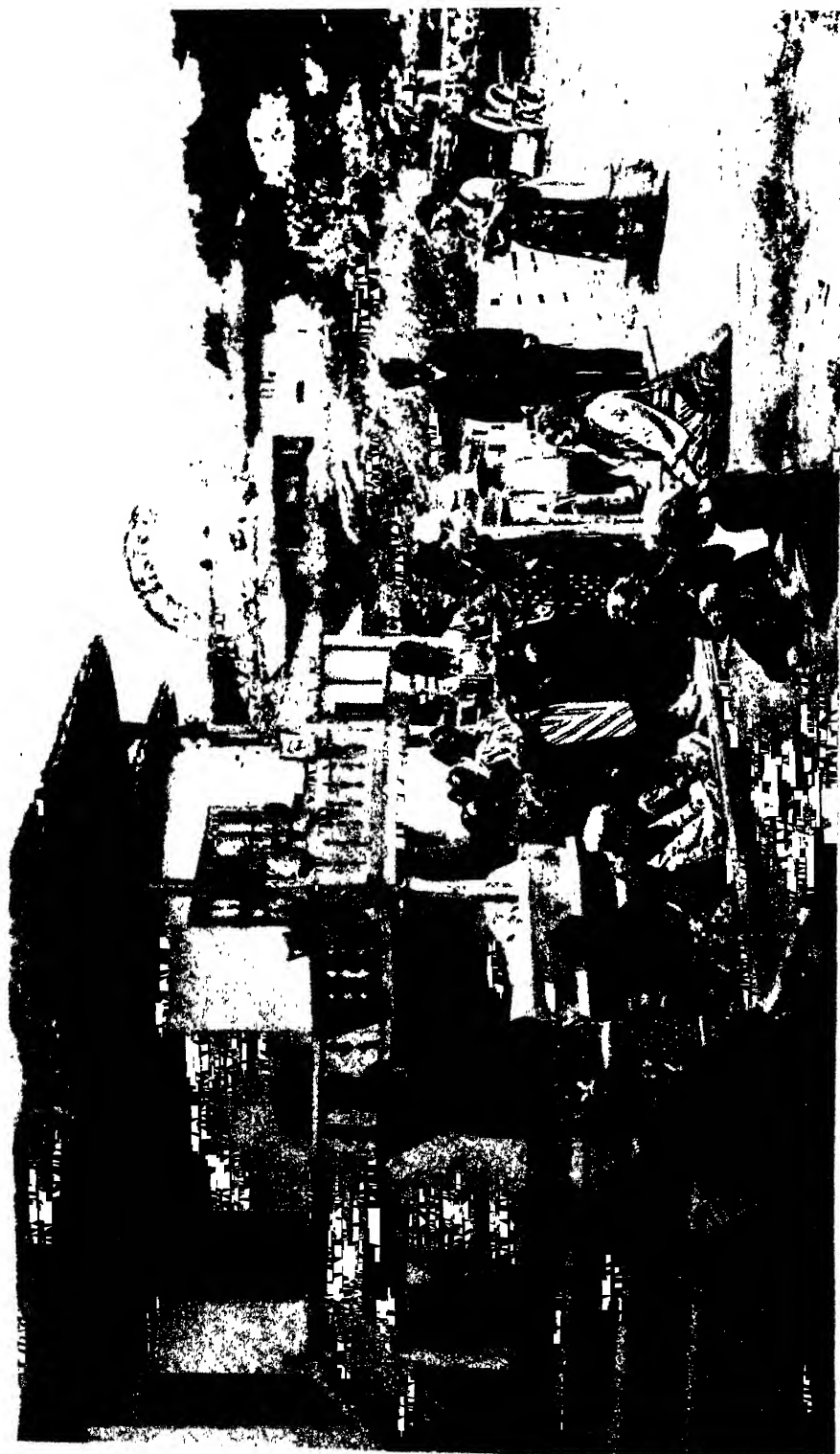


Dinners for the dead are given in Bulgaria. Here, at Shakavitzza, earnest believers are consuming stew for the good of the departed



Moslem graveyards are depressing spots. Among these tottering tombs at Dorkovo, Tomaks (Bulgarian Moslems) are at their prayers

Photo, Balkan News Agency



If busy hands are any preventive, Bulgarians should never get into mischief. Sober, quiet folk, they are chiefly interested in their farms or, like these street weavers at Dobromir, in their home industries

Photo, Balkan News Agency



On market day at Tirnovo you may note the Bulgarian qualities of thrift and industry. The women spin while waiting for a buyer for their vegetables, and all the men are absorbed in business converse

Photo, Balkan News Agency



Something of the military swagger of mess uniform attaches to the braided jackets and embroidered skirts of the well-to-do Bulgarian

Photo, H. Charles Woods

BULGARIA & THE BULGARS

disabilities for the representatives of other creeds, the equality of which is recognized by law. Hence the Mahomedan population, which numbers roughly half a million souls, is properly represented in the Chamber, the Jews are allowed to enjoy the full right of citizenship, and the schools of non-Bulgarian denominations receive grants from the Government.

The people have a passion for education and self-education, and perhaps one of the most marked features in the country is that the intelligentsia class has really become over-large. The result is that a too considerable section of the population desires to avoid manual work and seeks employment in the law, in newspaper offices, and in Government service. Nevertheless, the enormous progress made in education since 1878 is one of the greatest assets possessed by Bulgaria. For this lasting credit should be given to the (American) Robert College and College for Women at Constantinople, where many of the people have graduated; to the American Mission establishments in Bulgaria and Macedonia; and to the Government, which has consistently devoted itself to this branch of the administration.

Farming Comes Before Politics

With education, which is obligatory, in the hands of the State and of the Communes, and not of the Church, there is now an elementary school in almost every Bulgarian village; there are gymnasia and high schools for more advanced students, and Sofia boasts of an up-to-date university. Hence, wherever one goes, one finds that the standard of knowledge of all classes of the people is exceedingly high, and that, whereas so recently as 1888 only eleven per cent. of the population were literate, now probably at least seventy per cent. can read, write, and cipher.

Bulgaria is essentially an agricultural country, and the Bulgarians are fundamentally a peasant people. With a large part of the whole surface under cultivation, there are only seven towns possessed of a population of over 20,000 inhabitants, more than seventy-five

per cent. of the people are occupied on the land, and, in normal years, between eighty and ninety per cent. of the total exports were provided by the products of the soil. This condition of things is reflected in the Government, in social life, and in the labour market; for whatever party be in power, or whatever policy be under discussion, the attitude of the Bulgarian is influenced by the question whether or not he can be on his farm at the necessary time of the year. Most of the schools are closed for four months beginning with May, and men employed in Governmental or non-agricultural professions are often liberated for the harvest.

Methods Antiquated yet not Obsolete

But if Bulgaria depends for her prosperity almost exclusively upon the fertility and yield of her soil, it must be admitted that her methods of cultivation are only just beginning to emerge from their primitive stage and that, until recently, her people had not realized the value of the systematic working of the land or of modern implements.

The old-fashioned wooden plough, often made at home, is still in use; the methods of threshing, winnowing, and transport are antique and individual, and up-to-date machinery is conspicuous by its almost entire absence. Nevertheless, during recent years something has been done to improve these conditions.

Agricultural machinery is now admitted to the country free of duty, agrarian schools and model farms have been started, and an agricultural bank has been established. That pioneer institution, which developed into its present form in 1903, enables the farmer to secure advances for the purpose of stocking his land on the security of his cattle and produce, and is thus one of the most important financial and economic organizations in the country.

Products by which Bulgaria Lives

Wheat, maize, barley, rye, and some oats are the principal cereals, and in 1914 the area devoted to the first was nearly equal to that employed for the tillage of the remaining four



BULGARIAN LADS AND LASSES DANCING THE HORÓ TO THE ACCOMPANIMENT OF RUDIMENTARY BAGPIPES AND FLUTE
The word "horó" is a variant form of the Greek "choros," signifying a dance, but the Balkan Christians have narrowed its meaning and applied it solely to one special dance. The tunes of the horó vary; the majority of them have been composed or arranged in Bulgaria and Serbia, and the Bulgarian, mindful of his Tartar origin, introduces wild and untamed music into most of his horós, which are played "allegro con fuoco," and often in minor keys
Photo, Undersound & Underland



BULGARIAN SOLDIERS AND CIVILIANS JOIN HANDS IN REVELRY

The soldiers love to dance—and the people love the soldiers—and where soldiers and dancing are to be found, gay crowds are inevitably drawn to the scene of action. An unlimited number can participate in the "Horó," Bulgaria's national dance, and on important festivals the whole village will take part. The dance lasts for an hour or two, and the Horó tune is not unlike a polka.

combined. Rice, cotton, sugar beet, and vines are also cultivated, and the rearing of live-stock, together with poultry farming, is carried on. Moreover, the culture of tobacco, which would have become an industry of vastly greater importance had Bulgaria retained the Aegean territory which became hers after the Balkan Wars, is a widespread industry, encouraged by the Government, which still distributes seed and gives a bounty on exports.

Again, the rose-producing and the silkworm breeding businesses are highly developed. Indeed, Bulgaria holds the premier place in these, for her famous otto of roses is known throughout the world. Distilled from red and white flowers, particularly from the former, the success of this trade depends largely upon climatic advantages, such as shelter from the north winds, a full south sun, and considerable moisture, which prevail in the district lying

between the Balkan Range and Philippopolis. These advantages, recently more fully made use of, mean that about 20,000 acres are now devoted to rose culture, and that, whereas in 1901 otto of roses to a value of under £86,000 was exported, in 1911 produce worth over £296,000 actually left the country. With regard to sericulture, too, largely owing to the efforts of the Government and to the excellent quality of the mulberry leaves, the prosperity of that industry is now considerable, and Bulgaria, instead of exporting only cocoons, now sends abroad a limited amount of reeled silk.

The possession of property is governed by certain limitations and restrictions, for the freeholder owns only the surface and nothing beneath it, and at least a part of an inordinate betterment in value belongs or passes to the community. Thus, in the case of the discovery of minerals, or even of a

BULGARIA & THE BULGARS

national spring, the State has certain rights in regard to the area in question, and, in the event of the growth of a city, such as Sofia, the proprietors would be compelled to sell without any undue profits resulting from successful speculation.

This said, we find that peasant proprietorship is universal, and that there are now no large estates except those owned by the monasteries. Indeed, out

does not lead to high production, but the peasants show a special and immense capacity for work, and they are untiring in the care of their level, unfenced glebes.

As the number of horses, or, more correctly, small wiry Balkan ponies, is limited, and as these are unsuited for heavy work, the most common domestic animals are the buffalo, horned stock, mule, donkey, sheep, goat, pig, and dog. The buffalo, used for weighty draught



THE VILLAGE "POPE" AND HIS WHITEWASHED SANCTUARY

The village priest, or Pope, is in most parishes a peasant of the same class as his parishioners, and is usually too occupied with his family, cattle, and plot of land to trouble himself greatly about spiritual matters. Ritual is more important than dogma; to intone well is a greater gift than to possess the power of preaching, and fine figures and flowing beards are indispensable requisites for high ecclesiastical preferment.

Photo, C. Rider Noble

of nearly 800,000 existing farms fewer than 15,000 consist of over fifty acres, and by far the largest number of holdings range between twelve and eighteen acres. Here the Bulgarian has usually built his own house, of mud and wood, upon the post and pan system, once common in Cornwall and elsewhere. It consists of one storey, divided into two rooms, the floors of which are of hammered clay. The system is not yet intensive, and the small-holding perhaps

purposes, is much prized, but he is delicate and requires much care in this, his northern limit. The native cattle, employed in the cultivation of the soil and for ordinary transportation, and like the buffalo always shod, are small, hardy, and long coated. Sheep, also small and whitefaced, goats which spring from rock to rock, and swine which belong to a special breed, seem the natural adjuncts of many a farm. The village dog, grey, shaggy, and



MOUNTAINOUS RETREAT OF THE PATRON SAINT OF BULGARIA

In the seclusion of the beautiful Ryl Planina, Rilo Mountains, Bulgaria's most famous anchorite, John of Ryl, the shepherd, lived in the tenth century, and the first Rilo monastery was built not far from the inaccessible rock which gave him shelter. On the site of the ancient building this magnificent monastery now stands, affording shelter during years of war to thousands of refugees.

Photo, Mrs. Gabriel

BULGARIA & THE BULGARS

and high forest is for the stranger a surprise, just as great as and more common than the bear, which is still to be met in the mountain forests, or the wolf, which often invades the home-land, and in winter has been known to appear in the immediate vicinity of Sofia. While red deer somewhat rare, the roe deer is found in the forest, the chamois frequents the higher mountain pastures and the hare is everywhere. Again while bird life migrates in winter, swans breed on the Danube, and eagles, cranes, wild geese and ducks, and partridges are common. Fish, too, supply an important article of food, for, not to mention the trout which swarm in the mountain streams, the Danube and its lagoons teem with big carp and with silure. Lastly, the Black Sea, unpleasant and inhospitable as it usually is to the traveller, provides three varieties of mackerel, some larger than the British, tunny, and various salt-water fish.

Like other territories which until recently were Turkish, Bulgaria has been largely denuded of her forests, and it will take several generations to make up for the devastation perpetrated for the purpose of obtaining wood and securing land for agricultural purposes. Since the liberation of the country, however, the State, which now controls the forests, has taken measures to save the remaining timber and to bring about a certain amount of afforestation. The grape ripens at the lower altitudes, fruit trees are common in Southern and South-Western Bulgaria, and the lilac groves are characteristic.

In regard to industries, including minerals, with the exception of agriculture, Bulgaria is still in a stage of infancy. This is due partly to a lack of the home capital necessary to put the manufactures of the kingdom on a sound basis; partly to the reluctance of foreign capitalists to invest money in a country which has always refused



BRETHREN OF THE "BLACK CLERGY" OF BULGARIA

The Greek Orthodox faith is the recognized religion of the State. Church government is vested in the Holy Synod, ecclesiastical appointments being subject to the Government's approval. The laity take part in the election of metropolitans and parish priests. Only the "black clergy," or monks are eligible for the episcopate. Besides the stipend which the clergy receive from the Treasury they are allowed fixed fees for exceptional religious services.

Photo, C. Rider Noble



BLACK-ROBED MEMBERS OF A RELIGIOUS SISTERHOOD

They lead hard-working, industrious lives, and several hours of the daily routine are devoted by them to teaching and tending various members of the laity. Bulgaria possesses about a dozen convents, and her few hundred nuns are regarded with considerable respect and deference. The calendar of the Greek Orthodox Church contains nearly eighty religious holidays, many of which are kept as work-suspending festivals by the community at large.

Photo, C. Rider Noble

to sell herself for commercial purposes ; and partly, if not very largely, to the fact that it may well be more economic for the Bulgarians to continue to devote themselves to their natural rural pursuits, and to rely for fabricated articles upon goods imported from abroad. With public opinion still divided upon this last question, the Government has, however, endeavoured to stimulate home industry, and, with this object in view, legislation, giving considerable privileges to concerns above a certain size, has been passed, technical schools have been established, chambers of commerce have been opened, and cooperation has begun to make its appearance.

Nevertheless, under existing conditions, the textile industry is the most important, and coal alone among the minerals is advantageously exploited. Local wool, which has to be augmented by imports from abroad, is worked up into rough homespun cloths, serges, braids, stockings, gloves, shawls, and carpets, and in normal times many

of these articles were exported. As the Bulgarians devote themselves almost exclusively to the material side of life, they have no arts to attract foreign attention ; they boast of no dramatists, sculptors, painters, or writers with an international reputation. It, therefore, only remains to repeat that cold, undemonstrative, and reserved as they may be, these people are possessed of sterling qualities which preclude them from disappearance into oblivion. They have built up a modern country in just over forty years. They have established a government which is certainly no worse than those of the older neighbouring states. And they have created educational and agricultural systems unequalled elsewhere in the Balkans. Unfortunately for them, the Bulgarians took the wrong side in the war, but time will yet prove that they are destined to play their part in that regenerated world, which one must still hope will be the outcome of the European conflagration.

Bulgaria

II. The Troubled History of the Bulgars

By Sir Reginald Rankin, D.L., M.A.

Author of "The Inner History of the Balkan War"

THE Bulgars, like the Finnish people of the North, are Finns, but speak the Slavic language of the inhabitants of the lands they found settled in the lower Danube of Moesia when they came there under Asparuch in A.D. 679. According to the story the Slavs and Bulgars were called into one race. During the following centuries they had been assailing the cities and the assailants of the Eastern Roman or Byzantine Empire, and at length the skill of their leader Cerig, Constantine V. would have annexed Bulgaria about 750.

Under Krum, their greatest heathen prince, took Serdica, now Sofia, from the Greeks, captured the Emperor Nicephorus and tried to recover it, beheaded him, and made his skull as a goblet. Four years later Krum besieged Constantinople, but was driven back, carrying off among his captives the future emperor, Basil I. Krum's successor, Omortag, made peace with the Greeks and attacked the Franks, who, under Charlemagne, had occupied Croatia. Omortag persecuted, though without success, those of his subjects whom their Greek captives had converted to Christianity.

How Bulgaria Joined the Eastern Church

In 804 Omortag's successor, Boris, turned Christian, being baptized into the Greek Church, mainly through his fear that he would be isolated by the conversion of the neighbouring rulers. He hesitated, however, between the Eastern and Western Churches, and when the Greeks refused to sanction a Bulgarian patriarchate, sent to consult Pope Nicholas I. The Pope sent two bishops to study the state of Bulgaria, but evaded his request for a Bulgarian archbishopric. His evasion led Boris to address himself again to Constantinople, where his former captive, Basil I., now reigned. In 869 a council determined that Bulgaria should belong to the Eastern Church, as she still does. Boris' grandson, Simeon, founded the first Bulgarian empire (893-1018).

In 913 Simeon besieged Constantinople unsuccessfully, took Adrianople in 915, and in 917 utterly defeated the Greeks, who were only saved from ruin because the Emperor Leo VI., the Philosopher, called in the Magyars under Arpad to his aid. Arpad attacked Simeon's capital, Preslav, and thus prevented him from occupying Constantinople as the capital

of a Greco-Slav realm. Simeon had previously occupied Serbia, and died the master of a kingdom which included Bulgaria, most of Eastern Rumelia and Eastern Macedonia, Serbia east of the Ibar, Epirus, and Albania. Simeon took the title of "Tsar and Autocrat of all the Bulgarians and Greeks," and wore the purple of a Porphyrogenitus. The Pope sent him a royal crown and constituted a Bulgarian patriarchate. The oldest Bulgarian literature dated from his day, and learned ecclesiastics translated for him the works of Greek historians and theologians. He died in 927.

Heresy, Persecution, and Revolt

His successor, Peter, long remained in close relations with Constantinople. They were interrupted when, in 967, Nicephorus Phocas allied himself with the Russians, under Sviatoslav, and with their aid sought to conquer Bulgaria. Sviatoslav's occupation of Silistria, however, terrified Nicephorus, who made peace with Peter, but Serbia had recovered its independence, and a Bulgarian noble, Sisman, established a kingdom for himself in Macedonia and Albania. Religious disputes accelerated the decline of Bulgaria. Bogomil and his followers taught that Christianity was nothing but a struggle between the good and evil deities, and their sect grew numerous. In 971 John Zimisces overran Sisman's Empire, and deposed Boris II. Ten years later the Bulgarians revolted under Sisman's fourth son, Samuel, but after a forty years' struggle their country was finally occupied in 1018 by the "Bulgarian Slayer," Basil II. From that date until 1186 Bulgaria remained a part of the Greek Empire. Its Church was respected, but the people were overtaxed, and the Bogomils persecuted.

In 1186, however, Peter and Ivan Asen, of Tirnovo, two brothers descended from Sisman, who had been insulted by the palace officials at Constantinople, took advantage of the discontent occasioned by the taxes imposed by Isaac Angelus on his marriage with a Hungarian princess, to head a revolt. The Byzantine armies were easily defeated, and aided by the Serbians, Wallachs, and Kumans, Ivan Asen drove them from Bulgaria, and all but took Isaac himself prisoner. Just as he was about to attack Constantinople, however, he was assassinated by Ivanko. Ivan's brothers, Peter and Kaloyan,

BULGARIA S STORY

succeeded him; but after Peter's murder in 1197, Kaloyan reigned alone over Bulgaria, the Dobruja, Eastern Serbia, and Eastern Macedonia; but the Greeks refused to recognize him as Tsar. Kaloyan turned to the Papacy, and, in 1199, received a flattering letter from Innocent III., who, reminding him of his descent from a Roman, called upon him to recognize the supremacy of Rome. Thereupon, Kaloyan yielded up his kingdom to the Pope as his suzerain, and in 1204 was crowned by a cardinal as king. In the same year the Crusaders took Constantinople, and created Baldwin of Flanders Emperor. Baldwin refused Kaloyan's overtures on the ground that he was a rebel against the Greeks, and invaded Bulgaria. In April, 1205, he was defeated by Kaloyan before Adrianople, taken prisoner, and died a captive.

In 1218 Kaloyan died, and was succeeded by Ivan Asen II. (1218-41), who raised the glory of Bulgaria to its height, and dreamed of ruling over a Slavonic Empire from Constantinople. He was a good ruler, and promoted the welfare of his subjects, not only by his peaceful policy, but by his commercial treaty with Ragusa, his country's natural outlet on the Adriatic. Breaking off all relations with Rome, he re-established the autonomy of the Bulgarian Church with its centre at Tirmovo. The Latins at Constantinople trembled before Ivan Asen, and Baldwin II. came to England to implore Henry III. for help against him. An inscription in Tirmovo Cathedral records Ivan's victories.

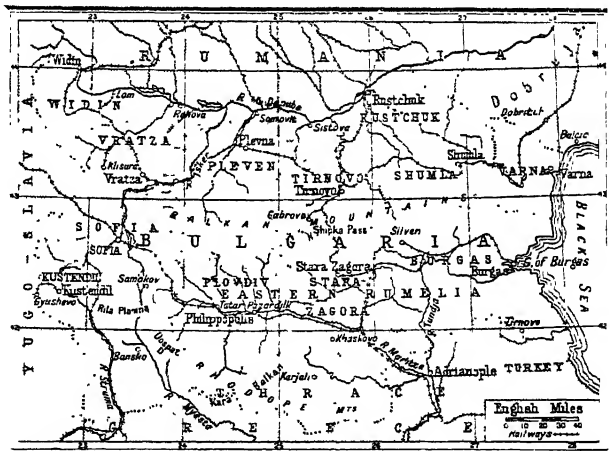
"In the year 1230, I, Ivan Asen, Tsar and Autocrat of the Bulgarians, conquered all lands from Okrin" (Adrianople) "to Drac" (Durazzo) "the Greek, the Albanian, and the Serbian land. Only the towns round Carigrad" (Constantinople) "and that city itself did the Frazi" (Franks) "hold, but these two subjected themselves to my rule."

Ivan Asen II. died in 1241. Sixteen years later his empire was in the dust. The Greeks, the Serbians, and the Macedonians had recovered their independence, and in 1257 his dynasty ended with the death of Kaliman II. Bulgaria broke up into separate states, and though for a moment Michael, the ruler of Widin (1323) nearly occupied Constantinople, he was defeated at Kustendil in 1330 by the Serbian king, Stephen Dushan, and the Serbs

became the masters of Bulgaria. In 1344, however, the Turks crossed into Europe. By 1367 they had made Adrianople their capital, and in 1396 forced the Bulgarian Tsar, Si-man III., to become their vassal, for his predecessor, Ivan Alexander, had refused to cooperate with the Greeks in opposing them, and Si-man himself had seized the Emperor John Palaeologus when he came to implore his aid. A few years later Sultan Murad I. occupied Sofia by a trick, and in 1399, in the battle of Kossovo, laid the Balkans at his feet by defeating the Serbs, the Bosniaks, and the Albanians. In 1398 Bulgaria became a Turkish province.

By the capture of Bulgaria the Turks gained the key to Europe, for not only did they cut off Constantinople from the rest of Christendom, but they gained the passages over the lower Danube and the roads into the Ibar and the Morava valleys, the gateways for an invader from the east into Hungary, Austria, and North Italy. Bulgaria had been ruined by its aristocracy, who turned the commons into serfs, and by its clergy, whose persecutions drove the Bogomils into the arms of the Turks.

Under the Turks Bulgaria sank into misery. A few of the nobles turned Moslem—the rest fled into Wallachia. The cities in the plains lay waste; their inhabitants carried on a guerrilla warfare



THE KINGDOM OF BULGARIA

against the Turks from the mountains. Greek clergy replaced the native priesthood; Greek became the language of public worship and of civil life. About 1760, when Russian influence began to replace that of Austria in the Balkans, Bulgarian literature revived with Bishop Sofronii and the historian, Paisii, whose history of Bulgaria re-awoke the national spirit. In 1835 a Bulgarian school was

BULGARIA'S STORY

opened at Gabrovo; and in 1870, as a counterpoise to the Greek agitation, the Turks recognized the Bulgarian Exarchate, which was excommunicated by the Greek Patriarch in 1872. This decree occasioned the subsequent troubles in Macedonia.

Gladstone and the "Bulgarian Atrocities"

In 1876 a report that the Christians were to be massacred brought about a rising near Philippopolis. It was put down with terrible severity. The report of the massacre at Batak reached Europe through the "Daily Telegraph" correspondent at Constantinople; but though Disraeli treated his story as "coffee-house babble," Gladstone, by his pamphlet on the Bulgarian atrocities, drove Russia into war with Turkey. The siege of Plevna, the greatest event in the campaign, took place in Bulgaria. In February, 1878, when the Russians were within twelve miles of Constantinople, the Turks signed a treaty at San Stefano, which re-constituted a Greater Bulgaria extending from the Danube to the Aegean and from the Black Sea to the Albanian mountains, giving Bulgaria an Aegean port at Kavala, and leaving only Adrianople, Salonica, and Chalcidice to Turkey.

Britain fearing, though wrongly, that this Bulgaria would become a Russian province, secured the revision of the treaty in the interests of Turkey. In June, 1878, the Congress of Berlin stripped Bulgaria of Macedonia and Thrace, which it returned to the Sultan with a futile provision that he should introduce organic reform into his European provinces, a promise never fulfilled. Bulgaria was divided into two parts, the northern a tributary principality, the southern (or Eastern Rumelia) with a Christian governor and a Constitution sanctioned by the Powers.

Tsar Ferdinand Assumes the Throne

Prince Alexander of Battenberg, a nephew of the then Russian Empress, was elected Prince of Bulgaria, but he proved a man of independent will. In September, 1885, Eastern Rumelia joined Bulgaria, and a war with Serbia, in which Bulgaria was victorious, followed. The Russians, enraged by his insubordination, drove Alexander into exile. He was succeeded, against the will of the Powers, by Ferdinand of Coburg, a German prince and Hungarian magnate, who was not recognized as Prince of Bulgaria and Governor-General of Eastern Rumelia until 1896. In 1909 Bulgaria declared itself an independent kingdom. Ferdinand assumed the title of Tsar, and, as such, entered into the war with Turkey in October, 1912. A Catholic himself, he had

allowed his son and heir, Boris, to be baptized as an infant into the Greek Church.

The actual author of the Balkan War of 1912 was James D. Bourchier, the "Times" correspondent in the Balkans. Knowing that the Christians in Macedonia were anxious to revolt against Turkish cruelty, he induced Bulgaria, Greece, and Serbia to combine in a treaty to force the Porte to effect the reforms in European Turkey promised by Article 23 of the Treaty of Berlin. The treaties, which provided for common action, for the provision of a joint army, and for dividing between Bulgaria and Serbia any territories which might be conquered in Macedonia, were signed early in 1912, with the approval of Russia. In September, 1912, Montenegro, which had joined the alliance, began hostilities against Turkey. On October 18th Bulgaria proclaimed war. The Bulgarians entered Thrace, and after brilliant victories at Kirk Kilisse and Lule Burgas drove back the Turks to the lines of Chatalja, and might, indeed, but for an outbreak of cholera and the failure of their transport, have entered Constantinople by November 10th. The lines of Chatalja proved impregnable.

How Treachery was Twice Rewarded

With Serbian help the Bulgars laid siege to Adrianople. In December the Great Powers forced the combatants to conclude an armistice. A Conference of the Balkan States assembled in London to conclude peace. Negotiations fell through on the Adrianople question. Hostilities were resumed in January, 1913. Adrianople fell on March 25th, and the Great Powers offered Bulgaria a line east of that city from Enos to Midia as their frontier in Thrace. A second Balkan conference met in London in April. Early in the war, Todorov with a Bulgarian force had advanced upon Salonica to cooperate with the Greeks, who, however, had occupied the place when he arrived. The Bulgarians also seized Kavala on the Aegean.

The friction between Greece and Bulgaria about Salonica, and the claims of Serbia to compensation for the loss of her promised outlet on the Adriatic and for her efforts at Adrianople led to the second Balkan war, which broke out almost before the ink was dry on the Treaty of London (May 30th, 1913). Under this treaty Bulgaria received the Enos-Midia line, Southern Thrace with Kavala, and part of Eastern Macedonia; but while Greece received Salonica, Serbia remained an inland Power, although her claims were supported by Russia. Austria took advantage of the situation, and in her desire to weaken the Austrian Serbs, urged Ferdinand of Bulgaria to

BULGARIA'S STORY

resist the Serbian claims. On June 28th Ferdinand attacked Serbia.

His treachery was punished. Greece and Rumania, who wanted to secure from Bulgaria Silistria and an extension of her coastline in the Dobruja, came to the aid of Serbia. In September Bulgaria was forced to sign the Treaty of Bukarest, by which she gave up Kavala to Greece, her Macedonian conquests to Greece and Serbia, and conceded the Rumanian demands, while Turkey retained Adrianople, which she had re-occupied in July. Thus, of all her conquests, Bulgaria kept only a part of Southern Thrace, with the port of Dedeagatch.

Ferdinand turned to the German Emperor; and within two months after the outbreak of the Great War concluded a treaty binding him to intervene on the side of Germany and Austria. But in November, 1914, Turkey declared war against the Entente; Britain attacked the Dardanelles, and all the Balkan politicians awaited the issue in suspense.

During the spring of 1915, Bulgaria seemed inclined to take the side of the Entente; but she would only do so if they agreed to secure her the retrocession of Kavala from Greece, to which, in view of the attitude of the military party at Athens, it was almost impossible for any Greek statesman to consent.

But the failure of the British at Suvla Bay in August and their impending retreat from Gallipoli convinced Ferdinand that Germany would be victorious. In September, 1915, he took the field against

Serbia, and France and Britain declared war against him.

With German help Serbia was quickly overrun. Behind Salonica the Bulgarians held in check the forces of the Entente. When, however, Rumania, confiding in Bulgarian neutrality, joined the Entente in August, 1916, and hurried her troops into Transylvania, the Bulgarians, led by Mackensen, entered the Dobruja, crossed the Danube, and by March, 1917, had driven the Rumanians back to Jassy. By the Treaty of Bukarest signed a year later, Bulgaria recovered all the territories she had lost in September, 1913, and in addition received the Dobruja with the Sulina mouth of the Danube. Ferdinand seemingly was now the master of the Balkans.

But his people were worn out with six years of warfare; the British victories in Mesopotamia and Palestine were shaking the Turkish power; Austria and Germany could send little help. In August, 1918, secret agents from Malikoff, the Bulgarian premier, arrived in London, and Bulgaria laid down her arms on September 28th, 1918. Ferdinand fled to Vienna; his heir, Boris, received the crown.

By the Treaty of Neuilly, 1919, Bulgaria paid the penalty of her ruler's treachery. She ceded her Macedonian territories to Serbia, and her coastland in Thrace to Greece, thus losing Dedeagatch and becoming once more an agricultural State with outlets only to the Black Sea at Varna and at Burgas. The Dobruja was restored to Rumania.

BULGARIA: FACTS AND FIGURES

The Country

Independent kingdom consisting of northern and southern Bulgaria, or eastern Rumelia, the two divisions being separated by the Balkans. By the Treaty of Neuilly, 1919, Thrace, with the Aegean littoral, was ceded to Greece, Strumitza to Yugo-Slavia, Dobruja to Rumania. Bounded north by Rumania and the Danube, west by Yugo-Slavia, east by the Black Sea, south by Greece and Turkey. Area, 42,000 square miles; population, 5,000,000. The country is watered by the Isker, Struma, and Maritza.

Government and Constitution

Executive is a council of ministers nominated by King. Legislation is in hands of the Sobranje, a single chamber elected for four years, whose laws require royal assent. Manhood suffrage is universal, and under proportional representation one member is returned for every 20,000 electors. Members are paid. Questions affecting throne or constitution, and other vital matters, are decided by specially elected Grand Sobranje. Local government is carried on by prefects.

Defence

By Treaty of Neuilly, 1919, strength of the army, during war 500,000, must not exceed 20,000 men. There is a frontier guard of 3,000; police,

armed gendarmes, forest guards, and Customs officials are limited to 10,000. Four torpedo-boats and six motor-boats maintained on the Danube.

Commerce and Industries

Bulk of the people are engaged in agriculture, most being peasant proprietors, and the country is rich in livestock. About 5,000,000 acres are under cultivation for wheat, barley, oats, maize, and rice. Other industries are silk, wine, tobacco, and otto of roses. Limestone and marble are quarried, and there are coal and other minerals not yet developed. Imports, 1919, £3,860,000; exports, £2,209,000.

Religion and Education

Four-fifths of the population belong to the Orthodox Greek Church. Elementary education is free and compulsory up to fourteen. There are technical schools, and Sofia has a university.

Chief Towns

Capital, Sofia (population, 154,000), Philippopolis (63,000), Stara Zagora (25,000), Rustchuk (41,000), Plevna (27,000), Burgas (21,000), and Varna (51,000) are Black Sea ports. An economic outlet to the Aegean was guaranteed by the Treaty of Neuilly



AT PRAYERS IN THE SHWE DAGÓN PAYAH, BURMAH'S MOST GORGEOUS SHRINE

Finest and most venerable of all places of worship in the Indo-Chinese countries is the great pagoda of Rangoon. A broad-flagged space runs all round the profusely gilded payah, and this is left free for worshippers. At the corners of the basement are ruffled-crested Assyrian-like creatures, half lion, half man. Before these are high stone altars for offerings of rice and flowers, and underneath are niches for burnt offerings

Burma

I. Burmans of the Yellow Robe & Other Races

By Sir George Scott, K.C.I.E.

Author of "The Burman, His Life and Notions"

BURMA is, by a good deal, the largest of the Indian provinces.

The actual area is not finally determined, because to the north there is a mass of very hilly country full of undesirable tribes, and to the east the head-hunting Wa make land measurement inadvisable for the present. It is necessary to dwell on the size of the province, for no maps give a proper idea of it. On a map of Asia, Burma appears unduly small. When it figures on a map of the Indian Empire it appears as a sort of back garden. When you get a map of Burma by itself, there is nothing to compare it with. Nevertheless, it extends to something less than 250,000 square miles.

The climate of an area of that size is naturally not the same throughout its extent. The first Burmese war, 1824-25, was carried on at the worst time of the year, beginning in the hot weather and running on into the rains. The natural result was a very heavy mortality from sickness, and, since

most of the fighting was confined to the delta of the Irawadi, Burma got the name of being desperately unhealthy and a mere expanse of swamps, which is the uncomplimentary name given to ricefields. This character clung to it for years, and has not been altogether lived down. As a matter of fact, just

as the East, as distinguished from the Near East and the Far East, has three seasons: the cold weather, the hot weather, and the rains, so Burma has three climates: the hot damp—for all but a very few months—of the delta, where the average rainfall is about 100 inches, rising to 200 and even 300 inches on the coast; the dry zone of the middle Irawadi basin, where some recording stations do not return much over 20 inches, and some a good deal less; and the hilly north and east, where there is an average of between 60 and 70 inches. The consequence is that, in the summer months, while most people in Rangoon are trying recipes for prickly heat, at Myingyan and



PRINCESS NICOTINE

Burmans smoke as soon as they can toddle. In the palace, this small princess's home, the cheroots are rolled in the white inner bark of the betel tree



"A WHACKING WHITE CHEROOT"

All Burman women roll their own cheroots. Huge things, six to eight inches long and nearly an inch thick, they round a girl's mouth a good deal when she puts one in

Mandalay there are many whose nerves are shattered by the dryness of the atmosphere, while up in the hills there are the envied few who have a blanket at night all the year round.

There are zones of vegetation to correspond, from the mangroves of the Tenasserim coast swamps, which are characteristic of all tropical countries, through the euphorbia and cactus and stunted bamboo scrub of the dry zone,

robbed of all rainfall except torrent showers, by the Arakan Yoma range on the west, to the hills which are in an overwhelming degree all forest; here there are stretches of pine, and above them the hill evergreens, huge trunks draped with long tassels of moss, testify to the dampness of the atmosphere. Where there are open spaces raspberries and strawberries grow wild, and there are cherry and pear trees in abundance, but only the raspberries are worth eating. Nevertheless, most European fruits grow well if there is diligence enough to fight the parasites and



GENTLEWOMANLY GRACE

Her loose cotton jacket does scant justice to her trim little person, but the flowers twisted in her hair give her a touch of coquetry



PILLARS GLINTING WITH A MYRIAD POINTS OF LIGHT

Mirror mosaic, thickly encrusted on these columns of the Shwe Dagōn pagoda, is a favourite form of decoration in Burma, and immensely effective under those brilliant skies. That the Burmans resting on the steps are men is indicated by their turbans, the women usually going uncovered

Photo, Lady Scott

vermin; thus it is possible to eat in Burma the durian and mangosteen of the equatorial zone and the peach of temperate lands.

In most civilized countries there is more cultivation than forest land, but in Burma it is exactly the reverse. Jungle covers a vastly greater area than tilled fields. This is due to the fertility of the soil and the cupidity of human nature. The valley of the Irawadi is so fruitful and productive that the cultivator has only to get his buffaloes to

poach up the soil for him, and the rain and the sun do the rest. In the dry zone there is more to be done, but the crops are different, and real hard work is not at all necessary. That is exactly what suits the Burman, and it is this that brought him into the country.

Ease and plenty to eat attract all mankind, and therefore from the beginning of time hungry, restless people from the north pressed down the river. It is not known who the first inhabitants of Burma were, but they certainly were



ONLOOKERS AT LIFE FROM THEIR OWN FRONT DOOR

Middle-class town Burmese are conservative in dress, but the skirts worn by this mother and daughter are of cotton, probably from Manchester, instead of the durable old-time silk. The children's hair is cropped in national fashion with a tuft left in the middle. Burmese children are adored by their parents, and are, perhaps, the happiest in the world

Photo, Lady Scott



TEMPTATION COMES TO MEET MAN EVEN IN THE TEMPLE

Pagoda precincts in Burma are never deserted. Sellers of candles, incense sticks, prayer flags and flowers, and articles for domestic use throng the platforms. Among them even gamblers find a place, like this Indian rattling coins to attract the attention of passers-by and tempt them to have a throw on his board with the dice

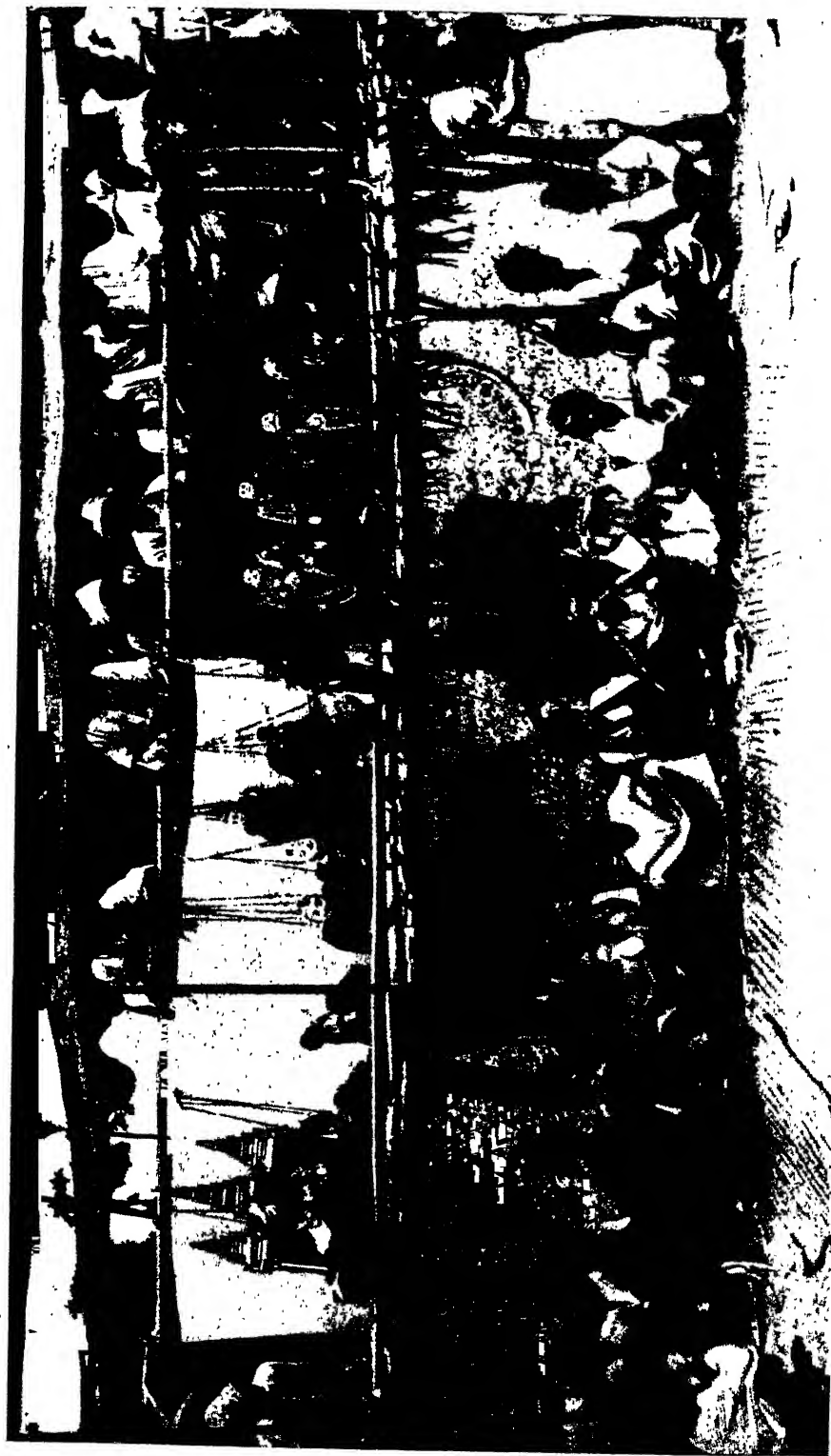
Photo, Lady Scott



CHINLON CHAMPIONS DISPLAYING THEIR DEXTERITY TO THEIR PRETTY ADMIRERS

Chinlon, or Burmese football, is played by five or six barfooted lads, the object being to keep a light wickerwork ball in the air as long as possible without touching it with the hands. The ball is knocked up with the knee, caught on the heel, thrown up with the head and foot, caught between cheek and shoulder, and passed from one player to another with an astonishing skill most fascinating to watch

Photo. Capt. H. T. P. P. P.



PUPPET SHOWS THAT EMULATE THE TRIUMPHS OF LEGITIMATE DRAMA: A BURMESE MARIONETTE PWÈ

Burmans celebrate every event in life from birth to burial with a pwè, a performance of legitimate drama, of dancing, or again of marionettes. The last is most highly esteemed by the natives. The action takes place on a bauloo platform, a curtain concealing the manipulators of the strings and the performer, who speak the dialogue and sing the songs. One end of the stage is devoted to scenes at court with a throne and other royal insignia; the other end represents a forest. Good puppet players are held in high honour, and the Burmese marionette play is a masterpiece of indigenous dramatic genius.

Photo, Captain H. T. Parry



SUNLIT GAIETY: A PAS DE QUATRE IN THE GARDEN

These dancing girls are wearing the silken skirts and curious tailed jackets in which they take part in the Court ballet. In the dance the trailing skirts are pinned down the front, forming narrow bags in which the girls assume many graceful attitudes

Photo, Captain H. T. Parry

not the Burmese. We hear of the Pyu and the Kanran and the Sak, but that is all we know about them. Mr. C. O. Blagden has determined a matter of about half a dozen Pyu vocables, inscribed on pottery, dug up on the site of the old capital, Hastinapura, near the modern Prome, the head of the delta.

Why Burma is still Forest Covered

More money for excavation might produce more bowls with characters on them, but the money is not forthcoming, and the result might only be bitter philological quarrels. The Pyu, at any rate, are as extinct as the Trinobantes in Middlesex.

First, there came down upon them the Mon-Khmer races, now represented by the people of Cambodia and by the Talaings. Then the Tibeto-Burmans followed in a swarm from the hiving north. They had a tougher bit of work. The Peguans and Talaings fought them for a thousand years before the nation was defeated, and the remnant was married and absorbed into a triumphant Burma. Meanwhile, other races, the Shans and the Karens, had

endeavoured to carry out the same adventure. They met with less success, but they wedged themselves in, here and there, and remained.

All this fighting explains why so much of Burma still remains forest-covered, and also why the population to the square mile is so far behind that of India. There was plenty of massacring in India, too, but the British stepped in sooner there to protect the progenitors of the Bande Mātaram babu and the formulators of Swadeshi from hefty men of action. But the Burma woman is a fruitful vine, and if she does not hit off the right man to begin with, keeps on marrying, with excellent census results.

World's Greatest Rice Producing Country

The men, certainly, are leisurely, but in spite of their want of enterprise Rangoon has been for years the greatest rice port in the world; there are more than 11,000,000 acres under rice cultivation, and Burma has from 70 to 75 per cent. of the rice trade of all India. Burma teak is also a very valuable asset. If Great Britain had not stepped in to conserve it, the improvident Burman

BURMA & THE BURMESE

would probably have felled all the forests, but the Government has seen to that. The Great War upset shipments a good deal, but during the last two years of the war Burma sent 150,000 tons of teak to Mesopotamia and elsewhere.

Burma oil is also a valuable asset for the province, but the Burman has had nothing to do with its development. In the days of native rule the oil was got out by the cupful, not by the barrelful, and there was no making of paraffin wax.

Burma, in fact, is doing very well, and there is good promise that she will

become the wealthiest of the Indian provinces, especially if real trade is opened up with South-West China. It is fascinating to think that, when flying becomes a commercial business, it will be possible to go in a seaplane up the line of the Salween, pick up petrol, if necessary, at Yungchang and on the Mekong, alight on the lake at Talifu, and go on in the evening to the lake at Yün-nan-fu.

The Burmese are naturally in a majority in Burma, but there are quite considerable blocks of other races, so



BUSINESS IN THE GRINDING BABEL OF BHAMO BAZAAR

Bhamo is important as the junction of several caravan routes from China, not long since a good hunting-ground for Kachin robbers from the hills. Bullock wagons bring in produce from long distances, and wide-hatted Shans and wild tribesmen chaffer in a multitude of dialects.



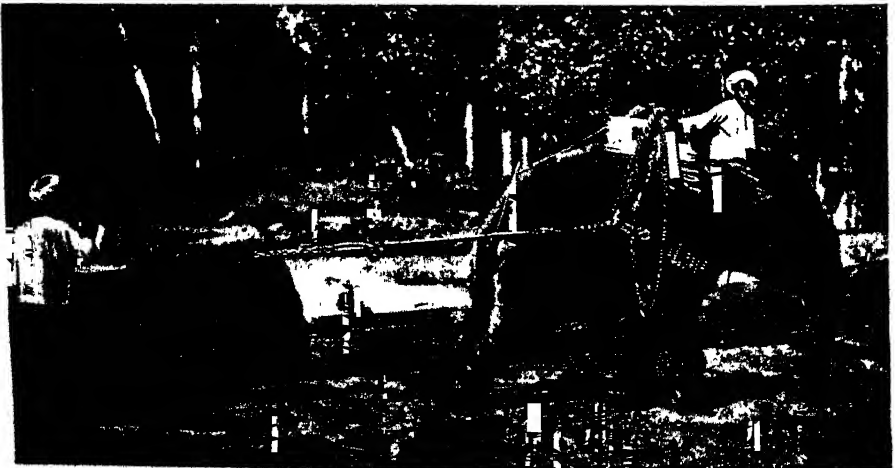
OLD AGE AND CHILDHOOD

Eighty-four years of age, he spends a peaceful evening of life with his children's children beside him. The narrow fillet of white book muslin round his temples and showing his hair is worn by all old Burmans.

many that of the total population in the preliminary figures of the 1921 census, out of nearly 13,250,000 something like 9,000,000 only were labelled Burmese, and a fair number of these were so styled only by professional students of linguistics, and themselves resent being called Burmans as vigorously as the Celtic fringe objects to being called English.

Of the 13,000,000 roughly 1,000,000 are Shans, and those who are docketed as Shans. Another million is made up of the Karens, also with poor and undesirable groups tacked on to them. Then there is the great body of the Kachins, still to a certain extent estimated rather than counted, with a multitude of clans.

The Chins among them total up to about 200,000. To these may be added the compact blocks of the Palaungs or Rumai; the Wa, some of whom hunt heads and others merely do not wash; the Padaungs, with



"EARTH-QUAKING BEASTS WITH SERPENTS FOR HANDS"

Elephants do almost all the handling of timber in the forests. They drag the teak logs to the streams to be floated out in the rains, in the sawmills do almost as much as the machinery, pile the squared logs, and stack the sawn planks. Elephants piling teak is still one of the sights of Rangoon.

Photos, Mrs. Dowson



TUSKERS TAKING BAGGAGE UP TO THE HILLS

In the hilly country of the Southern Shan States elephants are the only pack animals that can negotiate the steep paths up to the villages. For various reasons the tribesmen keep these paths as secret and difficult as possible, and so bad are some of them that a baggage elephant has taken fourteen hours to cover four and a half miles

Photo, Mrs. Doreton

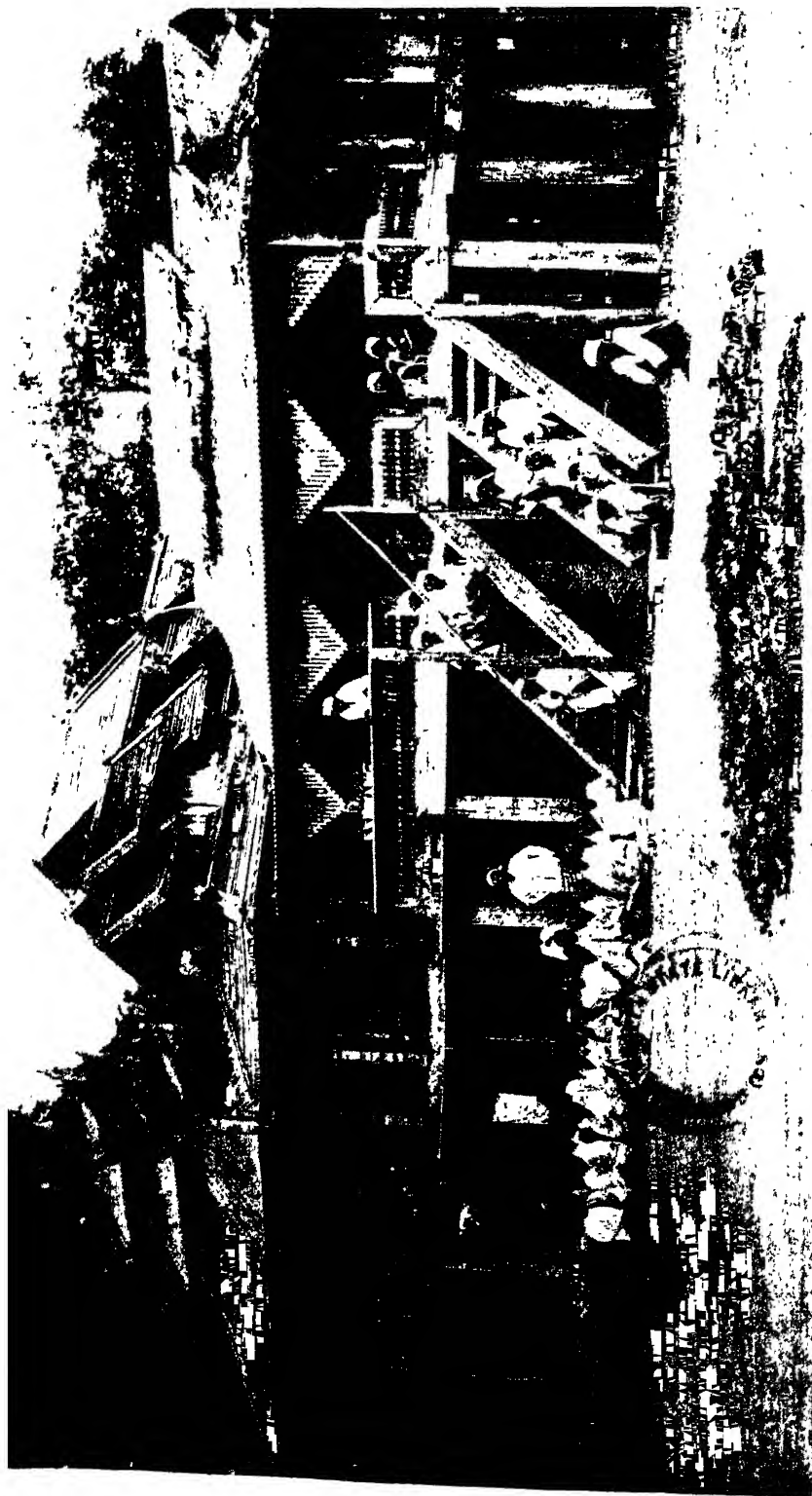
their brass-necked women; the Brè, who coil the brass rod round their legs and arms instead of their necks; the La'hu, the Akha, and a great many more, who do not care what they are called as long as they are left in peace.

Finally, there is a constantly increasing horde of natives of India, whom the old-fashioned Burman still considers and calls a superior class of animal, and makes use of accordingly. They are useful to do coolie work, and carry on the agricultural operations which the lazy Burman used mostly to leave to his womankind. These "natives," as they are universally called in the province, make much money. In this respect, some of them are emulated by the Chinese, whom by contrast the Burman rather likes. The Burmese girl certainly likes them. She is



"LADS-GO-COURTING TIME"

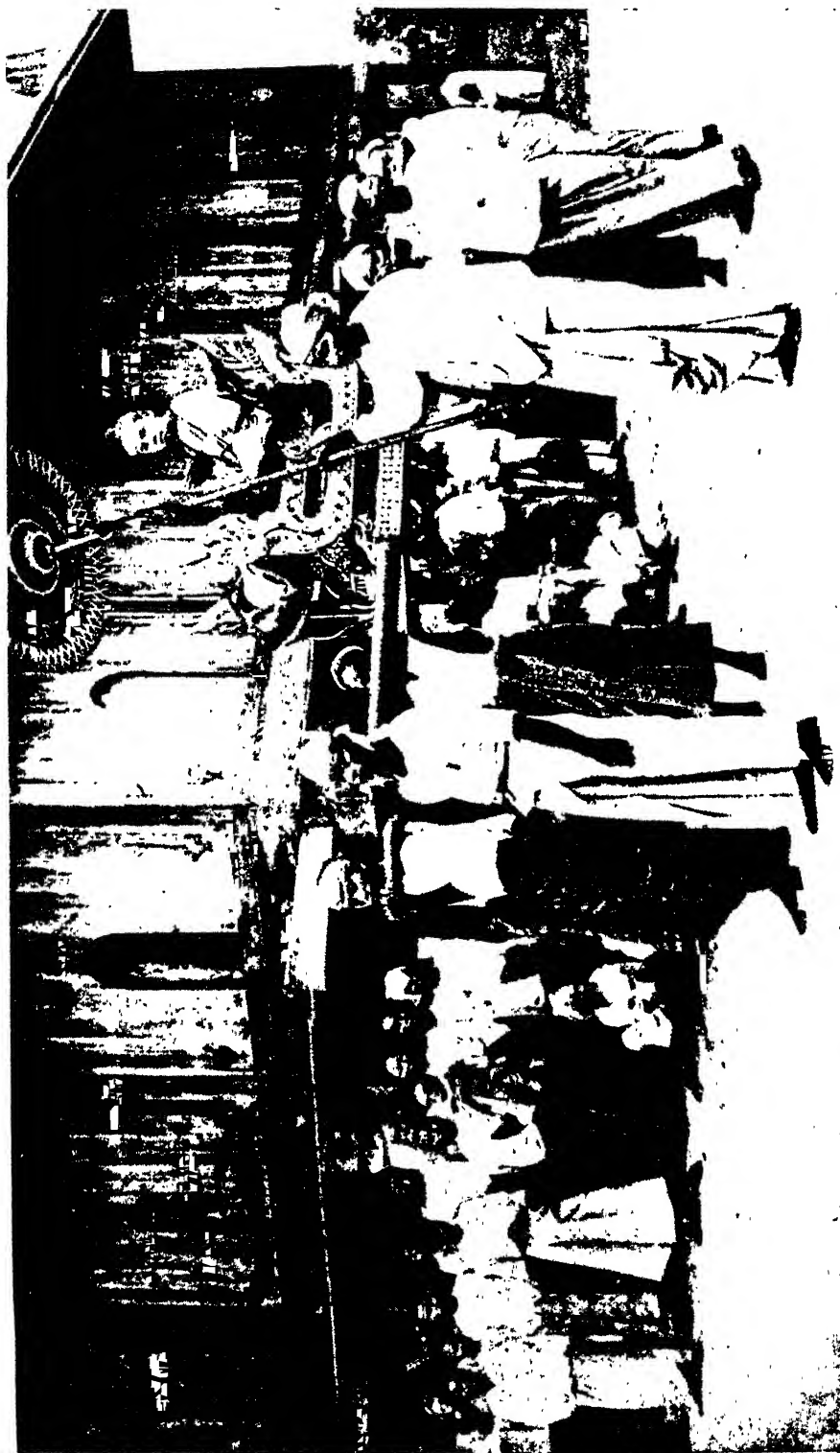
Authorised courtship takes place about nine o'clock at night. Dressed in her best, the girl, unattended but not unsupervised by her parents, then receives her wooer in her own home and plays the pretty comedy known to all lovers



WHERE HOLY MEN PASS TRANQUIL LIVES, SEEKING ONLY FULFILMENT OF THE LAW

Outside every village in Burma there stands a Buddhist monastery. Built of teak, it is always oblong, raised on posts ten feet above the ground, and reached by steps leading up to a veranda. The roof rises in super-imposed tiers with carved gables, and a gilded hti upon the summit. A large central hall occupies the single floor, part of it serving as school-room, general office, and dormitory for the monks, and the other part containing the altar and images of Buddha, and being used as a reception-room by the finally professed monks

Photo, Captain H. T. Perry



RENOUNCING THE POMPS AND VANITIES OF THE WORLD: THE RITUAL INITIATION OF A KO-YIN

Every Burmese boy is initiated as a ko-yin, or novice, in a Buddhist monastery between the ages of seven and nine. Dressed in his best, and seated in a sedan of gilded lacquer inlaid with glass mosaic, preceded by a band, and attended by girls carrying flowers and golden bowls, he is borne by four near relatives to take leave of his home. Then he is carried twice round the monastery before being introduced into the room where the Pangyis are waiting to admit him into the order, shave his head, and invest him with the yellow robe. Generally he returns to lay life in a few weeks.

Photo, Captain H. T. Parry

BURMA & THE BURMESE

prepared to marry anybody, but if she is business-like, and most of them are quite remarkably business-like, at any rate in comparison with their brothers, she marries a solid Chinaman, rather than a mercurial Burman.

Probably the majority of these Chinese are Baba-babas, "eleven-o'clock Chinamen" from the Straits Settlements, British-born in Penang or Singapore, but there is a constantly increasing number of Burma Chinese. The boys usually dress as Chinamen,

street in Pegu as the fairest he had ever seen. Cesar Frederick was persuaded that no ruler of the earth had greater possessions than the king of Pegu, and Fernão Mendez Pinto owes some of the doubts as to his strict veracity to his ecstasies about the same place. Nowadays the traveller in Burma notes it as the station where he had some sort of meal in the railway refreshment-room.

This vaunting of Burma led to its invasion. The conquerors did their best to kill off all those they found in



SOLEMN CONSECRATION OF A PAGODA SPIRE

Every pagoda in Burma is surmounted by a hti or umbrella spire formed of concentric rings of gilt ironwork tapering to a rod. Kneeling monks pray fervently before the hti, surrounded by gifts of rice, fruit, etc. A bamboo scaffolding having been erected the spire is hoisted into place by many willing hands, and more prayers are offered when it is finally placed in position.

Photo, Captain H. T. Parry

and have Chinese names. The girls are left to themselves—Chinese men take no account of women—and usually figure as Burmese meinkales, because the dress is so gay, so airy, and suits their figures so well.

The great variety of races in Burma is due to the fertility of the country and to the hope of gain. The early merchant adventurers—English, Portuguese, Dutch, French, even Ptolemy, with his "Chryse Regio"—all wrote about it on the lines of the house-agent or the company promoter. Ralph Fitch, the first Englishman to reach Burma, speaks of a

possession, but "firing into the brown of them" always lets a good many away.

The vanquished fled to the outskirts and especially to the hills. Movement in the hills is not to the taste of everyone, and nobody carries it on as an occupation. Moreover, there were other questers trying to get to the plains. These hills are a very tangled mass, but there are plenty of valleys and straths and even grassy hillsides when they have been toilsomely cleared, and so, when once they had settled, the wanderers usually stayed and their



MASTER AND CLASS AT A BUDDHIST MONASTERY SCHOOL

Directly a boy enters a school he is given a roughly-made black wooden slate on which is written the alphabet, called "the great basket of learning." From this he goes on to religious subjects, getting by heart the Pali verses employed at the pagoda

Photo, Mrs. Doreton



BURMESE FRUITSELLERS: A VERITABLE "GOBLIN MARKET"

Fruitarians need not starve in Burma. Plantains and bananas are the leading fruits of the country, pineapples abound, and other fruits are custard-apples, limes, citrons, mangoes, jack-fruit, guava, oranges, ma-yan—an acrid kind of plum known to Britons as Mary Anne—and the durian



MEMBERS OF THE "NOBLE ORDER OF THE YELLOW ROBE"

All male Burmians enter a monastery, if only for a few weeks. Those to whom the monastic life appeals qualify as mendicants. Initiation gives them no spiritual powers. Holding no cure of souls, but seeking only their own salvation, they take vows of continence, humility, and poverty, and rely upon the kindness of a reverent people for the food necessary to maintain life

Photo, J. R. Steel.

descendants have stayed after them. They are desperately isolated. There are some villagers who have never been above ten miles from the place where they were born. This necessarily led to local forms of speech, and these developed more and more. Strangers were not welcomed. They got the traditional half-brick welcome, on the assumption that they could only have come to steal cattle or cut off heads. Dislike of their probable habits led to disinclination to attempt to understand their forms of speech.

It is fairly certain that this is the explanation of the number of tribes on the Burma frontier hills. The gazetteer of Yün-nan over the border diligently records 142 different races of wild men. It seems probable that we could see this total and go better, if we chose to mark up patois and dialects as separate languages. But it is not done because when the new and enthusiastic wanderer sends in sheets full of uncouth vocabularies, he learns

long months afterwards from tables of comparative vocabularies drawn up under an electric fan, that they are on the level of navvy patter or cracksman's slang.

However, these wild men are being sophisticated or tainted with civilization. For a long time no explorers have had poisoned arrows fired at them. The head-hunting Wa are not so sure of the desirability of cutting off the head of any stranger who appears on their borders. Glass bottles no longer have the value they once had. Not so many years ago there were some who, for a glass-stoppered bottle, made offer of all the marriageable daughters of the household. They are even beginning to realize the significance of money. At one time it was difficult to buy a bowl for a rupee. It was easier to get one for a two-anna bit, because it could be used for coat buttons or necklaces. If, however, there was a chance of getting an empty bottle or tobacco tin, there were eager competitors prepared to

BURMA & THE BURMESE

give all their own and most of their neighbours' hens.

They have even changed their views about photography. At first it was considered to be a sinister method of capturing body and soul. Then it was thought indecent, because of the inversion of the figures on the focussing glass. Then subjects were to be got by the offer of tempting articles. Beads outweigh modesty any day, and a hand-

made mirror removes foolish theories of decorum. Finally, a desire to be taken has overcome misgivings in all but very remote villages, and the difficulty is to keep those who are not wanted from crowding into the group.

The men in almost all the tribes are drab in dress and otherwise not picturesque. The women have a great variety of costumes and ornaments. The Akha, with their vivid colours, ropes



WHERE ALMS ARE DEEMED THE VEHICLES OF PRAYER

White-robed nuns line the steps up to the shrines of the Shwe Dagôn pagoda, calling to the passers-by for alms. The pointed casket on the left is used for Temple offerings, and the platter, umbrella, and towels represent the sum of the devout women's worldly possessions

Photo, Lady Scott



LAHOI VILLAGERS "STANDING AT THE CORNER OF THE STREET"

Some of the Padaung women are by no means bad-looking, but their formidable armour on neck, arms, and legs seems to deter suitors from other tribes than their own. The weather being chilly, two of these girls have wrapped their blankets round themselves

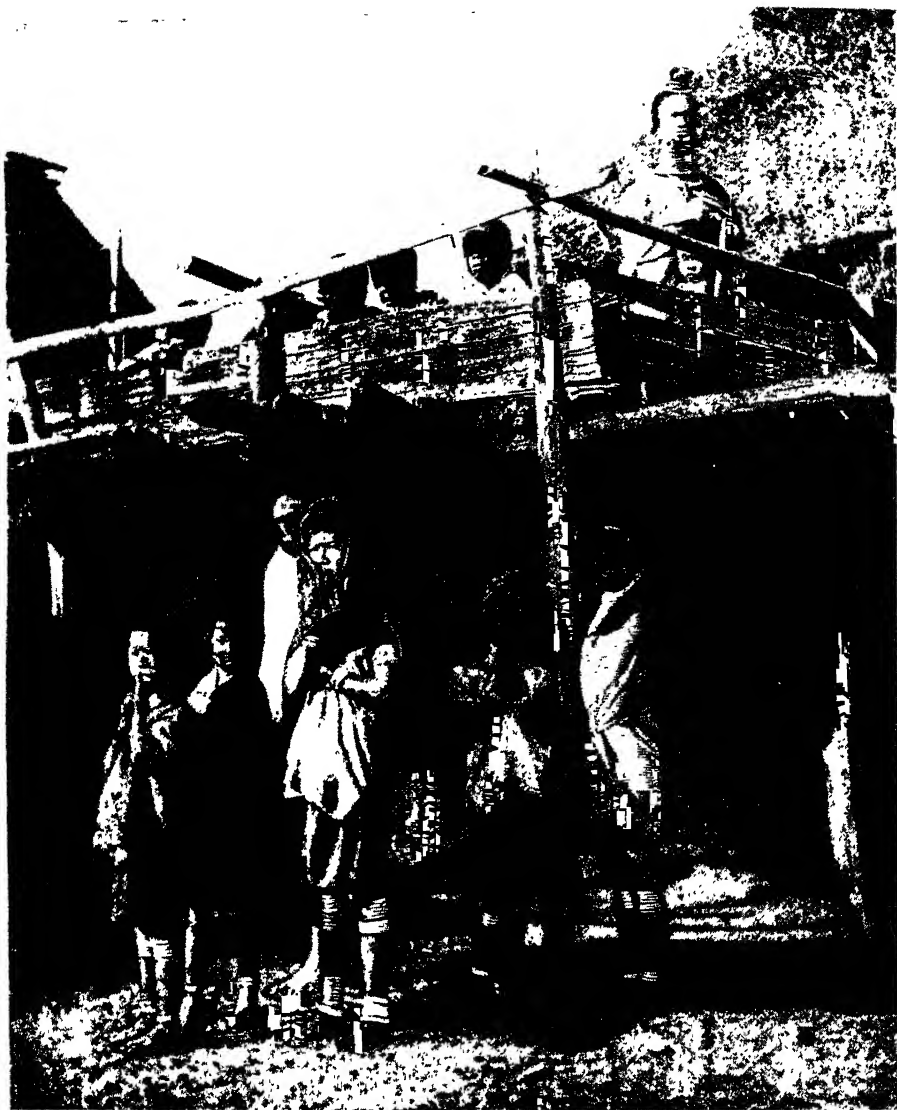
Photo, Sir George Scott



SANGFROID ACQUIRED BY MIXING IN HIGH SOCIETY

Padaung women have long been accustomed to exhibition as remarkable specimens of humanity at entertainments at the old court at Mandalay, and since then at vice-regal and other durbars. The umbrella held by the lady on the right is a souvenir of one such occasion. Arrayed in all their finery they pose for the camera with the self-possession of a musical comedy star

Photo, Sir George Scott



A STIFF-NECKED GENERATION: BRASS-BOUND PADAUNGS' AT HOME

Padaungs are chiefly notable for the brass collars worn by the women. Beginning with five coils, a girl adds to these as she grows until about twenty-one encompass her elongated neck. Wider coils softening the curve to the shoulders suggest a champagne bottle, exemplified here by the Miranda of the balcony, with a funny little top-hat for the cork

Photo, Sir George Scott

of beads and seed necklaces, bamboo circlet hats and abbreviated skirts, are the most picturesque. The Padaung women's heavy brass-rod neck-bands and the brass coils round arms and legs are the most striking, though many others of the Hill Karens rival them, except in the brass collars. The Wa women are not dressy at any time, and during the hot weather are content with dirt and the ambient air. The

Kamet women on the other side of the Mekong find a skewer-like hairpin all that is required as a symbol of clothing. On the other hand their neighbours, the Tingpany Yao, hardly even show their ankles, and wear mortar-board-like hats, while the Miaotzu women have accordion-pleated kilts, which are yards long and weigh many pounds.

There is certainly plenty of variety and the bazaars are the places to see the

BURMA & THE BURMESE

people. It is the custom in Burma to hold markets every five days. In the larger towns, of course, there is a daily bazaar, that is to say, you can buy vegetables and fish and other comestibles and dry goods, silks and cottons, glassware and hardware, every morning and often all through the day.

The bazaar is a huge shed or series of sheds alongside one another with low, raised platforms of split bamboos, on which the sellers occupy stalls on payment of a small fee, and have all their wares spread out in front of them.

The stall-holders are usually Burmese girls, except for a fair proportion of box-wallahs from India and withered old druggists, Burmans who sell an extraordinary selection of desiccated animal and vegetable substances and inorganic matter, ranging from chalk to arsenic.

The silk bazaar in Mandalay is a marvellous display of colour. Unhappily, nowadays a very great deal of the silk comes from Japan, and there is even more Manchester silk than Burmese, which is much to be regretted, for the Burmese silk wore better than



SQUALID DISCOMFORT OF PADAUNG VILLAGE LIFE

Padaung domestic architecture has not got beyond the thatched cattle-shed stage. Furniture is non-existent, and the only valued possessions of the women are the pounds of brass rings they wear on their legs and arms, and their extraordinary collars of brass coils with rings behind which suggest that their wearers may be tied up at night

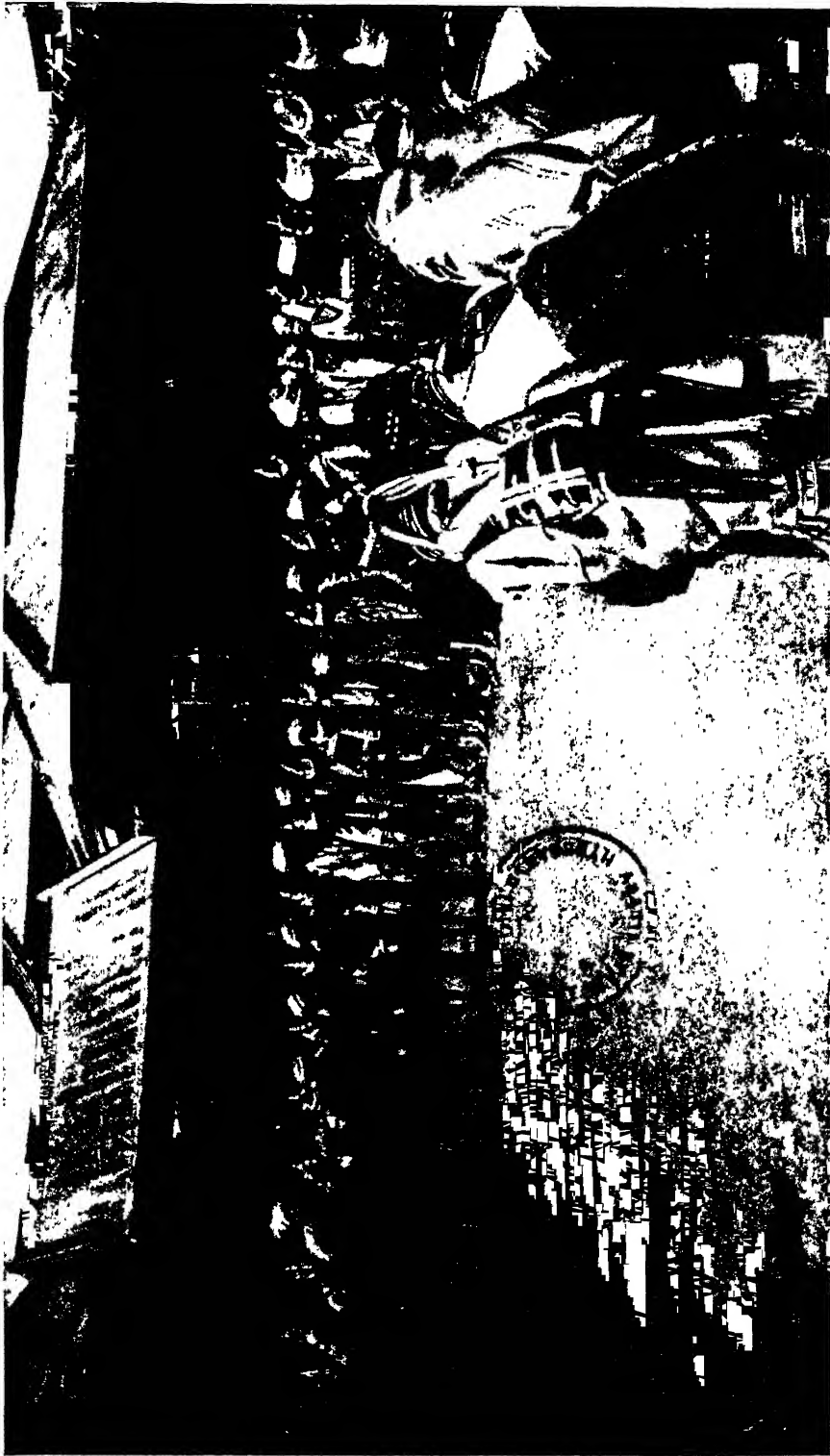
Photo, Sir George Scott



FAMILY GROUP OF WELL-TO-DO PADAUNGS OUTSIDE THEIR ELIGIBLE RESIDENCE

Padaung houses are fairly substantial structures. Inside, the rooms are dark, for the eaves are brought right down to the floor as a protection from the hill winds. This darkness badly affects the occupants' eyesight, but the open veranda in front is much occupied. The chipped wooden slab staircase is easily negotiated by bare feet accustomed to cling with the toes though awkward for heavy boots. Cattle, pigs, and poultry live underneath the dwelling

Photo. Sir George Scott



SPRIT WORSHIPPERS' WEIRD NOCTURNAL CEREMONY OF SPEEDING A PARTING SOUL

Padaungs believe that all spirits are evil, and particularly family or village spirits, which they credit with possibly inconvenient acquaintance with their affairs. When anyone dies they place the coffin in the centre of the village, and the adults, forming a ring around it, man and woman alternately, chant until the spirit departs, the village wise man determining the moment. This wake ceremony takes place at night in the manner indicated in this photograph

Photo, Sir George Scott



CAMERA-SHY BRÈ GIRLS AFRAID OF BLACK MAGIC

Many of the hill people of Burma still regard the camera with grave suspicion as a magic apparatus capable of capturing them body and soul. Two of these Brè girls have nerved themselves to face it through guarding fingers, but the third has frankly turned her back upon it, on the principle that what her eye does not see her heart need not grieve at

Photo, Sir George Scott



WHITE KARENS GATHERED ON THEIR GRAND STAIRCASE

White Karen women have the distinction among their tribal kinsfolk of being personally clean. The most notable features of their costume are the many rings of black cord or lacquered rattan wound round their sturdy calves and entailing a clumsy gait, and their huge ear ornaments

Photo, Sir George Scott



INDETERMINATE PEOPLE WHO DWELL IN A DEBATABLE LAND: TAUNGYOS OF THE MYELAT

The Taungyos are a mixed race who live in the Myelat district between the main plain of Burma and the Shan States proper. A sturdy people, they speak a language full of archaic Burmese words, but deny any relationship to the Burmese. The basket carried by the woman on the left is always taken to the market by every woman, filled with vegetables when going there and with Western articles on the homeward journey

Photo, Sir George Scott

any of them. It is the same with yarns and shirtings. Less and less comes from the United Kingdom, and more and more from Japan, and it is a sad fact that Young Burma now has given up the green cheroot and smokes cigarettes shipped from anywhere and everywhere. Only the Burmese maidens and the small children remain faithful to the huge green or white cheroot, which is as large as a desk ruler and would serve for one at a pinch.

The Rangoon fish bazaar is also a favourite sight. It is very smelly, but an extraordinary variety of queer-shaped and queer-coloured fish is to be seen, and they at any rate are all from Burma waters.

The town bazaars are an attraction to the new arrival in the East, but the towns are not the place to see the Burman. Rangoon, for example, is not a Burmese town at all. It is not easy to say whether it is more Indian or more Chinese, but at any rate it is not Burmese, and the same may be said of most of the places where there are railway-stations, or the more regular halting-places of the Irawadi Flotilla steamers.

Except where there are municipalities, the bazaar buildings are very primitive. They consist of rows and rows of shelters made by planting bamboo or sticks in the ground and making a small roof with a few flakes of thatch. There is a low platform to keep the goods and their owners off the ground in wet weather, but quite often there are no side walls, or only a single wall on the south-west side, where the monsoon showers might beat in. Usually the bazaar is on the outskirts



FOREST DWELLERS IN THE JUMBLED HILLS

Striped poncho-like gaberlines and short kilts to the knee complete the dress of the Brè hill women. The rest is metal work—massive brass leglets and armlets, silver ear-pendants, and a profusion of necklaces

Photo, Sir George Scott

of a village, but it is by no means uncommon for it to be quite away by itself, often in the shade of a group of magnificent banyan or tamarind trees. The village bazaars are a sort of weekly half-holiday to the entire neighbourhood. Regular attenders come from a radius of ten or twelve miles, or even more, round about. Some come to sell their produce, a few go avowedly to buy something, but there are a very great many more who simply go to enjoy themselves and to hear the news.

Village bazaar dates are always arranged so that they do not clash with one another; that is to say if Yuahaung has its bazaar day on Monday, Ywathit, or any other village within a radius of



DANCING GIRLS BEDECKED IN SCARLET AND SILVER

Akha women are the most spectacular in the hills. They wear indigo-dyed skirts and coats—with a gap between—scarlet appliqué work, and a profusion of silver and seed necklaces. Ordinarily the silver-bound circlet denotes an unmarried girl, but these women wear it as being less likely to fall off in the dance than the larger bamboo headdress

Photo, Sir George Scott



SOLDIERLY LITTLE WOMEN WHO LIVE ON WOODED HEIGHTS

In person and costume the Lihaws resemble the Chinese of Yun-nan. Opium cultivators, living in villages at very high altitudes, they are unpopular with the forest department owing to the recklessness with which they fell timber. The women's somewhat military-looking dress is dark blue with red tags, mother-of-pearl or seed belts, and silver torques round the neck

Photo, Sir George Scott

thirty miles will have its bazaar on Tuesday, or any other day except Monday, and so on in expanding circles. These bazaars are one of the means of carrying news rapidly which so astonishes many travellers. At any rate, country bazaars are the places to see the people, and this is especially so in the hills. There are many of the hill tribes that the visitor would never see at all, if he did not make a point of halting for bazaar days.

The two most interesting of the hill bazaars are those of Keng Tung and Namhkam. At both caravan parties from Yün-nan are to be seen, and the

two places are so far apart that the hill peoples who come in to the one are absolutely different from those to be seen at the other.

Ordinarily pagoda festivals are the gatherings which new-comers are advised to attend in order to see the real Burman. The whole country is full of pagodas. There are pagodas which belong to the history of the country. There are pagodas with relics of the Buddhas which belong to the religion itself, and attract pilgrims from lands far beyond the limits of Burma. There are pagodas which are looked upon as the special pride of considerable

BURMA & THE BURMESE

towns, neighbourhoods, or states, and there are privately built shrines without limit.

The man who builds a pagoda adds the title *Payā-tagā* to his name. He is known by it, and it is the proper form of addressing him for the rest of his life. After this life he is assumed to be certain of a favourable transincorporation. He may not come back to earth again at all, for he may climb into one of the Seven Heavens, but as long as he is on earth he is Mr. Pagoda Builder.

The privately built pagoda interests the pious founder only. After he dies,

nobody will take the trouble to keep it in repair, not even his wife or his son. What merit there might be in tending it would go to the original founder. Therefore these private pagodas crumble away to decay, even when they are on the same platform as such famed world-shrines as the Shwe Dagôn of Rangoon and the Shwe Hmawdaw of Pegu, the Shwe Sandaw of Prome, the Mahā Myatmumi of Mandalay, or even such local places of worship as those of Mōng Kūng or Pindaya in the Shan States. All these and a great many others have their annual festival days, and then



SIMPLE COTTAGE LIFE IN THE SHAN STATES

Shan village houses are built entirely of bamboo, without a nail in the whole edifice, and are thatched with elephant grass. Outside, with a pent roof, under which the woman is standing, is a shrine for the family spirit. Bamboos inserted horizontally through holes in others set upright serve as a gate to keep cattle out by day and in at night

Photo, Sir George Scott



THOUGH MIXED, A HIGHLY DECOROUS MEASURE

This dance of Padaungs is an exception to the rule almost invariably observed throughout Burma that men and women should dance separately. But though both sexes are dancing together here their performance is anything but corybantic, consisting merely of solemn motions backwards and forwards, the time being given by a few monotonous notes hardly amounting to an air sounded on a mouth-organ. Joining hands is eschewed as most improper

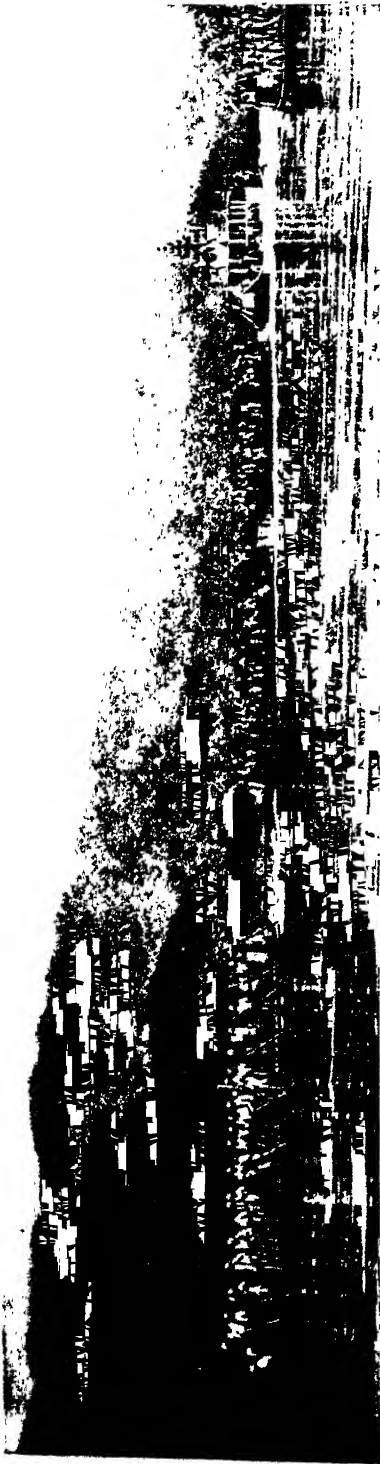
Photo, Sir George Scott

there are great gatherings of the people, all in their finest clothes, and the sight is one worth seeing. But even on those feast days it is not the worship but the bazaars and the theatrical performances and dances that are the attraction to the foreigner.

In these later days, as the result of hectic education, and the vapourings of uninformed persons, there is a Young Burma party which is determined to assert itself. As individuals the Young Burmans do not seem to have either morals or religion, but as a party they have a remarkably good opinion of themselves. They are convinced that Burma is ready for self-government. Like the rest of their fellow-countrymen they have a profound contempt for the native of India, and think that, if India is fit for diarchy, Burma has a much superior claim, because the average of literacy in Burma is, and has long been, far higher than that of any

Indian province, and even is above that of some European countries. Meanwhile, rather illogically, they imitate the Indian agitators even to the extent of playing at strikes and hatching intolerance.

Buddhism has always been the most tolerant of religions, and has never formally attempted to proselytise. There are those who say it is not a religion at all, but a system of philosophy. Ostensibly it does not recognize prayer, because there is no Supreme Being to pray to. The shrines and the figures of the Buddha are not consecrated. They are merely set apart to enable the religious to make profession of their reverence for the Lord, the Law, and the Holy Assembly, and to emulate the sanctity and purity of the lives of the Buddhas. Similarly, the monks are not ministers of religion, but are only working out their own salvation, and serving as examples to



PROGRESS OF THE IMAGES OF BUDDHA ROUND THE INLE LAKE AT THE WATER FESTIVAL, YAWNGHWE

Exceedingly picturesque is the Phaungdaw, or Water Festival, held annually at Yawnghwe, capital of the Southern Shan State of that name. Two golden images of the Buddha Gautama are carried round the Inle Lake in the Sawbwa's, the ruling chief's, state barge. The barge is towed by four canoes, each propelled by forty leg paddlers, and is followed by a long procession of royal and other canoes

Photo, Mrs. Doughton

the less piously minded. There is no caste in Burma. The children of any rank of society are received on equal terms in the monastic schools. But the Young Burmans, in their mimicry of the despised kalā of India, have chosen to maintain that pagodas shall be approached by none except with bare feet. They affect the bigotry of the wildest fanatics. Consequently, the Shwe Dagôn already has a notice in English and Burmese to say that none may enter on its precincts wearing shoes or stockings. The older men of the pagoda trustees long opposed this, but they have been overruled.

It is a pity, for the Burmese are a most attractive people. They have great pride of race, but they have the perfection of Oriental courtesy, without the aloofness of some of the Indian tribes, or the cringing of others, without the mannerism of the Japanese, or the solid, unblinking, animal-like stare of the Chinese. A Burman and his wife will dine with you, and eat what you eat. The old rule was that a Burman and his wife should never pay a call together. The wife called separately, but to silence evil tongues she brought a number of handmaidens with her, and they came up to the household like a segment of a rainbow. If the caller's husband happened to be in the house he promptly made off.

The Burmese woman has been freer for long years from sex disabilities than any other of her sisters. She can marry whom she pleases, and with her practical mind she usually rules the household. If she finds her husband uncongenial or undesirable, she can get a separation by the simple process of going before the village elders and saying the contract is over. She retains possession of everything she brought into the partnership, and when it is broken off she takes away with her half



WATERMEN WHO ARE CHAMPIONS AT LEG WORK

All rowing men know the importance of leg drive, but the Inthas, pile-dwellers on the Inle Lake in the Southern Shan States, have developed it in unique fashion. Balanced on one leg, often with no supporting rail, they twist the other round their six-foot paddle, lean forward, and, with a backward kick, propel the canoe at an astonishing pace.

Photo, Captain H. T. Paine



STATE BARGE OF THE RULING CHIEF OF YAWNGHWE

The prow is in the shape of the Sacred Bird, and amidships rises a golden Pyathat, or seven-roofed spire. Under this a golden canopy is spread to shelter the golden images of Buddha, and the ten white umbrellas are opened when these are taken aboard.

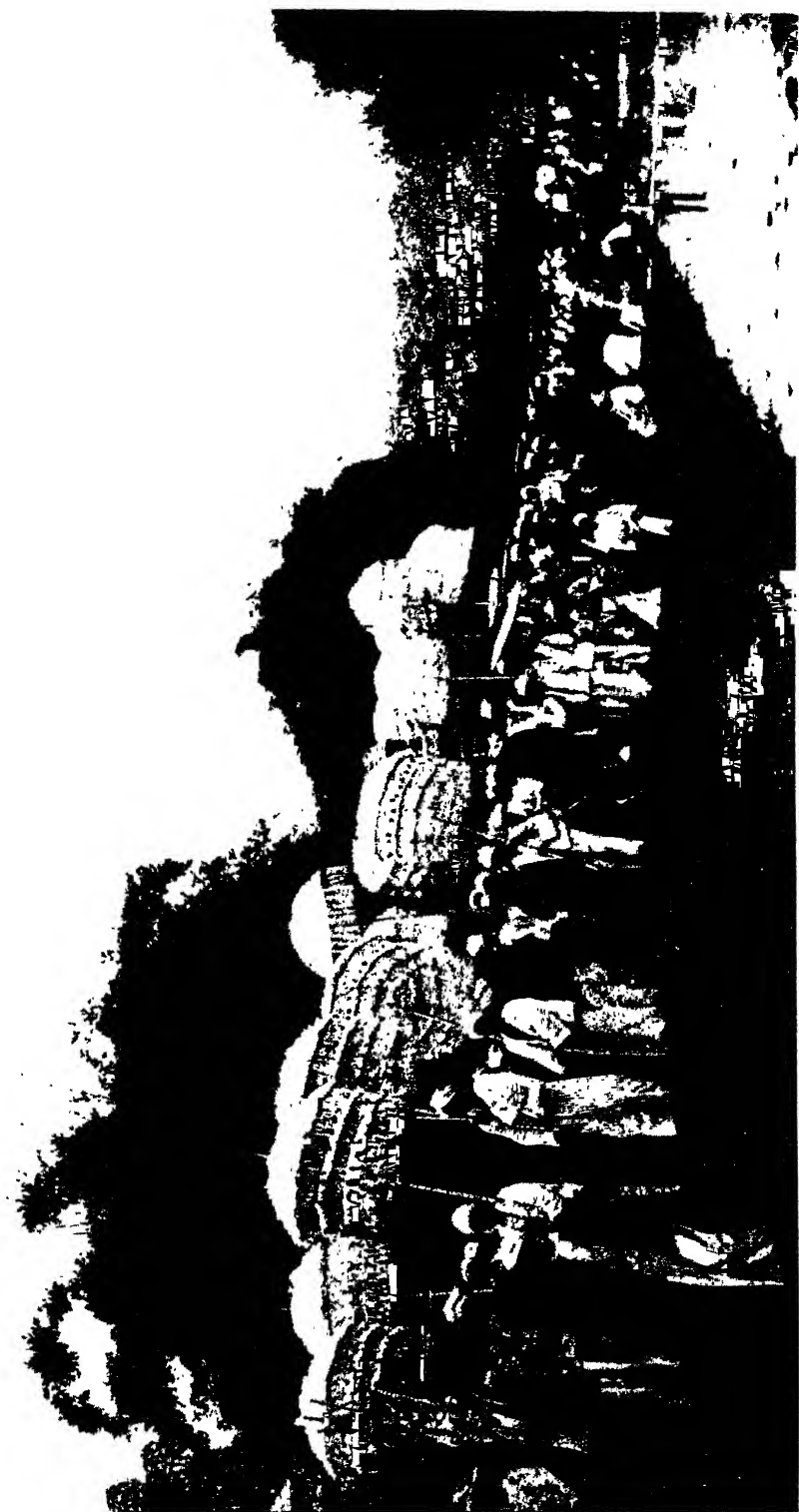
Photos, Mrs. Deveton



SUPERB EXHIBITION OF PHYSICAL ENERGY: INTHA LEG-PADDLERS TOWING THE STATE BARGE

Besides being a beautiful picture of a unique ceremony, the annual Water Festival of Yawnghwe, this fine photograph gives a clear illustration of the method, besides being a beautiful picture of a unique ceremony, the annual Water Festival of Yawnghwe, this fine photograph gives a clear illustration of the method, peculiar to themselves, employed by the Inthas to propel their boats. Trained crews exhibit the precision of body-swing and the regularity of stroke that characterise the rowing of a university eight. The sport might well engage the attention of regatta committees in European countries

Photo, Captain H. T. Parry



ROYAL POMP ATTENDING THE TRANSPORT OF THE GOLDEN IMAGES FROM STATE BARGE TO PAGODA

Returning to Yangon the images of the Buddha Gautama are brought ashore with great ceremony, and borne under the golden canopy, followed by men carrying sixteen royal white umbrellas, to the Saviwa's pagoda, where they are left for twenty-four hours. The Water Festival altogether covers a period of ten days, in the course of which the images are deposited in the pagodas of the various lake-side villages

Photo, Captain H. T. Perry



SEVEN WORTHY HILL FOLK SHYLY PROUD OF THE INTEREST THEIR APPEARANCE HAS EXCITED

Posed before an ordinary Shan bazaar crowd is a little company of Bré men and women. The clothes of all are of cotton, home-grown and home-spun. Coloured stones, combs and seeds compose the women's necklaces, and their leggings and armlets weigh perhaps fifteen pounds. The men wear leg-rings of lacquered thread or rattan. The belt worn by the second man from the right must have come from Rangoon or Mandalay

Photo, Sir George Scott

what profits may have been made during the marriage. And she can remarry as soon and as often as she chooses.

Wife-beating is therefore unknown, and the husband is usually content to sit and smoke and look on placidly, while his wife does all the work. Nevertheless, technically the woman is the inferior being, and is supposed to pray on duty days, at the quarters of the moon, that in her next existence she may be born a man. Like Young Burma, the town maiden is in danger of being spoilt by civilization. There have been instances of late years when cases of breach of promise of marriage have been instituted. The old style Burma maiden would have thought this sheer waste of time.

Still, the Burman is not altogether a slacker. When he works he works with spasmodic energy. The Burma schoolboy has adopted Association football with great enthusiasm, and some of the newly formed Burma regiments did quite well during the Great War, though perhaps the best soldiers were from the races on the edges of the province—the Kachins, Taungthus, Shans, and Karens. What the Burman used to like was to steer a boat downstream, or drive a bullock-cart jolting over his country roads. Latterly, he has taken to motor-driving, and is bold to the verge of recklessness; still more recently flying has especially appealed to him and, when airplanes become common, it is certain that every Burman



UNGAINLY WOMANHOOD IN THE HILLS

With her hair brought down over her brows, coarse features, and heavy gait, the Akha woman is not an attractive creature. Her stolid, almost stupid, expression is not improved by the pipe stuck in her mouth

Photo, R. J. Steels

youth will want to be an airman. They have a great artistic sense; almost every boy or girl will draw you arabesques and flower scrolls. Burmese wood-carving is exceedingly effective. It is always done in teak and, since this wood does not lend itself to minute



THREE TAUNGTHÚ GRACES CONSCIOUS OF THEIR CHARMS

Taungthús, a mixed race living in the Southern Shan States, travel far afield, and are known all over Siam and Cambodia and as far as the Lower Mekong as traders in elephants and ponies. At home they are cultivators. The men's dress is like the Shans, but the women's is distinctive and varied

Photo, Mrs. Dodson



TASSEL-TURBANED TAUNGTHUS CLOTHED IN SABLE AND SILVER

Taungthu women, like the Karens, wear the poncho, a black sack jacket with a short petticoat below. Armlet sleeves of garish flowered velvet are characteristic, and out of doors, leggings, black or white, are donned as protection against leeches. The pendent ear-rings and large hollow bracelets are silver

Photo, Sir George Scott



SOMBRE SURVIVALS OF A ONCE INDEPENDENT PEOPLE

These are La'hu, people who had a kingdom of their own until they were dispossessed by the Chinese and wandered into British territory. The women wear a robe of indigo, fastened by a silver boss, with for only relief frogs red and white upon the lapels. The richer women wear large silver torques. The men wear clothes of Chinese cut

Photo, Sir George Scott



KAREN BACHELORS BASKING OUTSIDE THEIR EVE-LESS HOME

As soon as a Karen boy reaches the age of puberty he is sent to live with the other unmarried males in a building called the Haw, outside the village, and remains there till he takes a wife. Owing to the tribal rules governing intermarriage, some of the bachelors are quite decrepit old gentlemen

Photo, Sir George Scott

BURMA & THE BURMESE

work, and the articles produced were mostly for the decoration of monasteries and the stairways leading up to pagodas, there is a boldness and freedom in design, which makes them far more effective than the toilsomely elaborated blackwood carving of Bombay or Canton. It is true these last are manufactured for the market. As long as the Burman limited his carved work to the gables, eaves, and finials of monasteries, and to the balustrades of pagoda stairways, he was an artist. Now that many are tempted to produce easels, music-stands, screens, and chairs for sale, their art is cramped, just as the Japanese

craftsman's art decays when he turns out stock subjects by the gross for the tourist.

This is especially noticeable in the lacquer ware, which has long been an hereditary industry in the neighbourhood of Pagan. Some of the cigarette-cases, card trays, and boxes now turned out there for the river traveller remind one of the seaside crockery presents made in Germany.

The silver work is equally notable. The same hereditary designs appear and reappear, and, in fact, pervade Burmese art. They are of a religious or legendary character, an endless



POOR RELATIONS OF THE BURMAN: RED KARENS OF THE HILLS

Incredibly dirty savages, the women wear short, dark skirts, usually red, black shawls, ropes of barbaric beads round neck and waist, and bunches of rattan or black cord rings above their calves. These make walking ungainly, running impossible, and sitting only feasible with legs outstretched straight, a highly indecorous attitude in Burma where convention requires the feet to be concealed

Photo, Sir George Scott



FROCKS AND FRILLS IN THE NORTHERN SHAN STATES

Black-varnished bamboo hoops worn round the waist and sometimes embellished with seeds or cowries are a feature of the dress of the Palaung women. Their ornaments are silver bangles and large silver ear-rings. White bordered hoods brought to a point behind, and skirts of cotton velvet in panels of blue, scarlet, and black make up a gay costume

Photo, Captain H. T. Parry

repetition of Nat-dewas, celestial spirits, bilus (ogres), princes and princesses and clowns, and heraldic animals, with a bordering of ornamental scrolls. They are seen in the milkjugs and teapots and tumblers, which take the place for the foreign purchaser of the national bowls and betel boxes. Recently, however, there seems to be an expansion of artistic sense, and a few Burmese painters have produced excellent work in oils, chiefly scenery, and there have been some quite striking bronze-work figures of wrestlers, wicker football players, and girls pouring water over themselves.

The Burmese are the most musical people in the East, and their system has attracted a good deal of attention with its Gregorian and operatic character. Here again, however, European,

Chinese, and Indian airs are beginning to creep into the modern musical productions. Great Britain has undoubtedly given the Burman peace and prosperity. His land gives him plenty to eat with the minimum of labour. But, unhappily, we do not seem to have improved his character. He is the despair of the administrator, and of those who would improve his position. Money-making does not appeal to him. There have been great fortunes made in Burma, but they have been made by the stranger within the gate. Under native rule the people were horribly oppressed and ground down. Now an ambitious and noisy section of them thinks that they can administer themselves. They have not the stability for it. Chinamen and Indians would take their country from them.



BURMESE CORYPHÉES REHEARSING FOR A TEMPLE FESTIVAL UNDER THE OPEN SKY

People come from all parts of Burma and the Shan States for the annual festival of the Pagoda at Pindaya in the Myelat, the intermediate country. A troupe of professional dancing girls is here shown rehearsing under the eye of their dancing master, seen on the left. These girls are drawn from all classes and wear the ordinary Burmese woman's dress, the tightness of which restricts their movements to mere posturing

Photo, Sir George Scott

Burma

II. The Story of British India's Largest Province

By Prof. E. H. Parker, M.A.

Author of "Burma"

AN immense amount of learned matter has been written about the early history of Burma, but the residue of understandable fact for the man in the street is extremely limited. As is usually found to be the case with Asiatic countries, we must fall back upon the matchless Chinese records to eke out and steady the extremely hazy and shaky facts obtainable from other sources—in this particular case Indian, and to a certain extent native.

The southern half of what we now lump in one whole as China proper was not assimilated at all by the northern or literary half much before the beginning of the Christian era, and was then inhabited by monosyllabic and tone-using tribes such as the leading Chinese themselves were and still are. Many of these tribes had, and still have, their own independent or semi-independent rulers; but the imperial Chinese race has always been ready to absorb on equal personal terms any individuals willing to accept the social rites; the recalcitrant ones had to move on farther south.

It is quite clear that the bulk of the Shan, Tai, or Siamese governing races did thus move on, relinquishing to China the hegemony over other peoples they had previously themselves enjoyed; but it is by no means established that what we now call the Burmese race was thus shifted on from China. Though affected by Páli, the Burmese language is, notwithstanding, still fundamentally monosyllabic, and there are still traces of tones left in it, though not so markedly as in the Siamese group.

Burma in the Mists of History

There is an Indian tradition of some Kshattriya princes having arrived in what we call Burma by way of Manipur, and of their having welded three tribes, one called Pyu, into the earliest Burmese state. This is fairly well supported by definite Chinese historical statements about a country called Pyao or Pyu, which had been under Shan-Tai-Siamese influence or hegemony until the Chinese during the eighth century broke up the latter Power in the Yün-nan region, and thus attracted to themselves Pyu civilities and missions; but the mass of learning connected with these obscure origins has no fit place in this sketch, which attempts to deal historically with Burma as we visualise or sense it to-day.

There is another thing to be remembered. After China's numerous Tartar, Tibetan, and Shan-Tai-Siamese wars, the Chinese Empire itself was divided between the Tartar-ruled north and the more literary Chinese-ruled south, and for some centuries (960-1260) the southern emperors "drew a line," and vowed that they would no longer concern themselves with the doings of barbarous peoples south-west of that line. Marco Polo's Cathay really refers to the northern half of China, and his Manzi to the south, both words having in Chinese records a definite historical signification.

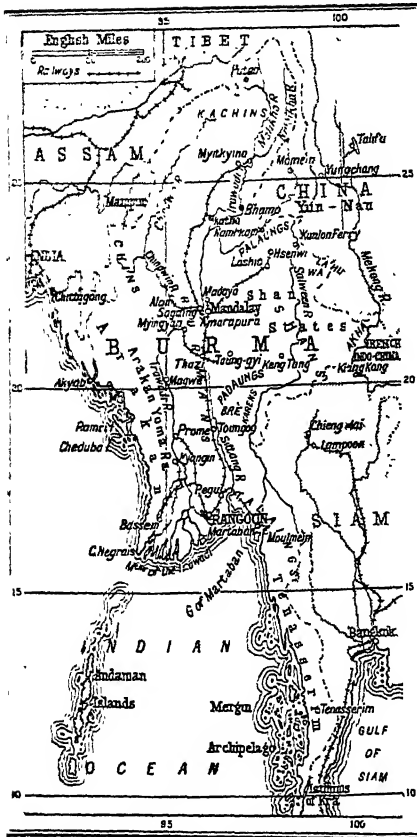
Early Tartar and Mongol Conquests

The point, however, is that whatever the earlier Chinese may have known of the Irawadi valley in the time of Marcus Aurelius (A.D. 161-180), or in the eighth century, they knew nothing whatever of those parts between, say, A.D. 900-1200, at which date Jenghiz Khan and his descendants began to conquer as much of the world as they could, including the Cathayans and the Early Manchus.

During these three centuries, the northern or Tartar dynasties thus absorbed could not get to the south-west, while the southern rulers would not; and thus Tibetans, Burmese, Siamese, Indians, and Cambodians were left to their own devices; that is to say, so far as land communications were concerned; but by sea intercourse with Java, Sumatra, and parts of South India was kept up. There are other but less official contemporary Chinese allusions to P'u-kan which make it quite certain that Pagan is meant, especially as the Burmese spelling is Pùgan.

The native Burmese chronicle known as the Maha Yazawin always omits or tampers with facts unfavourable to reigning houses, and competent British specialists have therefore practically ignored all the confused history of mixed Talaings, Peguans, Toungoo rulers, and Pyu until Anawrata was consecrated in A.D. 1010, with his capital at Pagan. His grandson Alungsithu would have been the monarch who sent, or whose traders brought, tribute to South China in 1106. From this time up to the Mongol conquest of China 150 years later, any events that may have taken place between Pùgan and "China" must have been with the semi-Shan semi-Chinese dynasty of Ta-li (Yün-nan) which region the founder of the

BURMA'S STORY



BURMA AND ITS PEOPLES

highly intellectual Sung dynasty (960-1260) had deliberately left "beyond the pale." The last Pagan king, Narasihapatti, was reigning when Kublai conquered Manzi.

The modern Chinese always speak of Burma as Mien-tien: the second syllable has no ethnological significance, for it is still applied in the sense of "district" or "locality" even in and around Peking. When the Mongols made their great attack so vividly and, on the whole, accurately described by Marco Polo they probably took the "great descent" route followed 1100 years earlier by Marcus Aurelius' messengers, which has continued to be the route of modern travellers.

Marco Polo's Story of Burma

Nearly all Marco's proper names of men and places can easily be traced as written in Chinese character. A remarkable feature is that the word Pyao or Pyu reappears in connexion with the capture of Bhamo by the Persian general whose name is specially connected with Burmese operations, and who received tribute at the hands of the Burmese heir "Sinhapadi" (as it appears in Chinese dress), and who died in 1300. The final Mongol attack upon

Burma took place in 1283 when King Narasihapatti abandoned Pagan, negotiations continuing until 1286. In this year Ha-la-chang (Polo's Caraiian) troops were employed, and in 1287 Kublai's son, Essen Timur, actually reached Pagan, but only after cruel losses. The Mongols even advanced as far as Myin-saing, where there are still some traces, or at least traditions, of their presence; but in 1301 they were induced to leave for the usual Chinese "consideration" in the way of largesses.

The Mongol dynasty was completely ousted from China in 1368 by the native Chinese dynasty of Ming, which, in turn, was succeeded by the (Later) Manchu house in 1644. During the whole of the Ming dynasty Mien-tien only counted as a tributary principedom like Nan-tien, Wan-tien, and a score of other petty states, mostly of the Shan-Tai race.

Manchus Attack the "Naked Blackamoor"

One of the last scions of the Ming dynasty had to take refuge in Burma. But the king of that country handed over the unfortunate prince to the Chinese satrap representing the Manchus in Yün-nan, where this satrap subsequently tried to set up a kingdom of his own, inciting the two other satraps (Canton and Foochow) to do likewise. Thus, the Manchus, like the Mongols 300 years earlier, had to set to work systematically to reconquer South China before they could even dream of setting up claims to Burma, Nepal, etc.

It was not until 1731 that Manchu hostilities broke out with Burma and the above-mentioned Shan-Tai-Siamese states (Zimmé especially). This ultimately led to an organized attempt to conquer the "naked blackamoor"—as the Emperor called the King—in 1767. The climate and absence of local knowledge were fatal to the gallant Manchu generalissimo Mingjiwei, whose hosts were surrounded and annihilated in 1768; but as the Burmans were unaware that he, too, had been killed, and feared a second Manchu invasion on a greater scale, a patched-up peace was agreed to, in which provision was made for an exchange of presents. The aim of both rulers was, of course, to represent to their own people that "tribute" was being sent by "the other fellow."

Thus, after the British conquest of Upper Burma in 1886, it was not very difficult for the Marquess Tsêng in London to prove that the Chinese had once captured Bhamo, and that decennial tribute was still due from "the rulers of Burma"; the noble marquess had already been successful in making the Russians abandon their "temporary occupation" of Kulja (Turkistan), and in the spring of 1893 the India Office was within

BURMA'S STORY

an ace of agreeing to a religious mission being sent to Peking at stated periods, but headed by a distinguished Burman. Luckily, the British India authorities were more exactly informed in time, and the procession of elephants by land to Peking never took place.

The Burmese dynasty which ended in the deportation of King Thibaw to India in 1886 was founded by Alompra or Alaungpya in 1753-55, after a struggle between competing races consequent upon the fall of the old Pegu dynasty in 1740. Alompra died in 1760 while engaged in a fierce war against Siam. After several family murders and short successions Alompra's fourth son Mèngtará-gyi (also known as Bodawpra or Bodawpaya) came to the throne. He transferred his capital from Ava to Amarapura on the left bank of the Irawadi in 1783, and in 1793 made a satisfactory treaty with Siam.

In 1795 some disputes rose between the British Indian Government and Burma in connexion with Arakan and Chittagong, and Major Symes was sent as envoy to the Burmese capital. King Bodawpra was succeeded by his grandson Bagyidaw in 1819, and in 1824 the latter, growing aggressive, made preparations to invade Bengal by way of Manipur. The result of this was that the British occupied the important port of Rangoon, advanced up the Irawadi, and went into cantonments at Prome. Under the treaty of 1825-26 Assam, Arakan, and Tenasserim were added to Great Britain; but Rangoon, after payment of indemnity, was left to Burmese administration; and so things remained under King Tharrawaddy (1837-46). Troubles at Rangoon under the reign of his son, Pagan Min, led to the British annexation

of Pegu and the deposition of the king by his brother, Mindón Min (1853).

All the above annexations, after ten years of unremitting British effort, were at last lumped together as the province of British Burma, with Colonel Phayre as Chief Commissioner. Mandalay now became the capital, and also his residence, and there, in 1867, on his departure, was concluded or arranged another treaty, co-ordinating certain details in the matter of trade and the mutual surrender of malefactors. Mindón, who governed with moderation, enjoyed the exceptionally long period of a twenty-six years' reign; but his son and successor Thibaw (1879) behaved from the first with such violence and brutality that, under the Indian viceroyalty of Lord Dufferin, an expedition against him was secretly and swiftly organized in November, 1885.

From January 1st, 1886, the whole of Upper Burma was declared British, and the chief work for the next three years lay in the suppression of what was called dacoity, i.e. in most cases misguided patriotism by restless marauders.

Since then the chief British pre-occupation has been the settlement of Shan State boundaries, in the course of which some disagreeable incidents occurred with the French, who had their own Shan-Laos boundaries to settle as inheritors of Chinese "rights" through and from Annam and Tongking.

Meanwhile the true sources of both Irawadi sources (the Nmaika and Malika branches) have been discovered, and the whole river, up to the Tibetan frontier, is now British, the most northerly commissionership being that of Putao.

BURMA: FACTS AND FIGURES

The Country

Largest province of British India, extending southwards for 1,100 miles from Tibet to the Malay Peninsula. Bounded east by Yun-nan, French Laos, and Siam; west by Bengal, Assam, and the Bay of Bengal. Consists of Upper and Lower Burma, Chin hills, and Shan States. Area, 231,000 square miles; population (1921), 13,205,564. Country is largely mountainous, with extensive forests. Principal river, Irawadi.

Government and Constitution

Burma is one of the fifteen Indian administrations under a lieutenant-governor and legislative council. Upper and Lower Burma are divided into eight divisions, each under a commissioner, and these are sub-divided into districts. Villages are in charge of their head-men. Shan States and Karenni have their own chiefs. Superintendents are stationed in Chin and Pakokku. Government of India Act, 1919, applied to eight provinces, but not to Burma. Proposals to make Burma a Governor's province on similar lines were passed by the House of Commons in 1922.

Defence

Two brigades of Indian Army compose garrison; battalions specially raised for Burma include Gurkhas and Sikhs. There are 15,000 military

police, as well as civil police, mostly recruited in northern India. Volunteer infantry, artillery, and engineers are enrolled for defence purposes at Rangoon, Moulmein, and elsewhere.

Commerce and Industries

Rice, tea, cotton, wheat, rubber, tobacco are produced. Other products include rubies, sapphires, jade, wolfram, gold, silver, iron, petroleum, teak, ironwood, gum. The natives are skilled in silk weaving, silver repoussé, and lacquer work. Imports, 1920, £14,805,480; exports, £19,984,390.

Religion and Education

Five-sixths of the people are Buddhists. The chief temple is at Pagan; each village has its pagoda and monastery, with bells hung at every shrine. Animism still prevails among the hill tribes. Besides Christians, Mahomedans, and Hindus, there are Sikhs, Jains, and Parsees. Public and private schools and institutions number over 27,000, with 572,000 scholars, including a university at Rangoon.

Chief Towns

Rangoon (population, 300,000), Mandalay (140,000), Moulmein (58,000), also Bhamo and Prome. The principal railway runs from Rangoon to Myitkina on the Irawadi, 625 miles.



CURIOUS CORONATION CEREMONY HELD AT THE ROYAL PALACE OF THE KING OF CAMBODIA

The ancient kingdom of Cambodia has for some time past been restricted to the lower course of the Mekong River. Formerly it was a vassal of the Siamese kingdom, but its native monarch is now subject to France. King Sisowath, who succeeded to the throne of his late brother, Norodom, in 1904, is here seen under his white umbrella, about to be invested with a robe of state, after having received the "baptismal douche"—the chief ceremony of coronation

Cambodia

Ways of Life in the Kingdom of the Khmers

By Mme. Gabrielle Vassal

Author of "On and Off Duty in Annam"

CAMBODIA is one of the five countries which constitute French Indo-China, France's greatest colony in Asia. It is bounded on the north by Siam, on the west by Siam and the Gulf of Siam, on the south by Cochin China, and on the east by Laos and Annam. In size it equals one-third of France. The climate is tropical; the monsoons divide the year into equal parts, the dry and the rainy seasons.

Cambodia owes the whole character of its life and activities to the great Mekong, which inundates and fertilises the country. The river rises with the rains in June, and later overflows the high dykes which bound it. The rich, alluvial deposits on either side form miniature plateaux, which are well cultivated and support numerous villages.

Beyond lies a swampy district, unfit for agriculture, and beyond that again come the hills, at the foot of which rice is grown. On the lower slopes oilnut trees flourish, and these are succeeded by great forests, which extend to the mountain peaks. Towards the end of September the inundation has reached its limit, and the water gradually subsides. As it does so, it fills all the canals communicating with the Mekong. By March the river is very low and the canals are dry.

When the Mekong is at its highest, the Great Lake, or Tonle Sap, is 118 miles long by 15½ miles broad, with an average depth of 39 feet.

During the dry season this immense inland sea empties itself into the Mekong, and its size is reduced to one-sixth of its former dimensions. This marks the beginning of the fishing season, when enormous quantities of fish are caught. The export of salt fish has become an important item in the trade of the country.

The capital of Cambodia is Pnom Penh, which takes its character from a hill in the centre called Pnom, on which stands the celebrated Khmer Pagoda. Pnom Penh has 85,000 inhabitants. It is the residence of the King of Cambodia, for whose help and guidance France appointed a Résident Supérieur. In addition to the Pnom Pagoda, there are other curious monuments such as the King's Palace and the Silver Pagoda. Pnom Penh is also a very busy commercial port, being well situated at a point where the Mekong is joined by four tributaries, which constitute the boundaries of Laos, Tonle Sap, and the neighbouring provinces.

Other interesting Cambodian towns are Kampot, on the Gulf of Siam, Oudong, the former capital, Battambang, the centre of a large agricultural district, well known for its cardamom plantations, and Siemreap, where tourists land on their way to visit the famous Angkor ruins. The present Cambodia is only a feeble remnant of the Khmer Empire, which, at the height of its power in the twelfth century under Jayavarman VII., stretched from





POMP AND CIRCUMSTANCE UNDER THE CAMBODIAN STATE UMBRELLA

Although small in stature, he stands only second to his kingly father, Sisowath, in importance. The massive gold and jewelled ornaments with which this royal personage is so heavily laden must considerably embarrass his movements, but the prescribed princely dignity will not allow of the slightest diminution of court etiquette. The heir-apparent is usually nominated by the king, or elected by the five chief mandarins of the Court

the Gulf of Bengal to the China Sea and was divided into sixty self-governing states. At this epoch Angkor Thom was of greater importance than the Rome of Nero, and the splendour of Khmer art was incomparable.

A thousand years ago Cambodia was a great Hindu Empire in Indo-China, stretching from the Gulf of Bengal to the China Sea, populous, wealthy, and adorned with immense palaces which were wonders of architecture. Under its kings and priests the tropic jungle had been tamed, the Khmer jungle folk civilized and trained, and a network of great roads ran through land that is now a deadly wilderness. The great Mekong river and its huge lake, by the wonderful capital city of Angkor, fertilised the best ricefields in the world and provided more food than the people needed. All this was the result of a thousand years' work by colonising Hindu warriors and Brahmans, assisted by Malays from the Hindu kingdoms of Sumatra and Java.

Cambodia is still under the influence of Hindu tradition, though only a vestige remains of the power and splendour of the ancient race. Province after province was torn from the old empire by the Mongol masters of China, and by the northern invaders of Tibetan stock, who now form the Siamese and Burmese nations. By putting themselves under the protection of France, the Cambodians just saved themselves from complete destruction by the Siamese and Annamese, and recovered from their old enemies their ancient capital of Angkor and the jungle lands surrounding it. But in their fragment of territory most of



CAMBODIANS LEAN TOWARDS "EUROPEAN WAYS"
Cambodians have a greater resemblance to the Siamese than to the Annamese, but the Khmer, or old inhabitants, show a decided Caucasian origin. Western ways are fast being adopted, and this youth insisted on a European setting to his photograph

their native jungle tribes have shrunk to insignificant numbers, owing to tropical disease, and lapsed into a pathetic state of savagery.

Little remains of all the great and glorious Hindu work of civilization, except a charming, romantic puppet court, upheld by the strength of France; some old crumbling, colossal works by Hindu architects and sculptors, cleared in recent years from over-growth; and a royal school of ballet dancing, whose sacred performances cannot be matched on earth.

Modern Cambodia is nearly as large as England with an estimated population



HEAD MISTRESS OF THE BALLET

Erstwhile première danseuse, with authority unbounded, she supervises the training of young lokhon, or ballerinas, with impartial rigour. Her weighty jewels and many rows of golden chains worn over her left shoulder, betoken the lavishness of royal favour

of a little more than a million and a half. Malarial fever and other tropical diseases make much of the land of marvellous fertility uninhabitable. The savage tribes dwell on the uplands and hunt in the lowlands in day-time when the fatal mosquitoes are resting. The civilized Cambodians live by

their Great Lake and along the banks of the Mekong river, on which rises the modern capital of Pnom Penh.

I shall not easily forget the emotions of wonder and delight which thrilled me on my arrival at Pnom Penh. The city was like a vision in a dream. Amid luxuriant foliage of the jungle, with miles on miles of ricefields and plantations, by little native villages with their cotton fields and rich pastures, the way ran from the seaport of Saigon. Then on the west bank of the Mekong, in a setting of giant palms, flowering trees and marvellous verdure, rose slender sculptured spires of temples and fantastic radiant roofs in tiers of many-coloured tiles with snake decorations.

The streets were full of movement and colour. The women walked straight and graceful as flowers, their hair short cut, their breasts exposed, and their sampots of shimmering hues pulled between their legs to form breeches. The men were tall and well-proportioned and, though a mixture of Hindu and Malay, looked to me like natives of Benares. Scattered among them, a priest draped in flowing garments of golden yellow, and naked children as beautiful as classic bronzes, squatted and played at street corners.

When I visited Angkor Vat and Angkor Thom, my first vision of the splendid ruined city was by moonlight. We had come, a whole party of us, by steamer from Saigon up the flooded Mekong river. Sampans landed us on the edge of the tropical forest. We were led along a narrow path under the dark vault of trees, mysterious sounds reaching us from the wooded depths. Then, as we came again into the open, the prodigious spectacle of palaces and temples, of white towers glittering in the moonlight, met our awe-struck gaze. This tremendous work of human hands suddenly appeared in the very midst of untouched nature. A silence of death reigned over the vast buildings, where centuries before there was so much life and beauty.

But it needed daylight to appreciate all the details of the different temples,

IN QUAIN'T CAMBODIA

Costume, Dance & Sculpture



Cambodian musician-dancers, nimble of hand and foot, study early the contortions that bring them later the golden chains of success



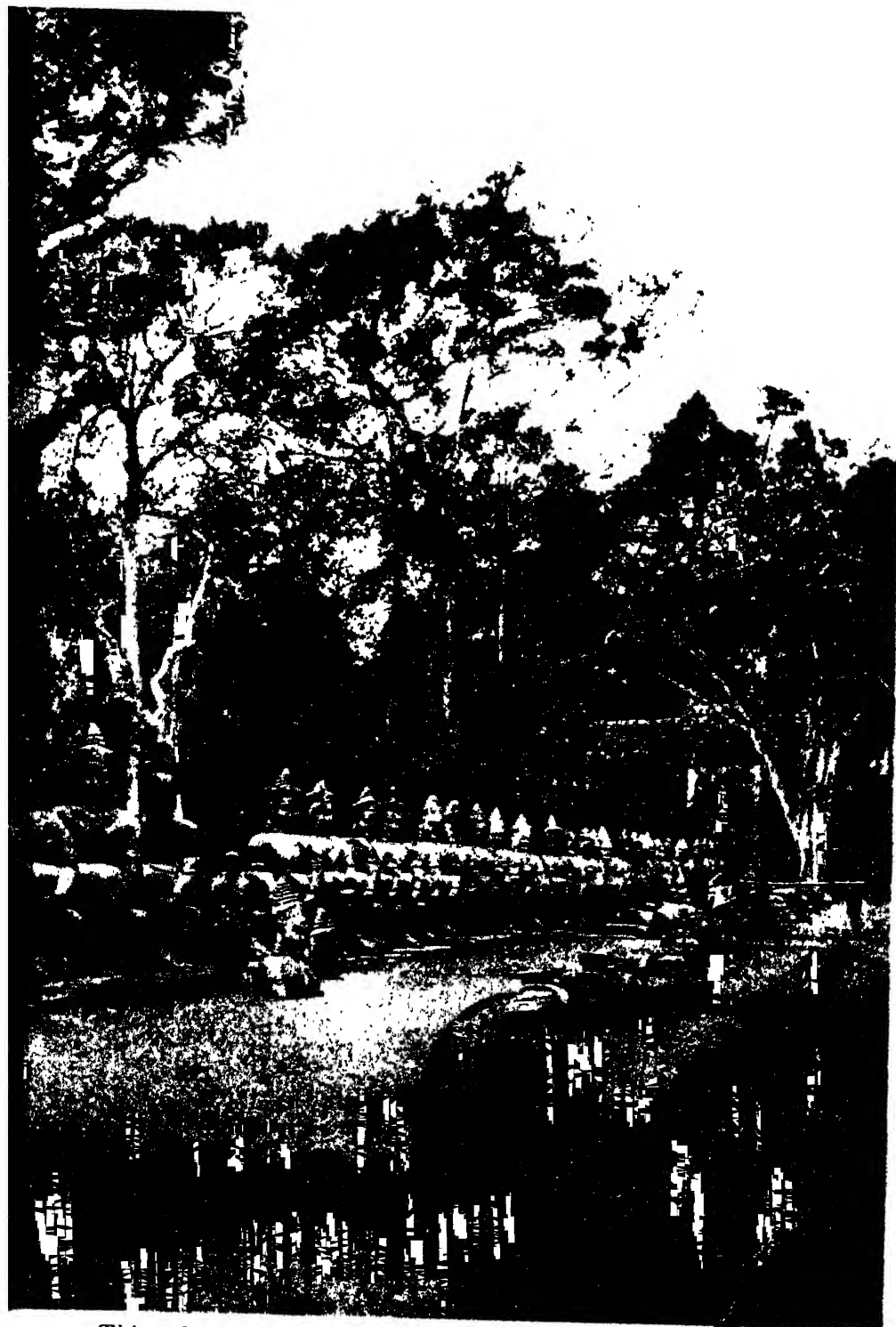
Actress, pantomimist, legendary goddess, the supple Khmer dancer, glittering with ritual finery, is the incarnation of graceful rhythm.



A blaze of costly splendour is the gala costume of Cambodia's Ruler, whose regalia has descended from an ancient kingly lineage



Among the forgotten series of Indo-Chinese marvels of Khmer sculpture have been revealed at Angkor Thom, ancient capital of Cambodia



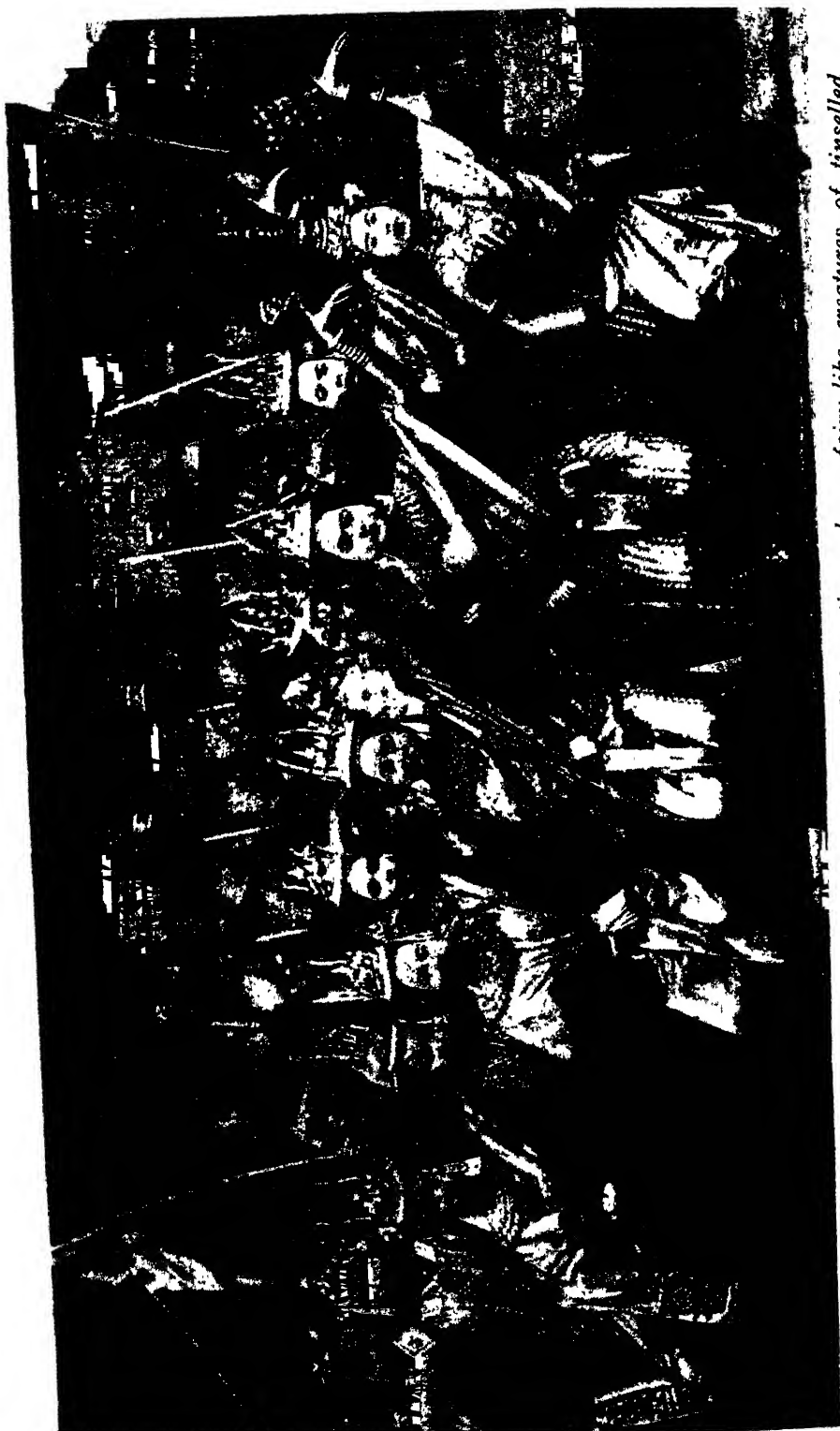
This colossal relic of the Naga, or sacred seven-headed Cobra, and its Bearers, has been lately restored under French Administration



Her hair-bun is silver-crowned, and jewels gleam on diadem and blouse of Cambodia, nobility of which she is a youthful representative.



In silken sampot and brodered jacket, this leisured and bejewelled lady sits in the state of ease demanded by Cambodian etiquette



The dancing girls who are the chief delight of Cambodia's native ruler : fairy-like creatures of tinselled magnificence, their slight figures droop and sway, vividly expressing the human emotions with plastic grace

CAMBODIA & THE KHMERS

terraces, and walls. The principal temple of Angkor Vat is some 820 feet long by 656 feet broad. It is formed in terraces one above the other, and there are five towers, of which the central one is 123 feet high. Every inch of stone-work is finely and minutely sculptured.

The walls and archways of the town of Angkor Thom are sculptured in the same way as those of the temple. Along the wall of one terrace we saw elephants, life size, sculptured from one end to the other. The five doors of the town are in the form of elephants picking lotus flowers with their trunks. The favourite subject of sculpture—even more popular than that of animals—is that of women, priestesses, celestial dancing girls, goddesses. It is the dress and attitudes of these wonderful sculptures which are adopted in all the dances and ceremonies of Cambodia to-day.

The national costume consists of a coat and the celebrated sampot. This is merely a straight piece of fabric loosely caught up between the legs, but the fabric itself is often a magnificent silk, woven by girl weavers upon primitive looms. The people on the whole are tall and robust. Their skin is often light in colour, and when of pure blood they have the European eye instead of the almond-shaped eyes of the Annamese. The frail, cunning Annamese cheat and despise the powerfully built Cambodian, who is something of a rustic philosopher, and nickname him the buffalo.

It is sad to see how the big, quiet men even in their own city are tricked and injured by the little Mongolians. The picturesque remnant of the old conquerors and civilizers has lost all self-confidence; they show no energy and seem to lack power to defend themselves against their exploiters. Before the French came to protect them, they helplessly suffered great cruelty from the Annamese river pirates, who landed in the villages, laid them waste with fire and sword, and acted like devils.

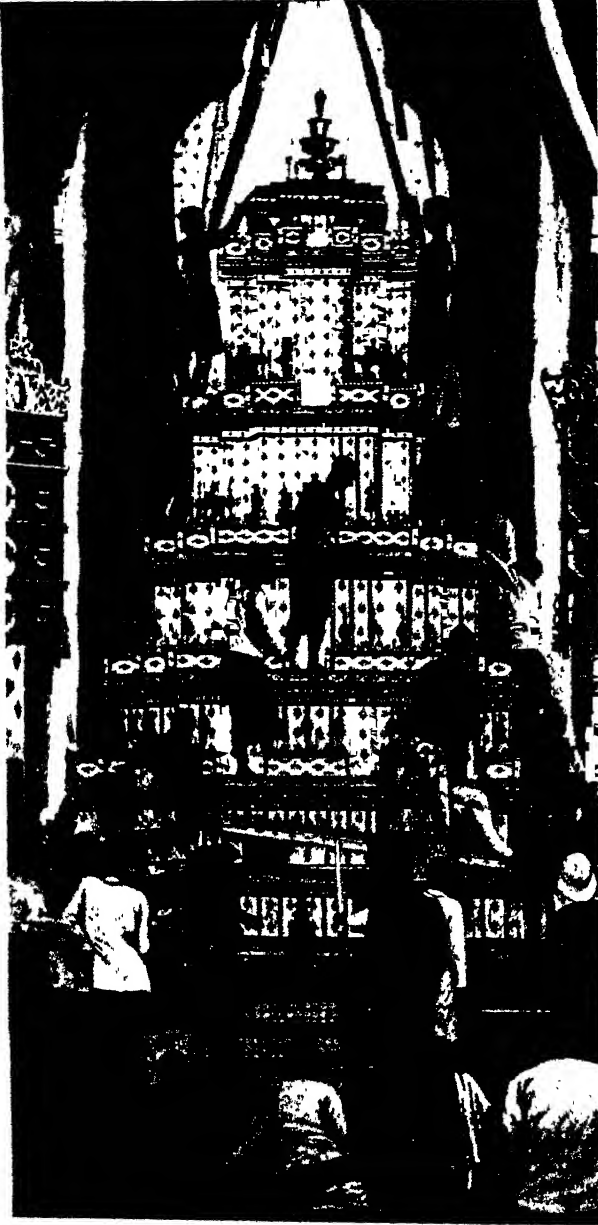
I was told, for example, that they used to bind the villagers in threes and

bury them up to their necks, and then on the tripod of living heads the little monsters would place a heavy saucepan of rice and cook it. By this means of terrorisation they were depopulating the rice country and fishing grounds of the Mekong river when the French intervened. Yet in anything like warfare with weapons of equal power the tall Cambodians, if they had faith in themselves, could rout probably twice their number of dwarf-like foes. But they seemed to wait for extinction, and a new



AN EASY-GOING GARMENT

The sampot or straight piece of cloth bound round the waist, and so fastened as to form a loose trouser-like skirt, is adopted by members of both sexes in Cambodia, and does not detract from ease of movement.



BUILDING THE ROYAL RESTING-PLACE

This catafalque displays the still-existing creative powers of the Cambodians. More than 2,000 years ago they built cities and raised monuments which by reason of their size and grandeur ranked high among the architectural masterpieces of the world

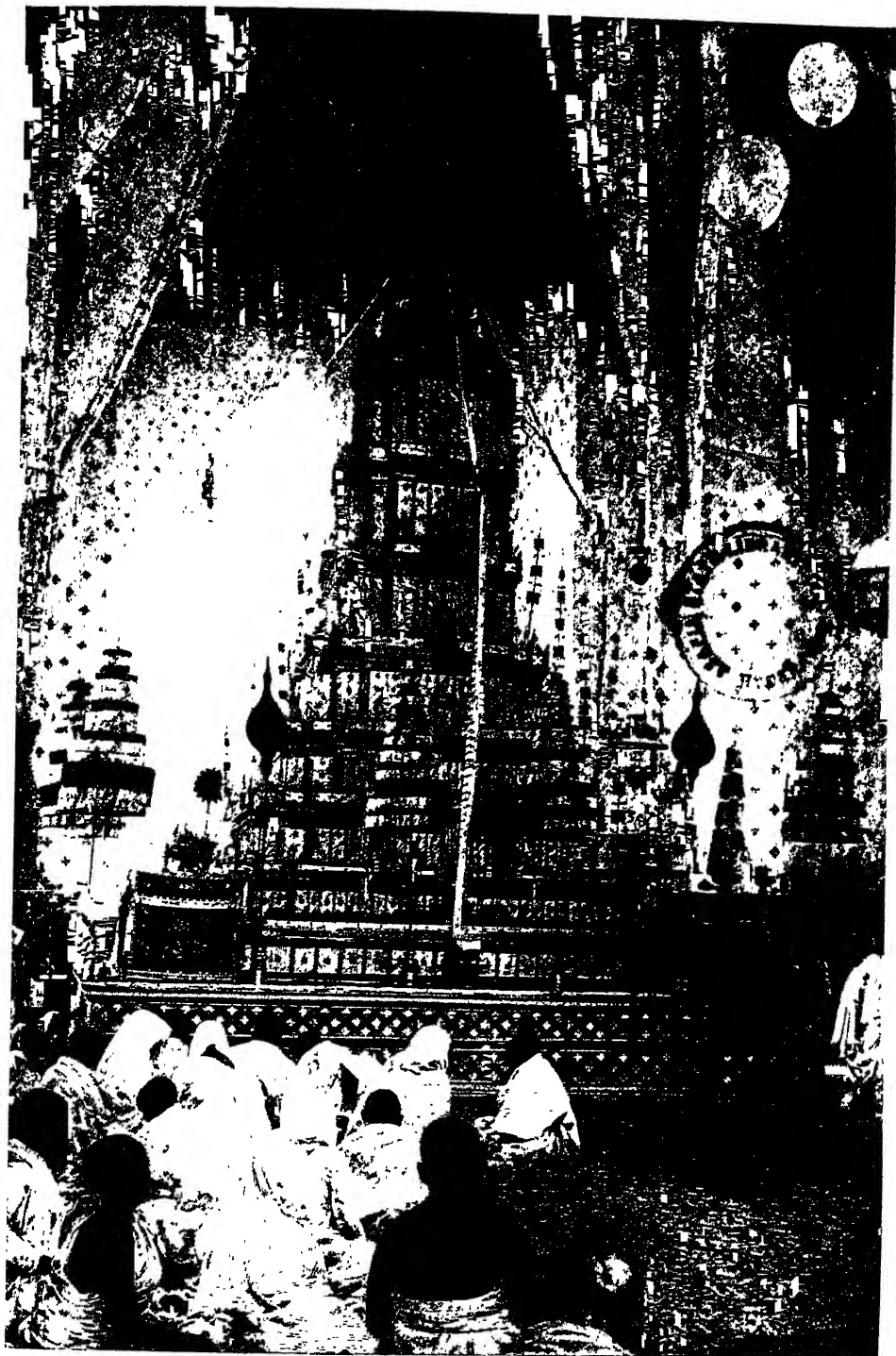
migration of Chinese, who excel the little Annam folk in the art of monopolising every trade, is gripping Cambodia and draining it. In ancient times the Cambodian was a grand city builder, but

folk, who have forgotten both names and rites of Siva, Rama, and other favourite deities of the past, make pilgrimages to the desolate holy places. Some of them are also said to guard

now he dislikes even a village crowd. He prefers a lonely house on a rice field, or on a forest upland, and builds it on piles some six feet from the ground. Its height saves him from tiger attack in the forest region, and from the great river floods of the Mekong and Great Lake country. Here he is a waterman and a landsman according to the season, and uses the same road by boat or ox-cart in turn.

A remarkable handyman, he makes his own tools, boat, and cart, and displays in his work a fine traditional craftsmanship. He has, besides, many of the qualities of a nobleman fallen into the condition of a peasant fisherman, being courteous, refined in taste, and a lover of literature. He seems ever to be meditating upon the vanished glories of his race. All Cambodians can read and write.

Every child goes to school in one of the old temples. The most remote forest community is not neglected, for everywhere in the kingdom there are temples built in the old days, many of which have not yet been discovered by Europeans, and when a re-settlement is made by one of them the priestly teachers return. Even in depopulated regions small bands of religious men at times maintain in a deadly jungle the old service of the shrine, and jungle



HONOURING THE REMAINS OF THE LATE KING NORODOM OF CAMBODIA

Upon completion the catafalque received the urn of exquisite workmanship containing the royal remains which, saturated with mercury, lay for two years within these holy precincts, and in 1906 were cremated with due solemnity. During this period the monotonous chanting of bonzes never ceased day or night, and the wives of the late king—small, crouching figures wrapped in white, with shaven heads, mourned their lord and master



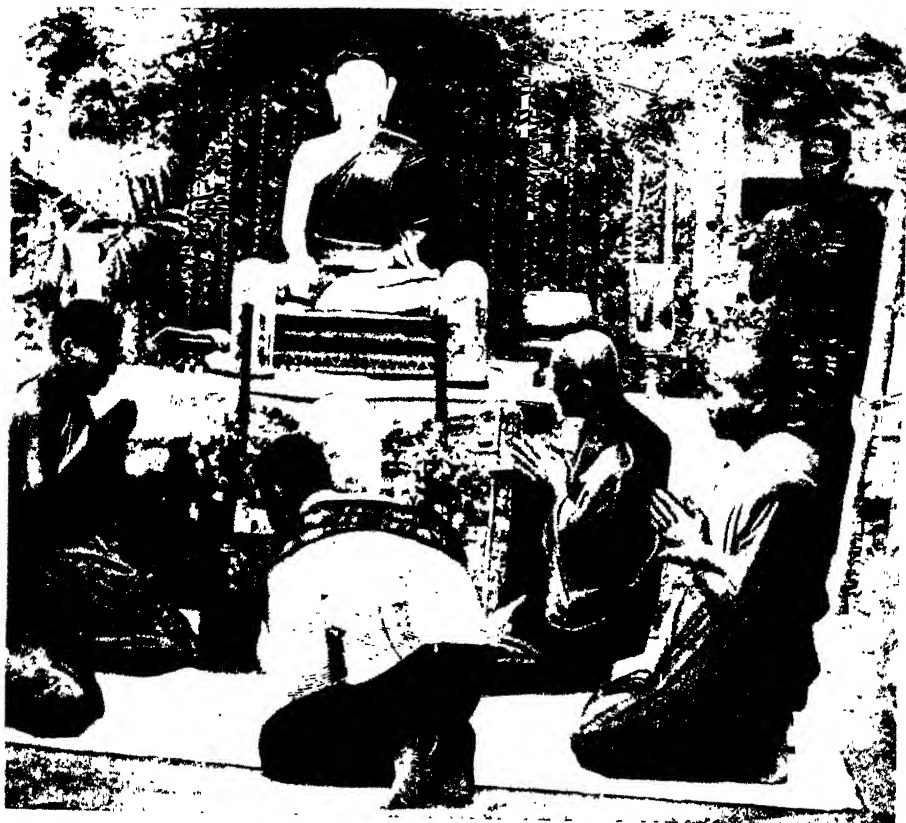
VENERABLE APOSTLE OF BUDDHA THE ENLIGHTENED

His discourse ended, he descends from the beautifully-carved pulpit, a somewhat pathetic figure, with bared shoulder and long yellow robe. He is head bonze of a pagoda, and a man of great responsibilities. In his more youthful days he has made many a pilgrimage to the ancient capital of Cambodia, Angkor Thom, where the wondrous Khmer Temple, Angkor Vat, is still to be seen



THE GROTESQUE PULPIT OF A CAMBODIAN BONZE

Seated cross-legged on the cushioned back of this grimacing monster, under the watchful eye of the stone Buddha, the bonze delivers his discourse. Much fantastic detail is displayed in the decoration of pagodas, and recent architecture shows decided Siamese influence. In the ruins of the Angkor group, exquisite sculptured monuments have been brought to light, carved treasures of unsurpassed beauty, which among present-day sculptures can find no counterpart



WAYSIDE PIETY AT A BUDDHIST SHRINE IN CAMBODIA

By rule Buddhist priests should live the most abstemious lives. They are supposed to have no money or possessions of their own, and are supplied with their daily food by the villages that support them. At this small woodland shrine a group of yellow-robed pilgrim priests are devoutly reciting prayers to the inscrutable figure above them—Buddha, the serene of face

stores of golden and jewelled treasure left in their keeping by their broken, fugitive masters. Forests dripping with leeches, ruins, and swamps, from which clouds of fever mosquitoes rise, likewise guard the mystic treasures of the lost children of Brahma.

Meanwhile, the old dying master race gives its trading towns over to the Mongolian, leads the simple life on rice, dried river fish and fruit, composes poetry, and excels in improvised dialogues between lovers, showing fine talent in devising metaphors. Also they are great musicians, and with instruments of bamboo, clarionets, many-toned drums and gongs, they make strange, charming orchestral music with some wonderful effects.

They have also retained some of their decorative art. In the early part of the nineteenth century, Oudong, higher

up country, was their capital. Now that the ravages of pirates have ceased, the king lives on the main river by Pnom Hill, from which rises the celebrated Khmer Pagoda. Much fine work shows that the descendants of the great builders of the past have not lost their feeling for grace of design and intricate beauty of colour work. In the king's palace is a room some hundred feet long, paved with silver, and holding a life-sized idol of solid gold and jewels. Yet the effect is not garish, or even barbaric; it has a kind of tranquil, quiet beauty. It is the European appointments of the palace that are out of place.

The wild tribes, who also are of Khmer stock, have some of the qualities of mind of the civilized Malay Hindus. They are smaller in stature, but intelligent looking, and, although they go almost naked, they have to a European

CAMBODIA & THE KHMERS

eye a more pleasant appearance than that of an Annamese. Raided by slave hunters on all sides, they are naturally suspicious of strangers, and only a man in armour could safely travel through some of the mechanical defences of their remote hamlets, and even he might be trapped in tiger and elephant pits after trampling over the ground stuck with poisoned darts. The stock is probably akin to the wandering Moi tribesmen of the Annam highlands, but seem to be on the whole more affected by the old Hindu culture. They believe in a supreme god Bra, who may be Brahma, but have no priests, and at most only a kind of vague respect for ruined temples and old treasures, which are sometimes considered as holy things on which the safety and prosperity of the tribe depend.

Occasionally slaves are said to be killed as a sacrifice to an uncertain kind of demon in accordance with the old Hindu creed of the country. Otherwise slaves are kindly treated, and freemen are usually punished only by fines.

When a man owes his commune a large amount—say twenty buffaloes—he is often sold as a slave. But most things are held in common, as in the ancient communes under the Hindus. The wild folk are skilled and industrious, working admirably in iron and ivory, and doing some weaving. One of their favourite amusements is to send up kites, to which they attach a musical instrument in somewhat the shape of a bow. This, when agitated by the wind, produces melodious sounds to which they are fond of listening. It is very doubtful if their love of kite-flying was acquired from the Chinese. It may be that the Chinese learnt from the tribes near their border, who at one time were strong in Yün-nan, in Southern China.

Harsh are the circumstances in which they live. Their lands are overrun with tigers that will claw their way into the lightly-built dwelling places, if these are left within their reach. The wild pig, the elephant, the wild buffalo, and an occasional rhinoceros, make farming a difficult business. Snakes are many and



HIGH PRIEST OF BUDDHA IN A CAMBODIAN PAGODA

He might well pass for a carven image of Buddha himself, so set are his features, so wooden his pose. Buddhism is the dominant creed of the Cambodians, but Brahmanism is still maintained at the Court. The bonzes, or priests, are a gentle, tolerant and much respected sect; they live by voluntary alms, and in return undertake the instruction of the youth of the country



UP-TO-DATE STYLES IN AN OLD-WORLD CAMBODIAN VILLAGE

The men of this Cambodian family are less conservative than the women and display a decided taste for European fashions, but their sampots, the national trouser-skirt, seem scarcely in keeping with collars, ties, and watch-chains. Nevertheless, at heart they will be always Cambodian, and French civilization can never induce them to depart from some of their favourite customs



PARTAKING OF DAINTY DISHES OF RICE AT THE MIDDAY MEAL

Cambodian women enjoy a respected position and a fair amount of liberty, and may often be seen taking a quiet stroll, their naked babies sitting astride their hips. The sampot and coloured upper-cloth form the usual dress, but when ceremony demands it, considerable attention is paid to personal adornment. Rice is the staple food, and like the men, the women are much addicted to chewing betel



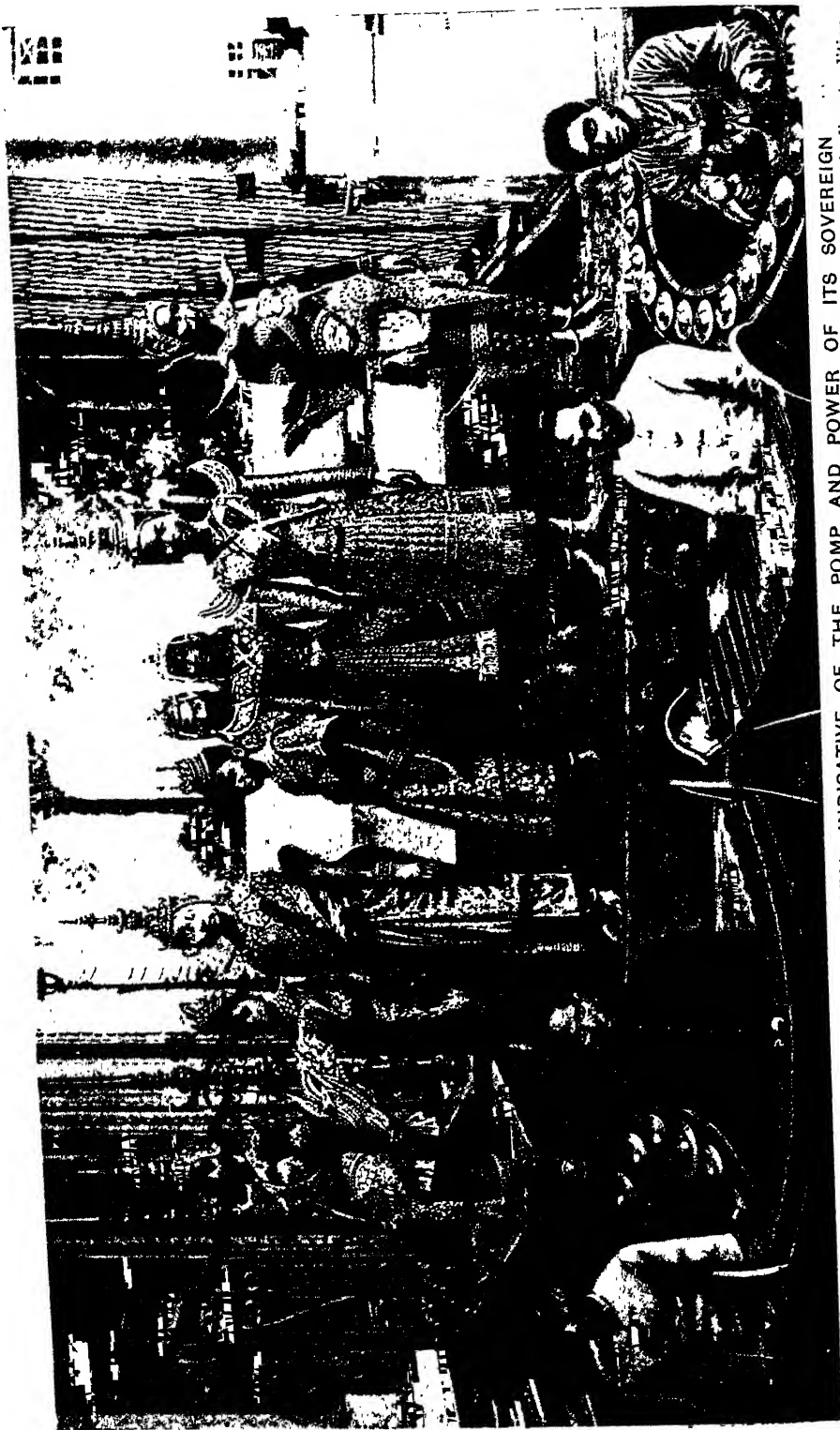
A LIVELY QUINTET OF FRENCH INDO-CHINA

Cambodians are passionately fond of music, and possess a variety of wind and stringed instruments. They learn a little of this and a little of that, but all without any set rule or system, and having no written music, their tunes are taught by ear. The more musical will often meet together and repeat their favourite tunes by the hour, steadily chewing betel like ruminant cattle the while



THE HOUR OF RECREATION FOR THE PUPILS OF THE BONZE

Cambodian boys are taught to read and write by the bonzes of their particular districts, and are obliged to spend a certain period in the monastery, where they wait upon the bonzes and accompany them on formal visits to the surrounding villages. Their heads are shaved in childhood; sometimes a small tuft of hair is left; this ceremony of shaving being regarded as a most important family festival



TRADITIONAL FIGURES OF CAMBODIA, INDICATIVE OF THE POMP AND POWER OF ITS SOVEREIGN

Despite the heavy drain on Treasury gold, the Khmer dancers, who belong to the harem, are maintained by the king in accordance with Cambodian tradition. The most beautiful women of the kingdom are among their numbers, for if a girl showed promise of great beauty it was thought that in giving her to the king the parents would call down divine protection upon themselves and families, so the children were sent to the palace to fulfil their "brilliant destinies."

CAMBODIA & THE KHMERS

venomous ; leeches in the rainy season make woodland life intolerable ; while disease-bearing mosquitoes would make life entirely impossible, but that the tribesmen seem to have become immune to the pestilence that has killed most of the white men who tried to live with them. What the white man needs to save his life is a well-built house with perforated zinc windows, in addition to the best mosquito curtains.

Though the jungle folk have survived the ruin of the Cambodian civilization, and are still gentlemen in character, and hospitable, they have paid a price for their continued existence. In spite of their well-developed foreheads, they are not only utterly letterless, but their memories are bad, and they have remarkable difficulty in learning to calculate. For example, they will sell you a hundred ears of maize for a small piece of fine brass wire. But they cannot count down the hundred ears from one of their harvested heaps. They pick each ear out singly until they have a bundle of ten ; then with great care they make nine other bundles of ten, and verify.

The Cambodians keep many festivals, and on these occasions all kinds of sport take place. There are horseraces, canoe-races, and games of all sorts, wrestling, boxing, and all manner of bodily exercises, which have been handed down unchanged from ancient times. One of their favourite games is



CHINESE SKILL JOINED TO CAMBODIAN CUNNING

Half-breeds are numerous in French Indo-China, the resting-place of so many and varied races. This bedizened girl is of Chinese and Cambodian parentage, and occupies the proud position of instructress in the art of fencing

played with a cane ball, which they kick to one another while standing in a circle.

The religion of Cambodia is the Buddhism of Ceylon, which at the end



RELATIVES AND FRIENDS WITNESSING THE PERFORMANCE OF THE LAST RITES AT A CAMBODIAN FUNERAL

The ashes of the deceased have been deposited in an urn which, placed in state on a raised and decorated platform, is about to be transferred to the last resting-place. Funeral rites are attended with much ceremony in Cambodia. An old custom decrees that a coin shall be placed in the mouth of the dead person, this being "passage-money" to prevent any hindrance to the transmigration of the soul. Until cremation takes place priests recite prayers over the body daily



ANNUAL WATER FÊTE ON THE MEKONG, THE GREATEST RIVER OF INDO-CHINA

A regatta is held annually at Phnom Penh, the present-day capital of Cambodia, situated at the junction of the Mekong river with the outlet of the Great Lake. In the town, an attractive little place with well-paved streets, several important buildings are to be found, including the Royal Palace and the headquarters of the French Government officials. The pirogues, or racing-boats, bear a marked resemblance to the craft seen in the fantastic and beautiful bas-reliefs at Angkor

CAMBODIA & THE KHMERS

of the thirteenth century replaced Brahmanism without entirely destroying the imprint of Vedic myths and local superstitions. The dead are not buried, but burnt. The bonzes, who among the Annamese and Chinese are the most despised of men, enjoy considerable influence with the Khmers. They are the teachers of kings and people alike. Princes, in common with the sons of the poor, go humbly to the pagodas for instruction. The bonzes earn their livelihood by begging. They sometimes fast to such a degree that they injure their health. They do not take part openly in politics, but it is they who in reality form the current ideas throughout the country.

Family life among the Cambodians is solid and of good repute. There are always a great many children, paternal authority is lenient, a child is never beaten. The adoption of children is facilitated as in China. Polygamy is permitted, but more often than not they content themselves with one wife. Wives are recognized as of the first, second, or third degree. These last are simply bought. Any woman who lives openly with a Cambodian, or has a child by him, becomes his legal wife. The moral authority of the wife and her position in the family are as good as that of any wife in Europe. Daughters share the inheritance of their parents equally with the sons.



HOMES OF FISHERMEN WHOSE HANDS ARE THEIR ONLY FISHING-TACKLE
Most inland houses are slightly elevated, and the leafy roof and walls bespeak no great durability. The ultra-modern method of building in Cambodia employs tiles, otherwise the primitive architecture remains unchanged. Cambodia's great lake is near this humble home, and these little urchins are never happier than when, its waters receding, shoals of fish are stranded on its swampy bed



UNSOPHISTICATED CORNER OF CAMBODIAN NATURE

They are living in the vicinity of the great Cambodian river, Mekong, which with pitiless pertinacity rapidly swells during the rains and floods the neighbourhood for many miles round. As a precaution, the natives build their houses on piles, but despite their long wooden legs, so frail and fragile are these tiny homesteads, that many a one falls victim to the fury of the onrushing waters

The marriage of Cambodian women with foreigners was forbidden for many years. There are, however, a great many French, and still more Chinese half-castes. Divorce is easy, and can be demanded by the man or the woman. Adultery used to be punished in a shocking manner. Nowadays all punishments are relatively light. King Sisowath

abolished the chaining of prisoners in 1905. Suicide is very rare; infanticide and abortion are almost unknown.

The Cambodian smokes opium, having learnt the habit from the Chinese and Annamese, but not to excess. Alcohol figures in religious and family ceremonies, but drunkenness is unknown. The staple food grown is rice.



ON TRAIL AMID THE CANADIAN ROCKIES: THE MORNING START

By the way he packs his horse may the tenderfoot be distinguished at a glance from the seasoned trapper. He fastens his load on with half a hundred knots, and in unloading even commits the atrocity of cutting a rope, whereas the old hand secures his with a single diamond hitch which is simplicity itself, and makes the taking off of the pack a matter of but a few moments

Photo, Canadian Pacific Railway

Canada

I. Its Progressive Peoples & Their Pursuits

By Frederick J. Niven

Author of "Maple Leaf Songs" and "Sage-Brush Stories"

CANADA is bounded on the north by the Arctic Ocean, on the east by the Atlantic Ocean, on the west by Alaska and the Pacific Ocean, and on the south by the United States of America.

Its provinces are: Nova Scotia, New Brunswick, Prince Edward Island, often referred to as the Maritime Provinces, Quebec, Ontario, Manitoba, Saskatchewan, Alberta, British Columbia, Yukon Territory; north of Alberta and Saskatchewan are the North-West Territories. Newfoundland, to which the strip of seaboard called Labrador is politically attached, rejected inclusion in the Dominion, and remains a self-governing Crown Colony.

Approaching Canada from the Atlantic we enter the Gulf of St. Lawrence, leaving behind us Newfoundland and Labrador—dealt with separately—on the north of the great estuary. South of the St. Lawrence, progressing onwards into Canada by this great waterway, we leave behind us Nova Scotia and New Brunswick, countries principally of farmers, fisher folk, and lumbermen. If fog be off Newfoundland, in the region of The Banks, as the fishing waters there are called, the first knowledge of Canada that a traveller has is often not a vision but a

scent—the scent of the great forests, the scent of balsam.

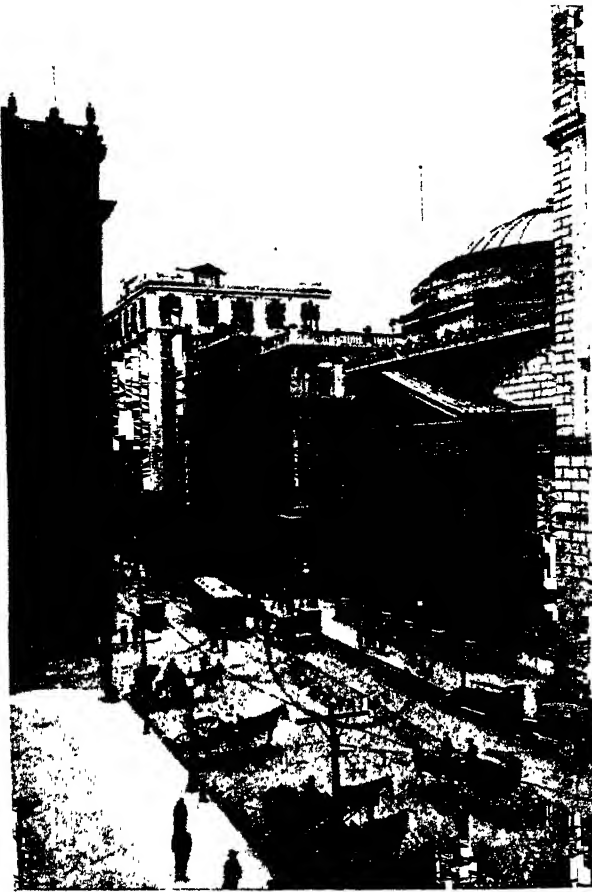
Continuing up the St. Lawrence, with the Province of Quebec on either distant shore, the land is wild, settled only in patches. This is the region of the Habitant, whose life has been sung by William Henry Drummond. These people, of French extraction, live in diverse ways—lumbering, fishing, hunting, trapping, small farming. Farther on is a more definitely agricultural and pastoral stretch, French-Canadian also, a domain of fields and meadows dotted with cows, and little belfried villages with their poplar rows, whence the sound of the Angelus-bell drifts over the waters to the deep-sea steamers surging inland up this long river. The whole St. Lawrence system, irrespective of canals, from Gaspé to the St. Louis river, is 1,900 miles in length.

Lower Ontario, ahead, beyond Quebec, beyond Montreal, is chiefly a land of hard-working and hard-saving farmers, raising grain and fruit, but it has also various industrial centres. Northward from there, apart from a strip of farming settlements along the line of the National Transcontinental Railway, we are again in fur-trappers' country, among seemingly



CHIEF SOLACE OF THE RED INDIAN
His most cherished possession is his pipe. With bowl of polished red steatite and stem of quaintly carved wood it is in constant use

Photo, Arnold Lupson



THE PULSING HEART OF MONTREAL

Notre Dame, St. James and Craig Streets are the main arteries of business in Montreal. The columned building here is the head office of the Bank of Montreal, the oldest bank in Canada and one of the world's greatest chartered banks

Photo, Ray Worth

endless close forest and twining and linked waterways. The trees grow smaller, unfitted for lumbering, but giving shelter to beast and bird and the scattered Indians who live by them.

The settlements by Lake Superior's north shore are dependent partly upon the whitefishing in the lake, partly upon lumbering, partly upon this hinterland—its fur trade, its more recent mining activities. Gold and zinc have been discovered in that neighbourhood. The most extensive copper and nickel deposits so far known in the world lie north of Sudbury. The flickering flames seen at that place, passing in the night, are those of blasting furnaces. The

wilderness is close enough for the wild creatures to see the glare.

Suddenly, beyond the Lake of the Woods (with its valuable fisheries, pulp-mills, flour-mills) and the Rainy Lakes region, where again are many lumber-camps, the woods cease and there is an area of flat plains on into Manitoba. Here again are farmers, though the conditions of their lives are different from the conditions eastward. As we go on westward, we find the plains slowly change in character until, entering Alberta, we see, not a flat plateau running here and there into rolls round, as it were, islands of wooded hills, but a series as of great land billows, much like the rolling English Downs. Southern Alberta men, indeed, when brought during the Great War to the neighbourhood of Stonehenge, felt, apart from the greater humidity, very much at home.

Farming there, in most parts, requires irrigation to be successful, and there are still in existence large

cattle and horse-ranches, though not many as large as they were before the great influx of the agriculturists with the barbed-wire fence, limiting the range lands. For a long way northward it is an agricultural region. Where the buffalo herds formerly roamed, there are now farms after farms, and the tall grain-elevators dot the plain by the sides of the prairie railway stations.

A little farther on, the great Rocky Mountains lie along the sky, seen from many miles off—eighty to a hundred on the prairies—like a long, low, indigo cloud. The foothill country is devoted to cattle and horse-raising, mixed farming, dairying; and a great coal

CANADA & THE CANADIANS

area is being worked in the region of the Crow's Nest Pass southward, and another northward, beyond Edmonton, towards the Yellowhead Pass. Then we come again to a country of timber, in the Rockies and Selkirks and Coast Ranges. Lumbering, mining (for coal, gold, silver-lead, zinc, etc.), and salmon fishing are the outstanding means of subsistence, and in the many sheltered valleys is much fruit growing (apples, peaches, cherries, pears, plums, small fruits), and on the bench-lands cattle-raising.

Spectacularly the Rockies and the Selkirks are wonderful, and have an appeal of wildness lacking to the Alps, with which they are frequently compared. The knowledge of the tremendous extent of these ranges, practically from

the Arctic to Mexico, adds to the impression they leave upon the mind. Grizzly bears wander with lolling heads in the upland stretches, marmots whistle their warning, rock-slides intermittently roar like thunder.

Conceiving the map of Canada on Mercator's projection set upright on a wall, we have the base, along the lines of railway, fairly settled, in some parts closely settled; only here and there, as in the neighbourhood just between settled Ontario and settled Manitoba, with a hiatus of scrub and rock, a twist of water, and a lone cabin.

Higher up, all along from Quebec's hinterland through Northern Ontario, Northern Manitoba, Northern Saskatchewan beyond the grain-elevators, and



MID-WINTER'S DAY MARKET IN JACQUES CARTIER SQUARE, MONTREAL

As quaint a scene of French-Canadian town life as any that may be witnessed in Canada's metropolis is the street market in the spacious square named after the Frenchman who, in 1535, saw and described the Indian town of Hochelaga, on the site by which a century later Montreal was founded. Behind stands the City Hall (burnt down in 1922), and beyond is Nelson's monument.



A PRETTY GLIMPSE OF WINTER LIFE IN CANADA'S GREATEST CITY

Montreal is one of the best built and best situated of the world's great cities. Rising gradually from the level of the St. Lawrence up the slopes of the mountain that gives the metropolis its name there is such evidence of human endeavour and achievement that should make every Canadian proud of this magnificent city. The scene across the city from Mt. Royal is at all times an inspiring one, and not least so in winter, when the jingling sleigh has taken the place of the coach or motor car

CANADA & THE CANADIANS

Northern Alberta are woods and more woods, muskegs (marshy tracts), and woods again, till they grow small towards the Land of Little Sticks, where are only the Indians, the scattered Hudson's Bay posts, a few missions, and an occasional barracks of the Royal Canadian Mounted Police (formerly the Royal North-West Mounted Police).

In that distant North law and order are maintained. Patrols of the Royal Canadian Mounted Police keep in touch with the doings of the land. There is a

the scattered travellers in that vast land, keeping the peace beneath the Aurora. It is expected that soon patrol-work in the North will be done to a considerable extent by aeroplane.

From the cod fisheries of Newfoundland to the salmon rivers of the Pacific coast, from the orchards of the famous Annapolis Valley (the spring foam of the apple bloom of which is one of the sights of the world), and the busy industrial regions of Nova Scotia and New Brunswick, through the farm lands of Ontario, the wheat-ranches and



MONTREAL'S ICE PALACE WHERE KING FROST HOLDS FESTIVAL

When Jack Frost has the greater part of Canada in his iron grip citizens of the large towns delight to honour him with an icy palace, and Montreal usually makes a feature of such an erection in the winter season. It may be either built of actual ice blocks placed round a wooden interior or a picturesque wooden structure may be erected and by the simple process of playing the fire brigade's hoses upon it the water is instantly frozen into pleasing and fantastic shapes

post of this fine force at Herschel Island in Mackenzie Bay, out from the mouth of the Mackenzie river, and one on Chesterfield Inlet in Hudson's Bay. There, of course, these police are mounted only in name, going about their robust life, far from the plains and horses, by aid of sleigh and dog-team in winter, and canoe in summer, looking after the Eskimo and wintering whalers, collecting topographical and other data, assisting, when necessary,

cattle-ranches of the plains, the fur lands of the North, to the whaling seas of the Arctic, is a vast territory. The ruling or directing minds in it are chiefly British, or of British extraction. Yet a consideration of the census returns shows how diverse are the nationalities represented in the work of building up the wide Dominion.

It is the aim of the Government to extend to all nationalities what may be called something even greater than an

CANADA & THE CANADIANS

equal justice. Wide margins are allowed for the customs of aliens; special privileges are accorded to sects with religious scruples not in accord with the country's ways. Sometimes one may read, as in the outstanding case of the Russian Doukhobors, words suggesting that it is not so. Such pronouncements are partisan and founded on hearsay. The truth is that the communities of Doukhobors thrive in this new land; but many of the people have no understanding of the State, of the Commonwealth. They acknowledge, when they acknowledge aught, remaining in their settlements, only the autocratic heads of their community, and to these they doff and defer as if they were gods.

In the returns of the census we find enlightenment on the difficulties of Canada in her spirit and policy

of freedom for all rather than on the troubles of a sect. During the census-taking of 1921 some Doukhobors in British Columbia refused to give any information to the census-taker, threatening him with violence. When he returned with police (the police unarmed), the Doukhobors, following a custom they have when under stress of emotion, disrobed, both men and women, and attacked census-taker and police with the first weapons to hand. In such ways, and by their frequent refusal to conform to laws, such as those relative to sending children to school, or to the registering of births and deaths, some of these people present difficulties to a humane government.

The Ruthenians, a Slavic people, are also illiterate and rather bovine. The majority of them are from Galicia, but there are many Bukowinians even

more illiterate. These supply, however, much of the unskilled labour needed in a land in the making. There is hope for their progress, and there are signs of it.

As in the United States, so in Canada a race is being made out of many races. It is hardly right to speak of this as a race problem, the word problem having an implication of bafflement. There are certainly minor hitches in the making of that race, such as those occasioned in some of the less progressive settlements of the Mennonites by the priests adopting a view of the Order in Council granting to them, on coming to Canada, religious and educational liberty, which seems to result merely in keeping the people uneducated.

But in all such matters time itself is a factor toward betterment. Any race will cease to be happy in



CANADA'S VARIANTS OF NORWAY'S SKI

As worn by Canadian lumbermen, snowshoes are about three feet and a half long and broad in proportion. The frame is of tough wood, usually hickory, with a webbing of hide strips. Trackers' snowshoes are longer and very narrow

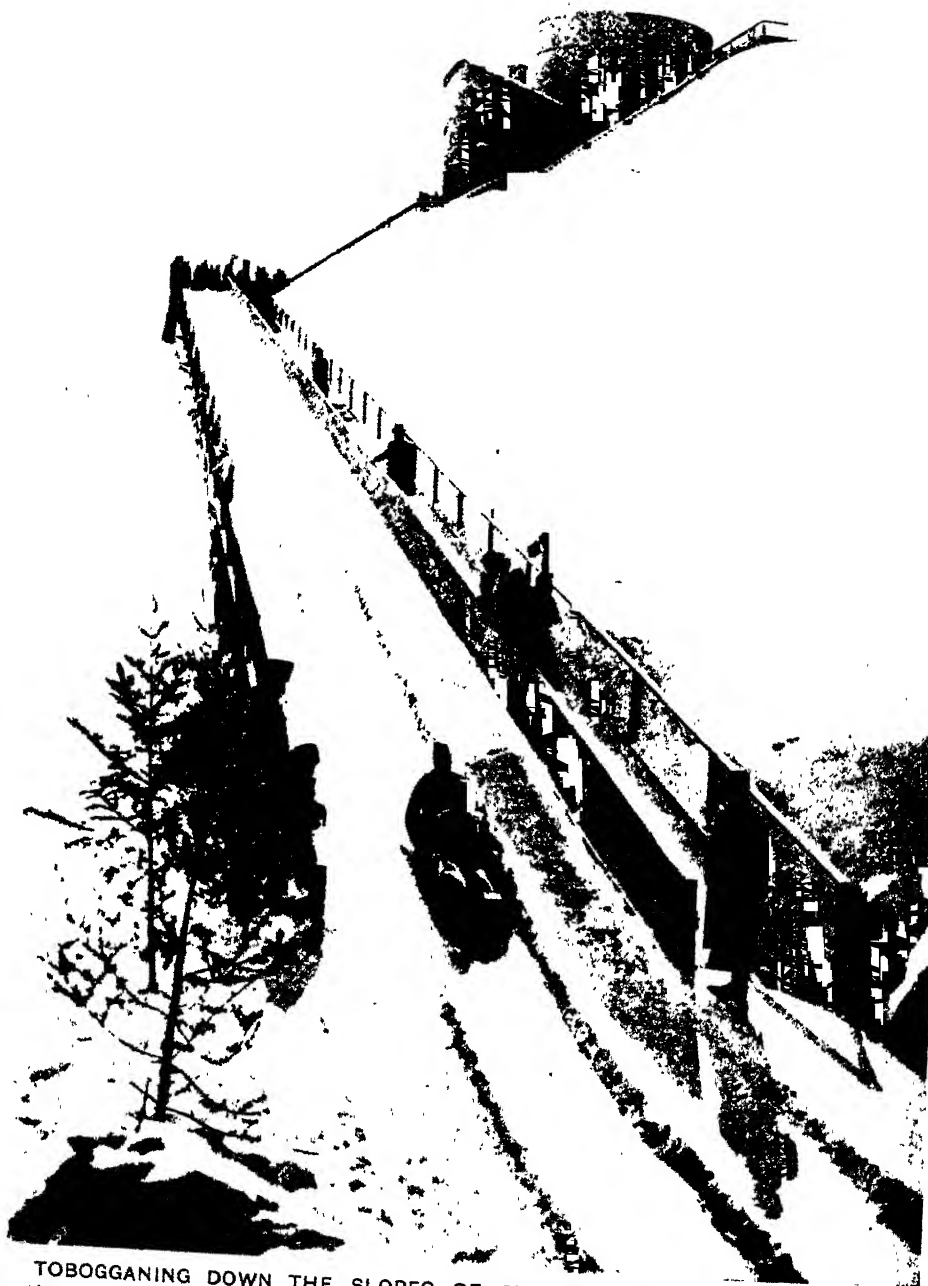


FAMILIAR WINTER SCENES IN THE STREETS OF MONTREAL

For months of the year the great cities of Canada are enveloped in snow, which, though picturesque, does not add to the comfort of the Canadians. The electric trams run between high banks of frozen snow, and the sidewalks are often divided from the road by these banks for weeks on end. "Snow shovelling" is in a real sense one of Canada's staple industries for a considerable season of the year

subjection when looking on at others round them who are not in subjection. By ones and twos they dare to break away from the rulers of their communities. They see that the country of which their leaders asked freedom has higher ideas of freedom than their leaders themselves. Actually, what the chiefs of some sects of immigrants asked of Canada, although they called it religious and educational freedom, was the right to set up little despotic colonies in a free land. This state of affairs will tend to disappear with the present community dictators. The rising generation is less submissive.

The Mennonites are of German origin, though they come from Russia and from Pennsylvania. Persecuted in Prussia for their doctrines, the chief tenets of which were (1) baptism only on confession of faith; (2) the separation of Church and State; (3) refusal to take oaths or to fight; (4) a strict life and a primitive church organization, they went to Russia in the reign of the Empress Catherine II. to colonise, being granted in return religious liberty. In 1870 the bureaucracy repealed their rights and they fled to Kansas and South Manitoba. Descendants of others



TOBOGGANING DOWN THE SLOPES OF QUEBEC'S PICTURESQUE CITADEL
The success with which the Canadians have met the rigours of winter is seen in the cheerfulness with which the winter season passes. Sleighing, tobogganing, and skating provide amusement for thousands. Toboggan runs are to be found in every town while the snow is on the ground, but probably none has a more picturesque position than that here photographed on the heights of Quebec



WINTER SPORT IN QUEBEC: SKI-ING ON THE SLOPES

While the Indian snowshoe retains its supremacy in Canada as the footwear most serviceable in the country in winter, the Norwegian ski has won wide popularity for sporting use when the necessary depth of six inches of frozen snow is available. These little ladies of Quebec, erect and well balanced, are enjoying a run down the slopes, disdaining the use of a staff

Photo, Canadian Pacific Railway



WHERE BREAD IS BAKED IN THE FRESH AIR IN QUEBEC PROVINCE

The use of an outdoor oven for baking purposes, which is characteristic of the indigenous Indians of North and South America, may also be noted among the French-Canadians, who naturally show a better sense of building, and use materials such as bricks, mortar, metal, and hard-seasoned wood not available to the Indian, who has to content himself with sun-hardened clay

who had gone from Prussia to Holland, being persecuted in Holland, fled to Pennsylvania.

The Mennonites in Ontario to-day, where they associate with the Pennsylvania Dutch, form a prosperous community, and are an integral part of the Canadian people. Those in Manitoba and Saskatchewan came from Russia in 1890. The Canadian Government granted them freedom from military service and permitted them to affirm instead of take the oath. Apart from the exceptions above alluded to, they are making rapid development along educational lines, and are not undesirables in the building up of Canada.

The Italians, mostly from South Italy, via the United States, are shop-keepers, with perhaps a predilection for the fruit store, farmers, and lastly and chiefly, labourers with pick and shovel, going out in gangs to railway construction work and the like. There is a marked tendency for the

Anglo-Saxon to turn away from navvy work, and in a country of constant railway development someone has to do it. As well as the Italians, Slavs of all varieties turn to this task, chiefly from Little Russia (these closely allied to the Galicians), but also from Great Russia, Poles, Croatians, Magyars, with now and then a sprinkling of Dalmatians. They are popularly all called, loosely, Galicians. In 1917, a Franco-Polish recruiting mission, visiting America to obtain volunteers, made arrangements with the Canadian Government for a camp at Niagara on the Lake, and there they gathered 20,000 Polish recruits. Members of many foreign races, immigrants to Canada, served in the Canadian Expeditionary Force. Icelanders in Canada have representatives in many public offices. Several have won Rhodes scholarships.

It may be said that the general tendency of the races in this great part of the American continent is progressive,

CANADA & THE CANADIANS

with some speedy, with others tardy. The advancement is there. But what has been almost a problem is the education of these large bands of foreign unskilled labourers in regions far from schools. In this relation must be mentioned the Reading Camp Association. It is an outstanding evidence of the seriousness of Canadians in aiming at a fine Canadian people.

So much of the navyy work being done by the foreign element, far from schools, in clearing grades for railways, track-laying, and so forth, where the Anglo-Saxon is represented chiefly only on skilled work, such as trestle-building, bridge and cement work, it has been realized that special efforts must be made for the education of these people. The Reading Camp



EXPERTS AND ARTISTS IN THE USE OF AXE AND SAW

Thousands of French-Canadians are employed in the lumber industry. Picturesque fellows, simple, industrious, and cheerful, they keep on pretty good terms with their Anglo-Canadian comrades, while showing no inclination for social fusion with them, and as a class are peaceable home-lovers, concerning themselves little with outside affairs of any kind

Photo, "Canada"



LINKING UP THE THREADS: HARVEST TIME IN ALBERTA

Alberta comprises every kind of country that settlers can desire. North of Calgary mixed farming predominates, and whitewashed homesteads, good farmhouses and barns stud the landscape. This fine specimen of manhood, picturesque in broad-brimmed hat and flannel shirt, and vigorous in the ripeness of years, declares that the Red River district is "God's country" and Mirror its capital

Photo, Canadian National—Grand Trunk Railway



IN A NOOK WITH A BOOK: AN OLD HABITANT OF QUEBEC
Somewhat primitive in their notions, the French-Canadians are a courteous, self-respecting, thrifty folk of fixed habits, contented with a little, and no lovers of modern hustle. In his little room, probably overheated with a big stove and ill-ventilated, this old fellow is enjoying a pipe of "Catholic tobacco," a small patch of which every habitant raises for his own consumption

Photo, "Canada"

Association is composed of employers of labour and university students. Over 350 young men, graduates and undergraduates, since the inception of the idea, have gone out to work in these ahead-of-steel (beyond rail head) camps, side by side with foreigners representing every nation in Europe.

Training Hands as well as Heads

In the evenings they hold short classes of instruction for all who care to attend. At the classes, these labourers learn something of the ideals of citizenship and of life. Four prominent Canadians each support a student, one railway company supports three, the Presbyterian College of Montreal and the University of Alberta each supports one. Five Provincial Governments have assisted in this work. Not only in the evenings, but on rainy days that suspend operations, classes are held in shack, or tent, or box-car converted into a school-house on a siding.

In the Canadian schools it is realized that purely scholastic training is not all that is required, and considerable attention is paid to manual training and industrial courses. The idea is to train hands as well as heads. The Reading Camp Association aims at training the heads of those whose hands are already adept with tools. As many of these foreigners, between spells of work on various constructions, flock to the cities, the effect of these snatches of education upon the frontiers extends even to the towns and helps toward the prevention of slum conditions.

Thin Edge of the Chinese Wedge

The vast majority of Chinese and Japanese who come to Canada do so with the definite intention of amassing fortunes, and then returning to their native land to enjoy retirement and leisure. By degrees they have extended their labours. Apart from his work, in gangs, on early railway-building in the West, when there was shortage of white labour, the Chinaman, to begin with, was little more than the washee (laundry man) and, in some parts, cook. Then he panned gold-dust from the alluvial rivers, such as the Fraser, often for a

day's takings, on inferior bars, not worth the while of the white man. So there was little resentment at his presence. Or he would wash tailings for what gold might be in them. That is, he would re-wash the gravel and sand left at deserted workings, where the whites had made a first washing. It may be mentioned that it has been found a paying proposition for white companies, with proper hydraulic plant, to wash over again at many of the places where the early placer-miners washed for gold-dust with more primitive appliances, sometimes only a pan and a shovel.

Racial and Sectarian Difficulties

Japanese and Chinese now predominate in various branches of the West coast industries. But these people cannot be assimilated. The influx of Orientals, especially on the West coast, approaches the condition of a problem. Now there are Chinese stores in many towns, and the Chinese restaurants are rapidly increasing in number. The type of men who tabooed them is passing away. They give cheaper meals than most white restaurateurs, and perhaps relatively smaller, but the cheapness attracts. On the West coast it is a common and no doubt well-founded belief that many of the large stores in the Pacific slope cities of both Canada and the United States, though not bearing a Chinese name over the door, are financed and owned by Chinese. The Chinaman has a high name for honesty in his business dealings.

The question of Japanese and Chinese may yet create a problem for the West. But what is already regarded by many as a problem has more to do with sect than race, namely: the question of the Mormons in Canada. Of late Mormons have been coming in considerable numbers into Southern Alberta especially, and also into Ontario eastward, and British Columbia westward.

There are many in Western Canada who see a great menace to the country in the policy of "peaceful penetration" preached by the Mormons. The progressive Canadians dislike the idea that

IN WESTERN CANADA
With Indian & Settler



Glory of warrior lives in this Blackfeet chief, with his eagle plumes, fringed robe, and moccasins, and mounted on his caparisoned cayuse.

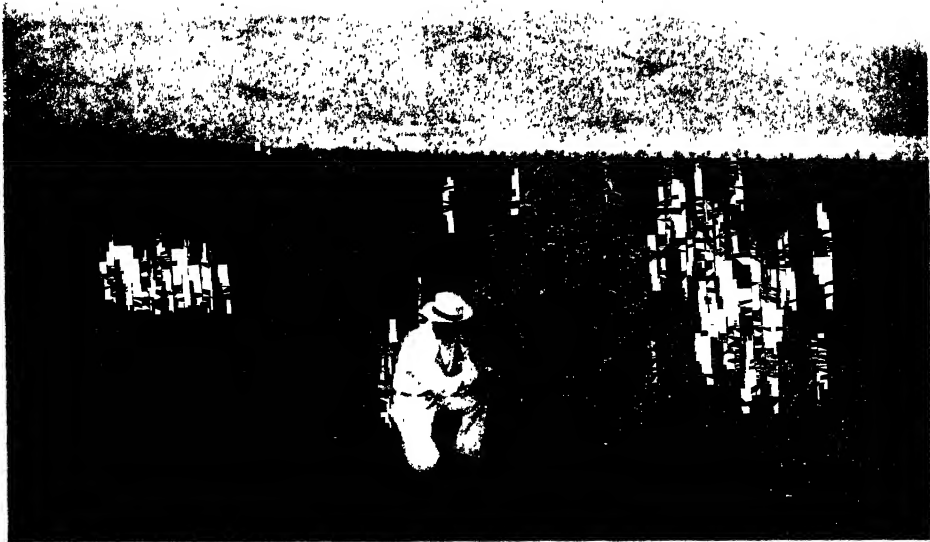


In the large reservations assigned to the Blackfeet in Southern Alberta Red Indian life may still be seen in its pristine gaudiness. Peace broods over the tented field to which the braves return at eventide

Photo, H. Pollard



Moving camp in Alberta. Two tipi poles, lashed together in front and joined by a crossbar behind, form a wheelless vehicle on which the beds and children are carried while the squaw rides the horse



Serried ranks of well-trimmed apple-trees occupy hundreds of acres in British Columbia. This is the largest orchard in the province



It is an exquisitely beautiful sight when the pear-trees are powdered with bloom, proclaiming that "honey-humming summer's coming"

Photos, "Canada"



Rafting-up on a Columbian river. When the logs reach the water-side boomsmen jump upon them and pole them into parallel ranks

Photo, "Canada "



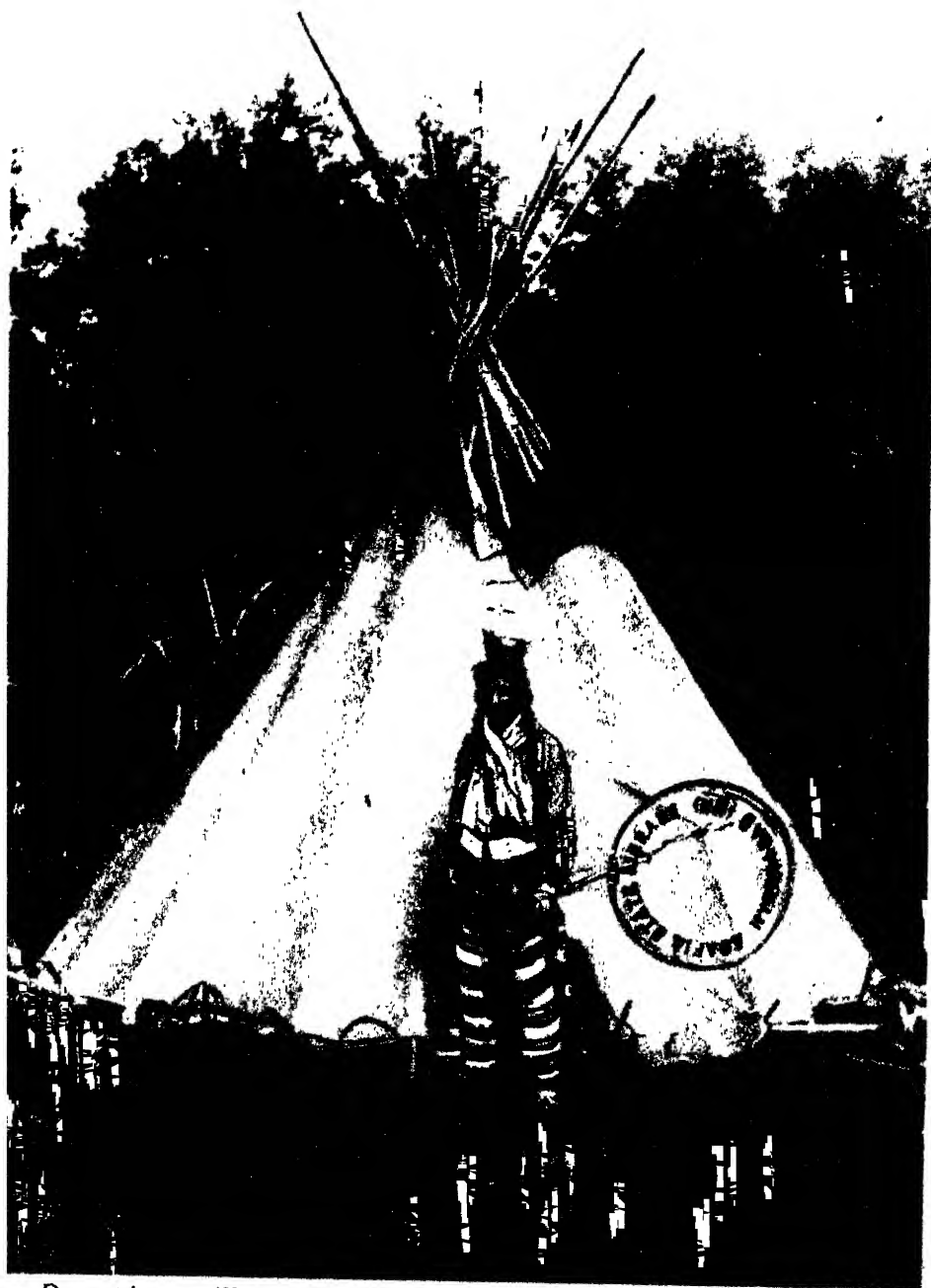
The logs are then massed together in a raft fit to be towed away to the saw-mills, and strong enough to support a respectable plank house

Photo, Canadian Pacific Railway



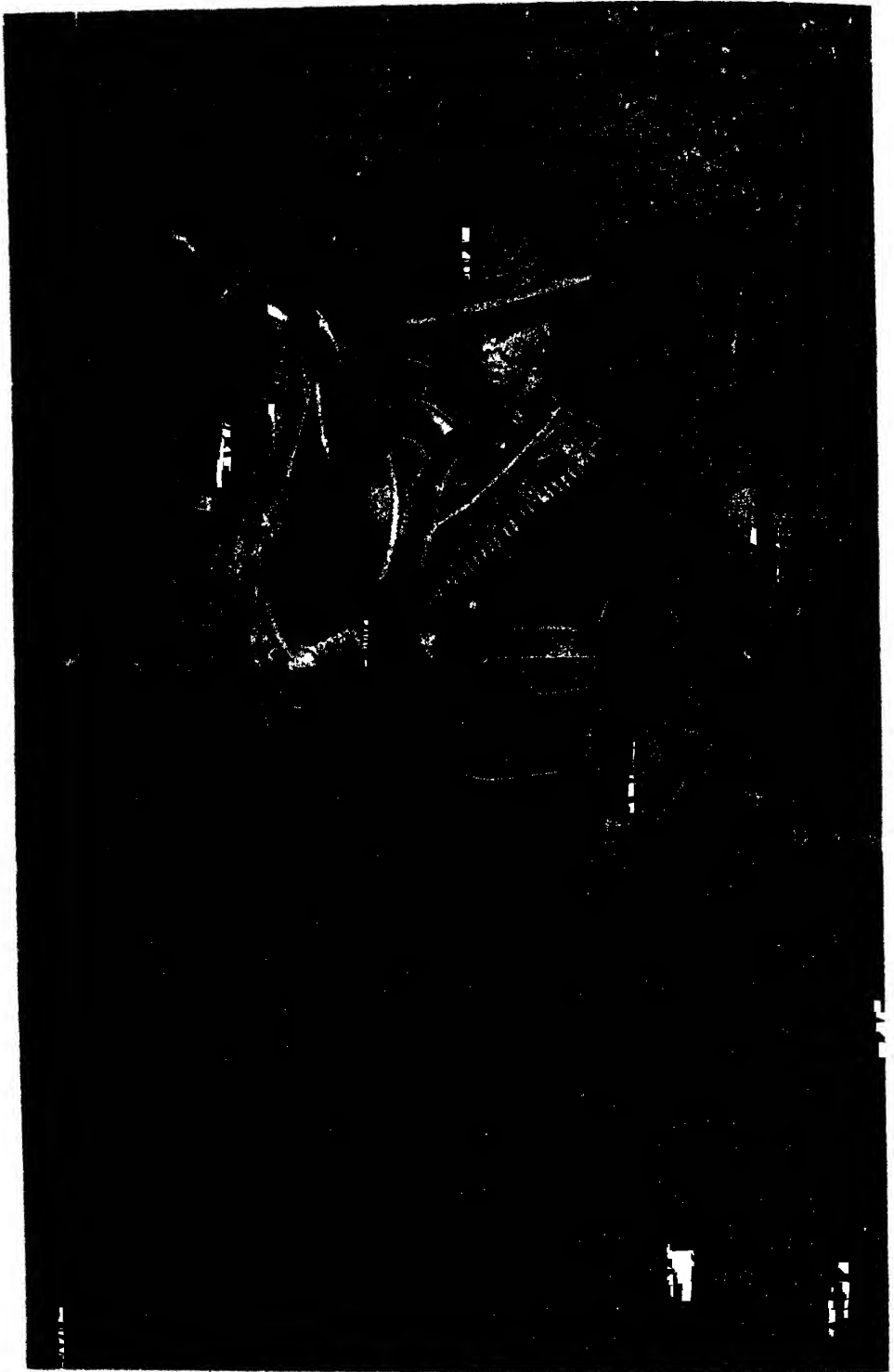
This is James Head, chief of the Fort à la Corne band of Indians in the Saskatchewan district. Sombre melancholy marks his strong features

Photo, Hudson's Bay Company



Porcupine quills in his braided hair, soft moccasins and gloves, and rainbow leggings make this Stoney Indian an arresting figure

Photo, Publishers' Photo Service



Over an area of three million square miles the red-coated Canadian Mounted Policeman personifies and maintains law and order

Photo, Publishers' Photo Service

the votes of the electorates are not the result of the unlettered thought of the voters, but are at the dictation of any priestcraft, whatever its name. They do not like to think of any religious body, church, or sect, having qualities as of a Black Hand League! Yet political aggression by those who are nominally shepherds of souls, will likely continue, not only in Canada but the world over, for a long time yet, to pass gradually before widening enlightenment.

Here may be mentioned, in passing, a grave aspect of what is called the foreign vote, a phrase constantly recurring in talk of politics throughout North America. Political clubs and organizations are also often brazen in their methods of securing votes. A foreign voter is supposed to have been resident three years in Canada. But what are those foreign voters? Often utterly illiterate, knowing nothing of the country of their adoption. A great pride of Canada is her free institutions, but in that very freedom there is scope for chicanery.

Illiteracy and the Foreign Vote

An utterly uneducated Galician, let us say, is taken to register. The questions may be all asked of him, and answered by him, through an interpreter, in Ruthenian. The declaration is read to him. The clerk asks if this citizen understands. The interpreter replies that he has explained it all to him beforehand. "Can he write?" asks the clerk. No, he cannot; but he can make his mark on the ballot as well as any—and does. He has been in Canada three years. If a few of the leaders of a settlement are, in the slang phrase, squared, the settlement will vote as the representative of the party who has squared them desires.

Such methods, if these people be intelligent enough to consider them, must afford them some amusement regarding the political ways of the free land that shelters them. The defence of such methods is that those who have not sufficient intelligence to vote, and yet have the right to do so,

may as well be a little educated now. That is the darkest aspect of the foreign vote question. Time will tell of the malady. But there we have an example of how excellent is the work of the Reading Camp Association, and example of the necessity for education among the foreign element.

New Episode in an Old Saga

The Scandinavians, speaking generally, are far less anxious than the Italians to make a fortune in Canada to carry away from the country to their European homes. They adopt the country and its ways. They are hardly more clannish than Scots or English. There is, of course, the tendency for them to work together. Where one obtains employment and sees an opening for another hand, he will very probably introduce a compatriot. But they take an interest, as of settlers who mean to stay, in the body politic, the affairs of the land, their adopted province and the Dominion. Their attitude is not that of exiles, or of people raking together money with which, when a sum aimed at is gained, to return to their native land. They are frequently as good Canadians as are British settlers. In many ways Canada is like their own land; and it is interesting to remember that long before Columbus sighted an island in the Caribbean, a Norseman, blown out of his course westward from Greenland, had sighted what was probably a part of the land to-day called Canada, "a long, low shore, heavily wooded."

To the Sound of the Bagpipe

Clannishness seems to be a quality common, in a greater or less degree, to all races of men. There are whole counties in the eastern provinces where the accents round the visitor suggest to him that he is really in Scotland. Yet the people he hears speaking may all be of Canadian birth, descendants of Scots immigrants. In other districts the Gaelic tongue is spoken; the bagpipe is heard at convivial gatherings. These are the people who, for a sentiment, brought heather to Canada. Canada, by the way, has no true heather



PROUD GARDENER OF BRITISH COLUMBIA

British Columbia is a land of orchards and market gardens where vegetables grow so fine that potato stories replace the fish stories heard elsewhere. This proud gardener has got something worth talking about in his radishes

Photo, Canadian National—Grand Trunk Railways

native to it. What is sometimes called heather and sometimes heath, growing at certain altitudes in the mountains, is really phylloce. To Vancouver Island an Englishman similarly introduced broom, which has added its yellow beauty to the native beauty, and has caused him to be sometimes anathematised by farmers.

The provinces of Nova Scotia and New Brunswick show a strong element of descendants of United Empire Loyalists, a large mining and industrial population connected particularly with the Dominion Steel and Dominion Coal Companies.

In Ontario we find a very strong Scots element mixed with United Empire Loyalists, and there is a constant influx of new immigrants joining them, chiefly from Scotland and Ireland. There is a German group, originally

Mennonites, around the city now known as Kitchener. In the eastern counties of Quebec round Sherbrooke we have a little island, as it were, of English-speaking people surrounded by French, which is very much to Quebec what Ulster is to the rest of Ireland. Montreal has 500,000 French and 200,000 British, with 50,000 Jews sandwiched between the two, more or less along the street called the St. Lawrence Main. In the province of Quebec the Irish are particularly strong, especially in politics.

From this summary of the races represented in Canada, although many foreign races have been mentioned, it must not for a moment be imagined that these are in the ascendancy. They are mentioned merely to give a complete view of

the country in the making. The reverse is the truth, and we close this section by remarking that the peoples of British extraction, the English-speaking races, are the dominant formative, creative power. To transact business the foreigner must learn English. The ultimate race will be a hardy English-speaking race.

A fine type of settler has been passing into the North-West of late from the Middle and Western states of the U.S.A. From Kansas, Nebraska, Dakota, and Wyoming experienced farmers with a love of frontier-life have trekked as far as the Peace River country, and into British Columbia. A common sight on the Western plains is that of a canvas-covered wagon (prairie-schooner) with perhaps the mother driving, while the father and sons herd along the horses and cattle. Nebraska and Kansas are

CANADA & THE CANADIANS

too greatly settled for their taste. They seek space, and are loyal to the land of their adoption. Many, perhaps most, of these were originally New Englanders, or of British descent.

To a certain type, especially of Englishmen and Scotsmen with a small fixed income and a large taste for an out-of-doors life, British Columbia appears specially to appeal, to judge by the numbers of this type encountered there. What such a man does is to purchase a fruit ranch with bearing trees and perform sufficient work thereon for it to

pay its way. It is a home for him, and a place from which to set out upon fishing and hunting trips and mountaineering expeditions. He is in touch, in the sense of knowing what is afoot in the world of the world, by subscribing to the journals of his taste. There are many worse ways of life. For men who like that sort of life there is none better! The great pianists and singers do not all, by any means, make a long jump from Toronto to Vancouver. Winnipeg, Regina, and Calgary are large enough to attract them. Even



JUSTIFIABLE PRIDE IN AN OUTSIZE IN GIANT CABBAGES

Although the soil of Alberta is among the richest in all Canada, it is given to few to raise a vegetable of such gargantuan proportions as the cabbage shown in this photograph. Grown on a farm in the Mirror district near Lake Buffalo, it stands as a living testimonial to the fertility of the soil there

Photo, Canadian National—Grand Trunk Railways



TAPPING THE SUGAR MAPLE FOR ITS SAP

The tree is tapped in spring before foliage develops. The incision is made some three feet from the ground, and the average yield from each tree is about four pounds of sugar

Photo, Canadian Pacific Railway

such smaller centres as Cranbrook and Nelson are not utterly despised. By timing the winter vacation to "the coast" (Vancouver), the women-folk among this type of settler can keep in touch with music, too, and hear the best instrumentalists and singers.

In the treatment of the native Indian, Canada takes the highest place of all nations of the continent that have an Indian question. In Mexico the Indian

is frequently treated with diabolical inhumanity and brutality, as witness the sad, the heart-breaking history of the Yaquis; in the United States of America the tale of injustice and treaty-breaking that drove tribes to open revolt where they were strong enough, and, where they were not, to sullen mistrust of all white ways, is notorious. It was that injustice that caused the founding, by friends of the Indian, of the Indian Rights Association of the United States of America. In Canada, although there have been outstanding examples of dilatoriness and procrastination, the unwinding of red tape, treaties with the Indians have always been made in good faith.

As far as it is possible for a race that sees its ancient lands in the keeping of new-comers, the Canadian Indian is happy. Also, the agents are generally men of probity and experience who regard their office as a kind of national trust, something more than a means of livelihood. The kind of man desired for such a post is one with knowledge of at least one Indian language, knowledge of agriculture, and knowledge of the Indian.

The system of dealing with the Indians is one of reservations of land set apart for them, with payment of treaty dues, in cash, in kind—blankets, cattle, agricultural implements, etc. Many tribes, even of the West, have made good progress in cultivation of land or the raising of cattle. British Columbia Indians have for long worked as navvies



ROUGH AND READY METHOD OF PURIFYING THE MAPLE SUGAR

The sap having been collected from the tapped trees, it is poured into large cauldrons ready for purifying. The cauldrons are hung from stout branches suspended over log fires. The fires are kept well stocked until the impurities have formed a scum on the surface and have been carefully skimmed from the boiling sugar. The cauldrons are then removed and the sugar allowed to cool off.



STIRRING TIMES ON THE COMPLETION OF THE SUGAR PURIFYING

Whilst the old farmer slowly stirs the liquid maple sugar with a long stick the young people ladle it out to set. Every available cake-tin and saucer has been recruited for the purpose, and whilst the brother holds the receptacle in readiness his sisters carefully ladle out the sugar with their spoons.

Photos, Ontario Government



FROM SMALL BEGINNINGS GREAT THINGS TAKE THEIR RISE

Scattered among the back woodlands in Manitoba modest camps like this mark many a spot where a few years hence a good homestead will stand, the reward of honest work by settlers of the right type. Meantime, this plank house, well warmed when snow is on the ground by a stove fed with fuel cut just outside, is comfortable enough for healthy men in the prime of life

Photo, J. C. D. Taylor



HUMAN ACTIVITY IN FULL SWARM: "A BUILDING-BEE"

Friendly cooperation between settlers in districts being newly opened up is a very pleasant feature of social life among Canadian pioneers. This is a building-bee in Ontario, where the neighbours have come from miles round to lend a farmer a hand in building a barn. When the work is completed they will make their meeting an opportunity for a social jollification

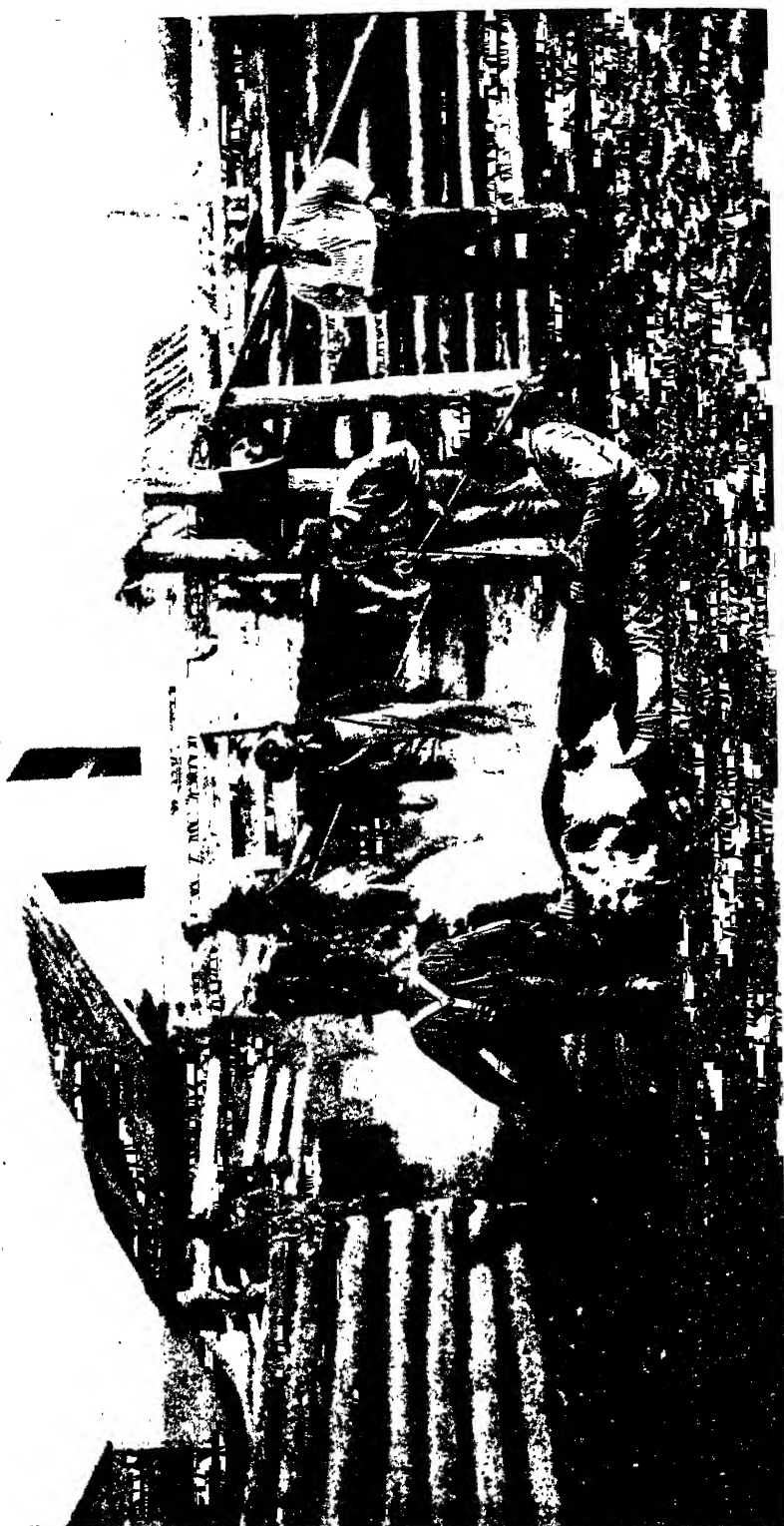
Photo, Ontario Government



PLEASED WITH THE FRUIT OF THEIR LABOURS

In the fertile Annapolis Valley of Nova Scotia, protected by the South Mountains from the damaging east winds, fruit farming thrives apace. Clad in workman-like overalls and armed with serviceable collecting buckets, these girls have been picking the crop of ripe cherries which will later be canned and shipped overseas to grace the tables of their sisters in the Old Country

Photo, Canadian Pacific Railway



GENTLE PERSUASION IS OFTEN NEEDED DURING THE CATTLE-BRANDING SEASON

When the cattle have been rounded up into the pole-corral for the branding, the cowboys have no easy time in persuading their charges to submit to the unwelcome operation. A deft throw of the lariat brings the victim to the ground, a rush to hold the steer's legs and prevent it rising, a firm thrust with the sizzling, red-hot branding-iron, and the operation is complete



LORDS OF THE LARIAT MOUNTED READY FOR THE DAY'S WORK

The exaggerated cowboy, dear to boyhood, is seldom found outside the realms of the cinematograph. He has been superseded by a business-like fellow in coarse trousers and old felt hat, who favours the Texan saddle and toe-cap stirrup and is too busy tending the cattle on the plains of Alberta to concern himself with the "sticking up" of unwary travellers

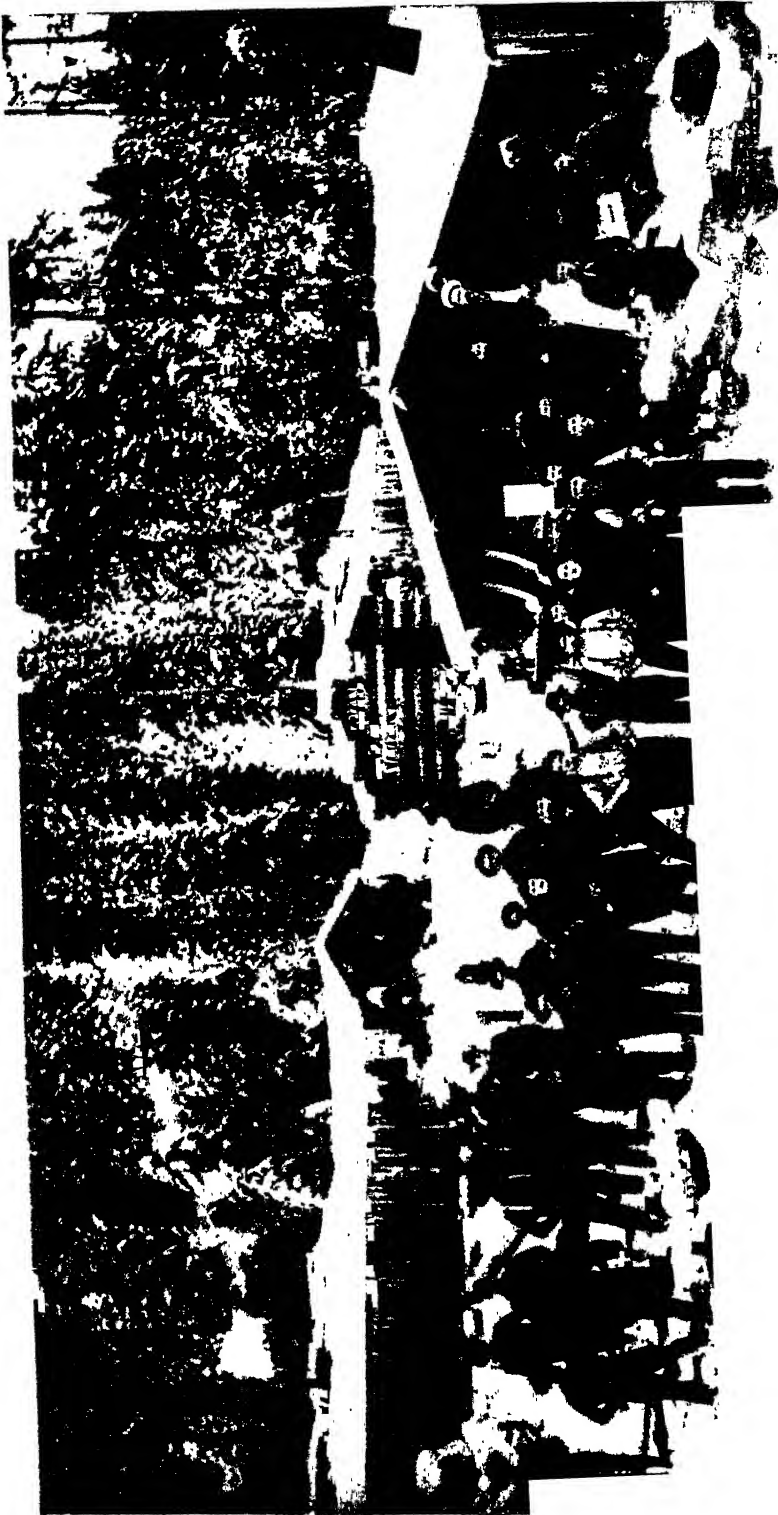
Photo, Canadian Pacific Railway

on the railways, and in large numbers they are employed at the fisheries there.

They are a dark-skinned people, varying in hue from that of a new to that of an old penny. On the Pacific coast are many tribes that suggest more strongly, to a casual glance, a Mongolian origin, now almost unanimously believed by the biologists to be the origin of all than do the plains tribes, or the Indians of the East. Generalisations on the race question are unwise. They vary vastly, according to tribes and according to individuals in any given tribe. Yet this can be safely said: a high order of intelligence is possessed by many; and that they are honest, as a race, is one generalisation borne out by innumerable stories of those in closest relations with them. This honesty remains in most tribes even to the present day with its great influx of white population, all members of which do not hold such high views upon mine and thine as did the aboriginal in his natural state. In the matter of cleanliness some are as particular as the lower animals, some as

grubby as the people of city slums. The Six Nation Indians of Ontario—originally the Five Nations, Mohawks, Oneidas, Onondagas, Senecas, and Cayugas, but another tribe, the Tuscaroras, was added to that confederacy—are, on the average, the equals of the average white settlers in the ways of white civilization. They are chiefly farmers, but many are in professions and trades.

There are still, among the less sophisticated of the tribes, members who would well repay the study of the biologist. It would be almost as though, in the twentieth century, he talked to a man of the Neolithic Age—to find the savage often touchingly fine; in matters of observation intensely alert; in regions of metaphysics pathetically inquiring and baffled. But for full understanding of the mind of such (the type least affected by our civilization of the steel age, or the automobile age), a knowledge of the language of the Indian in question is essential, plus sympathy. There are several distinct linguistic



DAME NATURE PROVIDES A TRUE YULETIDE SETTING FOR THE BACKWOODS CHRISTMAS

With earth and trees heavily mantled in snow and long icicles hanging from the roofs of the sturdy log cabins, these lumbermen have an appropriate setting whilst posing for their Christmas Day photograph. And though life in the camps is often hard, the smoking chimney and the presence of the white-capped chef on the right of the group suggest that a true Christmas spread will shortly be the order of the day

Photo, H. Pollard

CANADA & THE CANADIANS

stocks of the American Indians: they do not merely speak varying dialects. The Sarcecs, settled south-west of Calgary in Alberta, are but a small tribe, extinction looming before them as it does not before all.

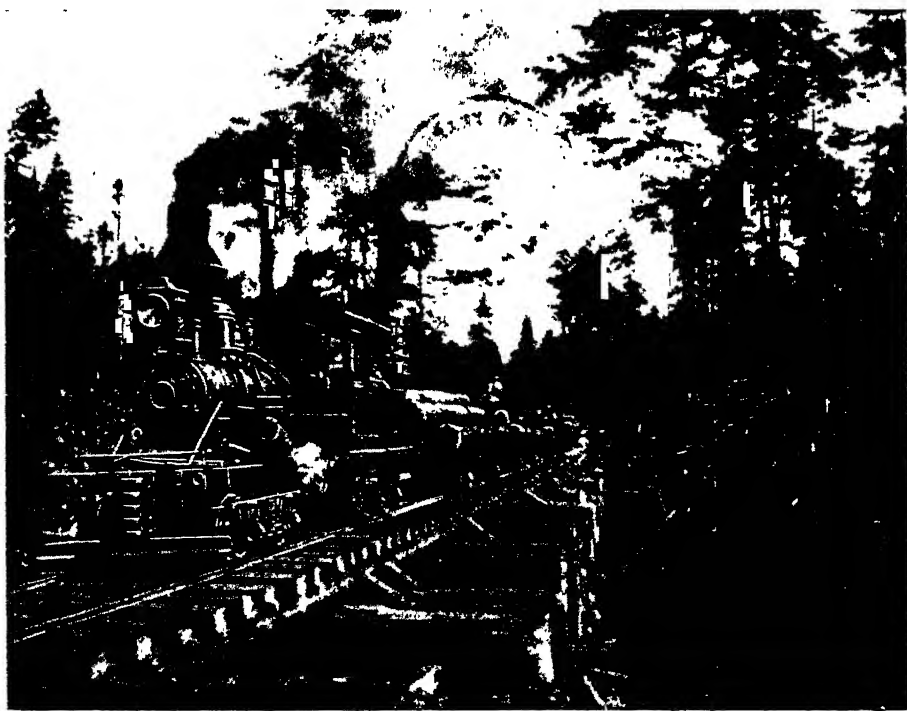
No neighbouring tribe, and no white man, has ever been able rightly to master their speech. For that reason, for communication with their kind of other tribes by labial speech as well as and apart from the sign language they speak the tongue of the Crees, of which most other plains tribes have at least a smattering. The linguistic mentality of the Indian may be partly gauged from the fact that he often can speak, not only his own tongue and that of a neighbouring tribe, but English as well.

The Indian sign language is very interesting, not only because it can express ideas as well as material matters,

but because of the grace of the gestures in conveying it. The Indian makes no facial grimace as he moves his hands in this language.

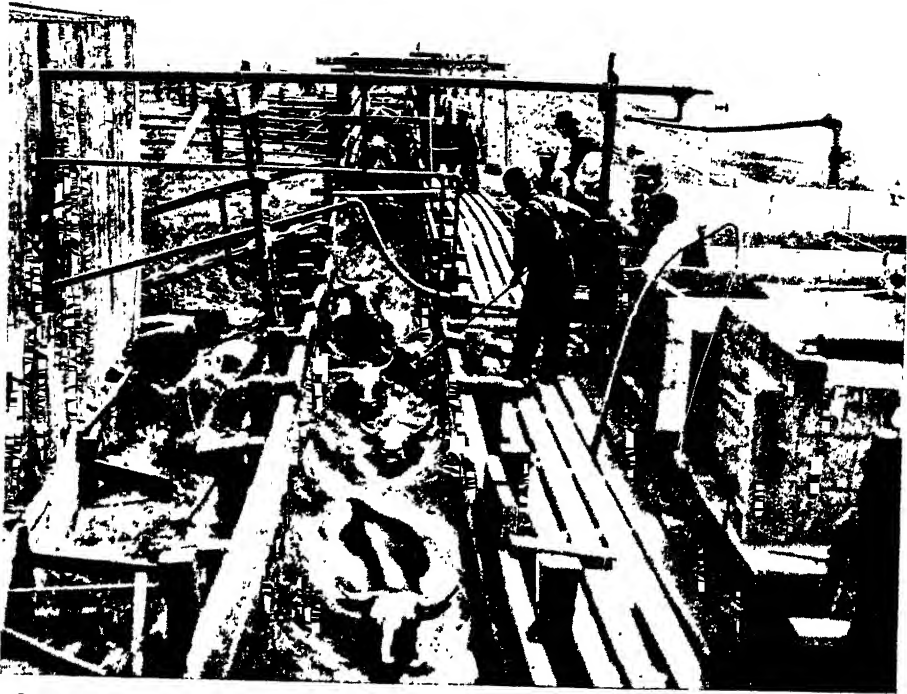
Many whites do not know of its existence, for the Indian is very shy, aloof, in the presence of whites, regarding many things. Although man, by the time he came to these parts of our planet now called America, had speech, biologists and philologists are divided as to whether the sign language predated speech or was originated simply because of the many different languages spoken.

Old Country people of urban tastes and a certain type may frequently be heard speaking of Canada as though it were a name synonymous with discomfort. Actually, being a new country in the making, it offers many comforts, especially in its little towns and the residences near these towns, that



FUNERAL PROGRESS OF THE MONARCHS OF THE FOREST

Axemen, hook-tenders, rigging slingers, boomsmen, engineers—every man engaged in the lumber business is a skilled artist in his department of the wonderful industry that turns a towering green tree into the paper on which this picture is printed. Here, on a logging railway, built on a track of huge tree trunks, an engine is hauling other huge tree trunks through the forests of British Columbia



CATTLE TAKING AN INVOLUNTARY DIP FOR THE GOOD OF THEIR HEALTH

Unless carefully tended, cattle are liable to a devastating skin disease. To prevent this they are periodically passed through dipping-pens similar to that of a Calgary ranch shown above. Driven in single file down a narrow incline filled with a strong disinfectant, they wade through up to their necks before passing out at the far end, whilst a man armed with a long mop supplies the final touches

towns of the same littleness in the Old Country do not offer. This being the age of electricity, it is natural to the Canadian to make use of it in the very beginning of a settlement. In many a small place of only a thousand or two inhabitants that house is the exception which is not connected with the telephone system. The morning's shopping is largely done by wire. The clothes, when not given to a steam or electric laundry to wash, or to the Chinese washee-man, are washed by electric or by water-power contrivances. Even ranches far distant from town are on the telephone, the difficulties of distance being conquered, and the expense to the subscriber lessened, by the use of a party line, which means that more than one house is served by one line, with an arrangement of varying rings for the various subscribers.

In the most out of the way places the traveller comes upon the most modern conveniences. The Peace

river ferry is typical. This being also the age of gasoline (petrol), ferries on the remotest river run by its aid. These are broad craft, capable of carrying immense loads, automobiles, wagons, horses, pedestrian passengers. A wire cable, with sufficient sag allowed for river-craft to pass on the water safely, connects shore and shore, passing through the ferry-boat, where, to obtain a purchase, it is wound twice round two upright wheels called bull-wheels. When the engine revolves these wheels the ferry hauls itself across.

The great department stores must be mentioned. These have a highly specialised system of catalogue trade. Their catalogues go to the remotest parts. If goods do not give satisfaction, they may be returned, and all cost is refunded. Should costs have decreased between issue of the catalogue and ordering of the goods, the change is returned with a note stating that prices have lowered. Should the prices have

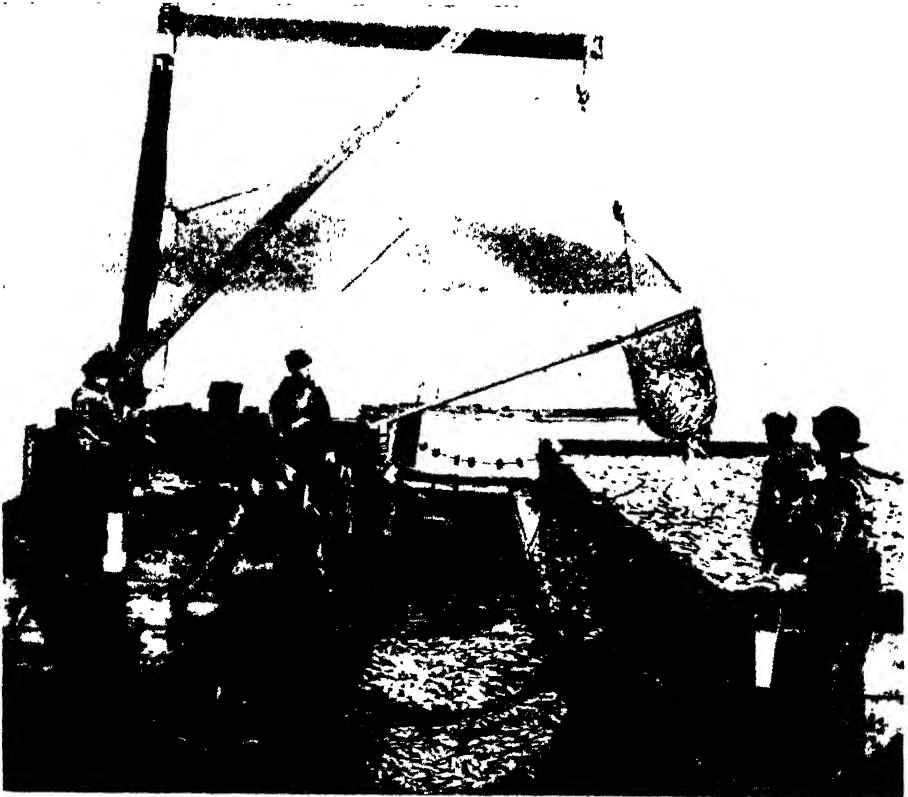
CANADA & THE CANADIANS

increased, a substitute may be sent at the original price of the article desired, with a note stating the current price of the exact article ordered. For most people, probably, what might be called inconveniences in the regions farthest from the roaring commercial centres, where there are crowds, are amply atoned for by the freedom of the life.

It is almost impossible to go anywhere in the Dominion without being told that here is God's country. The affection for his land of the Canadian born, or by adoption, is readily understandable. Scenically there is great charm. Even the plains exercise a spell on those who have lived upon them. From the rigours of their winters, and hard work on a new tract, many a man has departed to seek a

milder neighbourhood and change with quicker returns. There is no pretence to show how often such a back but a phrase in common speech is this: "Back to the bald-headed prairie."

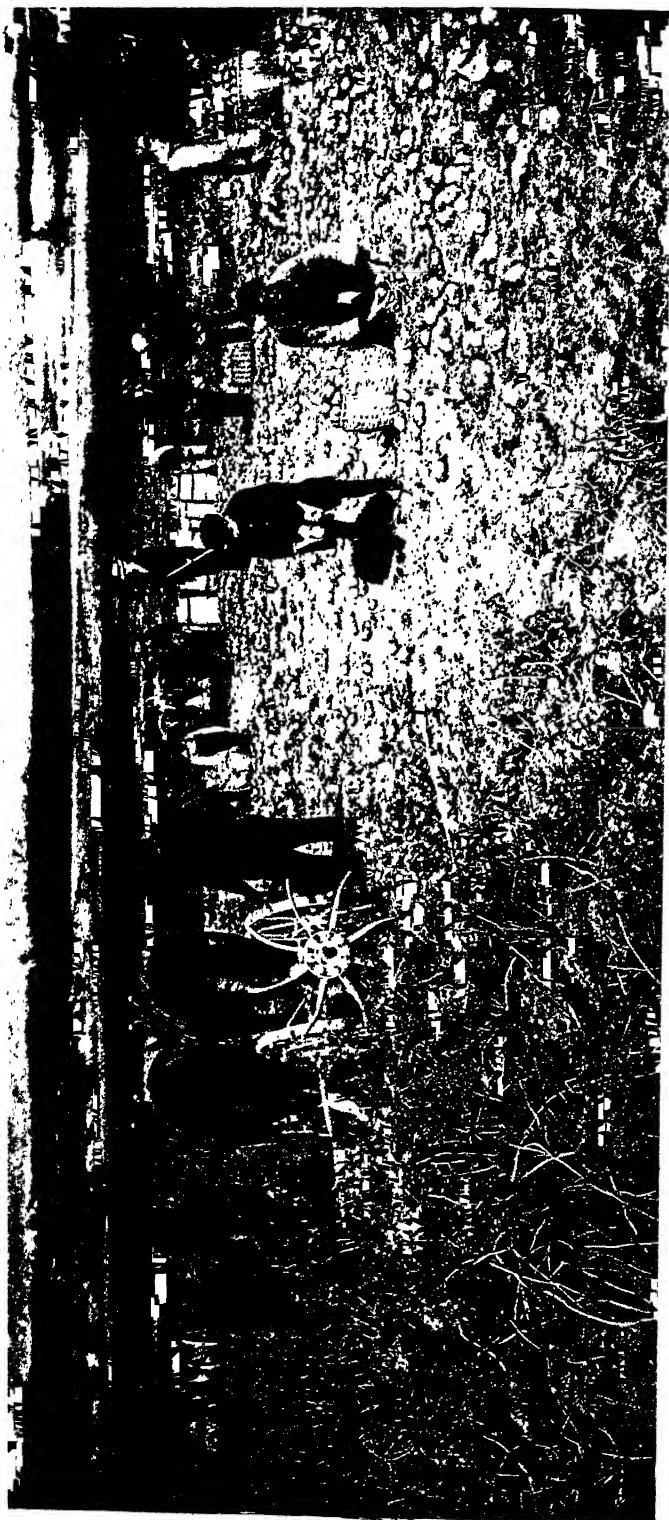
It implies one quality of the strange lure of these parts, namely, that it is difficult to diagnose. But there it is—marked. Orange groves of Florida sound as alluring as the isles of the Lotus Eaters when, during a cold snap, it is thirty degrees below zero. But away from the plains a man recalls the tranquil nights and the luminous stars, and the riding in the clear air. Curling, skating, "socials," surprise parties, make up part of the fun. Where there are hills or mountains, ski-ing is added to the list of winter sports. In a land of big distances men soon come



NET TAKINGS OF THE PRINCE RUPERT HERRING FISHERIES

The herring fleet has just returned from a successful expedition, and the process of unloading the catch begins. The man armed with the long pole propels the net which has been filled with the fish over the huge truck, in which a comrade stands thigh-deep to pack them. The lad in the foreground pulls the cord releasing the fish, and the operation is then repeated

Photo, "Canada"



MACHINE AND MAN WORKING SIDE BY SIDE IN COLLECTING THE NEW POTATO CROP

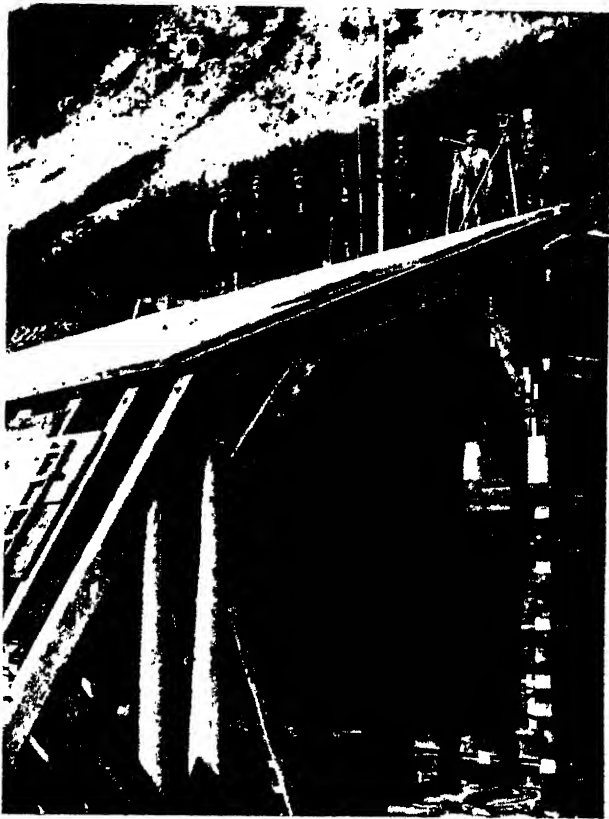
In the wake of the horse-drawn machines used to cut down the stalks and turn up the potatoes comes the busy army of gatherers. Armed with large wicker baskets they collect the newly exposed potatoes which they place in barrels similar to those seen standing behind the white-hatted foreman. The barrels are loaded on to carts drawn by slowly moving oxen which lumber off with their load to swell one of Canada's greatest vegetable export industries

Photo, Eering Gallowsay

to think little of distance. There are the Fall Fairs, the Round-Ups, the Stampedes—various names for days of relaxation in the autumn. Automobiles go almost everywhere, across prairies where there are no roads, through mountains where the roads are of the roughest. They are mostly strong cars with a high clearance, fitted to cope with the conditions.

The charm of the mountains at all seasons, scenically, is great. There is the exquisite spring with clear airs, and birch and tamarack showing a tinge of palest green among the deep green of the pines and firs. There are the basking summers, with their coloured butterflies and dragon-flies, their wild flowers and humming-birds, their tremendous profusion of edible wild berries. Then all who care for camping out, and can camp out for holiday, do so. There are the autumns, drifting into Indian summer, one of the most delightful of the seasons, mellow, warm, but not too warm, with cool nights.

Then there is winter, not felt as cold as a thermometer reading of a day's minimum temperature suggests, because of the dryness of the snow and of the air and the frequency of sunshine. All the trees have their white lace-work, and every stump is topped by a pom-pom of snow. In more humid lands that lace-work and that pom-pom would quickly drip away into damp, cold slush. The winter heating appliances are such that comfort is attained even in log-cabins, or it might be more to the point to say even in frame houses, for the log-cabin is notably cool in summer, cosy in winter.



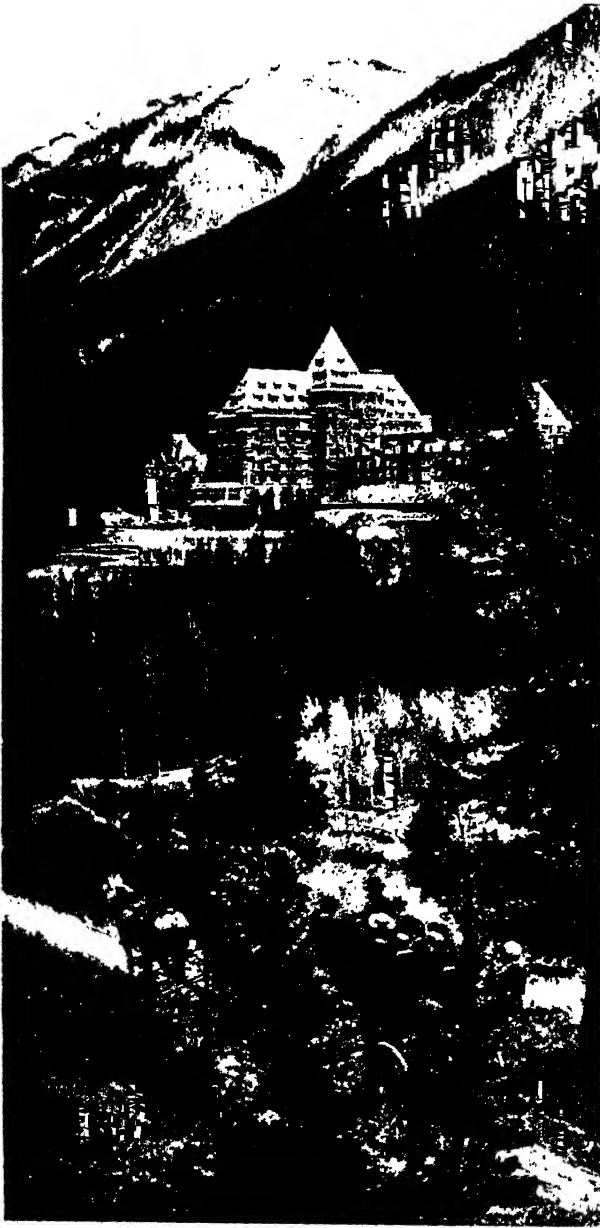
WOODEN BARRIERS AGAINST WINTER SNOWS

These railway surveyors have found a vantage-point on one of the snow sheds bordering the railway. Strongly built of heavy beams the snow sheds break the fall of snow avalanches from the hills in their rear, thus keeping clear the permanent way

Photo, Canadian Pacific Railway

The country is vast, but there is a remarkable train service. In Saskatchewan are many ranchers who recall easily the days when they used to make up sleighing parties to sleigh their wheat all the way from as far as where is now the busy little city of Saskatoon to the main, and at that time the only, line of the Canadian Pacific Railway. Look at the map as it is to-day—a very spider's web of railway lines serving all sections. As soon as a new section shows that it will cover costs, a spur-line is flung into it.

The service of lake and river steamers is excellent. In the matter of comfort there is something of the romantic and certainly of contrast, voyaging down the great rivers of the West or



MOUNTAIN ELYSIUM FOR JADED WORKERS

At the eastern edge of the Rocky Mountains in Alberta, Banff, with its fine climate and surroundings, is famous as an inland health resort. On the Canadian Pacific Railway, it caters for innumerable visitors to its pine-girt fastnesses

Photo, Canadian Pacific Railway

They are chiefly large flat craft with encased stern-wheel to prevent contact with snags, trees fallen in the great woods and washed by the creeks into the main lakes and rivers.

Temperatures vary considerably, but it is erroneous to believe that the weather gets steadily, by definite degrees, colder the farther north one goes. Altitude has much to do with temperature. Very definite evidence of this is seen by those who climb the mountains of the West. In the Indian summer it is possible to leave a warm valley where, though perhaps the humming-birds have gone, the dragon-flies are still shuttling to and fro, and to mount up into snow and see icicles hanging from the tassels of the tall cedars, all in a few hours.

The presence or absence of forests has also a great influence on weather conditions, as the North-West Indians knew in the old days, when they were wont to herd their horses into hilly and wooded country during cold spells on the plains. Along the foothills of Alberta there often blows in winter-time a warm wind out of the West, called the chinook, which will uncover the grass over wide stretches. This wind also affects the Upper Columbia Valley

on the lakes of British Columbia, looking out at primitive wilderness from the saloons of these boats, with their comfortable divans, their pleasant dining-rooms, their excellent cuisine.

where the bench-lands, the flat-topped lower portions, like escarpments for the foothills of Rockies and Selkirks, are often cleared of snow in winter. Southern British Columbia, near the

CANADA & THE CANADIANS

coast, has a winter climate much like that of Devon or Cornwall.

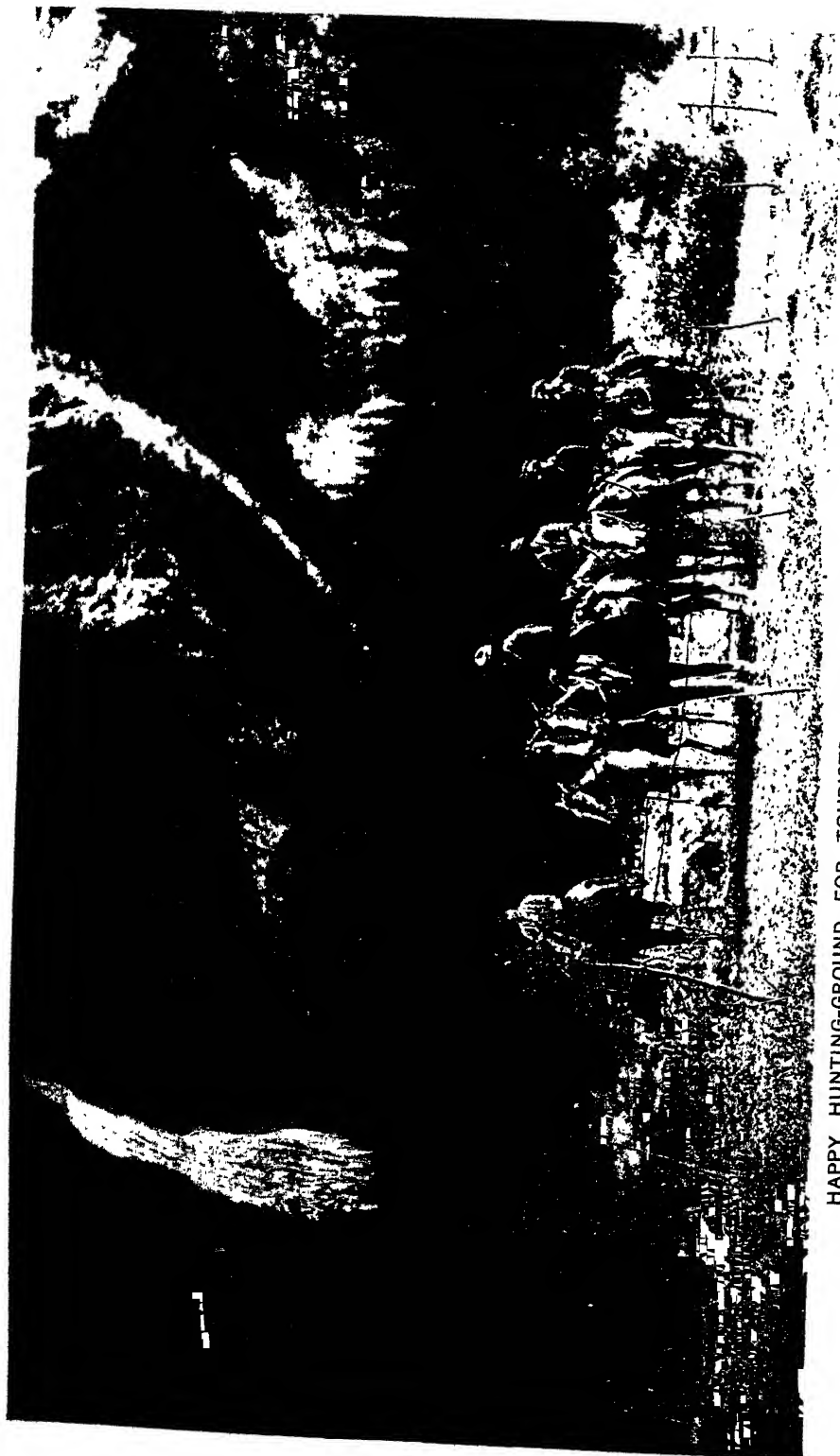
The most severe cold is encountered on treeless plains: but when one hears of exceptional degrees of frost being experienced, it has to be remembered that these only last for a few days. It would be as sensible, hearing of a heat-wave in summer, to jump to the conclusion that it lasted from May to October. It was this dread of the cold that, in the earlier days, dissuaded many eastern farmers from moving into the North-

West Territories. The fur trade, which pleased the Hudson's Bay Company, and was doubtless fostered by them in the fur trade coming out of the North-West, for with settlement the fur trade would diminish, the fur-bearing game retreat. There are often days of great heat in summer; there are days of great cold in winter, and frostbite is not uncommon when proper precautions are neglected. But expeditions in mid-winter in the Far North are only made by men familiar with the conditions,



WHERE SURE FOOT AND STEADY HAND ARE ESSENTIALS OF SAFETY

With his household gods lashed securely to the pack pony following him, this prospector is setting out on the mountain trail fresh fields to conquer. Laboriously tracing their path through the rugged heights, trails such as this, fashioned by the pioneers of the past, afford a safe though rough passage for those who are accustomed to the precipitous slopes that border them



HAPPY HUNTING-GROUND FOR TOURISTS AMONG CANADA'S ROCKY MOUNTAINS

Tourists delight in the rugged grandeur of the Rockies, and thousands visit the Yoho Park on the western slopes of the great mountain range. In the Kootenay district of British Columbia, on the railway, it affords unlimited scope for expeditions on horseback or afoot. Above, a party of tourists is about to set off under a guide, whose sheepskin leggings and Stetson hat appear so well in keeping with the rough splendour of the surrounding scenery

Photo, Canadian Pacific Railway



REST AND TRANQUILLITY UNDER THE TREES AT THE EDGE OF THE ROCKIES

The party has pitched camp in a clearing in the Jasper Forest Park that skirts the Rocky Mountains in the vicinity of the Yellowhead Pass. Most of the party are content to await in idleness the arrival of the midday meal which the camp cook on the right of the photograph will prepare when he has finished adjusting his apron. The table under the trees with its bright cloth and the presence of the dogs lend a homely touch to the scene.

Photo, Canadian National Grand Trunk Railway



MAKING A PORTAGE IN MANITOBA

When his course upstream is barred by falls or rapids the voyager brings his canoe ashore, removes everything from it, and carries boat and cargo overland to a point above the obstacle where he can reload and refloat it

telephone wires tangle the settlements together and prevent the need for many a journey that the early immigrants found essential.

Stories are not uncommon of men coming out even of the Far North (Hudson's Bay Company men, and the like), where they had scarce a day's illness, and going to milder regions where they were attacked by pulmonary troubles, subject to chills, and felt the cold more, despite the assurance of the thermometer and of those accustomed to a humid winter that it was not cold at all! And the summing up of the climatic conditions, even, or one might say especially, in the North-West, where the cold is at times in mid-winter, for two or three days on end, severe, is that their chief effect seems to be the production of a hardy and stalwart race.

conversant with the ways of life. People attire themselves in keeping with the weather, summer and winter.

Zero weather, or even a few degrees below, is to most a great delight exhilarating, joyous. It has to be remarked that the sun is much more often seen in the North-West in winter-time than in more humid lands. Men working out of doors on average winter days will often discard coat and draw off gloves. The sun is warm upon them, despite the snow. Sun-tan in winter would seem strange in Britain.

Long exposure to cold, with insufficient nourishment is a different matter. But with the settling of the country the occasion for long and perilous journeys in inauspicious weather decreases. Railways stretch over the land. The

The following list gives the principal religious sects of Canada arranged in order of precedence according to the number of adherents: Roman Catholics, Presbyterians, Methodists, Baptists, Lutherans, Greek Church, Jews, Menonites, Congregationalists, Doukhobors.

Writing of a land in which more than half of the inhabitants are engaged in agricultural pursuits, agriculture should take first place in a summary of the labour of the people. The vast stretch of country extending west of Winnipeg through Manitoba and Saskatchewan, and into the Edmonton district of Alberta, comprises hundreds of miles of almost unbroken wheat cultivation, and promises to be the greatest wheat-field in the world. The wheat-belt lies near the great railroads, at the stations



CANADA: ERSTWHILE FREE RANGERS OF THE PRAIRIE

Though settled now in reservations, many Canadian Indians preserve unchanged their distinctive costume of fur and leather and beads, and the romantic glamour of their old nomadic life.



along which stand the immense elevators in which the grain is stored until it can be carried by water and rail to the port of shipment. The shortage of elevator space is one of the gravest difficulties confronting Canada's agricultural future, and although the situation is being eased by the development of the flour-milling industry, the problem can only be solved by increasing the railroad accommodation during the short period when open-water carriage is available.

Oats form an important crop, but barley is not widely grown. The question of continuous cropping is one that receives constant attention, but to which no general answer can be given. While it is certain that no land can stand perpetual cropping, it is not easy to say how the assistance at present given by mere summer fallowing, supplemented in the middle and southern states by the ploughing of green crops, can be increased. Clover does not flourish in Manitoba, and fertilization of the vast grain area by stockyard manure is a practical impossibility. Time will bring the solution of these as of all other practical problems. Meanwhile, the wheat-belt is Canada's richest asset.

Mixed farming on the sectional unit of 640 acres, and still more on half and quarter sections, is largely engaged in throughout Canada, and immense capital is invested in dairy-farming, cattle-ranching and horse-raising, especially in the Farther West.

Not a province of the Dominion but knows the sound of the muffled woody echoes of the axe-clips and the rasp of the cross-cut saw. The sound ceases. There is a call of: "Timber!" then a moment's lull, followed by a preliminary crackling of twigs, a rushing sound, a subdued rending, a snap, a dull thud. Another tree is down. There is the coughing of the donkey-engine as, chains affixed, the tree is drawn away on the first stage of its journey from the silent places where it has grown, a tall home of woodpeckers and squirrels, to become mast, telegraph pole, planks for floors or walls, window-sash or door, furniture, or to be cut into match blocks and shipped



JOHN HENRY OF FORT GARRY

He is factor at Lower Fort Garry, one of the historic trading posts of the Hudson's Bay Company. Until 1870 a mere village, it was the nucleus from which Winnipeg and the Province of Manitoba developed

Photo, Hudson's Bay Company

CANADA & THE CANADIANS

in that state to the match factories. To this end men work in the winter woods, clad in Mackinaw coat, wearing thick woollen socks outside the trousers, reaching to the knees, and gum-rubber boots. The snow is so dry (in many parts it is impossible to make snowballs of it) that these socks excellently serve to shed the snow and to keep the wearer warm.

In the spring the rivers and creeks carry the logs down upon their way to the saw-mills. A hardy body of men are those who wield picaroon, canthook, and peevie in this calling. By lake-sides, or by broad river-sides, down the tributary streams of which these logs are washed, or, in the absence of sufficient natural water, flumed, a series of logs chained together makes what is called a boom. Within its confines the logs are gathered, eventually to be rafted away mill-wards. Come then the last

stages; they are hauled up a skidway at the mill's end and, on a moving platform, approach the saws. These come up through slits in the moving steel belt, or platform. The operators have their notes for the day regarding the lengths and thickness of sawn timber wanted. Up come the saws. They hum, they scream, the sound rises shrill, then dwindles to a hum again. Another tree is no more a tree, no more a log, but lumber.

The chief centres of the lumber industry are in Ontario, Quebec, British Columbia, New Brunswick, Nova Scotia, Saskatchewan, Manitoba, Alberta, Prince Edward Island, and Yukon. The mills number between three and four thousand.

A government forestry department attends to the questions of timber limits, forest reserves, reafforestation, guarding against fire, and fire-fighting. It must not

be thought that all fires are the result of incendiarism, or of carelessness of campers regarding the extinguishing of their fires. Far from it. In lightning storms not followed by rain, fires frequently break out. In a dry summer the haze of these bush fires often hangs along the great valleys of the Rockies and Selkirks, so that the peaks are invisible and an acrid odour is in the nostrils miles from the scene of conflagration.

From the cod fisheries of the great banks off Newfoundland, and the lobster canneries of the Atlantic sea-board, across to the salmon canneries of the Pacific coast, and the whaling regions of the Arctic, there is all the romance of reality.

Fresh fish from the Pacific coast, in their season, sell in the markets of Montreal and New York, carried all the



CHIEF BEN CHARLES

In his war paint he presents the romance of the West as it actually was. He holds his club in his left hand and in his right the coup stick symbolising his personal bravery and honour

Photo, Hudson's Bay Company



TWO VARIATIONS OF CROWNING GLORY AMONG THE STONEY INDIANS

With deft fingers, the old chief adds the finishing touches to his squaw's *al fresco* toilet on their Banff reservation. The pride which the smiling old lady takes in her neatly-parted, oiled hair, is only excelled by that of her spouse in his top-hat. Tastefully adorned with a band of gold braid, bearing his name in white letters, it is one of his most cherished possessions

Photo, Canadian Pacific Railway

way across the continent in refrigerator cars. Fish caught in their season off the Atlantic coasts sell in the markets of Winnipeg and the cities of the Middle Western states. Yet fish naturally frozen are considered better than fish artificially frozen. Whitefish, pike, yellow pickerel, and other fish are caught through holes in the ice. They are thus frozen as soon as taken, and can be shipped long distances in cold storage. The cured fish of Canada, chiefly

cod, haddock, ling, pollock, mackerel, salmon, go to markets as far away as in the West Indies. The salmon canneries of the Pacific coast are world-famous. They employ a vast number of men. In some years the native Indian has outnumbered the white in this work. Chinese and Japanese by hundreds are also thus employed. It is an unforgettable sight to see the salmon running, when looking from a bridge or a cliff, above one of

CANADA & THE CANADIANS

their favourite waters. In their thousands they pass, close as gold-fish in an overcrowded bowl, but they are of silver, a changing pattern of silver under the water. Of the British Columbia pack 72.8 per cent. are exported; 27.2 per cent. the Dominion itself absorbs. Apart from those taken for the canneries, a great number, of which no statistics can be gathered, are caught by the Indians and the settlers, and smoked for food supply. Halibut is another fish that brings a large revenue. They are mostly purchased from individual boat owners, who set out chiefly from the ports of Vancouver and Prince Rupert.

In the great Dominion, and especially in the West of it, men are inclined much less than in the Old Country to attach themselves to one calling. A man may work in the mines for a part of the year, or in logging camps or saw-mills, and also own a boat in which, his own master, he goes to the halibut fishing. The fish are exported fresh, salted, and smoked. In inland waters a great deal is done in the whitefishing. Formerly only the great lakes were fished for that market, but now the lakes of the North also have their whitefishers for the larger markets. The total value of Canadian fish taken has averaged



HARDY INHABITANTS OF THE FRIGID YUKON TERRITORY

Before the rush of whites to the Klondike on the discovery of gold in 1896, the few Indians who occupied the most westerly of Canada's northern territories existed by fishing and trapping. But with the mushroom growth of camps and settlements most of them found employment as camp followers and soon adopted the clothing of their masters, which, though less picturesque, is certainly warm and serviceable in the severe cold of Yukon winters

Photo, C. L. D. Maxwell



DARK-HUED NIMROD CARVED IN LIVING BRONZE

The lithe figure of this young chieftain of the Blackfeet tribe, posed upon his bare-backed steed, presents a picture of supple grace worthy of a Rodin. Renowned for their skill and prowess as hunters, the Blackfeet Indians of the Algonkian stock who inhabit the plains of Alberta, are rapidly decreasing before the inroads of white civilization

annually, of recent years, about £10,250,000.

Many years ago a common sight in the mountains of the West was that of a man, generally slouch-hatted and dusty, trudging along before a laden pack-horse. The load of the horse was a small tent, a ground sheet, flour, bacon, and other foods, axe, pick, shovel, washing-pan. This was the prospector, drawn from all lands, all social strata. Sometimes the horse had to be left behind, the quest going on by canoe in summer and dog-sleigh in winter. From months to years these men would be gone from their jumping-off place.

Their supplies, purchased there, would fail, and they would then live on the country, fishing, hunting, collecting edible roots and berries for their larder, and building themselves log-cabins to spend the winter months in when the snows came. Or at a Hudson's Bay Company's post they would again outfit and pass on, looking for floats in the ravines and, a float found, looking for another to give direction of the mother lode, or washing the sand of creeks for indication of the presence of gold-dust. The latter variety of mining, placer-mining, can be undertaken with very little capital—hence it is called,



FAREWELL TO THE BRAVE: BLACKFEET GOING TO SPEED A WARRIOR TO THE HAPPY HUNTING-GROUNDS

When an Indian dies his body is washed and dressed in his best attire. Then, supplied with bow, quiver, and shield, pipe—in life his messenger of peace—and 40b4000, knife, flint and steel, and provisions enough to last him a few days on the journey which he is to perform, the dead man is escorted by mounted braves to his final resting place, and his spirit fares on to the happy hunting-grounds



BLACKFEET BRAVES AND MEDICINE MEN MET IN SOLEMN CONCLAVE

Seated on a low wall of stone and wrapped in their many-colored blankets, they are met to discuss some point of tribal law. The redskins have a debate, and many and long are the pow-wows which are summoned by the chiefs. Although influenced in many ways by European customs they still cling tenaciously to their old nomenclature, and such names as Medicine Owl, Two Guns, and Cream Antelope are borne by members of the above group

CANADA & THE CANADIANS

in the vernacular, poor man mining—but ore-bodies require capital to work them, and entail the service of crushing plant, concentrator, smelter.

Formerly, the discoverer of a high-grade body of ore could sell his discovery outright for a large sum to a mining company. Now it is more usual for capital to lease from him his claim for a period of years with the option of renewal of tenure.

The well-known Silver King and Bonanza ore fields of Kootenay, British Columbia, were found by two half-breeds who were looking for strayed horses. There is in that country a species of game-bird called fool-hen,



DEAR BURDENS ON MOTHERS' BACKS

Indian cradles are beautifully ornamented with designs, embroidery, and tinkling trinkets for the baby to play with. When travelling on horseback the infant's arms are fastened inside the bandages to safeguard it in case of a fall

which can be very closely approached—close enough to allow of a well-aimed



CAMPED ON THE PLAINS: A BLACKFEET FAMILY AT HOME

Elementary as its construction is, a Blackfeet wigwam is a comfortable enough home. It is remarkable for the ease with which the buffalo-hide walls can be taken down, packed on the supporting pine poles, and so drawn by a horse to the site of a new encampment



PRIZE PAPOOSES PACKED IN SHOES

This baby competition illustrates the squaws' method of carrying their children about. The baby is bandaged to a board and set erect in a shoe-like cradle, supported on the mother's back by broad straps.

all in a row, and the first runner-up, who had supported up on his back a fishing-tackle. On these half-blooded squaws, fool-hens in a tree and filling his pockets with stones, ere he near to throw. The cast was successful; but to that bird-talking there was an unexpected sequel. On his return, while cleaning out his pocket, he was observed by a white man conversant with mineralogy, who inquired: "Where did you get these little stones?" The answer led to a return to the scene and the staking of claims.

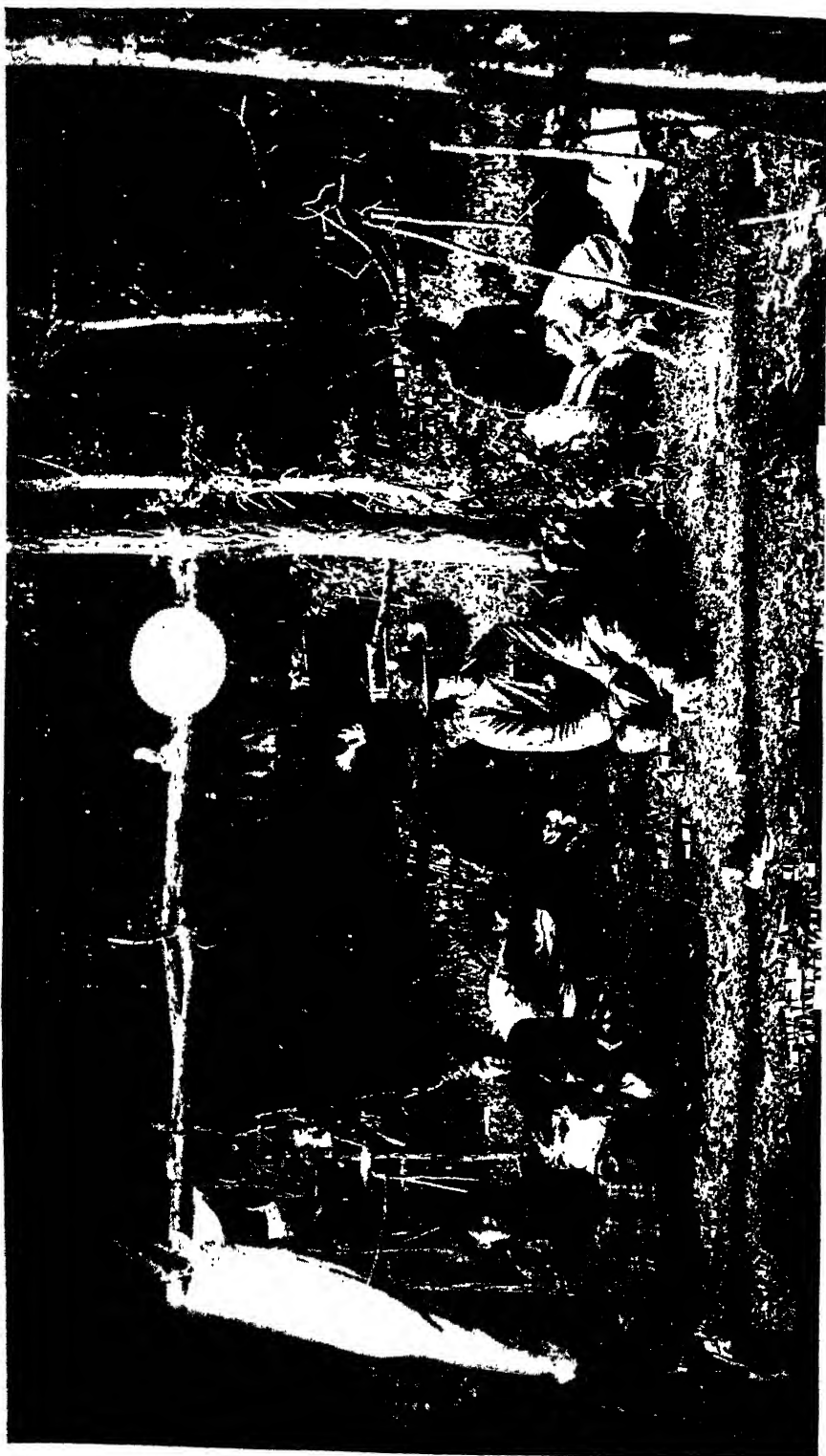
stick or stone saving expenditure of Often a curious history lies in the a cartridge. A cartridge is valuable name of a mine as in the name of a



TENTED FIELD OF STONEY INDIANS AMONG THE PINEWOODS OF BANFF

Unlike the canvas tents of civilization, the wigwams or tipis of the Indian require no guy ropes to support them. Strong poles, lashed together at the top, form the skeleton of a cone, over which skins are stretched to form the covering. Many of the wigwams are painted with totem designs.

Photo, S. Noble, Banff



ROUGH AND READY RESIDENCE OF CHIPPEWAY INDIAN FAMILY OF MIXED BLOOD

A few boards, supported by a couple of trees, a sheet in place of walls, and the dwelling of this Chipewyan or Ojibway family is complete. Of Algonkian stock the natives have intermixed freely with both British and French settlers and are well developed mentally. They show a decided liking for European clothing, but, as this photo suggests, are content with the most meagre habitations

city. Another British Columbia mine, the Seven-Up, was so called because two buyers wanted it, and each was willing to pay the same price. The prospector who had it for sale suggested that they should take a pack of cards and play a game of seven-up to decide to which he should sell. So it was done; and the name records a little incident typical of the ways of "excitements." One of the most celebrated excitements or gold-strikes, as such discoveries are called, was in the Cariboo country. Others were the Wild Horse Creek rush and the Yukon excitement. Yet another, more recent, at Cobalt, in Ontario, brought men from all over the world in the way such discoveries always do. In 1920-21 new discoveries of petroleum in the Mackenzie river basin took many oil-seekers into the northland. The Imperial Oil Company staked nine miles on each side of the river not far from Fort Norman.

Canada so far has paid more for imported minerals than she has obtained from her mines. The annual mineral production for the past few years has averaged over £30,000,000.

With development of the country and the constant extension of transport facilities, the mineral production must inevitably greatly increase, considering the Dominion's natural wealth of mineral. The area of coal lands in Canada is estimated at 111,160 square miles. Quebec is believed to supply about 80 per cent. of the world's asbestos. The largest nickel mine in the world is the Creighton, near Sudbury, Ontario. It produced more than half of the world's output of nickel in 1918. The Britannia (in British Columbia) is the world's largest copper mine; and the Hollinger (Ontario) is one of the world's richest gold workings.

The two leading fur trading companies of Canada are the Hudson's Bay Company, or, to give it its original and high-sounding name, that is like a bugle-call, the Governor and Company of Adventurers of England Trading into Hudson's Bay, and Revillon Frères. Besides these companies there are individual traders known as free traders,



PATWAWANTIN, AN OJIBWAY

His tribe, of Algonkian stock, is settled mainly in Manitoba and Ontario, this man coming from the Lake Superior district. Many of the Ojibways are the equals of the average whites among whom they dwell

Photo, Hudson's Bay Company

and there are several large companies, both American and Canadian, with elaborate systems for collecting the skins annually from these widely scattered individual trappers. Nevertheless, the hold of the Hudson's Bay Company and, to a lesser degree, that of Revillon Frères, amounts almost to monopolies. Considering that the

CANADA & THE CANADIANS

Hudson's Bay Company was founded in 1670, it is easily understandable that the Indians look upon it as the company par excellence. Although making large profits, it has been in the habit of assisting the Indians in lean years, not necessarily philanthropically, but in the way of a long-headed business concern. Accommodations are usual by traders

country to secure the furs and make deals for their delivery.

Apart from those whose chief means of support is in furs, there are many men who spend part of the year in other callings, and in the winter repair to their trap line—to use the professional term—much in the way that men go to the great West Coast halibut fishing

Most farmers who take up land far from what may better be called sophistication than civilization—for even in the wilds there is assuredly as high a standard of courtesy and humanity as in the cities—are of a type which can turn a hand to many things. Horse-raising, wheat-growing, placer-mining, fur-getting—they go from one to the other as the seasons and conditions allow.

In 1920 the Canadian Fur Auction Sales Company revived the Montreal fur sales which a hundred years ago it was their wont to hold there, and their intention is to continue the practice annually.

The daily auctions extended over one week and realized many millions of dollars. The chief buyers were in the United States and in the United Kingdom. Before the Great War the principal fur sales were held in London, New York, St. Louis, and Novgorod,

in Russia. During the War the fur sales centre shifted to the United States. The Hudson's Bay Company then made sales upon sealed tender in Montreal. A fur auction was held at the Pas, Manitoba, on the edge of the fur country, in 1919, and the same year saw the flotation of the Canadian Fur Auction Sales Company—capital £1,000,000—to revive the annual Montreal sales. So now again one of



ADAPTATION TO NEW CONDITIONS

These are Kootenay Indians, some five or six hundred of whom are settled in British Columbia. Of Kitunahan stock they have a small admixture of French and English blood. Under British control they show a tendency to increase

in any land of temporary embarrassments but ultimate certainties.

Competition has changed methods during the years. No longer in all parts can traders sit quietly waiting the sound of the dog-sleigh bells coming over the winter snow, or the click of the canoe poles and hail of the paddlers in summer, with little more to do than open the store to the arrivals. Now in many parts runners go out to the fur



ARCHERS ALL IN A ROW AT TARGET PRACTICE

The red-skin of to-day is loth to break with the ancient customs of his people and delights to follow the habits and customs of his forefathers. These cowboys of the North-West still enjoy practising with their bows, and even if their arrows are no longer "tipped with flint and winged with feathers," the same love of archery, known to Hiawatha, remains with them in the present

Photo, Publishers' Photo Service



DISCIPLE OF WHITESKIN CIVILIZATION IN ALBERTA

While in outlying districts a few Indians still lead their old free life, trapping and hunting, most of them are taking to agriculture and compete quite successfully with their white neighbours. Gone are the blanket and deerskins of former days, and most Indians now wear the serviceable but unpicturesque European dress and drive the plough over prairies where once they drove the buffalo

Photo, Canadian Pacific Railway



A SAFE PERCH ON MOTHER'S BACK

Engaged on domestic duties about the camp, the Indian mother keeps her child with her for safety. Strapped in its brightly coloured cradle the little one enjoys its trip to the full

the greatest fur sales of the world is likely to be held annually in the chief fur-bearing country, as seems meet.

Before leaving the occupations of Canada mention must be made, however cursorily, of a few of the other important industries. For example—the manufacture of agricultural implements and machinery. Plants for this manufacture are in Quebec, Ontario, Manitoba, Alberta, Saskatchewan, Prince Edward Island, with an output valued, of recent years, at about £8,000,000 annually. The world's largest agricultural implement works are those of the celebrated Massey-Harris Company, at Toronto. The

automobile industry has of recent years had a great impetus. The output of the nine Ontario factories in 1920 was 9,000 per day.

Other important industries are iron and steel, sugar and molasses, harness and saddlery, textiles, woollen and cotton, and ship-building. Canada has fifty ship-yards for the building of steamships, and many lesser yards in all provinces for gasoline launches (motor-boats), for the making of which there are over twenty firms; fifteen of these are in Ontario, which also leads in output of row-boats, canoe-boats, and canoes.

In a country of such vast areas, served by so many lines of railway, and their steamboat connexions on lake and river, it is obvious that a great number of men find employment in transport and navigation work, engineering, locomotive shops, car-building, and allied industries.

Regulations regarding both fishing and hunting vary in the different provinces and are subject to change. Regarding migratory game birds, the control is vested in the Dominion Government. Different regulations regarding the taking of fish and shooting of game apply to residents and to non-residents, or sportsmen visiting to secure trophies.

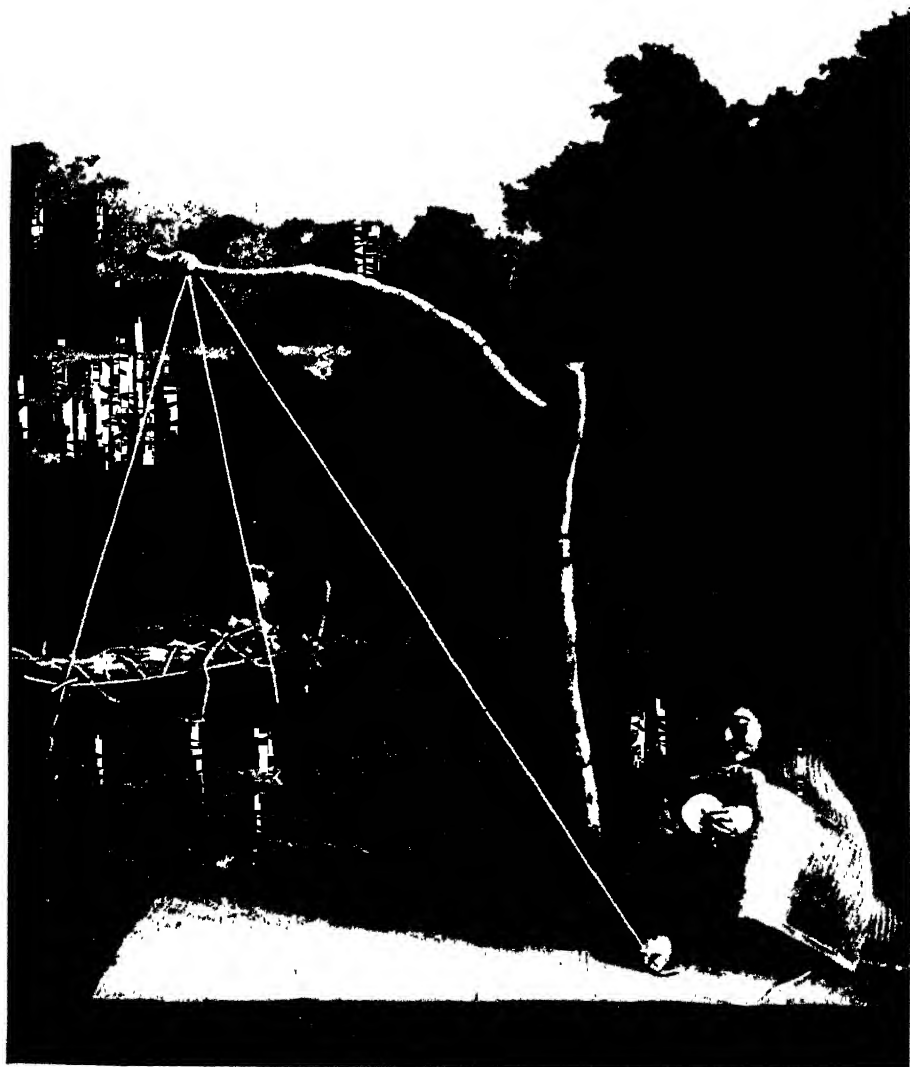
The chief big game, smaller game, and game birds of Canada are as follows: musk-ox and Polar bear in the far north; buffalo, which it is at all times, and wherever found, illegal to kill—a few remain in a wild state in the country about Peace river, in North Alberta,

CANADA & THE CANADIANS

and probably stray through the passes into British Columbia; bear (grizzly and brown), the brown bear in almost all provinces, the grizzly in the Rockies and Selkirk, Alberta, British Columbia, Yukon; caribou, moose, elk, wapiti, antelope, deer--mule deer, white-tail deer—all these wide-spread, the caribou wandering as far north as the Arctic shores; wolf, coyote—the latter wide-

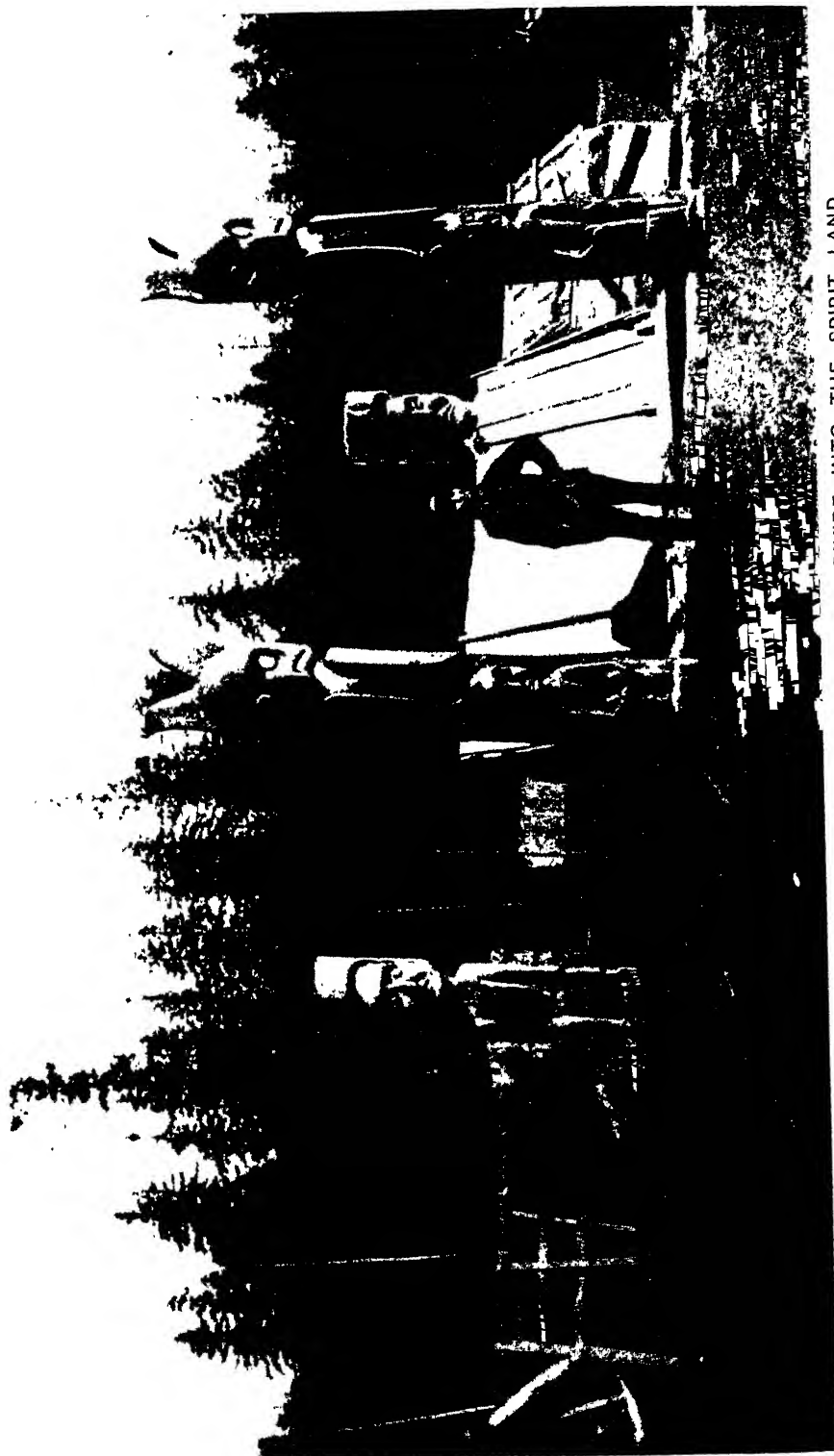
spread on the western plains and in British Columbia. The squirrel, eastward in America, comes no farther north than the New England States; but westward is found in southern British Columbia.

Among the smaller game are beaver, otter, ermine, martin, lynx, hare, rabbit, musk-rat, skunk, wolverine, fox. There are vast numbers of gophers, and of



HUSH-A-BYE BABY ON THE TREE TOP

Mother-love and mother-wit are well developed among the American Indians. On Vancouver Island this cradle is found in use, the mother swinging it gently by means of a cord attached to her toe. The baby is laced to a flat board to keep its back straight—a commendable contrast to the method, illustrated on page 900, employed by Papuan mothers



GUARDIANS OF THOSE WHO HAVE CROSSED THE GREAT DIVIDE INTO THE SPIRIT LAND

Burial ground of the Comox Indians, British Columbia. Totems of the departed, visible emblems of their invisible guardian spirits, are placed near by the place of burial to ensure to the dead warrior a safe journey to the other world. The Indian usually chooses his totem through the medium of a dream vouchsafed to him during his long fasting prior to his initiation into manhood

Photo, American Field Museum, Chicago

squirrels of different kinds, among them that quaint little rodent, the chipmunk, or chipmuck. Game birds are sharp-tailed grouse, pinnated grouse, sage grouse, willow grouse commonly called partridge, snipe, woodcock, pheasant, quail, wild turkey, caper-caillie, duck, geese, brant, rails, widgeon, teal, white partridge (ptarmigan), prairie chicken.

The cities of Canada are no mean cities, and each has its distinctive qualities. There is Montreal, the chief city of the Dominion, a bi-lingual city, the street names and public proclamations being printed in the two languages—French and English. It is both a University city—here being situated the famous McGill University—and a great centre of trade. Here there are head offices of commercial firms with world-wide interests. It is but a day's, or a night's, train journey from the great Atlantic seaboard cities of the United States

—New York, Boston, Portland (Maine). It has seven miles of wharf front of solid masonry, one of the largest, perhaps the largest, floating dry docks in the world, warehouses, storage buildings. The suburbs stretch almost continuously to St. Anne de BelleVue, where is the celebrated Macdonald College. The workshops of the Canadian Pacific Railway at Montreal employ 6,000 men. In 1920, 638 transatlantic vessels arrived at Montreal, of which 460 flew the British flag, and 120 the United States flag.

Toronto (Ontario) has an entirely different atmosphere. Its inhabitants are chiefly of British extraction. Those least alive to the spirit of place feel the difference between these two towns.



QUAINT REGALIA OF COLUMBIAN INDIAN

With small, piercing eyes, prominent nose, and firm chin, the counterpart of this British Columbian abounds among the Indians of Canada. His tribal scars mean as much to him as does the clan's tartan to a Highlander

Photo, Sir Harry Johnston

Traffic in the city's heart is constant and crowded. There is more evidence of what is called hustle. Although Toronto is now far from being a frontier town, an odd air of frontier town remains, of energy, expectancy, fun, even in commerce. From busy Yonge Street to its last suburb of tree-shaded bungalows, one feels that the spirit that is lulling and restful in old cities will not lurk here for generations. The restfulness in these suburban homes is of a different kind. An excellent tramway system extends for miles into the surrounding districts.

Quebec gives the visitor the illusion that he is in some antique city of France. Till comparatively recent years it was a walled city, and much of the old wall

CANADA & THE CANADIANS

remains with slits for musketry fire and embrasures for cannon. Stucco-fronted houses, brightly painted, add to the foreign aspect, splashing Latin colour on the scene. The women at their marketing, if they but wore sabots, would complete the impression of being in Brittany. Shoemaking and the wood-pulp industry flourish, and the trades usual to seaport towns.

Ottawa, Federal capital of the Dominion of Canada, is also a great centre of the lumber industry, buzzing with saw-mills, the Chaudier Falls supplying a great water power. It is generally considered the most picturesque city in the world.

Vancouver, British Columbia, the western terminal city of the Canadian Pacific Railway system, is a city of rapid growth. In 1886 the site of it was a dense forest. In May of that year came its real beginning, and in

July a fire burnt down every house save one. Since then the history of Vancouver has been one of constant growth. Passengers and cargo steamers come and go between Alaska, Honolulu, Japan, China, the South Sea Islands, Australia, the Pacific ports of the States—Seattle, Portland (Oregon), San Francisco—Panama, etc. A large percentage of the Oriental silk trade is negotiated through this city. Besides being a great shipping port and outfitting centre for miners, lumbermen, and prospectors going into the north of British Columbia and Alaska, it is a busy centre for the rich farming country lying along the Fraser river. The world-famous salmon canneries of the Fraser river estuary are also tributary to its wealth.

Victoria, on Vancouver Island, is the capital of the province of British Columbia. Here there are magnificent governmental buildings. Large



ONETIME SAVAGES WHO NOW ARE PEACEABLE CITIZENS

These are Siwash Indians, and their name is a corruption of the word "sauvage," which the early Canadians applied to them. Settled in British Columbia they are engaged for the most part in fishing, fruit-canning, hunting, the lumber industry, prospecting, and acting as guides. Many of them have the good fortune to be exceedingly prosperous people

Photo, Hudson's Bay Company



MEMORIES OF THE PAST: KINNEWANKAN, CHIEF OF THE SIOUX

Among the Sioux tribe were included the finest men, physically, of all the Red Indian peoples, the boldest hunters, and the richest in material possessions in the old days when the country was stocked with buffaloes and wild horses. This chief's costume is of elk skins, beautifully dressed and richly pictured, and his headdress of eagle plumes

Photo, Hudson's Bay Company

commercial houses do outfitting trade for the Yukon, for which it is a jumping-off place. The wide coal areas of Nanaimo lie 139 miles north of the city. At Esquimalt Harbour, two miles away, are large naval storehouses and graving docks.

Halifax, capital of Nova Scotia, has one of the finest harbours in the world, and is one of the most important industrial centres in Canada. When the St. Lawrence is frozen, thus cutting off Quebec and Montreal from the Atlantic, St. John (New Brunswick) and Halifax (Nova Scotia) are the chief seaports of the Atlantic seaboard. Halifax transacts much trade with Europe, the United States, and the West Indies.

St. John, New Brunswick, is Canada's chief winter port, with a \$25,000,000 dry dock and a \$1,000,000 grain-elevator for wheat transport work, as spectacles of man's works; and, as a spectacle of nature's, the celebrated Reversible Falls.

Fredericton, capital of New Brunswick, is one of the prettiest cities in Canada, and though not the oldest, yet one with a kind of elderly charm.

There are many other important cities, old and young, in the Dominion, and the youngest, with the oldest, have infinite possibilities for the future. It is a good phrase with which to close—
infinite possibilities!



FOREGATHERED ROUND THE CHEERING BLAZE TO LAY THE MORROW'S PLANS The
 Forsaking the beaten track for the uncharted wilds, these hardened travellers assemble round a blazing log fire at the end of a day's hard trekking. The
 leader of the party is formulating his plans for the morrow to his attentive audience before the party lies down for a well-earned rest under the wide and starry sky.
Photo, Canadian Pacific Railway

Canada

II. The Making of British North America

By A. G. Bradley

Author of "Canada in the Twentieth Century"

THE coasts of what we now call Canada were known to European explorers, whalers, and fishermen long before Champlain planted his colony beneath the rock of Quebec and founded New France in 1618. The English had acquired Newfoundland chiefly through the gradually enforced authority of their fishing fleets over those of the other nations frequenting it. They also claimed the whole Atlantic coast from Spanish Florida to New England, and were giving a foretaste of forthcoming occupation by their settlements in Virginia. France, by various pioneering exploits up the St. Lawrence, had earned the right to regard all these northern regions as her legitimate sphere. Champlain founded Quebec, and subsequently Montreal, as a frontier trading post at the head of navigation. A small French settlement, too, which proved permanent, had been made on the Bay of Fundy in Acadia (Nova Scotia).

In 1663 French Canada only contained 3,000 souls: fur traders—the fur trade being a Royal monopoly—priests, nuns, soldiers, and adventurers. Louis XIV. then young and ardent and supported by sagacious advisers, took note of the Anglo-American Colonies, growing rapidly in strength and wealth, as compared with the futility of Quebec, so Canada was now taken seriously in hand. Thousands of suitable men and women, mostly from Northern France, were dispatched there, and settled with adequate assistance in the uncleared forests along both shores of the St. Lawrence.

Under the Seigneuries

But the King would have none of the English colonial system, with its freehold lands and self-governing methods. From Montreal to Quebec, speaking broadly, the country was surveyed into seigneuries, and granted to ex-officers, "gentil-hommes," even sold to others of a lower sort.

Thus, a quasi-noblesse was created, the peasants being allotted lands within these forest tracts, holding them as vassals, subject to trifling rents and certain feudal dues. Under this system the seigneurs, though a distinct caste, remained mostly very poor, while the peasantry acquired a relative condition of comfort. Neither class had any voice in the government. This was absolute and vested in a Royal governor, aided by an intendant, and a

bishop as head of the Church. The Crown, however, kept both Church and State under strict surveillance. Higher education was provided by monasteries and convents, while the populace remained illiterate. Few, if any Protestants were allowed in the Colony. The whole able-bodied population were enrolled in a militia, and had to march, when ordered, against Indian or New England foes. Outside the seigneuries about a fourth of the population were employed in the fur trade around far scattered posts, extending even then to the far north-western prairies and into the Ohio valley.

In 1744, the first shot was fired in the Ohio woods, which led to the eventual extinction of the French power in North America. For the French, not content with Canada proper and its illimitable western wilderness, had formed the bold scheme of occupying the vast country of the Ohio and Upper Mississippi, which lay behind the long straggling line of British Colonies facing the Atlantic.

French Plan of Conquest

Behind the undefined western limits of these provinces, from New York to the Carolinas, ran the mountain chain of the Alleghenies; beyond which was a vast no-man's land, traversed by warlike Indian tribes, and sparsely dotted with French trading posts. The French scheme was to hem the British permanently in between the Alleghenies and the sea, and to extend their own domination by degrees over the whole West. Its apparent audacity was tempered by the fact that the English Colonies, though containing a million and a half souls, had no cohesive powers or mutual interests, were busy in peaceful pursuits, and had little appetite for war.

Canada, on the other hand, had a hardy, obedient militia trained to irregular warfare, besides several regular regiments always stationed in the Colony, while hordes of Indian warriors had been won over to their interest. The English Colonies were apathetic and sceptical as to the danger menacing their western expansion. But two or three English governors bestirred themselves, and a few trifling skirmishes behind their present frontiers, where the French were already building forts, aroused some genuine alarm, and at the same time showed the incapacity of the colonists to meet the coming crisis. In 1755, a British force

crossed the Atlantic and was cut to pieces in the backwoods where Pittsburg now stands. The Western Indians, led by Frenchmen, then fell with torch and scalping-knife upon the English frontier, and the war began in earnest in America and, concurrently, in Europe.

For a time the French had the advantage till Pitt, coming into power, threw all his energies into the struggle, which henceforward became one, not of defence of British interests, but for the conquest of Canada. The capture of Quebec by Wolfe, in 1759, sealed the doom of Canada, which was finally conquered by Amherst and evacuated by the French forces in the following year. The Canadians, sick of war, returned with alacrity to their farms, under the temporary administration of British officers till the European peace of 1763, which formally made over the whole of French North America, except New Orleans and Louisiana on the Gulf of Mexico, to the British Crown.

French Canada a British Colony

Nova Scotia had been already ceded to Great Britain in 1713, save Cape Breton, its north-eastern portion, retained by the French, including their great fortress of Louisburg, which was finally captured and destroyed by an English fleet and army in 1758. Halifax in Nova Scotia had been founded by the British Government in 1749, but the hostility of the French Acadians, descendants of the early settlers, assisted by the local Indians, had checked inland settlement, till the forcible expulsion of most of the former in 1755 opened the province to British settlers. French Canada now became a British Colony, but with no anticipation of British settlers, beyond the soldiers, officials, and merchants resident in Quebec and Montreal. The intention was to govern the Canadians, who numbered about 70,000, generously, and to win their allegiance. They were guaranteed their language, religion, and old laws, so far as compatible with the altered conditions. Seigneurial tenure was retained, though slightly mitigated. The Catholic Church establishment was preserved, and the Colony administered by a governor and council nominated by the Crown.

Results of American Revolution

In 1775 the American revolutionists invaded Canada, when the noblesse element proved actively loyal, but the peasant militiamen, previously tampered with by American secret agents, refused to march. There was but a handful of regulars in the Colony, and the Americans over-ran it right up to the walls of Quebec. The governor, Sir Guy Carleton, a brave

and able soldier, with a motley collection of soldiers and sailors with British and French volunteers, about 1,700 in all, defended the city through the winter against superior American forces, till the arrival of a British army in May drove them out of Canada, not to return during the war.

At the close of the Revolutionary war about 100,000 American loyalists, who had sympathised with or fought for the Crown, found themselves expelled from their country and their property confiscated. This cruel measure brought its own retribution, for it created British Canada, an insurmountable barrier, as it proved, to the Americans' cherished ambition of absorbing the northern half of the Continent. In 1782, some 40,000 of these refugees, the rest having dispersed in penury to various oversea countries, were collected at New York, prior to its evacuation at the peace.

The British public, as too often happens, showed little sympathy, in theory or practice, for those who had fought their battle on distant shores. But the Government did the right thing, despite the inevitable hardships thereby entailed. They offered all such loyalists, as were thereto inclined, free grants of forest land in Nova Scotia, still sparsely settled, but with an established government at Halifax, and in Canada, west of Montreal, a then practically unknown forest wilderness.

United Empire Loyalists

The conditions further included assistance in stock, implements, and provisions. Three millions sterling was also voted as compensation, of which some, at least, eventually got their share. These unfortunate people had little left to them but their actual clothes, with very small pensions to the officers and war-widows. All accepted the Government's offer, for there was no alternative, about 30,000 sailing for Nova Scotia and 10,000 proceeding to the eastern end of Lake Ontario or to Niagara.

In all these regions surveyors had been busy and rough preparations made. There is no space to touch on the early years of intense hardship these valiant people endured, hacking new homes out of the forest. All of them had abandoned comfortable situations. A great many were people of means, family, and influence in their respective provinces. Government arrangements for supplies, too, constantly broke down before such an unprecedented undertaking. But in the end the United Empire Loyalists, as they proudly called themselves, won through, and emerged as the leading element in the provinces of Nova Scotia and New Brunswick, then formed out of it, and little Prince Edward

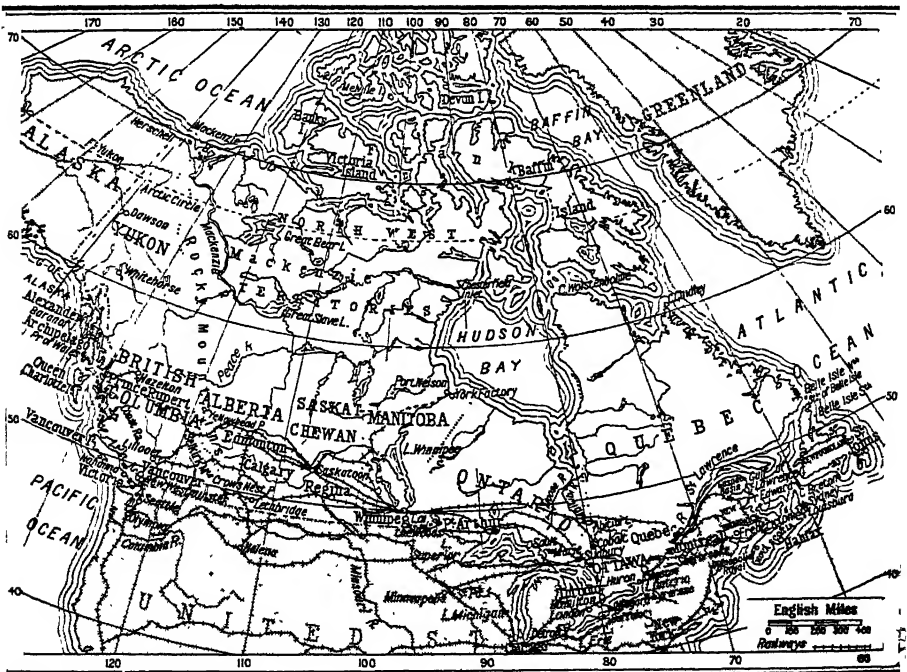
CANADA'S HISTORY

Island. Their later path to prosperity was comparatively smooth, for no racial or religious questions confronted them. Scottish Highlanders, expatriated by the introduction of sheep farming, poured in by thousands, while fishing, ship-building, and ocean trade were here combined with agriculture. But in Canada the French were much perturbed at this great influx of virile, practical heretics, though the regions occupied by them were outside the settled French country. For thousands of immigrants of neutral opinions, and only looking for good lands, followed the pioneer loyalists from the bordering States. So a new province, styled Upper Canada (now Ontario), was created under a lieutenant-governor, with council and elective assembly as in the Maritime Provinces. Many thousand British-American immigrants, too, both loyalists and later arrivals, settled en bloc within the limits, but outside the settlements of the French province, henceforward styled Lower Canada.

It now seemed incumbent to give this last the same representative government as the neighbouring provinces, though her people were by no means ripe for it. With a British minority in the legislature, zealous for practical legislation and material progress, opposed to an inexperienced, reactionary, and jealous French majority, a British governor and council with freely exercised powers of

veto, the two races led a cat-and-dog life. Government in Upper Canada, on the other hand, was mainly controlled by the United Empire Loyalist leaders, who hated and dreaded Republicanism, and suspected with justice the thousands of Americans who had followed them into the country. For it must be noted that, so far, very little immigration had come from Great Britain. When the long-expected American War broke out in 1812 the British Canadians were mainly of American antecedents. In Upper Canada, with its newly-built little capital of Toronto, there were by that time about 80,000 souls. In Lower Canada about 300,000, over five-sixths of whom were French, and in the United States some 7,000,000.

England was then at death grips with Napoleon, and could give little assistance. There were barely 4,000 regular troops in the country, only half of whom were in Upper Canada, which bore the brunt of attack from first to last. Sir Isaac Brock was fortunately lieutenant-governor and commander-in-chief in that province. For he was not only an able soldier but a most popular leader, and had utilised his slender resources with consummate skill. He had only arms for the cream of the United Empire Loyalist militia. These, with about 2,000 regulars and a few hundred Indians, were all he had to oppose the comparatively unlimited



THE DOMINION OF CANADA

number of troops and militia at the disposal of the enemy.

Though the war was ostensibly waged on maritime and trade grievances, its true object was the capture and annexation of Canada. The first two invading forces in 1812 were defeated and captured bodily, Brock falling on the second occasion on Queenston heights, near Niagara. The French-Canadians remained loyal throughout, and the few called out in defence of their province fought admirably. Henceforward for two years the war was waged in bitter, bloody, and destructive fashion, backwards and forwards along the frontier and the great lakes from Montreal to Huron.

Stream of British Immigration

The British regulars, highly disciplined and well led, supported by the valiant sons of the expatriated loyalists, fought with splendid courage against immense odds in men, material, and resources. When 1814 opened, the third year of the war, not a hostile foot remained on Canadian soil; while the peace in Europe released Wellington's Peninsular veterans for service, and 11,000 of these splendid troops arriving during the summer put all anxiety for Canada at an end. Fighting, however, continued throughout that year, the end of which saw peace between the two nations.

It was not till after Waterloo that Canada became a recognized outlet for British immigration. For the peace disbanded thousands of soldiers and sailors and threw thousands of civilians out of work. Canada—that is, British North America—was once more and on a greater scale regarded as the solution of post-war problems. Government took it up with the Army and Navy, and even the civilian workless. Philanthropic societies, land companies, great landowners, and private initiative directed a continual stream of Canadian bound immigrants, which lasted with slight checks for forty years, and only then fell away relatively. Grants of land with the necessary initial assistance was the normal plan.

Racial Strife and Political Reform

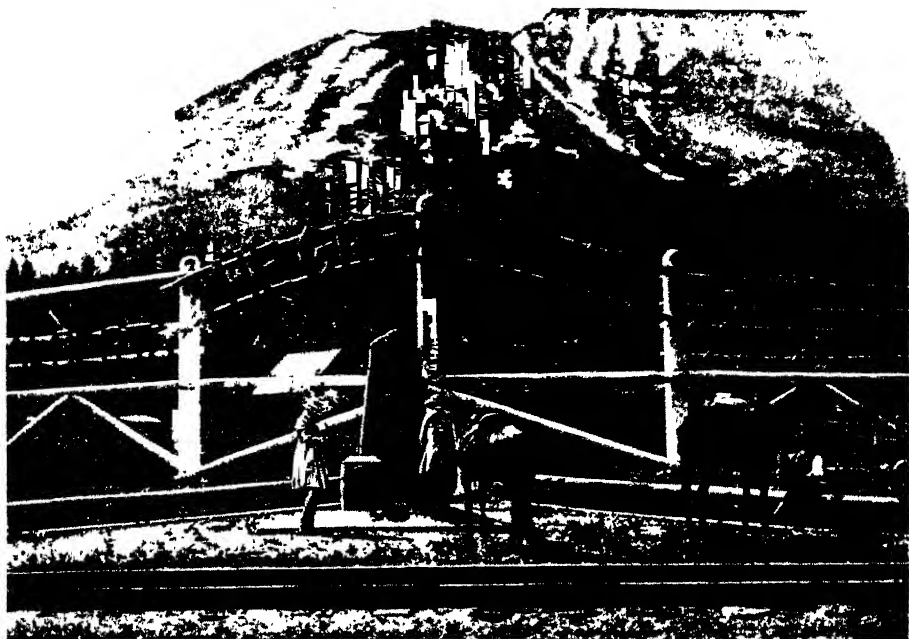
Upper Canada, for good reasons, attracted far the most, the British section of Lower Canada a certain number, Nova Scotia and New Brunswick their proportionate share. The forests fell apace, though with hard toil, while trading and market towns sprang up everywhere. English, Lowland Scots, and Ulster Protestants formed the bulk of the new-comers. No French came to Lower Canada, except a disproportionate number of priests and nuns. Its people were then, as now, mainly the product

of the old seventeenth century immigration, retaining much of the language and traditions of that epoch.

During the first period of this new and rapidly growing Canada, the United Empire Loyalist element in Upper Canada, conservative and distrustful of democracy, proud of their achievements as pioneers and fighters, kept a firm grip of the Provincial Government at Toronto by methods that the populace came to resent. This found expression in an armed rising of a few extremists, more or less republicans, in 1837. It was easily suppressed, but it brought certain abuses into the limelight of Imperial discussion, and, coupled with an almost simultaneous rising among the French-Canadians, brought about a political reconstruction of the country. For Lower Canada, after the war, had relapsed into the old racial friction in its political and social life. Here, too, it was a small band of extremists, not widely sympathised with, under Papineau, a heady theorist, who took up arms for creating a French-Canadian republic. They were easily extinguished, but not without considerable loss of life to the rebels. These disturbances showed that something was wrong in the political state of Canada, so the Constitution of both provinces was suspended, and Lord Durham, an advanced Liberal, sent out as Governor, with special powers. He resigned after a few months, but not before issuing a report famous in Canadian annals.

Union of the Two Canadas

This resulted in a legislative union of the two provinces, under the Governor-General, which abolished former inconveniences, such as conflicting tariffs and duties. It was hoped that the two races, then of fairly equal strength in both Houses, would split into parties on non-racial lines. The promise was also held out of converting representative government, then liable to the frequent veto of the Governor and Council or Upper House, into a Ministry holding office at the will of a parliamentary majority. The union lasted for twenty-five years, and was not a success. The French in the main voted under the influence of their ultramontane and reactionary Church; the slight British majority split into Tories and Liberals, each bidding for the French vote, which was in real accord with neither. The concession of responsible government did not mend matters much. One advantage accrued, however, in the wider experience acquired by the French legislators in the traditions and amenities and inevitable compromises of British parliamentary life, which they had never sufficiently understood. The union, moreover, produced many men



STONE THAT MARKS THE WESTWARD MARCH OF EMPIRE

The chief artery joining the Atlantic to the Pacific coast of Canada is the line of the Canadian Pacific Railway which traces its path through the Yellowhead Pass. The spot where the permanent way passes from Alberta into British Columbia is marked by the granite obelisk seen above

Photo, Canadian Pacific Railway

both British and French, of higher political capacity than had been possible under the former restricted conditions.

Politics apart, however, both provinces developed rapidly in their different ways; the rural French in mere population, retaining their semi-peasant standard of economic life, while the cities of Montreal, with 100,000 population, and Quebec with 40,000, flourished mainly through British commercial activity. The British province made vast strides. The Grand Trunk Railway, with its branches, financed in England, had linked up its various districts; steam had revolutionised both ocean and lake traffic, and Toronto already surpassed Quebec in population. The lumber industry came next to agriculture in importance. Montreal shared the fur trade with the Hudson's Bay Company. Flour mills were numerous; domestic manufactures made considerable progress and assisted the growth of the small market towns. The banking system had been laid on those efficient and sound principles for which Canada has always been distinguished. The numerous British garrisons and the large number of half-pay officers resident in a country then noted for its cheapness of living, were a minor asset to its prosperity and a marked feature of its social life. A sound system of common schools had been adopted in Upper Canada, besides grammar schools and colleges for the

higher classes, and the churches placed on a voluntary footing. There were no great estates. The farming class, which by 1867 had cleared and occupied nearly all the land that was both fertile and accessible, consisted entirely of hard-working yeomen freeholders, with farms of one hundred to two hundred acres, equipped with good buildings. The higher and more educated class lived entirely in cities and towns, following commerce and the professions. There were few rich men, and Canada was considered a poor country, but the standard of simple comfort was high. Much the same conditions obtained in the Maritime Provinces, with a less vigorous agriculture, but active in maritime industries of all kinds. French Canada had its system of common schools under the control of the Roman Catholic Church, its prolific, reactionary peasantry, its lumbering industry, its limited class of merchants and professional men, its monasteries, convents, and colleges; but the seigneuries had been abolished in 1855. The total population of British North America was now over three millions, of which the two Canadas accounted for about three-fourths.

The American Civil War (1861-65), when a rupture with England seemed at one time imminent, had caused great anxiety in Canada, and large reinforcements of British troops had been



COURAGE TRIUMPHANT OVER OBSTACLES: A HEAVY LOAD IN THE RED DEER RIVER REGION

As one travels westward through Alberta the smooth billows of the prairie change into huge brown waves of foothills lashed up against the white steep of the snow-clad Rocky Mountains. In such a region rises the Red Deer river, threading its course among precipitous masses of rock which take every form of rugged and fantastic grandeur, and present obstacles to progress which only the invincible energy of the pioneer spirit could possibly have overcome

dispatched there. After the war, too, bodies of Irish-Americans made raids over the border, which were successfully repelled by the militia.

Union having virtually failed, the often discussed scheme of federation was seriously brought forward, with the active support of the Mother Country. Sir John Macdonald, the greatest statesman in Canadian history, was the soul of the movement, loyally supported by Sir Edward Cartier, the leader of the French, and a majority in both provinces. The difficulty came with the Maritime Provinces, which were quite contented with their present situation, had achieved responsible government, had no racial problems, nor any serious political difficulties. After many conferences in London and Canada, and not without serious hitches, the end was attained, due largely to the persuasive eloquence of Macdonald. The scheme was modelled on that of the United States, without its obvious blemishes. The new Federal Government delegated definite and limited powers to the provinces, reserving the rest to itself, instead of the reverse process, which still causes such anomalies and inconveniences in the United States of America.

Birth of the Great Dominion

The House of Commons was to be composed of elected members from each province in proportion to their population, with readjustment at stated periods. The Upper House, or Senate, was to be nominated for life by the Crown, otherwise the Ministry in power; the Provincial Governments to continue much as before, but with restricted powers and under Lieutenant-Governors of local selection.

The capital of the new Federation, with the Governor-General's residence at the Federal capital, was now moved to the banks of the Ottawa, and named after that noble river. It stands on the borders of Quebec and Upper Canada, now re-named Ontario, and here the new Parliament was opened in 1867. Federation proved a success from the first. Of the domestic problems that henceforward divided its two political parties, Liberal and Conservative, with the French and their ecclesiastical and racial questions cutting often across the line of cleavage, it is enough to say that Free Trade v. Protection was for a generation the largest issue.

But a bigger thing than mere politics was looming on the future of the Dominion, namely, the Great North-West, hitherto outside Canadian vision and the limits of what then comprised Canada. Beyond the supposed sterile and shaggy wilderness that for hundreds of miles shut out settled Ontario from the north and west, lay 800

miles of mostly rich prairie, succeeded by the Rocky Mountains, which in parallel and descending ridges dipped gradually into the Pacific. This latter range, with Vancouver Island, containing a community expanded from an old Hudson's Bay settlement, comprised the recently formed province of British Columbia. The new province had been invited to join the Federation, and had consented if, and when, a railroad should be built across the continent. Fort Garry, a large Hudson's Bay trading station, stood at the eastern fringe of the intervening prairie, and the Federal Government now bought out that company's territorial interests and founded Winnipeg on its site, as the capital of a new prairie province named Manitoba.

Construction of the C.P.R.

This provoked, in 1871, a rising among the French half-breeds and Indians then occupying the country, which was suppressed without bloodshed by a military expedition under the future Lord Wolseley.

The fertility of this vast country was undoubted, but its rigorous climate, persistently exaggerated by the fur traders for obvious reasons, was deeply mistrusted. A trans-continental railroad was now in the air, the dream and hope of a group of enthusiasts, headed by Lords Strathcona and Mount Stephen. But a majority still doubted that a poor country like Canada, or a British public with so far disastrous experience of Canadian railroads, would undertake a new one of 2,000 miles long over a wilderness half sterile and wholly uninhabited. But the railroad advocates persevered, and for years it was the chief battleground of Canadian politics. Its early financial struggles are an only less dramatic story than its unprecedented triumphs of engineering. It was begun in 1878 and completed in 1885. The flow of immigration, both from Canada and Europe, by laborious routes had begun before that, and the North-West with British Columbia had opened for the Dominion another chapter of its history.

Progress of Trade and Manufacture

Between the date of Federation and the end of the century the Dominion progressed steadily, rather than phenomenally like the American West. The prairies proved by experience as healthy for men as productive in crops, but the continuously low price of grain depressed agricultural Canada, and hampered the development of its prairie provinces. Trade and manufacture, however, under a new and steady policy of Protection, prospered, and Canada began to export goods of various kinds as well as her

agricultural produce. During the clearly marked epoch, 1867 to 1900, in which the population increased to five millions, and no serious troubles marked her steady rate of progress, it was universally felt in Canada that this progress was nothing like what it should have been, in view of the boundless opportunities offered to British immigration and capital. The Canadian Pacific Railway had falsified all the gloomy forebodings of its early detractors, and was already on a paying basis.

Canada and the Empire

But compared with that of its neighbour, the United States, the expansion of Canada was too slow. Every Canadian knew it, but nobody quite knew why. Before the 'eighties there had been English parties, and even statesmen, who thought the Colonies a burden, and said so openly, and even in Canada a small party in favour of annexation to the United States, mainly for commercial reasons. Young Canadians by thousands had gone to the American West. But subsequently all this was changed. British statesmen vied with one another in proclaiming the loyalty and value of the greater Dominions. Politicians and journalists traversed Canada, extolling the country in English newspapers and on English platforms. The Dominion Government, with almost unanimous support, in 1896 gave a rebate of 33 per cent. on British goods. But with the British capitalist Canada was not till about 1900 a popular field, though its banks and its government securities stood deservedly high.

The Boer War gave occasion for the Dominion to display its loyalty by dispatching a corps of 10,000 well-equipped British-Canadian volunteers to South Africa, a foretaste of its magnificent achievement in 1914-18. The French-Canadians, in places, demonstrated against this patriotic movement, a mild foretaste of their backwardness at that later momentous crisis. The old provinces of Canada had little cheap land left worthy the attention of immigrants. But their illimitable hinterland forests acquired new value from the paper-pulp industry.

Development of Prairie Provinces

The minerals—coal, iron, silver, cobalt, and the like—already worked with profit, shared the attention of the eager capitalists, British and American, attracted to the country, and of those whom the rising prosperity of Canada was creating within her borders.

Above all, the rapid development of the three prairie provinces—for Saskatchewan and Alberta had been added—and British Columbia had enormously stimulated the already well established manufactures of the old provinces which had the

monopoly of their supply, while thousands of Western American farmers, with skill and capital, passed every year into the Canadian West. Lastly, in this list of the merely leading causes of enrichment, the increasing volume of North-Western grain trade, pouring down by the Canadian Pacific Railway, or by the Lakes Huron and Superior route to the eastern cities, brought wealth to the middlemen, millers, and shippers. The wheat export rose from 70 to 300 million bushels, the population from five to over seven millions. The Canadian Pacific Railway, once thought a wild dream, had been tested beyond its powers of transport, and two more trans-continental railroads were commenced, and have since been more or less completed. Enterprise and science, too, have learned a vast deal more about the illimitable spaces of forest and prairie as yet unexploited.

This rate of speed was but quieting a little when the Great War burst upon the world. Canada's part in it, with her magnificent contribution of some half million soldiers, needs no description here. The comparatively negligible contribution furnished by the two million French-Canadians to the Dominion forces, till conscription, strenuously opposed in Quebec, came into force in 1916, must be noted as a salient fact of this unforgettable epoch.

French-Canadians and the Great War

An ineradicable distaste for war, encouraged by their Church, is the excuse offered and accepted for whatever the British Canadian individually considers it to be worth under the particular circumstances. The immemorial cleavage between the two races, the result of antipathetic temperaments, was assuredly not mitigated by the prevalent French attitude and action in the Great War, when the countries of their allegiance and of their origin respectively were struggling for existence.

But this is, after all, in the main a moral and sectional question. It is not likely to interfere with the future prospects of the Dominion at large. The bulk of the French, too, are confined by instinct and preference to their own province of Quebec, where the British minority outside Montreal steadily declines under a distaste for sacerdotal aggression of a subtle rather than open kind. All real sympathy with France disappeared ages ago, and how much remained could be estimated by the indifference shown towards her in the late war. No useful immigration comes or has come thence for two centuries, while the prolific French-Canadians' superabundance resorts mainly to the New England factories, which employ about a

CANADA'S HISTORY

million of them. It should be said, however, that considerable progress has been made in all branches of industrial life during recent years by the French in their own province, while on the common

meeting-ground of federal politics the amenities are seldom historical, though the races are divided by an invincible and constitutional antipathy with which both seem perfectly satisfied.

CANADA: FACTS AND FIGURES

The Country

Consists of Ontario and Quebec, with maritime provinces Nova Scotia, New Brunswick, Prince Edward Island, three prairie provinces—Manitoba, Saskatchewan, Alberta—and British Columbia, Yukon and North-West Territories. Total area, 3,729,665 square miles (water area about 126,000 square miles); population (1921), 8,772,600. In Quebec three-quarters of the inhabitants French origin; throughout the Dominion over 4,000,000 British, 2,000,000 French, rest Germans, Austrians, Scandinavians, Jews, Dutch, Italians, Russians, etc. About 106,000 American Indians and 3,300 Eskimos.

Of the Indian tribes the largest number are in Ontario, 26,000, Cayugas, Mohawks, Oneidas, Onondagas, Senecas, Tuscaroras, forming the Six Nations. Kootenays, Nahanes, Nootkas, and others in British Columbia number 25,000. In Quebec 13,000, mostly Hurons and Iroquois; in Manitoba 11,000 Chippeways, Crees, Muskegons; in Alberta and Saskatchewan 10,000 Assiniboins, Blackfeet, Bloods, Piegans. Value of lands owned and cultivated by Indians nearly £10,000,000. About 44,000 Indians are Roman Catholics, 20,000 Anglicans, and 13,000 Methodists.

Communications

Over 2,700 miles of canal, river, and lake navigation. Great lakes include Superior, largest in the world, Huron, and Michigan. Eight rivers over 1,000 miles in length, including Mackenzie, 2,525 miles; St. Lawrence, 1,900 miles; Nelson, 1,660 miles; Saskatchewan, 1,205 miles. Laurentian range north-west of St. Lawrence basin; Rocky Mountains towards Pacific coast; Mt. Logan, in Yukon Territory, 19,935 feet; Mt. Robson, in Yellowhead Pass, 13,700 feet.

Railway mileage totals about 40,000 miles, half of which operated by Dominion Government. Largest privately-owned railway, Canadian Pacific, has 13,000 miles of track. Main line of C.P.R. across continent from Vancouver, British Columbia, to St. John, New Brunswick, is 3,367 miles in length.

Government and Constitution

Under British North America Act, 1867, executive authority vested in Governor-General, appointed by the Crown, and Executive Council; legislative power in Federal Parliament; Governor-General has power of veto, but appeal lies to Privy Council.

Senate of 104 life members may be nominated by Governor-General; present number, 96. House of Commons with 235 members, to be increased to 241, elected for five years on basis of one to every 30,819 electors. Women have vote except in Quebec; first woman returned to Parliament at 1921 election.

Nine provinces have local legislatures, and control of administration under Lieut.-Governor Territory of Yukon under chief Executive Officer and elective council. North-West Territories administered by Commissioner and nominated council.

An arrangement was made with the British Government in 1922 by which a Minister Plenipotentiary appointed by the King has charge of Canadian affairs at Washington.

Defence

In charge of Minister of Militia and Council, including four military members. Permanent force of 100,000 maintained, in which service voluntary; all males between 18 and 60 must undergo fortnight's annual training in non-permanent militia. Officers trained at Royal Military College, Kingston. An Air Force has also been formed. During the Great War over 595,000 enlisted, of whom 418,000 were sent overseas; casualties 215,545, including 50,869 killed or fatally wounded.

The naval force is limited to several cruisers and destroyers and two submarines; proposals for increase are under consideration.

Commerce and Industries

Staple industry, agriculture; great wheat belt in prairie provinces, 55,000,000 acres under field crops, valued at £296,000,000. Total agricultural wealth, including livestock, estimated in 1919 at £1,515,000,000. About 1,000 creameries and 500 factories for butter and cheese.

Area of land covered by timber between 500,000,000 and 600,000,000 acres, of which about half commercial, with 3,400 lumber mills. Annual forest product averages £36,000,000. Exported wood pulp nearly £9,000,000.

Total value of mineral produce in 1920 about £15,000,000, including gold, silver, nickel, copper, cobalt, chromite, iron, zinc, lead, coal, asbestos, petroleum. Hollinger, Ontario, one of richest gold workings, produces at rate of nearly £2,000,000 a year. Canada imports minerals to a greater value than her own output, imports of iron and coal for 1919-20, over £19,000,000.

Canada is the principal fur-bearing country, greatest sales held at Montreal every year. In 1919-20 pelts numbered 3,600,000, valued at over £5,000,000. Other industries include fish, chiefly salmon and lobster, which employ about 1,000 factories and canneries, fruit, wool, tobacco, maple-sugar, and agricultural implements. Imports (1920-21), £254,525,000; exports, £248,616,000.

Chief Towns

Ottawa, capital (107,000), Montreal (802,000), Toronto (512,800), Winnipeg (265,000), Vancouver (200,000), Hamilton (118,000), Quebec (100,000), Calgary (75,000), Halifax (71,000), Edmonton (66,000), St. John (60,000), London (54,000), Victoria, B.C. (50,000.)

Religion and Education

Roman Catholics number about 3,000,000; Presbyterians, Anglicans and Methodists each over 1,000,000; Baptists, 400,000; Lutherans, 230,000, and smaller numbers of Congregationalists, Greek Church, and Jews.

Education is mostly free and compulsory, and controlled by the provincial authorities, with Government grants and local taxation. Separate schools for Roman Catholics in Quebec, Ontario, Alberta, and Saskatchewan. Of 22 universities, chief are McGill (Montreal) and Toronto. Number of students over 28,000. State-controlled schools number nearly 28,000, with 54,000 teachers and 1,739,000 pupils.



TAMILS OF CEYLON PERFORMING A TAMBOURINE DANCE

The Tamils followed the Sinhalese from India to Ceylon about the sixth century B.C., and have maintained their position, despite a long series of conflicts. The coolies, Tamils of a low caste, are said to be the backbone of the island labour; and horsekeepers, stableboys, road-workers, tea-coolies, and generally all wage labourers are Tamils. They are a more industrious people than the Sinhalese

Ceylon

I. Everyday Life in the Garden of Buddha

By G. E. Mitton

Author of "Buried Cities of Ceylon"

THE climate of Ceylon is much better than that of many Eastern places. The high ground in the interior, and the fact that it is an island, as well as the abundant rainfall, make the temperature cooler than that of the mainland. The island has its monsoons, and hardly a month passes without at least some showers though there are dry zones. The rainfall at Colombo averages about ninety inches annually; in the North Central Province it may be fifty; farther north it is drier.

About Christmas, or a little earlier, the north-east wind, sweeping along the red roads of Colombo, raises an unpleasant dust, which causes sore throat and feverish colds, but at other times the wind is usually off the sea. What may be called the patchiness of the rainfall is the reason for careful storage of water in huge artificial lakes, known as tanks. In ancient times the construction of these tanks was a recognized work of merit for the Sinhalese kings, but in the times of troublous fighting which preceded British rule they fell into disuse. Land, consequently, went out of cultivation, and famine and decrease of population were the

result. The British engineers set to work to restore the tanks as soon as possible; the banks were reinforced, the sluices repaired, and the area of cultivable land—and consequently the number of people per square mile—was greatly increased. In connection with the tanks is the system of canals for irrigation, which the people gratefully accept as additional means of having a bath.

The island is governed from the Colonial Office, not the India Office, as might naturally be supposed. In all such matters it is entirely distinct from India. Yet one of the two predominating races, the Tamil, has a Dravidian origin, and is connected with the Tamils of Southern India, which was their earlier home. The cleavage has been of long standing, and the cousins

are not now much alike. The indispensable Madrassi boy, who represents the Tamils of India in the eyes of most Europeans in the East, is of a different appearance from the thick-set Tamils native to Ceylon. Many of the coolies, however, come over temporarily. In the old days the Tamils poured over from India in frequent irruptions, and mercilessly harried the Sinhalese; but the two races now live peacefully side by side under British rule.



EXORCISTS OF MALIGNANT DEVILS
Extraordinary and most hideously grotesque masks are worn by Sinhalese devil-dancers whose noisy incantations, accompanied by "tom-toms," guarantee to scare the deadliest of devils

CEYLON : THE GARDEN OF BUDDHA

The visitor to Ceylon can easily distinguish between them. He will get a very clear picture of the Sinhalese as a slender, effeminate race, dressed in long white robes, and wearing enormous tortoiseshell combs of the Spanish pattern, supported by incredibly few hairs on the back of the head. These men make excellent table servants, and are deft, attentive, and quiet. The Colombo Tamil prefers running in a rickshaw for hire. Being a Hindu in religion, he used to wear a turban, but found it so difficult to keep it adjusted in his short running bouts that he now generally wears a red fez, indistinguishable from that worn by the Mahomedan.

He is usually clad also in a much stained and discoloured flannel jacket or short coat, and what looks like a pair of shorts beneath it. His forehead is daubed with caste marks, and his short, frizzy hair sticks out behind his head-gear in a sort of chignon. This rickshaw running is not conducive to long life. The fathers train their sons to it from the time they can run at all, and it

is not uncommon to see a little totterer following his father in short bursts, while yet staggering on his feet. Some provinces, such as Jaffna and Batticaloa, are almost wholly Tamil; but the Sinhalese greatly predominate in numbers, accounting for about half the total population of between four and five millions, while the Tamils form about a quarter of it.

Up-country, the sturdy Tamil women, with their glossy heads, gorgeous earrings, little nose-studs and rings, and gaily coloured saris, work on the tea and rubber plantations very industriously. Both Tamil and Sinhalese women go bareheaded, like their Burmese sisters.

Even in their village life the Sinhalese show something of that melancholy dignity which so becomes them as waiters. They go about their daily work amid their thatched houses beneath the shade of feathery fronds of the jaggery palm, and by the rich green of the plantains, with a sort of protesting dignity. The youths have taken to cropping their heads, European



HIGH CASTE TAMIL WOMEN OF JAFFNA

They belong to the society of Jaffna Peninsula which is situated to the extreme north of Ceylon and peopled by Tamils, the Dravidian race of Southern India. Jaffna goldsmiths are famed for beautiful jewellery of the most delicate design and workmanship, often studded with pearls and other precious gems. These necklaces of coins and beaten gold are illustrative of their art



WONDERFUL OFFICIAL DRESS OF KANDYAN CHIEFS

The Kandyan chiefs are naturally handsome men, and their bright brocade silks and gorgeous velvets impart a right royal stateliness. From sixty to a hundred and fifty yards of silk or muslin are wound round the waist and caught up with a gold-embroidered belt over tight white trousers, ending in a neat frill. The jewel-bedight pincushion hats are surmounted by gold ornaments

Photo, Publishers' Photo Service

fashion, and are attractive to look upon, while the children are among the most delightful of any small beings in the East, with intensely shining black eyes and heads like mops. They are well cared for and kindly treated.

Then there are the Moormen, with an admixture of Arab blood which gives them pronounced profiles. They, as might be expected, are chiefly traders, small shopkeepers of boutiques, and keep very much to themselves in their own villages or their own quarters of the larger places. Many of them are gem merchants.

Besides these elements of the population there are the descendants of the Dutch and Portuguese, who mingled their blood with that of the native races in the days when they respectively dominated the island. The names of Pereira, Silva, Mendoza, and the like are frequently heard, and, as could be guessed, clerly avocations are their choice. The Dutch burghers hold their own, too, in the trading line, sometimes in a larger way than the Moormen.

The forms of religion follow more or less the lines of race. The vast majority of the Sinhalese are Buddhists, and have that strong tincture of animism and fetish-worship which always seems to characterise the Buddhist religion among less educated peoples. The ancient ruins at Anuradhapura, Polonnaruwa, and other royal cities, which attract thousands of visitors to the island annually, are all of Buddhist origin.

The Tamils are mainly Hindus, and have their own temples, with the usual characteristics of Hinduism in India. The devil-dancers of Ceylon, men who dress themselves up as grotesque demons and go through contortions and stampings, to the accompaniment of tom-toms and screeching music, show a remnant of spirit-worship. Originally evolved to frighten away the bad spirit from a sick person, this form of "frightfulness" has been continued, because the performers discovered that it might be made profitable on the verandas of

CEYLON: THE GARDEN OF BUDDHA

hotels and the decks of steamers. So nowadays they vie with the snake-charmers, who are nearly all Tamils, in providing local colour for the tourist.

The Mahomedan Moormen total rather over a quarter of a million. It is chiefly between them and the Buddhist elements that the disturbances which have rent the island from time to time occur, and when Christians and Hindus are also drawn in and looting begins, the British Government is hard set to hold the scales even. It is possibly not so much the instinctive horror the Mahomedans have of images, as seen in the representation of the Buddha, that starts these riots, as

jealousy of the other natives for the flourishing condition of the boutiques and their keepers. The Buddhists are, of course, in no sense image worshippers though they represent the benign figure of the Buddha whenever possible.

The Pera-hera, the most famous religious festival in Ceylon, held every year from the new to the full moon in July and August, is regarded by all Buddhists as their great holiday. Like so many Buddhist festivals, it is probably of Hindu origin. At this time the Sacred Tooth, the greatest treasure of the Buddhists in the island, is brought forth and carried in procession, and unless much discretion is exercised by



MEMBER OF THE SPORTING WORLD ENJOYING AN HOUR'S REPOSE

Sporting instincts are not confined to the British population of Ceylon. This Sinhalese has donned full hunting kit—of a distinctly European cut—and is here seen on the veranda of a rest-house after having spent long hours in the highland forests. That he is no “green” huntsman we may gather from the fine leopard skin lying at his feet—part of his “bag” on a former excursion

Photo, G. E. Milton



ON THE WAY TO THE PETTAH, OR NATIVE TRADERS' QUARTER, COLOMBO

In rough wicker baskets the Tamil chicken-vendor hawks his livestock round the town. He goes leisurely about the work; the heat renders energetic movement uncomfortable, so hurry and bustle are unknown to him. The Tamil is of a much darker complexion than the Sinhalese, and the latter is easily distinguished by his long hair, which is always carefully dressed and surmounted by a tortoiseshell comb.

Photo, Publishers' Photo Service

the authorities there may be fighting, leading up to looting. The least thing may start a riot. An unintentional affront, or the jostling of a Sinhalese by a Moorman, may loose the passions of the crowd, and among the thousands that assemble on these occasions great mischief may be done. The Buddhist festival of Wesak, the birthday of the Buddha, in May, is another dangerous period.

The sacred Bo-Tree, at the ruined city of Anuradhapura in the North Central Province, is the oldest historical

tree in the world. It is authentically known to be two thousand years since it was planted, and ever since it has been tended and cared for. Even when the city itself was left to be overgrown by jungle, a few monks remained to watch by the sacred tree, and they even watered it with milk when water was unobtainable during a long drought. This tree (*ficus religiosa*) is supposed to have been grown from a slip of the tree under which Buddha sat when he received inspiration. It belongs to a family very numerous in Ceylon, with



LIGHT BUT STURDY, THESE CRAFT WILL BRAVE THE ROUGHEST SEAS

The golden sands and waving feathery coco-palms add a special fascination to this peaceful scene. The long sails have been hoisted between the bamboos, and the fishing skiffs of hollow tree-trunks, manned by lithe brown Sinhalese, will literally fly before the breeze. With their sails at rest, the outrigger canoes resemble at a distance great sea-spiders skimming gracefully over the rippling water

Photo, Ewing Galloway

thickly spreading roots and a growth covering a wide area. To the ficus tribe belongs also the indiarubber (*ficus elastica*). An idea of the monstrous snaky roots of these trees may be gained by seeing the examples in the famous Botanical Gardens at Peradeniya, near Kandy, encircled by the Mahaweliganga river, where every kind of native shrub and plant is grown to perfection.

The Buddhists of Ceylon belong to the same order as those of Burma. They wear the yellow robe with the right arm bare. The idea of pilgrimage appeals very much to the Buddhist mind, and many small pilgrimages are going on continually. It is no unusual thing for whole families to go on a private pilgrimage at any season of the year, as they might go for a country holiday. They may visit the shrines of Polonnaruwa, walking sixty miles from the nearest railway station. It is impressive to come upon one of these family parties in the freshness of the

early morning, standing reverently in a long-drawn-out line before the mighty prostrate image of the Buddha there and chanting a strange litany, while the father, a venerable man, with flowing white beard, as head of the family, swings a brass lota filled with water, splashing it over the Buddha's face, as a priest might swing a censer.

Another great place of pilgrimage, to all sects alike, is the Footprint on Adam's Peak, claimed as the footprint of the Buddha by the Buddhists; as that of Adam by the Mahomedans; as that of one or other of their gods, Vishnu or Rama, by the Hindus; and as that of a saint by the Catholics. All alike agree that it is Sri Pada, the Holy Foot.

Adam's Peak is often veiled in clouds, and some Europeans who have passed Ceylon several times have never seen it; but when it can be seen, it stands out distinctly, a wonderfully even cone, towering high above the surrounding hills. The Peak is 7,370 feet high;

CEYLON: THE GARDEN OF BUDDHA

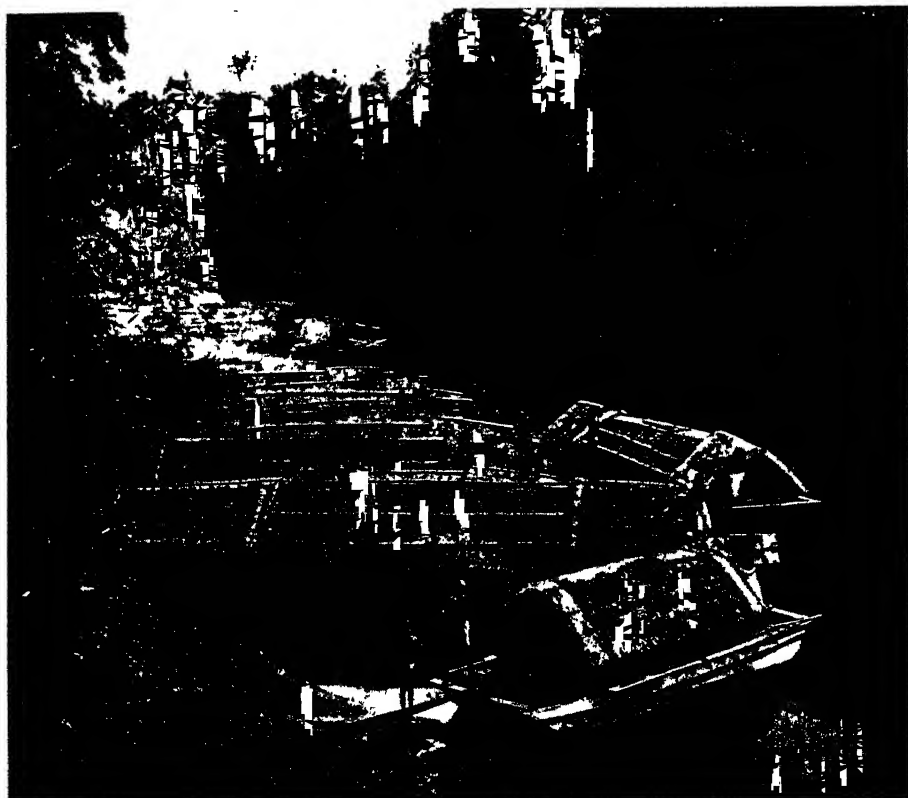
part of the way up is accomplished by means of steps put up by the meritorious. The so-called footprint is six feet in length, and varies from two feet eight inches to a little over two feet. Whatever it may have been originally, it has been gradually deepened and defined, until it now does resemble the mark of a foot. The pilgrimages, which go on almost incessantly, are made the occasion of festal holidays; for the Sinhalese, like the Burmese, combine religion with pleasure, though as a race they are not so gay, and take the ills of life in a less optimistic spirit.

There are other kinds of pilgrimages also. The Catholics of Ceylon attend the Feast of St. Anne, at Talawila, in large numbers every year in the height of the summer, coming in from the

Colombo, Negombo, and Chilaw districts chiefly, to the number of thirty or forty thousand. In these districts Catholics are in a majority, and include among them some Tamils and Sinhalas. They travel in the early morning and in the evening, to avoid the heat, and carry with them their provisions in carts, which sometimes to the number of 4,000 may be seen camped by the road.

The native quarter of Colombo is called the Pettah, and here all the native races mingle together, with Chinese or Japanese traders, and a floating population of Malay coast people.

The fringe of the sandy coast along the island, south of Colombo to Mount Lavinia, is celebrated for its beauty.



COMMERCIAL CORNER OF THE KELANI RIVER, CEYLON

Moored alongside the river bank are many quaint produce boats laden with freight for the port of Colombo. The Kelani is a river of considerable commercial importance, and every favourable current brings numbers of thatched barges and rafts into Colombo; they skim lightly over the water propelled by the current, the only exertion required of the boatman being careful steering. The return journey demands much exertion and perseverance

CEYLON: THE GARDEN OF BUDDHA



GRACE IN THE FIELD

With her dreamy black eyes and well-formed figure, this Tamil girl could find no better setting for her dusky charms than the soft green foliage of the tea-field

The tall coco-palms, which thrive best when their roots are actually in the sea, bend out gracefully over the creamy foam, their feathery fronds swaying in the wind. Crowds of outrigger canoes and home-made dugouts gather a harvest by the sea. The younger boys and girls learn to swim before they can walk.

The land slopes down to the sea on all sides, the hilly country being gathered together in the centre, as one might gather up a table-centre in folds by the hand. It was for this reason that Kandy became the capital of the ancient kings.

Harassed by the Tamils, they drew gradually up out of the northern plains to seek refuge in these fastnesses, then covered with jungle, and here they finally established themselves with the Sacred Tooth, which, like the Stone of Scone, was an emblem of kingship. To reach Kandy from the coast means a steady climb by rail, the line rising with incredible ingenuity along mere shelves cut on the side of precipices, winding on itself like a snake, so that the engine-driver may almost exchange a word with the guard in passing at places. The patches of green or water-covered paddy-land are left behind, and replaced by wider views as the train gains height. The hills, once jungle-covered, are now most frequently clothed with a regular succession of tea-bushes. The houses of the planters are almost always on the tops of these hills, for the sake of health,



TRIO OF TAMIL TEA-PICKERS

With many another dark-skinned sister they have emigrated from India, attracted by the high wages earned by tea labourers. Compared with former conditions, their life in Ceylon is most congenial, and food, housing, and medical comforts are guaranteed



PICKING THE PRECIOUS "GOLDEN TIP" OF THE BEST QUALITY
 In gay cloths, with pleasant features and glossy black hair, the Tamil women and girls turn the Ceylonese tea-plantations into most picturesque scenes. Picking tea-leaves is not easy, and care must be taken to select only the young and succulent leaves. The younger the leaf, the finer the quality of the tea; for a specially fine brand only the bud and two end leaves of each shoot are picked



HOW THE HARDY LITTLE TEA SHRUB IS PLANTED IN CEYLON

When the seedlings, grown from tea-seeds which are slightly larger than hazel nuts, are a few months old, they are planted each on a small plot of ground and quickly spring up into sturdy shrubs which accommodate themselves to the variations of temperature, and flourish equally well on mountain sides at a lofty elevation of some thousands of feet above the sea level, and in the sheltered valleys of the lowlands



PRUNING THE RAW MATERIAL ON THE HILLSIDES OF CEYLON

Although an enterprise of comparatively recent growth, the tea industry of Ceylon has become an important item in the world's commerce. Work begins punctually at break of day. In the grey dawn, the "muster" of the coolie gangs takes place and the motley throng, comprising Tamil men, women, and children, makes its way to the work appointed by the "gangany," or taskmaster



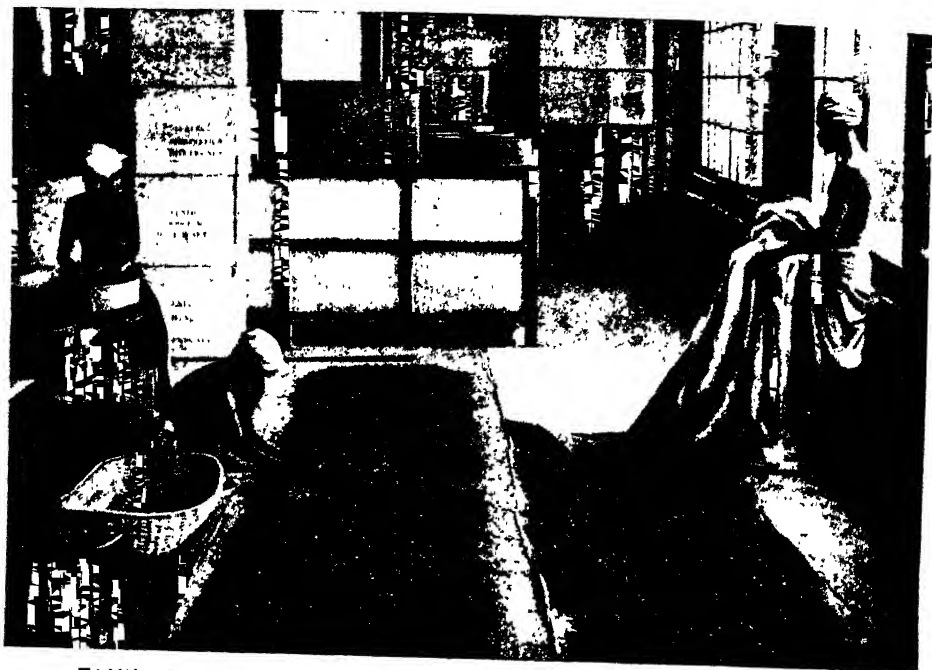
CEYLON'S METHOD OF WITHERING THE GREEN TEA-LEAF

Various processes have to be undergone before the raw material is converted into the manufactured article. In the factory the four chief processes are known as withering, rolling, fermenting, and firing. The green leaf is spread thinly upon numerous shelves specially made of wire or pure besham, and wither naturally in about twenty hours, a warm temperature and dry atmosphere being essential.



LIBERATING THE JUICES FROM THE WITHERED LEAF

When the leaf has withered sufficiently to allow the sap and other moisture to evaporate it is swept off the shelf and placed in the roller. This machine squeezes out the tannin and any remaining moisture, and gives the leaf a twisted appearance. When taken out of the roller, the lumps or balls of crushed leaves are put through a machine which breaks the lumps and separates the leaves.



TAMIL COOLIES SUPERINTENDING THE FERMENTATION PROCESS

The leaf is next spread out in a cool house, covered with a wet cloth and allowed to ferment for several hours. In this way the "black" tea of commerce is produced. Should the commodity known as "green" tea be required, no fermentation takes place. "Green" and "black" tea may be gathered from the same tree; the difference depends entirely on the manner of treatment after picking



SIFTING THE TEA AFTER IT HAS BEEN BAKED BY ARTIFICIAL HEAT

Fermentation completed, the leaf, spread upon wire trays, is placed in an apparatus known as the desiccator, where it is dried by hot air. The tea emerges from the "firing" perfectly dry and brittle, and of a black colour, and when cool is sifted into the various grades ready for packing. The utmost care is observed to avoid superfluous handling of the leaf during the various processes



STORING THE DIFFERENT GRADES IN SEPARATE DRAWERS

Each day the various grades of tea are placed in receptacles where they are stored until a sufficient quantity of one grade has been collected, when it is mixed thoroughly together by means of scoops and shovels. This operation, known as "bulking," is necessary to ensure a uniformity of quality throughout a special grade which has been plucked and manufactured on different days



THE FINISHED ARTICLE READY FOR THE "CUP THAT CHEERS"

The packing-chests are lined with lead and so accurately filled that each chest contains the allotted weight to an ounce. A sheet of lead soldered down over the contents protects them from air and moisture. An important trade is also done in Ceylon packeted tea, the small leaden packet carrying with it a guarantee of genuineness—the special wrapper of the Ceylon grower or merchant

CEYLON: THE GARDEN OF BUDDHA

and the paths zigzag up through the plantations in regular sequence.

On the small space of flat land at the summit is planted the bungalow, with a wealth of glorious flowering plants around it. The huge scarlet poinsettias, the gorgeous orange cannas, magnolias, oleanders, passion-flowers, the mass of blue plumbago, mingle with the broad-leaved plants of the country.



RELIC OF ABORIGINAL DEMON WORSHIP

One of the Kandyan devil-dancers whose diabolical performance is warranted to exorcise evil spirits from the sick. Grotesquely arrayed, they dance themselves into a state of frenzy, by which time the patient is usually either killed or cured

In the old days the planters devoted themselves to coffee almost exclusively. Then came the fearful disaster of the coffee blight, first noticed in 1869. Men were ruined by it wholesale; but after severe struggles the pest was got under. Many other forms of cultivation replaced it, and now tea and rubber flourish largely; cocoa is frequently found, and there are many side crops, such as plumbago, cardamoms,

cinnamon, chillies, and other products. Tobacco and cotton are grown in the north.

High above Kandy is Nuwara Eliya (over 6,000 feet), the hill-station of the Europeans. The scenery is really magnificent; hill and water, wide grassy plains and gigantic precipices, great undisturbed patches of jungle make it beautiful enough, and the fresh clearness of the air is tonic to the jaded. European plants which will grow nowhere else flourish here. But it is purely a "made" place, without local colour.

Better for the traveller looking for native life to take a car to Polonnaruwa, the second of the great ruined cities, still inaccessible by rail. It lies at the end of a road which finishes in the jungle. Here the animal life can be studied at its best.

The bird life alone is enough to absorb a naturalist. Birds of all colours—terra-cotta, emerald green, metallic blue—flash before the eyes. The kingfisher tribe are numerous and gorgeously apparelled; the long-tailed fly-catcher, both terra-cotta and white, locally known as "bird of paradise," is not uncommon; small green parroquets, the only kind found here, fly about in flocks at feeding-time

with shrill screams. Little honeybirds delicately poise and hover about the plants, showing flashes of green shading into purple on their backs.

The wild animals have been driven farther into the jungle by the approach of men; but there are still herds of the wild elephants for which Ceylon has long been famous. The wild buffalo, or saing, may be seen in the water-meadows. There are several species

CEYLON GLIMPSES
of Priest Pilgrim & Pagan



Among the priests of Kandy's Temple pass pilgrims with multifarious gifts, none caring to appear empty-handed at the altar of Buddha

Photo, Platé, Ltd.



To her ancestors, the Singhs, who brought Aryan civilization into Ceylon, does this comely Sinhalese woman owe her refined features

Photo, Skeen & Co.



Gaudy cloths go well with bronze skins, but the pride of these girls of Ceylon is centred in their nose-ornaments and toe-rings

Photo, Publishers' Photo Service



This wooden pavilion on Adam's Peak, open to the four winds, shelters the Sacred Footprint revered by millions of the human race



A human stream of priests and pilgrims flows without ceasing into the innermost sanctuary of the Temple of the Sacred Tooth at Kandy



Architecturally insignificant, the most noticeable features of the Temple at Kandy are grotesque carvings and mythological frescoes



Swaying gently to and fro, the hooded cobras display genuine serpentine delight at the shrilly-piped airs of their Tamil charmers



Skilled in lapidary work, the crafty Moormen endeavour to keep the trade of cutting and polishing Ceylonese gems in their own hands

Photos, Platt, Ltd.



*Mighty hunters, the Rock Veddass' skill as archers is far-famed ;
not for nothing are they descendants of the Yakkas of antiquity*



*Only a handful remains of the wild, sky Veddass, remnants of the
race conquered by the Sinhalese more than two thousand years ago*

Photos, Platt, Ltd.



*In contrast with the more civilized Veddars of village and coasts, these gentle, shy
Ceylon jungles shun the human presence and are ever waging noiseless war*
Photo. Plate, Ltd.

CEYLON: THE GARDEN OF BUDDHA

deer; leopards skulk after their prey; bear and wild boar may be found by those who know where to look for them. Among smaller beasts, jackals and flying foxes are abundant, porcupines and tortoises fairly common. Monkeys live in the island in thousands, the two kinds being wanderoos and rilawas. Crocodiles swarm in the tanks. Most of these are small, but here and there, in some black, secluded pool, may be found one giant beast, revered by the whole neighbourhood, and propitiated by the scanty population around, under the idea of his being an evil spirit. That weird creature, the chameleon, can be picked out on a tree quite near to dwelling-houses, and there are many lizards. Snakes are fairly common, and the larger kinds, python and cobra, are met with in the deep jungles.

The glittering fireflies are a never-failing source of interest to visitors from colder climates, charming no less by their brilliance than their vagaries and incomprehensible methods of illumination. Sometimes whole avenues of trees will be picked out with the fairy lights, and another night, with a temperature apparently the same, there will not be one visible.

Ceylon is above all countries the land of jewels. It is said that of the better-known kinds only the diamond, turquoise, and emerald are not found here. The pearl fisheries are celebrated the world over. They are carried on in the Gulf of Manaar, the divers being chiefly Tamils, who are bred to the business and keep it in the family as much as possible, as do the rickshaw men their trade. A few Moormen have taken it up

also. It is, of course, a specialty which can only be undertaken by trained and picked men. The whole shore is rendered uninhabitable whilst the putrefaction of the oysters is in progress.

Sapphires, star sapphires, rubies, topaz, amethyst, moonstones (peculiar to this country), aquamarines, and many another less known gem are found here. The principal gem-pits are at Ratna-



FINE TYPE OF THE CEYLON MOORMEN

The Moormen, the most energetic traders of Ceylon, claim to be descended from Arabian merchants who settled on the island two thousand years ago, and so represent that great branch of the human race, the Semitic

Photo, Platt, Ltd.

pura. It is one of the joys of the tourist to visit the shops of the gem merchants and see piled in glittering heaps wealth in its most attractive form. And the confidence these jewellers repose in the faith of a European, even in these suspicious days, is amazing. Tourists straight off from the ship may sit and handle the precious stones at their pleasure. The shopkeeper is a



A TOUCH OF NATIVE LIFE ON A COUNTRY ROAD IN THE LOWLANDS OF CEYLON

In Ceylon the landscape is never wearisome; there is an abundance of interesting objects at every turn. The very highways are bordered with an unparalleled exuberance of leaf and blossom; among their massed luxuriance of fern and palm, bluet and lily, and other fragrant flowers. A veritable paradise! Nor is it surprising that Adam should have been credited with choosing this island as a resting place after the gates of the first Paradise had been closed against him.



VILLAGE SCENE IN THE "UTMOST INDIAN ISLE," AS CEYLON WAS STYLED BY THE GEOGRAPHERS OF OLD. It is impossible to exaggerate the beauty of Ceylon. Even the humblest village scene has a special charm; and the jungle with its riotous splendor of tropical trees and flowers is never far away—that jungle which Sir Edwin Arnold so vividly describes as "a huge tangled tyranny of the floral world, a host of boundless propagation. Every corner where water lodges or sunrises fall is seen choked with struggling stems, furious to live and blossom and bear seed."



THE OLD ORDER GIVES PLACE TO THE NEW
Styles seldom vary in Ceylon. A strip of cotton cloth is always fashionable. Staunch conservatism, however, cannot be expected of the rising generation who in babyhood are decked out in the frills and furbelows of Western fashions

Photo, Publishers' Photo Service

strong believer in fate and luck. "You want opal?" he asks. "No; I not give him. Opal not a good stone—bring you bad luck! What? You born October? Oh, all right; I find you best opal in my shop!" Such phrases are still heard among them.

The sapphires are perhaps the most bewildering of all the stones to an amateur. We are accustomed to think of a sapphire as being dark blue; but here they are all colours, even a sort of indigo or mouse grey; but the most extraordinary is the star sapphire, which has in it rays of light so ingrained that whichever way it is turned you see a perfectly formed radiating star of light shining out of the stone. The

rubies cannot compare with those of Burma, but Ceylon has two distinctive stones of her own, the catseye and the moonstone. The soft shining light of the moonstone has a radiance quite peculiar, and as it is not very expensive it holds a firm place in popular esteem. But there are moonstones and moonstones, and those who intend to buy had better first examine their prospective purchases through a powerful lens to see their clearness and quality. The island possesses another source of mineral wealth in the plumbago which is dug up in some parts.

The people of Ceylon associate flowers intimately with their worship, and in few countries is there a greater wealth of flowering plants and shrubs. Outside the temples of the Buddha, or at the base of the sacred Bo-Tree, little saucers of the Temple Flower, arranged neatly for sale to worshippers, can be

seen at any time. The rose-red lotus is sold in pyramidal bunches of carefully selected blooms, placed so as to give the impression of one gigantic flower. Champac, allamanda, hibiscus, and many another glowing blossom, help to make up the gorgeous piles. Among the ruins discovered at Polonnaruwa is a flower-altar, built in the old days for the reception of offerings of this kind, to be raised toward the blue of the skies, held up by fantastically carven pillars.

The most noticeable flowering shrub to the casual observer, because most easily seen, is perhaps the gloriosa superba, like a large scarlet honeysuckle, which rears its royal head on the

CEYLON: THE GARDEN OF BUDDHA

road-sides or in forest glades. The trumpet shaped blooms of the datura are white, seen in their morning freshness, but turn rosy pink with the approach of evening before they fade. The cassia bushes, carrying flowers resembling laburnum, are very common. In some of the specimens the bunches of flowers stand pyramidically upward instead of drooping, in others they are terra-cotta instead of sulphur yellow. The brilliant red of the flame trees in bloom is seen to perfection at Kandy. Orchids grow in the deeper jungle, while masses of yellow daisies and the ubiquitous lantana decorate the roadsides.

The roads are mostly good on the surface, though narrow.



BLITHE MAIDENHOOD IN CEYLON

The conboy, or long skirt, is worn by men and women alike. Sinhalese women delight in jewellery, and it is no uncommon sight to see bangles on both arms and ankles, and rings on their fingers and toes



HIGHLAND BEAUTY UNADORNED

Sinhalese women of the highlands generally wear a single coloured cloth. With their brilliant eyes, white teeth, long glossy black hair, usually coiled firmly behind their heads, and gentle manners, they are a most attractive people

Photos, Plate, Ltd.

In the flat country there is nothing very striking in the scenery, which is in keeping with the simplicity of the people. They may be seen working in their paddy fields, with ungainly buffaloes as assistants, surrounded by the little white cranes, or paddy birds. The Sinhalese can work hard enough when it is a question of their own produce, but they dislike coolie work, and only do it spasmodically or under necessity. In the midst of some of their plots are little thatched shelters raised on rickety bamboo



BEATING AND CRUSHING PLUMBAGO INTO POWDER AT COLOMBO

The two established mineral industries of Ceylon are the digging for plumbago, or graphite, and for precious stones. The production of plumbago, the only mineral of commercial importance in Ceylon, is steadily increasing, and the annual yield of the mines in working amounts to many thousands of tons. The industry, in its various departments—mining, carting, preparing, packing, and shipping—provides employment for about 100,000 Sinhalese men and women

Photo, Underwood & Underwood



AN EARLY PROCESS IN THE MAKING OF LEAD PENCILS

The crushed graphite is sifted through various sieves, and the powder finally blended with other substances according to the hardness of the pencil required. Ceylon graphite is considered the best for making crucibles, and is also used for the manufacture of grate polish, paints, dry lubricants, and for foundry facings. This mineral is distributed from Ceylon over a remarkably wide range of the earth

Photo, Ewing Galloway



LACE-MAKING ON THE ISLE OF PALMS

In Ceylon, aptly described as a "Treasure Island, yielding many rare and beautiful things to enrich the world," it is not surprising to find that the inborn skill of the lowly village folk turns with success to various home industries. But lace-making is not the only example of fine handiwork, for Ceylon possesses many an old-world wonder of "fairy-like lace-work sculptured in marble"

Photo, Ewing Galloway



SINHALESE MILL FOR EXTRACTING OIL FROM COCONUTS

There is no place in the world in which the coconut palm flourishes as it does in Ceylon, where it is estimated that twenty millions of these trees are to be found. The coconut kernels are broken into pieces and dried, when they are known as copra, from which the oil is extracted by pressure or boiling. 500 lb. of copra should supply about twenty-five gallons of oil

Photo, Publishers' Photo Service



SINHALESE CARAVAN IN A KANDYAN VILLAGE

Little bullock gigs, or hackeries, drawn by active brahmin bulls, are for hire in most Sinhalese towns, large or small. This is a "long-distance" conveyance, and may even contain a mattress and a pillow or two to make the journey more comfortable for the traveller. The average speed of two miles an hour may be exceeded if the roads are in their prime and the stolid bullocks not too sleepy

Photo, Ewing Galloway



SLOW BUT SURE METHOD OF TRAVELLING IN CEYLON

Indian humped bulls are seen in large numbers all over the island; they do the work of transport for many districts and draw down thousands of chests of Ceylon tea to the ports. A Sinhalese hackery owner can earn many an honest rupee with his quaint light conveyance and clumsy-plodding bullock—the pride of his heart—by driving new-comers round the town to see the native sights

Photo, G. E. Milton



SACRED STONE EFFIGIES OF A DECAYED FOREST SANCTUARY

This gigantic recumbent figure of Buddha, hewn from solid rock, is to be found at Polonnaruwa, the mighty medieval city which became the capital of Ceylon after the downfall of Anuradhapura. Standing at his head, with crossed arms, is Ananda, Buddha's favourite disciple. Pilgrims from all parts of the island come and go unceasingly along the rough track leading to this desolate rock temple



WHERE BUDDHA SLEEPS THE DREAMLESS SLEEP OF NIRVANA

The city of Polonnaruwa lies buried beneath the soil, covered with myriad tangled creepers of the jungle. A few stately ruins remain to suggest vanished glories, otherwise desolation and decay reign supreme. And Buddha sleeps, enveloped in the mystery of the silent solemn forest, and undisturbed by the fitful chanting of pilgrims who have come many a weary mile for the good of their souls

Photo, G. E. Milton



BUDDHA HAS NO SCARCITY OF FAITHFUL FOLLOWERS IN CEYLON

In lowly attitudes of worship these pious pilgrims prostrate themselves before a shrine. During the regular pilgrim season thousands make their way to the venerated, far-renowned island shrines. Aged men and women with infinite pain and toil accomplish long journeys of several hundreds of miles; and so earnest are they that the hardships encountered en route pass them unnoticed

Photo, Publishers' Photo Service

into which the waters can creep to snare away the wild animals from their crops. The tilt carts, with their palm-leaf thatch covering them are always a feature in the landscape.

In the villages the bazaar shops show an assortment of fruit and vegetables with a large choice. Plantains, melons, jack-fruit, papaws, giant pumpkins, and onions abound. Hand made baskets and simple country-fashioned gear are to be bought in most places. In some of the larger places, such as Matale, the hum of innumerable sewing-machines can be heard all down the main street.

The people are as fond of bathing as the Burmese, and, like them, let down their long hair to be washed. The irrigation canals and special bathing-pools provided by a thoughtful Government are freely used. In the showery weather men and women alike may be seen walking about with the huge leaf of a talipot palm as an umbrella.

This folds up under the arm conveniently, and when held by the stalk makes a very effective shelter. Four men putting their palm-leaves together can set up a tent immediately. From the talipot are made the olas, or palm-leaf books used by the monks. The talipot flowers only once in its lifetime, and when it does is a most noticeable feature in the landscape, throwing up a creamy froth of millions of minute blossoms, sometimes reaching twenty feet, or more. When the blossoms turn to small nuts the tree sickens and dies.

In the province of Batticaloa, north of the vast parklike country, is the



FIRST COUSIN OF THE BREAD FRUIT TREE

The jack tree produces the largest of all edible fruits in a very peculiar manner. It throws huge pods from the trunk and branches, and suspends them by a short thick stalk. The whole fruit is eaten by the natives; the soft yellow substance enclosed in the rough green skin is eaten raw, and the kernels embedded in it are roasted. The wood is highly valued for making furniture

haunt of the primitive people of the island, the Veddas, who still live in a simple state. Some live in villages, and though shy and wild, are tolerably civilized; others—the Rock Veddas—still haunt the deeper jungles and live as cave-dwellers. In all cases they are shy rather than savage. They are celebrated for their skill with the bow, and keep themselves isolated from all possible contact with the other races.

A large number of the population live by fishing, but it is the Sinhalese who are mainly deep-sea fishers, while the Tamils keep to the shore.



WOMEN WORSHIPPERS AT TEMPLE OF THE SACRED TOOTH OF BUDDHA
These Buddhist nuns have passed many hours in prayer before the seven golden and jewelled shrines at Kandy, which protect the palladium of Ceylon, object of deepest veneration to many millions of people, the Tooth of Gautama Buddha. This revered relic, which arrived in Ceylon in the fourth century, is upheld by a twist of golden wire from the heart of a large golden lotus blossom

Ceylon

II. Its Buddhist Kings and European Conquerors

By A. D. Innes, M.A.

Author of "Short History of the British in India"

THE island of Ceylon, separated, but not cut off, from the Indian mainland by Palk Straits, has never formed an integral part of any of the Indian Empires; and while it forms a portion of the British Empire, it is in the character of a Crown Colony, having no connexion with the Government of India, though its annexation was the outcome of an expedition from Madras. This relation to India, at once of association and separation, marks the history of the island from the earliest times.

The aborigines were undoubtedly akin to the Tamil stock of Dravidians in the southern extremity of the Indian peninsula, whether they reached the island in some prehistoric period before its severance from the continent, or by navigating Palk Strait with its chain of islets. But, like India itself, Ceylon has undergone an early Aryan conquest and domination, Moslem penetration, and finally European subjugation. The Aryan conquest is represented by the Sinhalese, the most advanced of the population; the people of the highlands would seem to be of the aboriginal stock; the north is mainly Dravidian, reinforced from Southern India, while the leaven of Mahomedans, the Moormen, are generally credited with Arab origin.

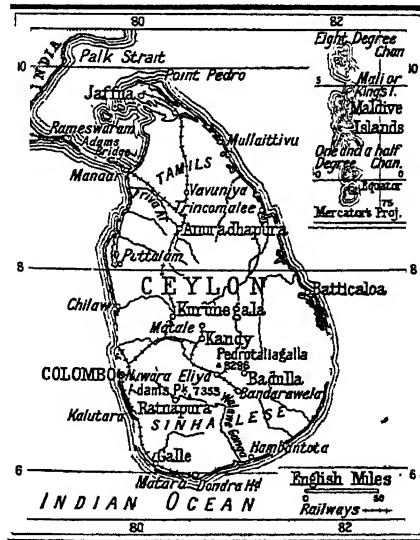
The ancient people of the island figure in no complimentary fashion in the Hindu epic Ramayana; but the Rama myth is not history, though it has historical elements. As a matter of fact, it seems clear that Aryan occupation took place before Brahmanism dominated the conquering race, and various circumstances point to a maritime immigration from Gujerat as its source, rather than the Brahman penetration of the Decan from Hindustan, since the caste system was apparently only very partially developed among the Sinhalese,

and the Brahman is almost unknown. The more or less mythical founder of the Aryan dynasty, which by the third century B.C. had been ruling Ceylon for some hundreds of years, was Wijaya, whose grandsire had been a lion. Hence the Royal House bore the patronymic of Sehala (Lion), of which the names Sinhalese (or Singhalese) and Ceylon are corruptions. There were dealings with the Pandu dynasty of Madura in the south of India, and successive great monarchs were Panduwardewa and Pendukabhaya, organiser and legislator, whose names represent stages of political and social development rather than definite individuals, until at last an actual historical ruler emerges in the third century B.C., Dewanampiya Tissa, the contemporary of the great Maurya emperor, Asoka.

Asoka was the great champion, the imperial prophet of Buddhism. Under his immediate predecessors, the Maghada dynasty on the Ganges had extended its sway over two-thirds of India, and Asoka won recognition of his own sovereignty from most of what was left. But though he began his career as a conqueror, his devotion to Buddhist doctrines taught him to detest war and bloodshed. He did not subjugate Ceylon, yet the Sinhalese monarch voluntarily submitted to his moral supremacy, acknowledged his over-

lordship, and received the Buddhist doctrine and the Buddhist mission which Asoka dispatched to Ceylon under his son or, more probably his younger brother Mahinda.

Buddhism, then, became the religion of the Sinhalese, in its pure form, in the third quarter of the third century B.C. Monasteries and nunneries were established under vows of poverty, much as Christian monasticism established itself centuries afterwards in medieval Europe, to pass through similar stages of



CEYLON AND ITS PEOPLES



FINE SPECIMEN OF THE TEMPLE ELEPHANTS

Attached to the Dalada Maligawa, or Temple of the Tooth, are some forty fine elephants which, richly caparisoned with gorgeous trappings, play an important rôle in the Pera-hera, the great night festival of Buddha held annually at Kandy

Photo, Publishers' Photo Service

alternating corruption and reformation to final decay.

During the thousand years after the reign of Tissa, there were endlessly recurring wars with the Tamil states or kingdoms of the Carnatic, of Madura, or of Tanjore on the neighbouring continent, wars which usually meant that the northern half of the island was overrun and occupied for longer or shorter periods by the Tamils, till some Sinhalese leader arose who smote the invader, recovered the Sinhalese supremacy, and reinstated himself in the ancient capital at Anuradhapura. The final deliverance was effected by Wijaya Bahu, whose victorious reign covers the last half of the eleventh century A.D. He brought all Ceylon under his sway, but disruption followed his death, and more than half a century passed before Ceylon was again united under the mightiest of her rulers, Parakama Bahu. Under him, and under another Parakama in the thirteenth century, Ceylon reached

its highest pitch of prosperity. With the opening of the fourteenth century the Sinhalese chronicle become hopelessly meagre. The once great dominion broke up into petty principalities, and the curtain rises again, though only partially, with the coming of the Portuguese early in the sixteenth century.

For the first time, Vasco da Gama had traversed the Indian Ocean, and European ships rounding the Cape of Good Hope had found their way to the Indian peninsula in 1498. Under the name of Taprobane, the island had been known to ancient geographers, and envoys from it had visited the courts of early Roman emperors, but for centuries the East had been practically obliterated from the ken of the Western world by the Moslem barrier. The discovery of the ocean route now turned the flank of Islam. In the twenty years following the voyage of Da Gama, the Portuguese were winning the mastery of the Indian Ocean, where hitherto the Arabs had been supreme. In 1505 their ships had touched at Ceylon, and ten years later the nominal king of Ceylon granted the new maritime power permission to establish a trading station at

Colombo. The foreign trade of Ceylon—mainly the export of cinnamon, the valuable product of which it enjoyed a practical monopoly—had hitherto been in the hands of the Moors, the seafaring Arabs with whom the Sinhalese had no quarrel; but it was a primary object with the Portuguese to abolish their competition. Once the Portuguese had obtained a foothold on the island, they made it their business to secure mastery of the ports and coasts.

The Sinhalese rulers were forced by degrees to retire into the interior. Christianity was rapidly spread among the natives by the greatest of missionaries, François Xavier himself, though the appeal of Christian doctrine was largely discounted by the very un-Christian practices and fanatical intolerance of the Portuguese. The native religion, which had conceded perfect freedom of worship and practice to the Hindu, the Mahomedan, and finally to the Christian, found its shrines

CEYLON & ITS STORY

subjected to desecration and ruin, and the most sacred relics devoted to utter destruction—among them the reputed remains of Buddha. Nevertheless, about the middle of the sixteenth century King, Dharma Pauli Raja, himself became a convert, and later went so far as to name as his heir the Most Catholic King, Philip II. of Spain, who later annexed the crown of Portugal.

The Dutch appeared on the scene in 1602, yet it was not till 1658 that the Portuguese were finally and completely expelled from the island.

The Dutch were traders, with no lust for territorial conquests; and, like the English, but unlike the Portuguese and Spaniards, they were entirely tolerant of all native religions. They entered upon the Portuguese possessions in Ceylon, which meant the ports and the seaboard and much of the more productive territory inland, but they did not aggressively interfere with the Sinhalese kingdom in the interior, nor did the English interfere with them. Until the close of the seventeenth century their maritime commerce still led that of England, and Dutch Ceylon prospered accordingly, although after a time it lost the very valuable monopoly of the cinnamon trade.

But the island was to change masters

once more. In 1793 the late-born French Republic was at war with half Europe. Three years later Holland had become a French dependency, and the Stadtholder was a fugitive living in England. Her de jure ruler was on the British side, her de facto government was controlled by France. Britain was mistress of the seas; Dutch colonial ports had to be secured against French occupation. The Dutch government at Colombo surrendered with no more than a formal protest to a British expedition dispatched from Madras in 1796. For two years the Dutch colony was administered from Madras; then in 1798 it was formally taken over as a British Crown Colony. It was excepted from the Colonies restored to Holland by the treaties of Amiens and Vienna, and has remained a British Crown Colony ever since. At first the Sinhalese kingdom of Kandy was left in its nominal independence, but the violence of its ruler and the murder of merchants who were British subjects led to the usual result. The king was deposed and deported, and the government was taken over by the British in 1815. Since that time the island has enjoyed the proverbial bliss of having no history—other than that of the normal peaceful development it has experienced under British administration.

CEYLON: FACTS AND FIGURES

The Country

In the Indian Ocean, south of Hindustan, from which it is separated by Palk Strait, a chain of sand islands, known as Adam's Bridge, extends from the island to the mainland. Length from Point Palmyra to Dondra Head, 271 miles; greatest width, 139 miles from Colombo to Singemankande. Total area, 25,481 square miles; population, estimated, 4,500,000. Latter consists of over 3,016,000 Sinhalese, 1,121,000 Tamils, 285,000 Moormen, or non-Malay Mahomedans, 29,000 Burghers, 14,000 Malays, 4,400 aboriginal Veddas, 8,400 Europeans, and about 21,000 others. Of these 65 per cent. are engaged in agriculture.

Government and Constitution

Crown Colony, administered by Governor with Executive Council of seven and Legislative Council of thirty-seven, of whom sixteen are elective; others nominated by Governor to represent Kandyan, Mahomedan, Indian, and other interests. Eleven of the sixteen represent territorial divisions, and two the Europeans. For administrative purposes, island divided into nine provinces, each in charge of a Government Agent. In the villages local affairs managed by native councils.

Defence

Compulsory service for Europeans was introduced in 1917. Bodies of local troops are organized for defence. Small garrison of Imperial troops. Harbour of Colombo protected. Police force about 3,000.

Commerce and Industries

Ceylon produces about one-sixth of the world's tea; exports in 1920 were 185 million pounds,

of which 120 million pounds went to Great Britain. Principal grain is rice. Other products include coconuts, coffee, cinnamon, vanilla, areca-nut, tobacco. One-fourth of the island under cultivation. Forests yield ebony and satinwood. Over one hundred plumbago mines, and several hundreds of small gem quarries, from which are obtained sapphires, rubies, catseyes, and moonstones. Graphite also obtained. Pearl-fishery in the Gulf of Manaar. Native industries: tortoiseshell and lacquer work, jewellery, fans, wood-carving. Imports (1920), £24,061,812; exports, £18,419,698.

There are about 600 miles of broad gauge and about 100 miles of narrow gauge railways worked by the Government, which also controls the telegraphs and telephones.

Religion and Education

There are 2,770,000 Buddhists, mostly Sinhalese; of the Tamils, 980,000 are Hindus; and there are about half a million Christians and 300,000 Mahomedans.

A separate Government department has charge of education, which is free and unsectarian in vernacular schools. These consist of 895 Government schools, attendance 124,000; 1,868 State-aided schools, attendance 197,000; 1,350 unaided schools, attendance 28,000. About 50,000 children attend 278 English schools, where fees are charged. There are a Royal College and Government training college for teachers, technical schools, and eighty-four industrial schools.

Chief Towns

Colombo, capital (population 244,100), Jaffna (42,400), Galle (39,000), Kandy (32,000). Trincomalee is a naval station.



SANTIAGO'S SPLENDID PROMENADE, THE AVENIDA DE LAS DELICIAS, OR THE ALAMEDA
 Few cities in the world have a thoroughfare to rival the Alameda, with its spacious footways and cobble roads for trams and wheeled traffic. Its many fountains, statues, and shady trees. Looking north-east along the avenue there are grateful glimpses of the majestic Andine heights, for actually, as it is called, but changing in hue with the daily journey of the sun. So wide and long is the Alameda that many thousands may promenade there with no overcrowding.

Chile

I. Its Varied Climes & Its Virile People

By J. A. Hammerton

Author of "The Argentine Through English Eyes"

THE best way to arrive in Chile is across the Andes. Few sensations of travel equal, and scarcely any can surpass, the first sight of the great green valleys that lie at the feet of the majestic mountains up which the railway has so toilfully borne us, and down whose western declivities we proceed at scarcely any increase of pace, but with giddy heads as we behold the vast slopes falling steeply into the immense mysterious hollows of these mountain masses. As the traveller descends farther and farther into this charming land of the Far West, even though the obsession of the everlasting Argentine pampa has already been somewhat dissipated by the sight of the vineyards and sub-tropical vegetation on the eastern slopes of the great mountain range, the marvellous riot of colour and cultivated luxuriance of flower and fruit which greet us in Central Chile come as a pleasurable shock.

The Chileans are a small people; they are less than four millions in number. Their country, too, is small, as sizes go in South America. It is a strip of coast some 2,800 miles long, and although that is between

three and four times as long as Great Britain, the land is very narrow. At no point is it broader than three hundred miles, its average breadth being less than one hundred. This strip is bounded for a very long distance by the magnificent Andes mountains, which therefore dominate the landscape. From most parts of the country their snowy summits can be seen. They endow with a crisp and invigorating air its climate, which, though varying greatly between the most northerly and the southerly latitudes, may be described on the whole as temperate and healthy. This, in its turn, has influenced the Chilean temperament. The people are notably less impulsive, less excitable than Brazilians or Argentines. They are sedate in their manners, less voluble. The streets of even the large towns are oddly silent. The usual noisy manifestations of city life are not so noticeable, there is no hubbub of talk among the pedestrians along the pavements. Even the students as they come from their classes walk sedately and show little of the "animal spirits" of youth. All classes are



ONE OF THE CARABINEROS
These are picked men of the Chilean military establishment, splendidly mounted, and in the wilder places of the Andes they are a terror to evil-doers



HOW THE CHILEAN MANTO IS WORN

The manto is a peculiarly Chilean item of woman's dress. It consists of thin black material drawn over the head and folded and pinned round the neck, the rest of it hanging gracefully over much of the costume

Photo, Rivas Freire

pleasant in their manners, but they are not effusive with strangers. Some visitors have called their quietness "melancholy," but the same observers would probably say that the English used to be melancholy before they threw off their reserve and let their emotions have freer play. The shadow of the mountains lies upon the national character, and has been blamed for the prevalence of drunkenness among the labouring classes. Chile, like Scotland, certainly favours the theory that hilly countries breed a taste for stimulants.

It has become a commonplace to compare the Chileans with the English, and they like it; but some of them prefer to be known as "los yanquis del sur," the Yankees of the South

(believing themselves so go-ahead and energetic in comparison with the other Latin Americans). Although in the mass of people the prevailing colour of hair and eyes is dark, many exceptions are to be seen; fair hair and almost blue eyes are not by any means unknown among them, as among the inhabitants of Spain itself. They are fonder of joking than other South American races; even practical jokes, which elsewhere would be resented as unpardonable and might lead to bloodshed, are practised among them with good-natured enjoyment. There is less of the so-called melancholy among the educated than among the mass of people. In the clubs one hears a flow of lively conversation. The greetings are hearty. The prevailing mood seems to be one of cheerfulness, even of gaiety.

In Chile, as in England until recent years, the horse is preferred to the motor. There are still far more who drive horses than who are owners of cars. But the reason is different: there are few roads fit for motoring, while the splendid horses of the country, which still show strong evidence of the old Arab strain, can go everywhere, and are indispensable to all who live away from the large towns. Racing is one of their favourite amusements. So far are some of them carried by their passion for this form of gambling—for that is all it amounts to—that they gather to listen to descriptions of races given through the telephone by an eye-witness on the course. As the race is going on the eye-witness speaks into the telephone, saying which horses lead; describes the running, and any



WHERE STREET DEPORTMENT IS CONTROLLED BY CONVENTIONALISM

In the cities of Chile European dress and ways are much in vogue; nevertheless, it would come amiss for a lady to be seen casually conversing with a man, even a relative, in the street, and "mixed" companies in the public thoroughfares are not common except on Sundays during church-going hours, or in the plazas when the bands play



RETURNING FROM CHURCH SERVICE AT SANTIAGO

A very characteristic group of Santiago ladies is seen in this photograph, which is also an excellent illustration of the variety of ways in which the manto may be worn effectively and yet conform to the Church regulation which prohibits the women of the country from entering the sanctuary with any other form of headdress

CHILE & THE CHILEANS

incidents that may occur ; and ends up with a thrilling account of the finish. Many miles away a crowd listens breathless to his description, and gets, although at second-hand, the excitement of the course.

In Chile, too, one finds old houses set amidst delightful gardens, with avenues of trees, lawns, flower-beds, and fountains, just as they might have been laid out by an English landscape gardener of the nineteenth century.

Wealth of Flower and Fruit

The flowers are, of course, far more profuse in their growth and more varied in their form and colouring ; but there are hedgerows as in England, and these are covered in early summer with the dog-rose, while in autumn they are weighted with blackberries. This delicious fruit is as little appreciated by the Chileans as it was thirty years ago by the country population of England. When they systematically gather the crop, which is abundant beyond the belief of those who have only seen the blackberry under European skies, they will be able to add to their prosperity largely by exporting jam.

The strawberry, too, ripens to perfection in Chile, which again reminds the British visitor of his own country. This the Chileans do value. Strawberry culture is well understood, and huge beds are to be seen in all parts where the conditions are favourable. Chile is a land of abundant fruit. The peach, the pear, the fig, the quince, all flourish. Walnut trees do very well. In certain districts excellent apples are grown. The grapes make good wine. The cherimoya, a species of custard apple, also grows in profusion.

A Smiling Fairyland

There is no more beautiful scene than a Chilean spring-time landscape in the great longitudinal valley anywhere south of the province of Aconcagua. Save that the massive peaks of the Andes are always distantly in view to the east, and the lower coastal range lies purple against the sunset to the west, the country within this valley has

ordinarily many of the features of Kent or Sussex, but in spring-time every tree is laden with blossom—blossoms red, white, blue, yellow, and pale green. It is then a veritable fairyland of colour, and in this respect unlike any I have ever looked upon elsewhere. North of Valparaíso the landscape begins to change, and great stony hillsides covered with thousands of that fantastic tree known as the “monkey puzzle,” which is a native of the country and is properly named the Chile pine (*Araucaria imbricata*), hem in the lesser valleys, where meadowland and orchard still exist, though with lessening fertility as we near the great plantless regions of the north, where desert sand and nitrate allow no green thing to flourish.

From this it may be gathered that in the main it is a smiling country, which leaves a comfortable impression of natural wealth and of a nation that benefits by this as a whole, instead of letting the cream be taken off by a small number, leaving only skim milk for the rest. The rows of tall poplars which fringe the roads and fields add to the charm of the landscape.

English Views of Home and Women

The rich colouring of flowers and flowering shrubs rejoices the eye. The land speaks of careful tilth and of a pride in possession.

The plots are divided by neat mud walls, with tiled tops to them to prevent their destruction in the rainy seasons. The farmsteads are snug. On stock farms the fences are well kept, and the grass land plenteous in feed for horses and cattle. In the south there are large flocks of British sheep, owned mostly by British settlers, several of whom came from New Zealand, and have done very well for themselves and for their adopted country ; and there are still greater numbers of German farmers in the southern provinces 'twixt Concepción and Llanquihui.

Yet another point in which the Chileans like to think they are nearer to the English than to any other race is the growth among them of a comparative freedom for women. It is necessary



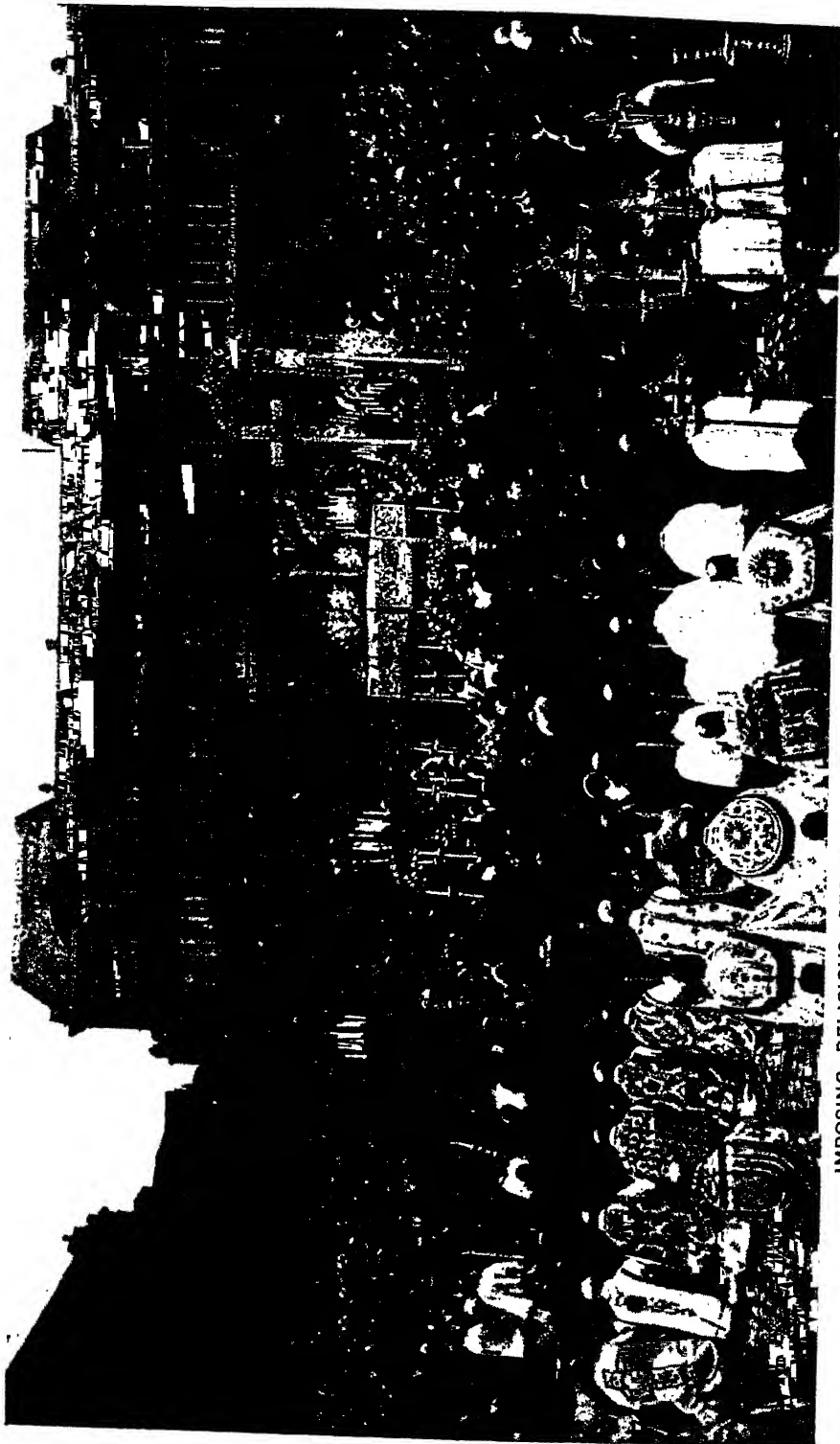
* PLANTING A MEMORIAL TREE AT A SANTIAGO PUBLIC SCHOOL

There is enthusiasm for education among the Chileans, and especially in the capital city, where there are also excellent schools of agriculture and engineering, two sciences vital to the prosperity of the land. There is a sentimental love of ceremony among the people, and the planting of a memorial tree at one of the public schools is treated with becoming gravity



ENCOURAGING THE STUDY OF BOTANY AMONG SANTIAGO SCHOOLGIRLS

In a country of such natural profusion as Chile, the student of botany has the richest fields to explore, and the educational authorities are very active in promoting the study of this science. These little maids in their businesslike school frocks are busy with their carefully-labelled flower-pots. They appreciate the benefits of outdoor lessons to the full



IMPOSING RELIGIOUS CEREMONY IN THE PLAZA DE ARMAS AT SANTIAGO

The ascendancy of the Church, which is very remarkable throughout Chile, is nowhere more conspicuous than in the capital city. Here religious ceremonials and processions occur frequently, and are observed with obvious signs of religious enthusiasm. The central parts of Santiago is often held up so that some of the most important religious ceremonies of the day of the Church may have the observation of the faithful.

Photo. Allan, 1 September



SPECTACLE DEAR TO THE HEART OF EVERY CHILEAN: MILITARY REVIEW IN THE COUSIÑO PARK, SANTIAGO
Chile's military success in the war of the Pacific, when she thrashed Bolivia and Peru, has bred in her people a warlike disposition which takes shape in the display of armed strength. Thanks to their German instructors, the Chilean army has been organized on very efficient lines, and its annual reviews attract the widespread interest. Military reviews in Santiago are common, the magnificent spaces of this beautifully laid out park offering unusual facilities for putting on the play

CHILE & THE CHILEANS



CATS' MEAT MAN IN SANTIAGO

The vendor of cats' meat in Chile differs from his prototype in London chiefly in the easy way he carries his main basket on his head

Photo, Gallardo

to insert "comparative," for it is only when we take into account the women of other South American states that those of Chile can be called emancipated. They have to some extent risen above the condition of playthings for men, but they are still very carefully sheltered while they are girls. None of the liberty which the North American and the English girl have long enjoyed, and which the French girl since the War seems inclined to claim also, has yet been granted to the young women of Chile. The married women do, some of them, enjoy comradeship with men. They have induced men to treat them as reasonable beings, not as pets who must be cajoled with compliments, nor as the natural prey of any man who can capture them by soft speeches and

sentimental humbug. They go about more freely than do women in the Argentine or in Brazil. The Chileans, indeed, were among the first nations to encourage women to earn their living by work in competition with men. They had women street-car conductors even before the Great War, which introduced them in so many countries when men became scarce. The beauty of Chilean women is celebrated, and there are many records of their intelligence and bravery as well.

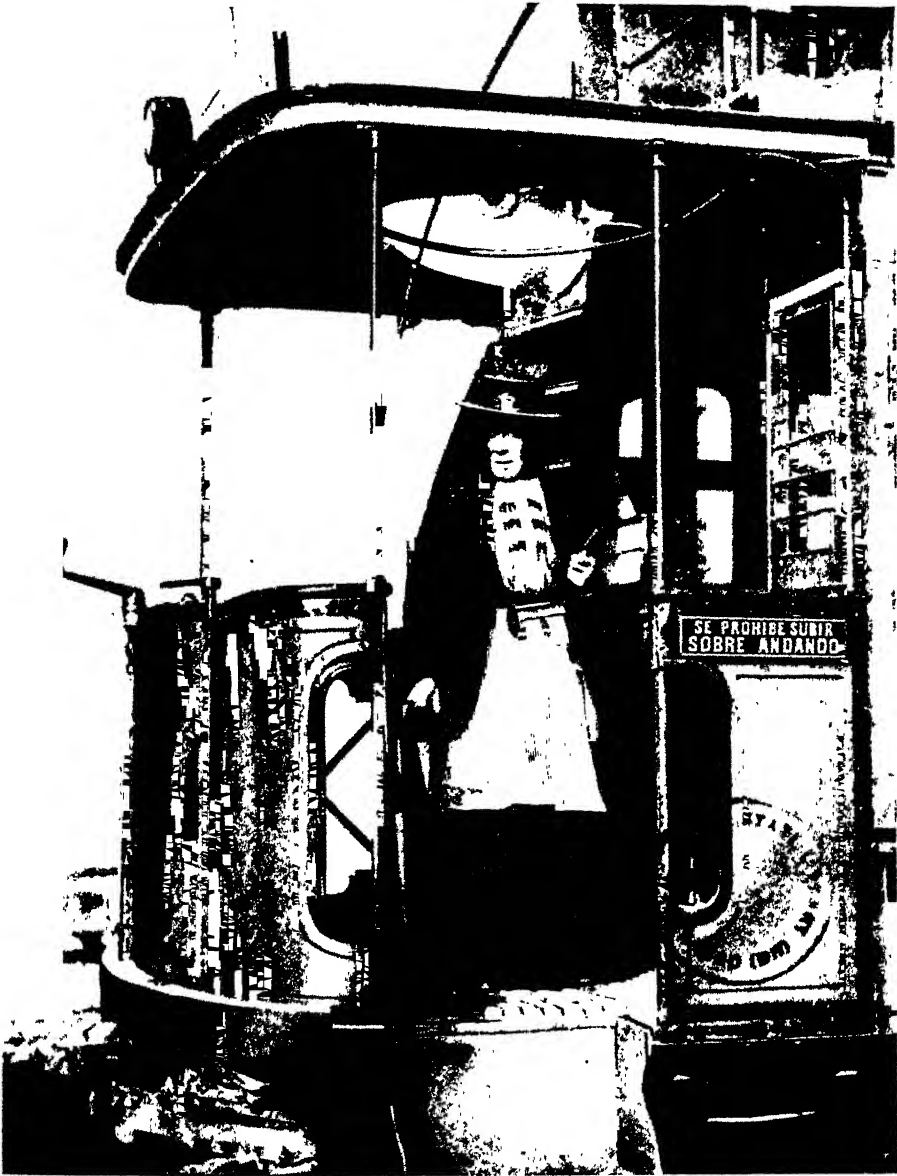
One oft-quoted example which illustrates these qualities was given by the sixteen-year-old daughter of Don Claudio Vicuña, a prominent Chilean politician during the Civil War in 1891. A bomb which exploded was thrown into the house, then another, which did not go off. The girl, instead of being terrified and fainting or going into hysterics, seized this second bomb and threw it out of a window. Then



SMART AND SOLDIERLY

The Chilean soldiers are outwardly fit to bear comparison with those of any of the European armies that took a pride in such details before the Great War reduced their value

Photo, Publishers' Photo Service



THE WOMAN TRAM-CONDUCTOR A PRE-WAR FIGURE IN CHILE

The woman tram-conductor was familiar enough in Europe in the days of the Great War, but she has long been a feature of Chilean street traffic. It is worth recalling that the Chilean woman conductor also owes her job to war-time conditions, as the lack of men workers after the war with

Bolivia and Peru resulted in women taking their posts

Photo, Brown & Dawson

she began to struggle with the fire which the first bomb had started, and with the help of servants, who took courage when they saw how cool she was, she got the flames under. Nor was this all she did. It occurred to her that her father would be on his way home and might be attacked by the

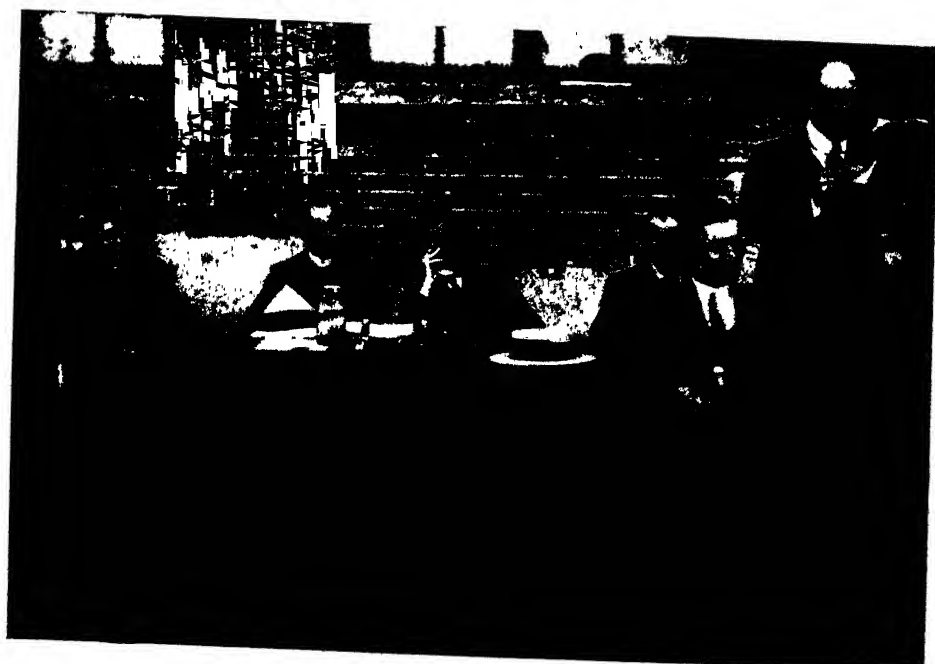
miscreants who had bombed his house. She took his revolver and went to meet him, so that he might be able to defend himself.

It is a little surprising that the Church has not lost any of its hold upon the women of Chile, in spite of their comparative freedom. They most of



CHILEAN OFFICERS—NOT A PRE-WAR GROUP OF PRUSSIANS

It was only natural that the Chilean army, tutored by German officers, should have been equipped and dressed in Teutonic fashion, but it was disconcerting to the visitor to Chile at first to see the native soldiers as perfect reproductions of the German type. The outcome of the Great War, however, is producing modifications of Chilean military dress



SPANISH-AMERICAN PASSION FOR PUBLIC SPEAKING

Throughout the whole Spanish world no occasion that may offer an excuse for a speech is ever missed, and every second man has claims to be an orator. Their orations are almost invariably carefully prepared, and are usually read. They are chiefly noteworthy for lack of humour, and in this photograph it is evident that the orator is the person most enjoying the speech



CHILEAN CAPATAZ SURVEYING THE SCENE OF HIS RESPONSIBILITIES

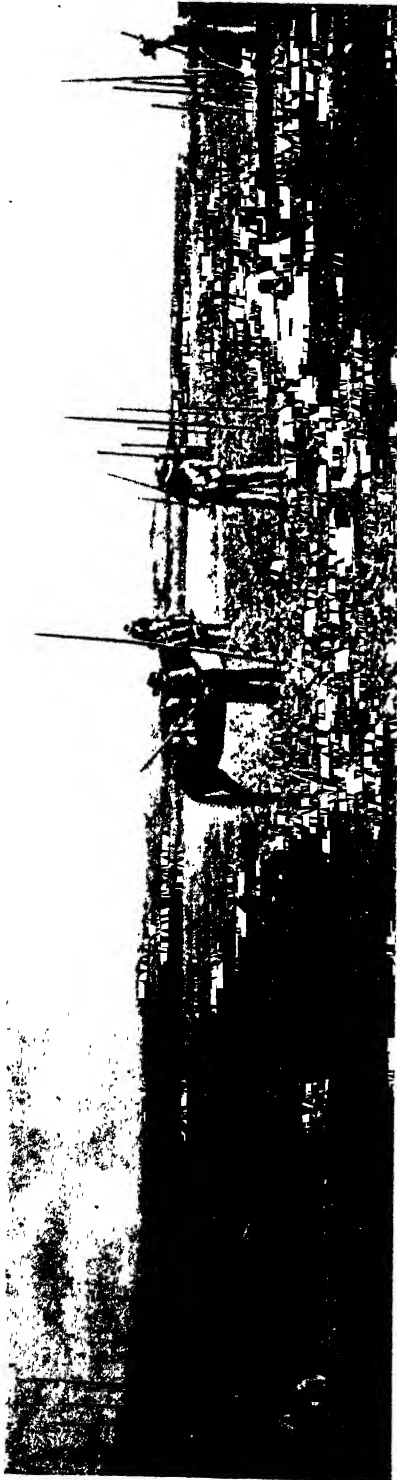
He may be a rough-looking fellow, but he is pretty certain to have qualities of resource and decision before he is made capataz, or overseer of the numerous labourers employed on the estancia, and his will is the determining factor in everything that affects these employees, as in all that really matters what the capataz says "goes"



INGENIOUS METHOD OF WATER TRANSPORT NEAR ANTOFAGASTA

In the region of the nitrate fields in the provinces of Antofagasta and Tarapaca there are hundreds of miles on which scarcely a green blade grows, and water has to be transported great distances, in pipes and otherwise. Here a barrel of water ingeniously harnessed to a donkey is being transported by means of its own rotundity

Photo, Publishers' Photo Service



THE CHILEAN DESERT WHERE NATURE HAS SECRETED ONE OF HER GREATEST CHEMICAL LABORATORIES

As a result of the war of 1879 between Chile, Peru, and Bolivia, the Chilean Government annexed to its territory a large stretch of land in the north. A barren, rainless land, it furnishes, nevertheless, the most profitable branch of Chilean industry, for through its vast deposits of nitrate this desert zone supplies the means of fertility to other lands. This photograph illustrates a nitrate field with several workers boring test-holes

them still obey the injunction to go to mass every day, and in the morning hours, therefore, the streets are filled with figures in long black garments draped over the head and falling in graceful folds to the feet. This is the manto, the Chilean development of the Spanish mantilla, the prescribed costume for the worship of God.

The Church in Chile is still a branch of the Government. One of the Articles of the Constitution lays it down that the Roman Catholic religion is that of the State. The oath which the President of the Republic takes is in religious form. The Church receives a share of taxation, provided for it in the budget every year; this goes a long way to cover its expenditure, though it has ample wealth beyond this. The religious orders have been left up to now in possession of their large properties. It is this which has induced the Church in Chile to accept the Republic. It knows there is no hope for any other form of government, and that if it did not recognise the constitution as a permanency it would soon be treated as it has been elsewhere.

For the Chilean men would not hesitate to cut the connexion between Church and State if there were any reason to do so. They do not share the women's respect for priestly authority. They are lax in their religious observances, though they encourage their wives and daughters to keep them up. The Church understands, therefore, that it must not be intolerant. It had to agree to other religions being given the right to hold services freely. Its yoke is easy and its burden light in comparison with those which are borne by the people of Spain.

The Chileans of the educated class spring chiefly from old Spanish settlers; they plume themselves upon their descent from the conquerors of the new world in the sixteenth century. Thus there is a distinctly aristocratic class, which has managed



THE SCENE AFTER CHEMICALS HAVE DISCOVERED CHEMICALS

The beds of nitrate lie a few feet below the surface, buried beneath a conglomerate of clay and gravel cemented with mineral sulphates and common salt. The soil is broken up by blasting a charge placed in a test-hole, the nitrate-producing material being disclosed by the explosion. The soluble, or impure sodium nitrate, usually found in veined white masses, is then extracted

until lately to keep to itself both the land and the machinery of government, as well as the important posts in the administration and the direction of army and fleet. Here again there is a likeness between Chile and the England of an earlier age than this. Aristocratic families may send their sons also into medicine or the law, but even yet they are prejudiced against commerce. Wealthy Chileans are directors of banks or companies, but mercantile business they are often content to leave to foreigners.

While some of the leading families can justly claim uninterrupted descent from the aristocratic Spaniards of the old colonial days, the majority of the Chilean people are really the descendants of the Spanish Conquistadores or early settlers and a native race, the Araucanian, which successfully resisted all attempts at its subjugation by the adventurers from Spain. For decade after decade the struggle lasted; to end only in final peace and the merging of the two races, for we must always remember in respect to the Spanish conquest of South America that the Conquistadores were not companioned by their own women-folk, and the early colonisation was essentially

masculine. Of this merging the typical Chilean of to-day is the outcome.

When it is considered that the majority of the Conquistadores were drawn from that north-western corner of Spain which was the old Spanish Galicia, the inhabitants of which resisted both the ancient Roman conquest and the influences of the Moorish dominion in Spain, it will be seen that the modern Chilean is descended from two unconquered races, and without flattery it may be said that his descent is reflected in his leading characteristics of honesty, independence, and industry.

In some parts, most noticeably in the forestal districts of the south, are still to be found remnants of the Araucanian race without tincture of Spanish blood, and at most a very slight admixture. In appearance the Araucanians are like the Red Man of the United States. Many of the faces of their caciques or chiefs are noble and sympathetic, though they are disappointing when one tries to draw out corresponding characteristics or sentiments. Caupolicán is the national hero of the Araucanians, and a worthy part he played in the struggle with the Spaniards. His statue is a familiar one in Chile, for the Chileans honour his memory. In figure the



OPERATIVES WORKING NITRATE CRUSHERS

The caliche, or crude nitrate of soda, is taken from the nitrate field to the "oficina," or works, where, in due course, it is crushed, boiled, filtered, and crystallized into the pure nitrate of soda, known as Chile saltpetre

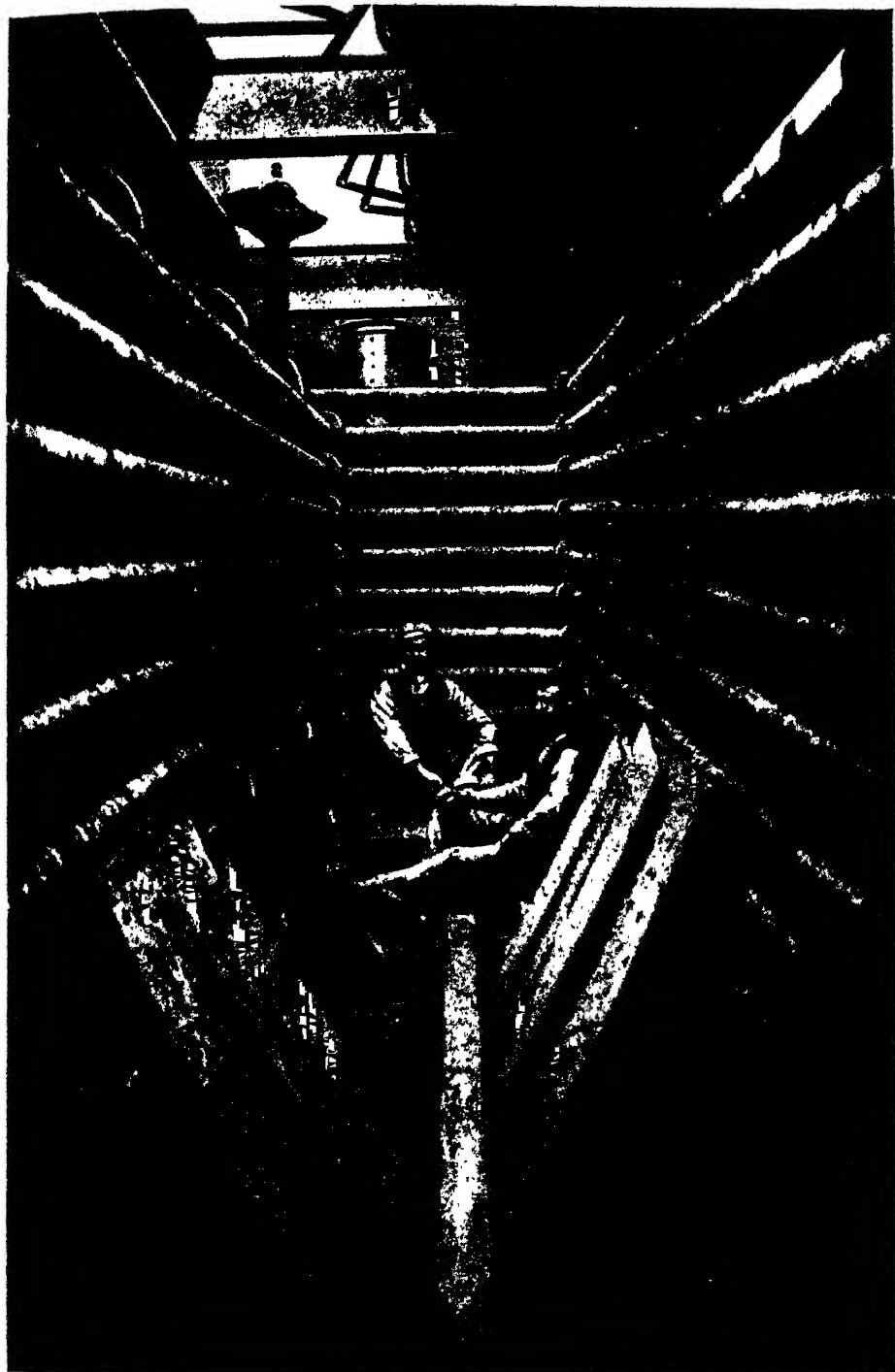
Araucanians are square and thick-set. They are strong and enduring, but they sap their strength by intoxicants, which they drink, as the Russian peasants did before vodka was abolished, for the pleasure of insensibility. Returning with barrels of brandy which they have received in exchange for produce or the skins of animals, they do not always wait even to get into their houses. As soon as they reach their village they throw themselves from their horses, take a long drink, and in a few minutes fall down dead drunk, leaving the horses, more intelligent creatures than they are, to find their own way home.

In feature the Indians vary a great deal. Many are flat-nosed and belong to the Eskimo type. Their behaviour is solemn and exceedingly polite. They smile seldom, and they never shed tears if they can help it, for that is considered a sign of shameful weakness. They live in poor circumstances. Their habitations are made of wood, mud, or reeds, conical in shape, with straw roofs that slope down almost to the ground. In the roof is a hole to let the smoke of the fire lighted on the mud floor escape. They sleep on ox-hides. Their huts contain very little in the way of furniture, and are almost dark inside, for they do not make windows.

Drink is almost their only luxury. They prefer horsemeat to any other, and feed their horses, with the view of eating them, upon a diet that consists of potatoes, haricot beans, and maize. They are fond of drinking sheep's blood prepared with salt, pepper, onion and parsley, a disgusting

concoction. The chiefs have several wives, as many as they can afford to keep. The women indeed do a large part of the work, so they largely keep themselves. They love to deck themselves in red shawls; red is a favourite colour also for the ponchos, or cloaks of the men. Down the backs of the women hang two plaits of black, shiny, coarse hair. Of other attractions or adornments they seldom have any.

Although the climate is healthy the Indians are disappearing, and the death rate, even of the Chileans themselves, is high. They have never had the yellow fever scourge, but cholera has attacked



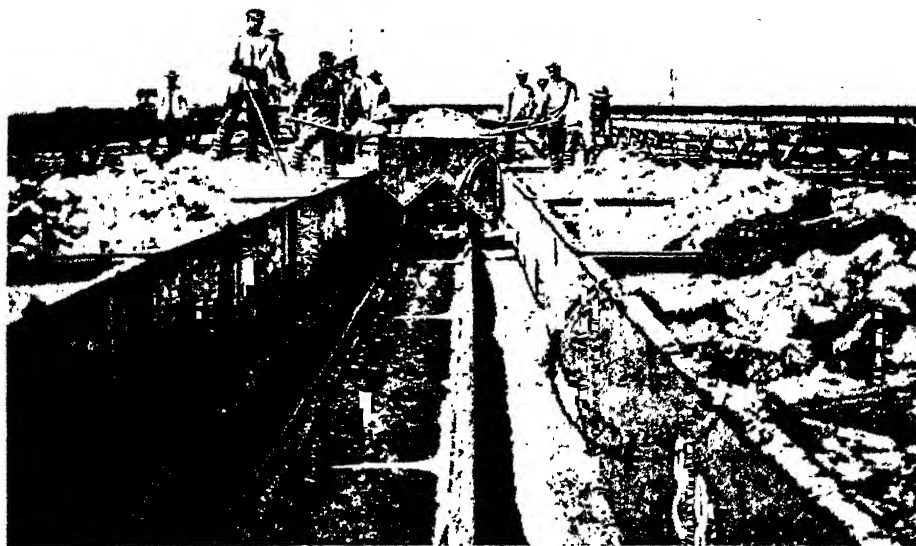
THE TANK-ROOM WHERE THE NITRATE IS BOILED

From the crushing-plant the caliche passes into the boiling-tanks, whence the saturated solution is poured into pans and left to recrystallize. From caliche the world's supply of sodium nitrate is obtained; the deposits of this substance only occur in north Chile, notably in Tarapaca Province. Caliche is largely used in the manufacture of saltpetre, nitric acid manufactures, and as a manure



RUNNING OFF THE SATURATED SOLUTION OF NITRATE OF SODA

The caliche is drawn from the boiling-tanks, and the sodium nitrate allowed to crystallize out. Good caliche contains 40-45 per cent. of sodium nitrate, over 2,000,000 tons of which are exported annually. During the Great War Chilean nitrate provided valuable help to the Allies, and the increased production, due to the need of nitrate for military purposes, brought Chile unprecedented prosperity



EMPTYING THE CRYSTALLIZING PANS INTO TRUCKS

When recrystallized the sodium nitrate is stacked in trucks for exportation. A considerable population is employed in the nitrate industry, and busy ports fringe the coast of this desolate region, where every ounce of food must be imported by sea or rail. Work is continued day and night in the factories, which are surrounded by small towns, chiefly composed of rickety sheds for the workers



NITRATE WORKS OF THE BROWN CHILEAN DESERT

The origin of these nitrate beds is still unknown; one theory has it that they were formed by seaweed in a submersion of the land, another that they are the remains of marine animals and birds. Iron tanks, tall chimneys, steam pumps, a chemical laboratory, and an iodine extracting house, are principal features of the vast premises belonging to the great Chilean nitrate industry

CHILE & THE CHILEANS

them from time to time, though not for some years, while smallpox and other epidemics have taken heavy toll of the population, especially of the young children. It is impossible to walk through any town or village without encountering men and women horribly disfigured by smallpox, and yet vaccination is not compulsory, but is actually a political question. In Santiago, I remember a very severe epidemic of smallpox, during which victims of the disease were conveyed to the pest house in the common tramcars! And the smallpox hospital was next door to a large bacon-curing establishment!

Ignorance and Infant Mortality

Mention of the child victims of this scourge of ignorance reminds me that among the masses there is a superstition that "nine little angels secure certain entry into Paradise for their mother"; that is to say, if a mother loses nine of her babes, her salvation is sure. Whether that has any effect in making parents careless of their children's health is doubtful: the high infant death rate would suggest it, yet as parents they are affectionate and even over-indulgent.

Such a superstition shows, at any rate, the low intelligence of the masses. Something like forty per cent. of them are still unable to read and write. Education is free, but it is not compulsory. President Balmaceda spent two millions sterling on schools during the years in which he carried on his expansion policy, but that was a spasmodic effort. It has been ascribed to the strong influence of the Church that popular education has not been more insisted upon since his time.

Boundless Mineral Wealth

Whether or not that be true, one hopeful sign is the growing popularity of the Boy Scout movement—"los Roe Escouts," as they pronounce it there. Much work is needed in the drawing out and training of intelligence among the young. The politicians have not concerned themselves very industriously with this.

Although the civil war provoked by Balmaceda arose in some measure from the foreign exploitation of the mineral wealth of the country, so boundless is that wealth, so rich are its natural resources, that, despite the exploitation of the nitrate deposits and the copper ore, it may be said to have been no more than scratched. Of £38,000,000 worth of cargoes and freight-car loads as much as £24,000,000 worth is represented by nitrates. This deposit is found in the northern part of Chile, where rain scarcely ever falls. In this region the dryness has preserved the decomposed vegetable matter, mixed with the dust of fish and animals, over a vast territory, and since this, converted by chemical action into nitrate of soda, forms the most valuable fertiliser known, the working and shipment of it are highly profitable. Much of this profit comes to Britain, for the companies were mostly floated in London, and British capital developed the industry.

Colonel North and Nitrates

About 1870 a Yorkshire boilermaker, a rough, canny fellow, went to the Chilean port of Iquique, which was carrying out a scheme to get water supplied to it by tank steamers; it was in the dry area, and had no regular water supply of its own. The name of the boilermaker was North, and he soon began to show that he did not mean to stick to boilermaking. He first managed to buy up a tank steamer, and from this beginning he went into many enterprises along the coast. He was clever and adventurous. The worth of the nitrate fields was not then understood. He guessed that here lay a source of wealth, not difficult to get at, and with possibilities unbounded. He did some exploration himself and secured the right to work large parts of the strip of country, four hundred miles long, where nothing grew in the white dusty soil, which concealed very near the surface immense quantities of a substance needed by the world more and more every year to assist the growth of crops and feed its increasing population. "Colonel" North, as he was called



SONS OF CHILE WHO PROMOTE THE DEVELOPMENT OF HER INDUSTRIES

The Araucanians have largely interbred with the Spaniards, forming the hybrid class known as "huasos," who, like the Argentine gaucho, are born horsemen and supply the labour of the farms. The lowest class are the "rotos," who are the "hands" of industry. They are a hardy set of men, working when needs must, but always ready to take a holiday or to dance the national Cueca



THE RISING GENERATION IN A MINING CENTRE OF THE NORTH

One would not go to a mining town in the county of Durham to see the best specimens of English boyhood. It would be equally unfair to regard this mixed group at the great copper mining settlement of Chuquicamata as typically Chilean. Spanish and Indian characteristics are clearly defined, and also a touch of the tarbrush, and there are signs of North American influence in their dress



BY WINDING WATERS IN A PEACEFUL VALLEY OF CENTRAL CHILE

The multitudinous streams that rise in the Andes and hurry westward to the Pacific supply much of the beauty of the central and southern regions of Chile. In a journey south to Valdivia, the railway continually crosses pleasant little valleys like this. The abundance of shady trees and the far spreading fields, which never attain to the proportions of the Argentine estancias, endow the Chilean scene with a somewhat English beauty and charm.

Photo. Negros, Santiago



BRINGING THE HARVEST HOME: FARMING SCENE IN THE CENTRAL ZONE OF CHILE

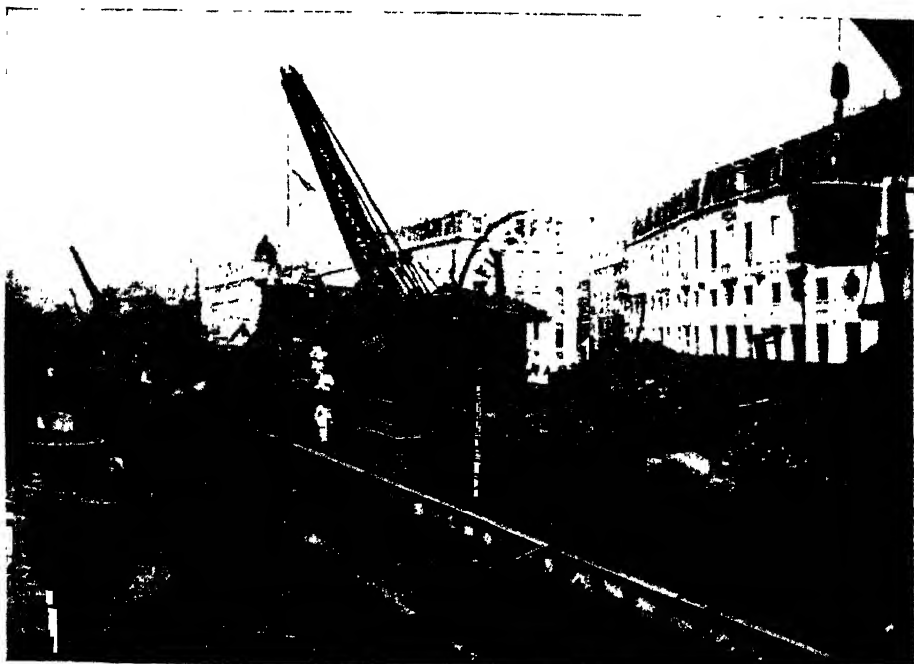
Everywhere in the agricultural district there is picturesqueness, even if it is at times mingled with much that is insanitary and far from savoury. The use of the bullock as a beast of burden is still very common, and no scene could be more typical of country life in the central zone of Chile during the harvesting season than this animated photograph of the bullock team hauling laboriously the well-filled wagon.

Photo, Helfer, Santiago



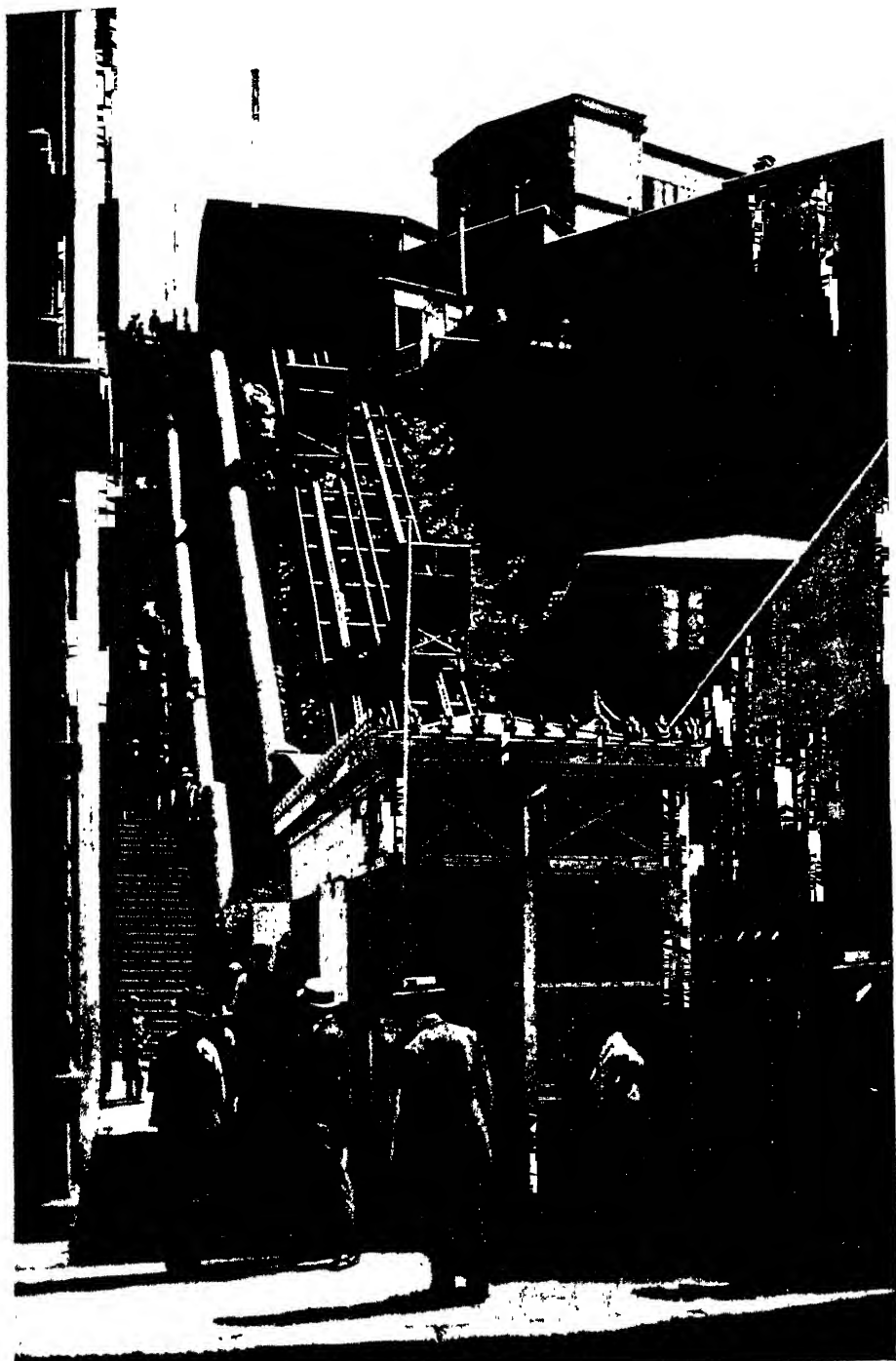
A MUSTER OF CHILE'S FOUR-LEGGED MILK-CARRIERS

Mules and donkeys are widely employed in Chile as beasts of burden, but the favourite pack animal of the Chilean is undoubtedly the more intelligent horse, and, as here shown, provision horses assist the milkmen in their daily rounds



GLIMPSE OF THE CROWDED DOCKS AT VALPARAÍSO

The shipping section of Valparaíso is wholly devoted to commerce, and in both directions offers not a yard of relief until one has almost passed outside of the town. Everywhere are stores and merchandise, the clatter of steam cranes, the loading of wagons, and a fine sense of bustle which make this town one of the liveliest centres of business in the South American continent



UPS AND DOWNS OF VALPARAÍSO STREETS

Most of the population of the port live up the hills which rise steeply from the shore, for the low-lying part along the water's edge is the earthquake strip. A large number of hydraulic and electric elevators serve the pedestrians in their daily ups and downs, while numerous forbidding flights of stairs are provided for those who are willing to use them

Photo, Allan, Valparaiso



HOW THE BEER REACHES THE SUPPER TABLES OF VALPARAÍSO

Owing to the hilly character of the town, practically all the traffic in the residential quarters upon the hills is borne on horse or mule back, as wheeled vehicles are quite impossible in most of the steep and stony streets. Household commodities form no exception to this rule, as we here see a supply of beer on its way to a householder

Photo, Allan, Valparaíso

when he came to England to finance his companies, became a figure known to all. He was a man of commonplace appearance and uncultivated mind, but he was shrewd and generous, and he spent his huge fortune with open hands.

He made a tour through Chile at the height of his prosperity, impressing some and amusing others by his "magnificence." He died, still as rich as ever and not less ostentatious, in 1896. The continuance of the nitrate



A VALPARAÍSO BAKER ABOUT TO START UPON HIS ROUNDS

We have seen the beer being taken on horseback up the steep hills of Chile's great Pacific port, and here is how the bread is conveyed. Every conceivable article of domestic use may be seen carried on horseback up the Valparaíso hills, a grand piano on the back of a horse being by no means an extraordinary sight!

Photo, Allan, Valparaíso

industry, which is the largest of the industries of Chile, depends upon the continued absence of rain in the districts where the deposits exist. Showers at infrequent intervals do not severely injure it, for the nitrates are

covered by a crust several feet thick. Only those beds suffer which are being actually worked. But a regular rainfall would gradually soak away the subsoil. This, however, is not regarded as a possibility at present, as years pass in



ENJOYING THE OPEN-AIR DELIGHTS OF AN IDEAL CLIMATE

Outdoor life offers one of the many charms of Chile, as it is possible to live entirely out of doors for months on end. The group here photographed is representative of the population of one of the smaller country towns and the types are Chilean with a possible admixture of Italian blood

Photo, Rivas Freire

some parts of the nitrate region without a drop of rain falling, and even in the coastal towns of Iquique and Antofagasta a gentle drizzle that might last a few minutes is the rarest occurrence. There is still, in the opinion of expert geologists, quite a hundred years' supply available at the rate of working which obtains to-day, and as the companies have almost a monopoly of this useful fertiliser, it is hardly likely that the demand will fall off before these fields are exhausted. By that time others may have been found.

The North companies worked the industry well. They installed machinery and made railways to carry their product to the coast, distant from the fields about a hundred miles at some points, at others less than a hundred. Most of the Chilean railways are government property. They do not show a profit when their receipts are looked at in

comparison with the amount they cost to build and to maintain. But the fares are cheap, the trains are comfortable, with good sleeping and dining cars, and they give employment to a very large number of presumably deserving persons who are not required to work too hard.

When there are more railways the mineral wealth of the country will be extracted more assiduously. Copper is the chief mining industry, but many more minerals are known to exist in paying quantities. It was for gold and silver that the Spanish conquerors stayed in the country, and the amount they took out, although it was large for those days, can have been only a very small proportion of what they left in. This still remains to be worked some day, though it will never be worked by the same cruel means which were employed by the Spaniards, careless of the Indians'

CHILE & THE CHILEANS

sufferings and only anxious to supply the need of their country for precious metals. Coal is a prosperous Chilean industry, and the mining settlement at Lota is one of the sights of the country, with its glass works, smelting furnaces, brick and tile fields, and its proprietor's gorgeous, if gimcrack, palace, set romantically in the midst of one of the most beautiful pleasure estates in the Western Hemisphere.

Mention has been made of the railways and their presumably deserving employees. This is "writ sarcastic," for the Chilean national railways resemble those of Tsarist Russia in being politically exploited and wastefully managed. All sorts of jobs are within the reach of those with the necessary "pull," and the curse of the country is the natives' desire for an easy billet in this or any other government



THREE BELLES OF SANTIAGO

department to which he can most easily find admission. The very facility with which the nitrate fields can be made to yield revenue to the government has also had a bad influence, and has tended to national slackness, whereas less accessible riches would have produced greater virility of character, more self-reliance and constructive industry.

There are immense quantities of good coal awaiting development south of Lota, but because vision, energy, and capital are essential to the creation of a great new national industry, nothing is being done; only the poor, soft coal of Lota is mined, and the easy-to-work salitreras, or nitrate fields, appeal to the natives.



CHILEAN "ARRIEROS"

The country carriers, or arrieros, differ much in type and methods from the British, as the almost roadless land eliminates the cart and involves pack animals. The arriero is well shod and clad, and although rough-looking is usually a courteous fellow

Photo, Mattenson & Grimm

Cultivation is the keynote of the Chilean landed proprietors, both small and great. Fruit, flowers, vegetables, vines—from which come the best wines of South America—wheat and maize, are represented everywhere in the fertile central zone, where cattle also graze on sweet, rich pasturage, and where innumerable hives proclaim the universality of bee-culture. But the great charm of rural Chile and of its people springs from a pervading savour of bygone, picturesque, romantic days. In their homes are ornaments and isolated bits of furniture of the eighteenth century; the high comb and mantilla are still in evidence, though less so than the long black

church-going manto which every woman must wear, while the men still ride on high-pommelied, silver-bedizened saddles, with brightly-coloured ponchos, mostly red or yellow, or red and yellow, many of which are still hand-woven from the silky hair of the guanaco.

The Chilean is good and whole-hearted at both work and play, while on the sea-coast he is an intrepid and skilful navigator. Signs of hardship are cheerfully absent from this smiling land. It will be judged from the foregoing that estancia life in Chile is a very happy one. The great house may date from colonial times and gain much of its outward beauty therefrom, but its accommodation adapts modern European comfort to the climate, and in many instances arrives at a state of luxury. The innumerable water-courses running down from the Andes furnish ample waterpower everywhere for all electrical

or other purposes, as well as for adequate irrigation of the lands and gardens.

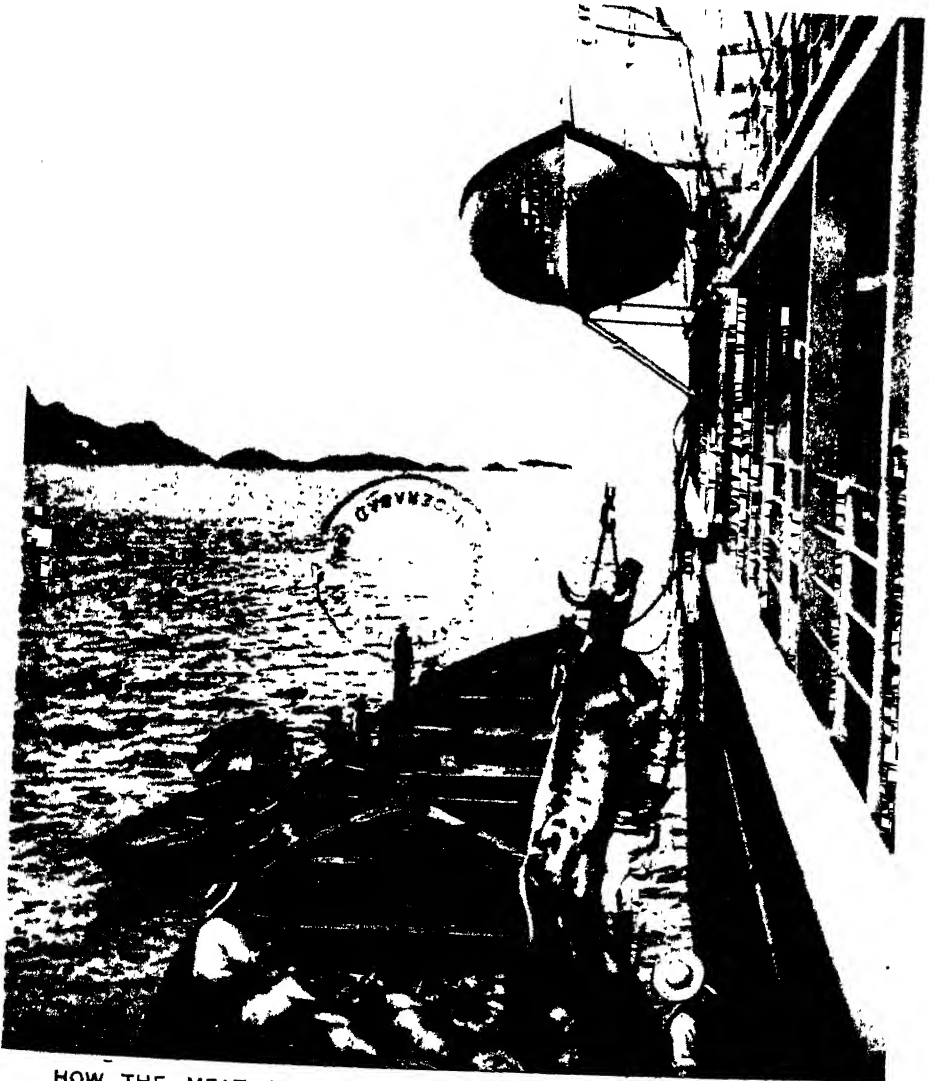
As has been said, hospitality is a characteristic of the Chilean generally, and the great estanciero is hospitality personified, with the means immediately at his disposal for the full exercise of that virtue. What has he not within reach of his hand? Meat of the best quality bred by himself; fruit—apples, pears, peaches, melons, all of the best European kinds, and all of extraordinarily fine flavour, notwithstanding their equally extraordinary dimensions, and many others; vegetables (including the indigenous potato) of all kinds, notably peas and beans, and flowers in luxuriant abundance and of all varieties,

CHILE & THE CHILEANS

among which are likely to be exquisite roses: honey and wine, the latter of peculiar and fine qualities as yet unknown in Europe, although their export may one day be possible commercially. All these are grown on the estate, the different fields, meadows, and gardens of which are divided from one another by quaint mud-built, tile-topped walls, or hedges of bramble.

Roughly speaking but very probably, the Chilean estancia differs from that of Argentina by its greater air of general cultivation, and by the walls and hedges which subdivide it in place of the ubiquitous and dreary barbed wire fencing of the pampa.

The best agricultural districts are in the centre. The south is largely forest. Here the climate is wet: a great deal of



HOW THE MEAT SUPPLY IS TAKEN ABOARD AT PACIFIC PORTS
The voyager up the Pacific coast too often has the opportunity of seeing to-morrow's beef-steaks arriving in this fashion on board ship, the wretched cattle destined for the table being mercilessly slung aboard by the horns. Of course, it is necessary in these latitudes to cook the meat soon after it has been killed

Photo, Allan, Valparaiso



SPRING-TIME AMONG THE COLONISTS IN A COUNTRY DISTRICT OF OLD ARAUCANIA

In the Chilean mines, factories, and other industries, the direction is mostly European. And though some jealousy of the intrusion of southern settlers to attract settlers to the less developed southern regions. This is mostly products of form of encourages immigration, and has even offered small farms to the fact that the latter are so plentiful that a good one may be purchased for a small sum of ballocks to horses, despite the fact that the latter are so plentiful that a good one may be purchased for a small sum of ballocks to horses.



THE WAYSIDE CALVARY AND A DOUBTFUL SENSE OF REVERENCE

The symbols of the Roman Catholic Church are very familiar everywhere in Chile, and wayside shrines are common, though this at Puerto Montt is rather unusual in its character. It is doubtful whether familiarity with such shrines and symbols breeds nothing but reverence. This photograph at least would seem to put that question rather pointedly

Photo, Allan, Valparaiso

rain falls in summer, and of snow in winter. Round about Valdivia it will rain without ceasing for weeks on end, and for months at a time rain will fall some time every day. Thus between the arid north and the soaking south there is all the difference possible, and in between there are other varieties of climate. The best is the central region. Here in summer the skies are blue, the sunshine is tempered by the light, exhilarating quality of the air, like that of Greece. No conditions could be more delightful.

It is hot enough at midday to justify the siesta, the midday rest, which is usual in Chile among all classes. The climate also makes it advisable to eat light food. The labouring people and the workers with their hands live largely

on beans. A favourite soup is called cazuela, not unlike the Spanish puchero; it has a piece of meat cooked in with its vegetables, and the meat can be eaten as a second course. Indian corn is served in very appetising fashion—humitas de choclo is a delicious dish—and quesillos, or small cheeses, make their appearance at most meals, and are always welcome. In the streets ice-cream sellers and vendors of mote, or sweetened popcorn, do a flourishing trade; and there are plenty of daring buyers, too, for those who sell pastry fiercely flavoured with onions and garlic. At the railway stations there are usually women selling fruit and sweets, and a white bread made with milk and eggs, called pan de huevos. The Chilean working class is pronounced

CHILE & THE CHILEANS

by those who have employed labour in the country to be equal to any in the world, although their diet is so largely vegetarian. They are intelligent as well as industrious. They learn quickly, and are skilful craftsmen. The *roto* (literally "broken") is the labourer, and Chilean *rotos* are distinct from the manual labourer east of the Andes in possessing a certain national character of sturdy self-reliance. They are not the mixed polyglot mob of Buenos Aires and the large Argentine centres, but a class that is racy of the soil. They are physically fitter and less inclined to look with misgiving at every new job of work proposed to them. The wages of both artisan and labourer have remained low, but there is a tendency towards a rise.

Economic Rocks Ahead

It cannot be supposed that the worker has not been affected by the knowledge that all over the civilized globe Labour is demanding better conditions of life. Whether the workers of Chile will seize political power from the hands of the few rich families that have governed the country, and still have the paramount influence, depends a good deal on the course which the oligarchy follows. If they are wise and look ahead, they may avoid trouble. But the fate of President Balmaceda showed that foresight was not a gift possessed by the governing class in large measure. It is not only that they want to keep their power.

Fatal Habit of Procrastination

There is among them the inclination, noticeable in all peoples of Spanish origin, to put off doing anything unpleasant or difficult. This is less marked, perhaps, among the Chileans than in some other countries of South America; but the fact that when they want an appointment to be kept punctually they make use of the expression "*hora inglesa*" (English time), proves that in Chile, as in neighbouring countries, the Spanish habit, summed up in the one word *mañana* (to-morrow), is strong.

In commerce and industry Chile comes next to Argentina and Brazil, but both of these are more in foreign than in

native hands. The Chilean young men of easy circumstances and "good" family prefer entering the army or navy, or becoming politicians, to going in for business. Many of the families reckoned among the best bear British names; for example: MacClure, Mackenna, Simpson, Porter, Edwards, Rogers, Walker, though Chilean features predominate even in the second generation of all families of British origin.

The friendly relations between the State and the Church are illustrated in Chile by the prevalence of names which had religious origin. Elsewhere most of these have been changed; streets which were formerly dedicated to saints or to the Holy Spirit have been named after the heroes of revolution or political reform. It will be noticed that in Chile this is not the case, the chief towns being Santiago, the city of Saint James; Valparaíso, which was originally Val de Paraíso, the Vale of Paradise; Concepción, called after the Virgin Birth of the Saviour, and so on.

Splendour of the Capital

Santiago, the capital city, occupies a magnificent situation in the great longitudinal valley with the majestic range of the snow-covered Andes enclosing the view eastward, and the lower Cordillera de la Costa more distant to the west. It is doubtful if any other city in the world can boast a more beautiful scene than that presented at sunset from almost any part of the famous Alameda or Avenida de las Delicias, the great tree-lined highway, three miles long, which bisects the city from the south-east to the north-west. Eastward the mighty Andine heights, with their snowy summits flushed into most delicate pink, tower above the dark purple shadows of the coastal range which are projected magically on to the Andes as the sun dips towards the Pacific. It may be that many of the splendid-looking mansions along the Alameda are largely constructed of cement, but they give to this splendid thoroughfare, with its grateful shade of trees and splashing fountains and its many monuments, an air of dignity and

CHILEAN CHARACTERS

At Work & at Play



Estanciero of Chile in his decorative dress. The Chilean poncho is usually shorter than the Argentine form, but the spurs are large

Photo, Heffer, Santiago



Chile is a land of beautiful horses. These, on a farm in the Andine foothills, are being gathered to have their manes and tails clipped



A group of estancia employees, splendidly mounted and sitting their horses with the easy assurance that comes from "second nature"



Street scene in Santiago. The man is buying mote, a sort of popcorn drenched with syrup and much in request by the working-classes



Dancing the national Cueca. It is performed to an accompaniment of harp and voice, with much hand-clapping and handkerchief play.



This Araucanian cacique, with a veneer of civilization, vies with any Chilean in the matter of stirrups and spurs and his mount.



That the Chilean does not drink by halves is shown by this rider's glass. His companion has folded back his poncho to set his arms free.



No more typically Chilote landscape could be found than this scene near Valparaíso, where the hillsides are covered with Chile pines, or with the monkey-puzzle tree.



Ibolyic peacefulness reigns in the neighbourhood of Quillota, where the best orchard lands of Chile are, and whence comes much of the alluring fruit displayed in the markets of Santiago and Valparaiso

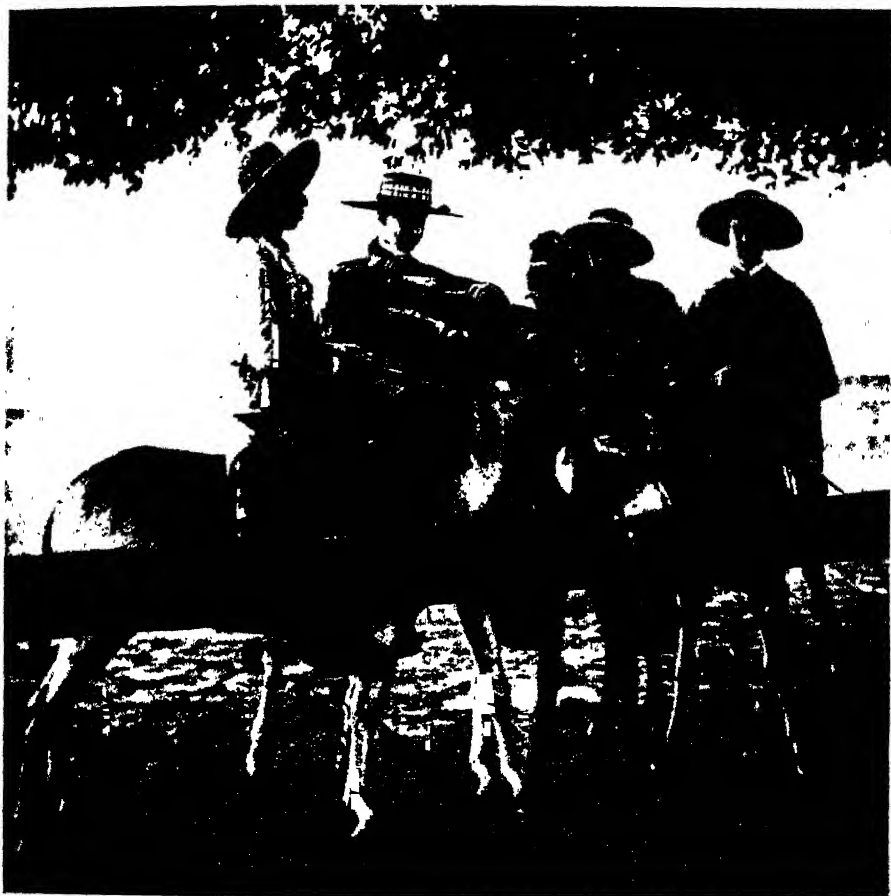


The toppedadura is a sport of Chilean cattle-raisers. It is a feature of all fairs, and provision for its practice, as shown here, exists in many country towns. On the opposite page is a further note about it

CHILE & THE CHILEANS

established peace which is in marked contrast with the impression one receives in most South American cities. On the north side of the Alameda stands the famous Cerro de Santa Lucia, an isolated rocky crag on which Pedro de Valdivia, the Conquistador who founded the city in the days of Pizarro and

first engaged the Indians here. In the very heart of the city there is a fine sense of activity. All is bustle and movement round about the Plaza de Armas and Calles Huérfanos and Ahumada, but half a mile from the centre the streets are as sleepy as those of a French provincial town, although



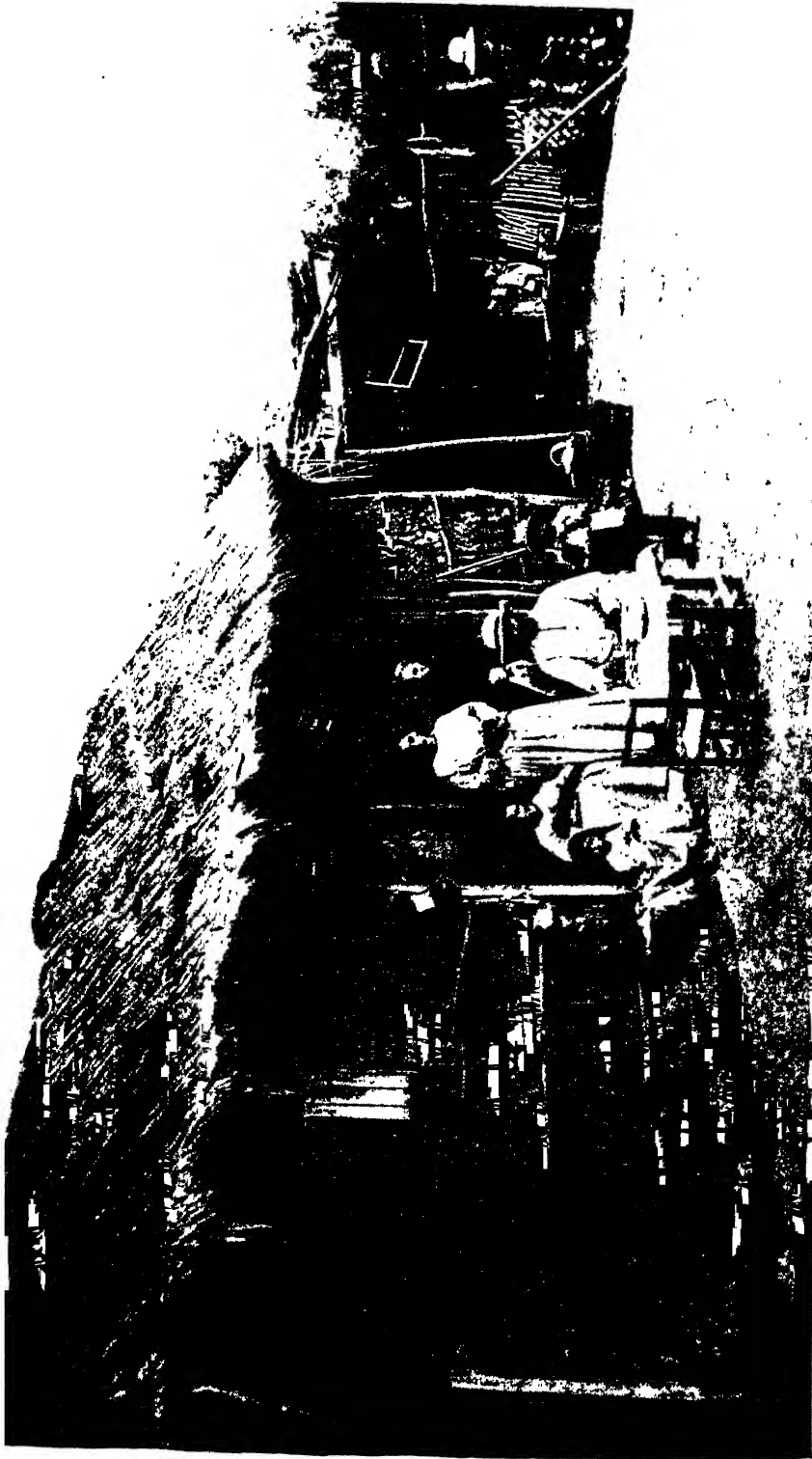
"TOPEADURAS": AS THE OLD COCK CROWS THE YOUNG ONE LEARNS

This is true in every clime, of every people. Thus the young Chileans who have seen their fathers at the "topeaduras," as in the view opposite, imitate them with their humbler mounts. There are two opposing sides, and the animals, placing their necks upon the bar, are made to press sideways against each other until one side gives way. It is the tug-o'-war reversed, and a real jolly sport!

Photo, Heffer, Santiago

fought with the Araucanians here, first established himself. This historic hill is now entirely a pleasure ground, and from a look-out at its top the view across the city is a magnificent commentary on the material progress of Spanish America in the centuries that have passed since Pizarro's captain

the never distant clatter of the electric tramways is always to be heard. There are many fine buildings, such as the General Post Office, the Town Hall, the Congress and the Treasury, or Palacio de la Moneda, in which the president of the republic has his official residence. Everywhere there are



CHILEAN RANCHERO'S AL FRESCO MEAL AT THE DOOR OF HIS CLAY-BUILT HOME

All the small domestic and farm buildings throughout Chile are constructed of sun-baked clay, applied next to crudely built frames of timbers. When needed the houses often look quite speck and span if well whitewashed, but the most ramshackle they look upon them, and they are soon shabby and tattered. The Chilean rancho takes little pride in his home, and one seldom sees these adobe structures in anything but a ruinous condition.

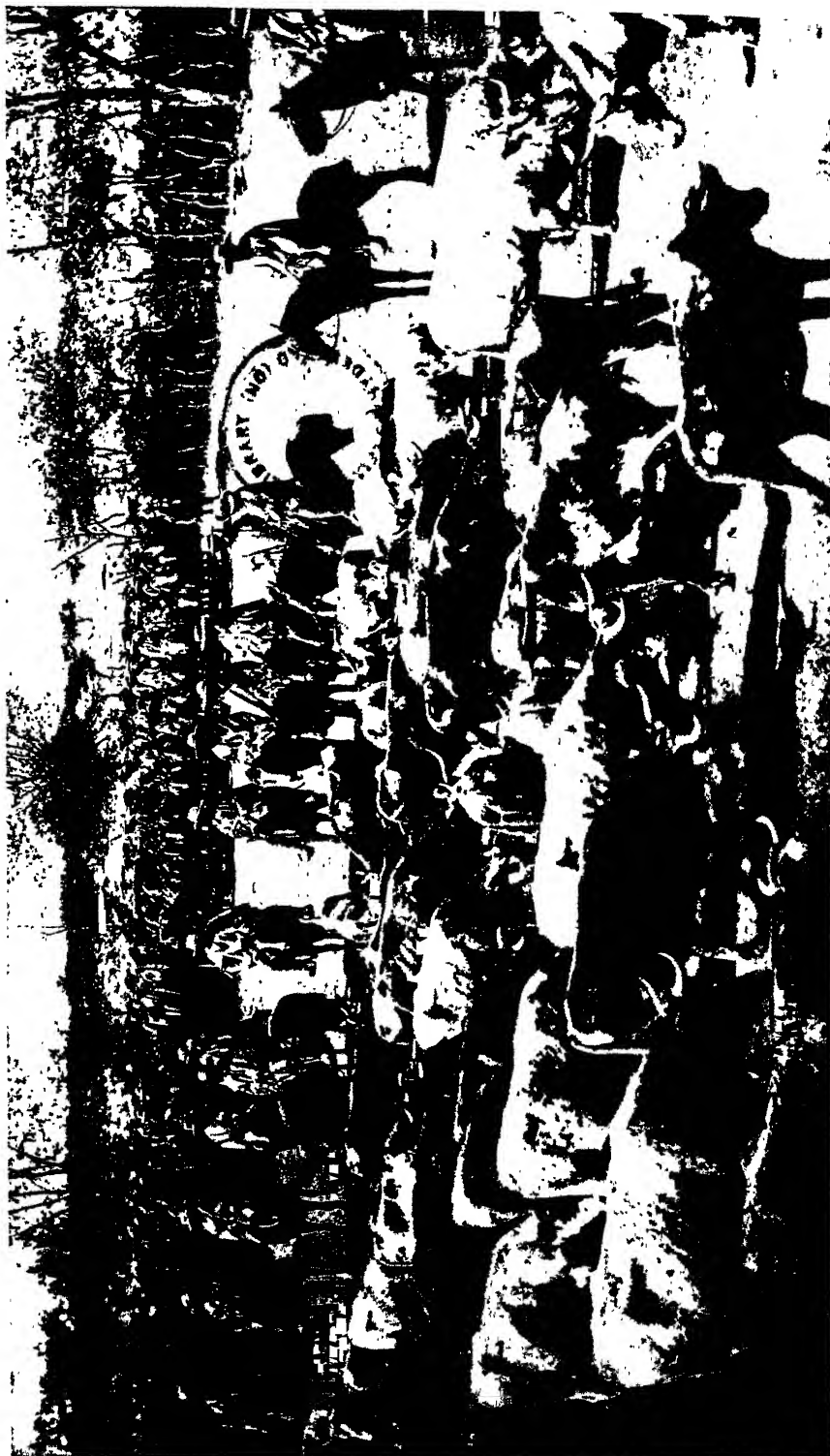
Photo. Allen, 1 of 2000



THE CABIN HOMES IN WHICH THE NATIVE INDIANS OF CHILE DWELL

It is hardly correct to describe the chozas or cabins of Araucanians as dwelling-places, yet they are not so far behind the habitations in many parts of western Ireland. Constructed chiefly of crudely-cut timber covered with straw in a rude sort of thatch, they afford shelter from the wind and rain of the winter time, and give the Indians a settled habit of life, weaving being a common pursuit among them.

Photo, Hefner, Santiago



READY FOR A RODEO IN A SOUTHERN AGRICULTURAL CENTRE OF CHILE

The rodeo is the real pastime of the cattle-men of Chile. It is usually performed in a circus-like arena with six tier-shells surrounding the ring. A rider guides his horse among the cattle and selects a particular animal, which he detaches from the rest. He has to "bump" it by turning the shoulder of his horse against that of the bull, making the latter bump against the tier-shells, or the tier-shells against the tier-shells, as he is, with at least 100 lbs. of force.

CHILE & THE CHILEANS

churches, eloquent of the extraordinary hold which the Church has upon the community, and by a special law no saloon or restaurant, where drink is sold, is permitted within a certain distance of a church. As a plan of the city shows the churches sprinkled about as though a pepper-caster had been shaken on it, it may be judged that Santiago is not overcrowded with drinking places. The life of the city, indeed, is on the whole just a little humdrum, and but for the evening performances of the excellent military bands, either in the Plaza de Armas or Plaza de la Moneda, there is little amusement other than a few cinemas, where again the music is the main attraction. There are numerous public parks and paseos, such as the Parque Forestal, and on the outskirts of the city there are many pleasant rural resorts.

The Naples of the Pacific

Valparaíso, which lies sixty-eight miles to the north-west of the capital, is in many ways more picturesque and interesting than Santiago. The city proper is built along a narrow sandy strip of shore, and its residential streets and suburbs rise steeply up the volcanic hills behind, where no wheeled traffic is possible, horses and mules having to carry everything on their backs, even to grand pianos, and numerous funiculars and hydraulic lifts facilitate the ascent of the residents. It was the sandy strip that suffered most severely during the terrible earthquake of 1906. All traces of this have now disappeared, and hundreds of splendid new buildings have taken the place of those that went down in the twinkling of an eye. Valparaíso lighted at night presents one of the most charming sights in the world, very reminiscent of Naples and its splendid bay as seen from shipboard. Being in no wise concerned with the government of the country, Valparaíso has no dignity to maintain, and is engaged entirely in business, but its social life is probably more interesting than that of the capital, the result in some degree of the large foreign element resident in the port.

Concepción is a medium town pleasant to live in. It is the supply centre for a prosperous population of farmers, and it receives from them for distribution their wheat, beans, and cattle. Farther south Valdivia taps the district that has been colonised by German settlers, and with its port, Corral, flourishes on the trade which they have created. It was burned down, and then rebuilt as a specimen of town-planning.

Forests and Rainfall

German settlers form a large portion of the population, and German notions of house building confront one at every turn. There are hundreds of pretty villas, made of wood and iron, which were, no doubt, imported from the Fatherland and fitted up in this far "colony," for a German alcalde, or mayor of the town, had the temerity to cable to the Kaiser on his day of jubilee, as I was informed on one of my visits to Valdivia, that he had a "loyal colony" of Kaiser-true Germans out there! One may be permitted to wonder if they swagger about their Kaiser so blatantly to-day.

There are vast forests in this region, and forestry is one of the chief industries, though wheat and fruit have gained upon it since a good deal of the land was cleared. Fears are expressed sometimes that the Chileans are cutting down their trees with too little regard for the possible consequences to their climate. If the amount of rain that now falls in the central parts were to diminish, the dryness would be disastrous to agriculture. Schemes of replanting have been suggested, and in some directions started. Prosperity for Chile depends largely upon moisture, and the reduction of forest area reduces that also.

German Exiles in "Eden"

The Germans had many difficulties to overcome before they turned a roadless, wild desert and a handful of huts, inhabited by Indians, little above the level of savages, into a well-cultivated colony and a flourishing town. To begin with, speculation in land, very much like that described by

CHILE & THE CHILEANS

Dickens in "Martin Chuzzlewit," broke out as soon as the idea of colonisation was talked of. Land sharks sent their agents to the Indian chiefs with cases of brandy, and persuaded them easily to sign away their rights and those of their tribes. The lands thus acquired were sold to emigration agencies in Europe. The emigrants who repurchased them were unaware that much of their property was covered by dense forest and poisonous swamp, and that any lots which had advantages to

summer immense flocks of small birds utterly destroyed the crops. The clergy disliked having a Protestant population set down among their people and made themselves unpleasant. But the colonists worked steadily with courage, and have thrived mightily for their pains. One of their activities is supplying Chile with excellent light beer.

Still farther south from Valdivia there are regions inhabited almost entirely by Indians of a primitive type. There is a tribe called the Yaghans



WARM WINTER CLOTHING IN THE WEAVING

While her menfolk are hunting the guanaco, that highly-prized little quadruped of the genus to which the llama belongs, the Araucanian wife is spinning guanaco wool, after which she will dye it, red being the colour of her first choice, and weave it into material. The guanaco provides these Indians with many a warm garment, and their bee-hive huts are carpeted with its soft skin

Photo, Brown Bros.

recommend them were claimed by several people, in spite of the bargains driven with the Indian chiefs.

When the first emigrants arrived they found no place of settlement. They were in despair. Then a local proprietor gave an example of Chilean generosity and kindness. He parcelled out his estate into lots, and sold them at reasonable prices. Others did the same, the claimants were dealt with, a steady stream of settlers flowed in. One winter there was a famine. One

which wanders about by the ocean, living on shell-fish, and moving from beach to beach in canoes of their own building, or rather hollowing. If they are caught in bad weather, the men are said to have no hesitation in "lightening the ship" by throwing their wives and children overboard. When food is short, the old women are eliminated from the food list by strangulation. An Indian who was told by a white man that such a practice was abominable, especially when they kept their dogs



JUAN FERNANDEZ: ERSTWHILE RESORT OF A FAMOUS PRIVATEER

The main island of a small group in the South Pacific, included in the province of Valparaiso, Juan Fernandez was for some years the solitary residence of Alexander Selkirk, the Scottish sailor and supposed original of Defoe's Robinson Crusoe, whose privateering exploits are world-famous. Its mountainous and rocky shores are frequently visited by Chilean fishermen

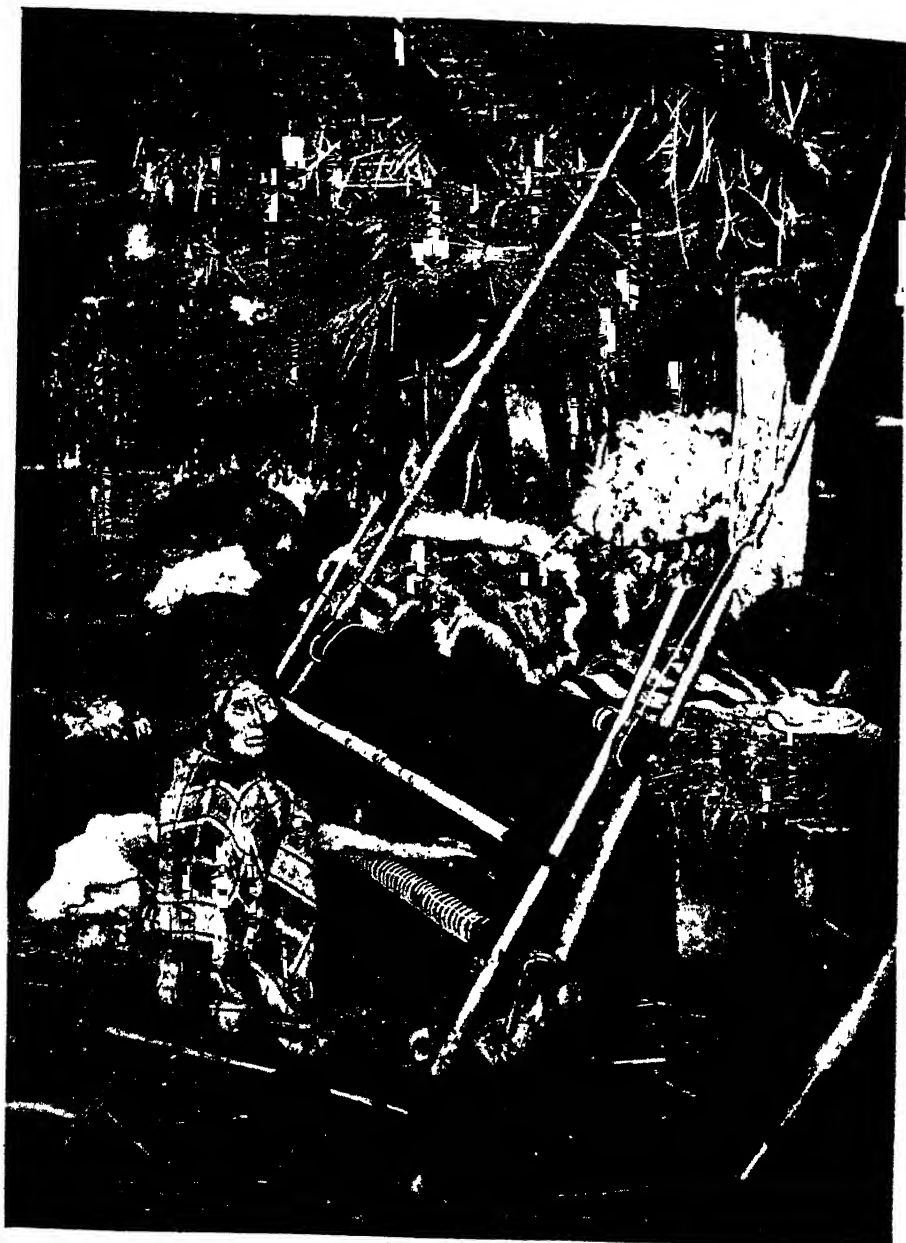
Photo, Heffer, Santiago



EASTER ISLAND: THE PUZZLE OF THE SOUTH PACIFIC

Scattered fragments of bygone culture and art, traceable to a Melanesian source, are found in profusion about this lonely islet, belonging to Chile and known as Rapanui, or Easter Island, since its discovery by the Dutch admiral, Roggeveen, on Easter Day, 1722. Huge monolithic statues, rock carvings and stone faces are relics which present an ethnological problem still unsolved

Photo, P. H. Edmunds



A UNIVERSAL CRAFT AND THE ARAUCANIAN INDIAN

The Araucanians are distributed between the southern provinces of the Argentine Republic and of Chile, as we have seen in our section on Argentina. The Araucanian woman in this excellent photograph of the interior of an Indian choza is engaged in the weaving of the coarse but serviceable cloth used for the ponchos of her tribesmen and the peon class of Chileans

alive, replied with a cunning leer, "Doggie catch otter, old woman, no." These Yaghans cannot be civilized. When they are given clothes to wear and white men's food, they die. It is unlikely that the few who are left will survive much longer.

Another tribe of rather more respectable habits wanders on the plains of Southern Chile. The Onas are hunters. Formerly they hunted the guanaco, and from it got their food, their clothing (the hide), their tools (made of its bones, polished and

CHILE & THE CHILEANS

sharpened, and their bowstrings (its jaws). This creature, almost extinct now on these prairies, was a strange mixture. It has been described as possessing the head and ears of a mule, the body of a camel, the feet of a stag, and the tail of a horse. In order to shoot the guanaco, the Onas were trained to squat for hours at a time without moving. They were very good shots, as they proved by practising with the bow and arrow at one another.

They seldom hit one another, for the person aimed at is exceedingly quick and agile in leaping aside. There always is a leap, however, which shows the aim to be accurate. The native Indians of Patagonia are the subject of a pendant article to this description of Chile, and no more need be said of the indigenous races here.

The most southerly town in Chile is Punta Arenas (Sandy Point), with a population not far short of ten thousand.



ARAUCANIAN WOMAN OF SOUTHERN CHILE

A stocky, vigorous, and not unpleasant-featured people are the natives of the race whom the Spanish conquerors never succeeded in entirely subduing. Their habits are primitive, and although not models of cleanliness, they might compare not unfavourably with certain gipsy races of Europe. The women have few ornaments, but, they like them large, as the ear-pieces here, and of silver

Photo, Allan, Valparaíso

In this district sheep can be bred with unusually long and thick wool. The animals owe this protection to the severe cold they have to endure. The first breeders were Australians or New Zealanders (it is not a long voyage from Australia to this part of Chile), and they sold their wool at very good prices. Upon their success followed a frenzied land boom. Numbers of sham companies were formed to acquire and sell lands suitable for the new venture. Prices were forced up to absurd heights. Then the bottom fell out of the boom, and many of the foolish speculators were ruined.

Since then the sheep-raising industry has returned steady profits, but it is not capable of any great development, since the amount of land affording pasture is limited. The port of Punta Arenas does a big trade in wool, and also ships a quantity of frozen meat. It is a windy town, and the climate is inclined to be cold even in summer, but it is not

unhealthy. A good deal of the business is in the hands of Scotsmen, who compare the weather favourably with that of Scotland.

Foreigners, it is noticeable, generally speak well of Chile and the Chileans, whatever part they may have taken in. It is a country less visited by Europeans than are the Argentine and Brazil, but among its inhabitants there are many from European states and as a rule, they not only express their attachment to so fertile and flowery a land, but prove that they are sincere by staying there in preference to living anywhere else. Of all the countries of South America known to the writer, Central Chile and Uruguay make the strongest appeal, and it would be Santiago or Valparaíso he would choose for his home were fate to call him to the Pacific side, just as it would be, unhesitatingly, Montevideo were he free to choose his city of residence on the east.

II. A Note About The Patagonian Indians

By H. Hesketh Prichard

Author of "The Hunting Indians of Patagonia," "The Tehuelche Indian," etc.

THE Patagonian Indians have long been fabled in story; in fact, ever since Magellan kidnapped two of them shortly after he and his men, landing on the Patagonian beaches, had seen enormous footprints in the sand, this tribe has gained the reputation of possessing the stature of giants. As a matter of fact, the Patagonian Indians, the Tehuelches, are the tallest race which inhabit the earth, but the early accounts which gave them a height of 7 ft., and even more, are incorrect, the average height of the men being an inch or two above 6 ft.

The Patagonian Indians, as I shall call them—and by this name I refer to the Tehuelche tribe, who hunt all over the rolling pampas stretching between the Andes and the Atlantic Ocean, and between the great rivers which cut the South American Continent in two about the 38th parallel of latitude

and the Magellan Straits—are now a race of horsemen, but the introduction of horses is of quite recent date. One hundred and fifty years ago they were foot Indians, but now their whole lives are centred round the horse.

They are true nomads, true hunters, who wander after the game across their vast hunting-ground, and who live a life—those who are now left of them—as free as the world has ever known.

It is very difficult to state accurately the present number of these Indians, but that their numbers are dwindling is certain. However, the tribe holds so remarkable a place in the life of the pampas that some account of them cannot fail to be interesting.

First as regards their religion. It may be said that they worship a good spirit, who many years ago, according to Indian beliefs, took up his dwelling in a cave in the interior of the country.



MEN WHO WALK AS TREES AMONG THEIR FELLOWS

The migrations of these wandering giants, the Tehuelches, are difficult to follow. Among the wind-swept passes of the Southern Andes they carry on a trade in guanaco skins with the white man. Otherwise, they have but little intercourse with their neighbours; but the itinerant trader, knowing their weakness for the magical fiery draught, haunts their toldos with business-like pertinacity.

Photo, American Museum of Natural History, New York

or rather in the cordillera, and from that vantage ground poured out blessings upon his people. He gave to them the guanaco, the guenai, the ostrich, and the cavy, the four great stand-bys of the nomad hunter's existence, and then, having blessed his people, this good spirit fell into a long slumber. But in the Indian religion there is a second god, or rather demon, who is known as the Gualicho. As soon as the good spirit fell asleep, according to Indian legend, the Gualicho woke up, and proceeded to do harm to the tribes. He made the fox, the red wolf, and all the birds of prey, and he himself was not averse from descending upon a single Indian and doing him an injury.

The Gualicho is a very real superstition of Indian life, and it is a strange thing to one who happens to be inhabiting the tents or toldos of the Indians to see how every morning, just before sunrise, the warriors light torches and proceed to drive the Gualicho from the

back of their tents. This they do with a great outcry; sometimes even they mount their horses, and still waving their torches, drive him, as they imagine, out into the pampas.

So far the simple religion of the Indian. Now as to the methods of his daily life. He is probably as perfect a specimen of the true nomad hunter as the world has to show. There is down the centre of Patagonia a narrow path, perhaps only eighteen inches wide and many a thousand mile long, which is known as the Indian trail. Up and down this the Indian tribes wander. It leads from good camping ground to good camping ground, and it touches all the points at which game is abundant.

The Indian of these days possesses a certain number of cattle and flocks of sheep, but this is very recent, and in old days he possessed nothing but his skill as a hunter, and of course his horses. Even to-day it is by hunting that he lives, and the main article which he manufactures is the

CHILE: PATAGONIAN INDIANS

capa of guanaco skin. He sells also, or rather barter, the feathers of the rhea, or Patagonian ostrich, but his main wealth comes from the guanaco.

His methods of hunting are remarkable. He uses no bow and arrow, but



NIMROD OF THE PAMPAS

The true nomad hunter. Among the rugged Andean strongholds, and the surrounding vast treeless plains, the Tehuelche lives his primitive picturesque life in a world of his own

Photo, H. Hesketh Prichard

instead gallops down his quarry, which he kills with the boleadores. This is a three-thonged weapon, at the extremity of each thong being a stone sewn up in the raw hide. This weapon the Tehuelche Indian can use with extraordinary skill. When galloping at full speed he hurls it, first swinging it round his head, at the legs of the flying guanaco, and rarely does he fail to bring the beast to the ground, for the guanaco, when struck by the boleadores, becomes entangled in its coils, which wrap themselves round his legs and finally bring him to the ground. The Indian then leaps from his horse and kills the guanaco with his knife. In his hunt he is accompanied by large

numbers of country-bred dogs, some of which are very skilful in hunting down their prey.

Let us imagine that it is a hunting morning in the camp of the Tehuelches. The cacique, or hereditary chief, makes the arrangements for the hunt. He has perhaps, forty warriors who will take part in it. Before dawn, each of these warriors saddles up his horse and rides away to a spot appointed for him. Besides the horse he rides he leads a second animal, which he will ride when his first mount is weary. In his belt he takes a pinch of salt, nothing more, nor does he eat anything before starting, for it is the Indian rule that on hunting mornings the Indian shall not eat until he has killed.

Each Indian rides away as has been described, the plan of the cacique being to make an immense circle of men converging upon a certain point. Towards this central point the entire circle will drive the game. As the dawn brightens, a watcher, could he be there, might see smoke going up to heaven from various points of the landscape, all around the huge circle. Then the circle begins to close in. Now and again the Indian gets off his horse and lights another smoke, to give his direction to his comrades, until at length the Indians can see each other all converging and driving before them an immense quantity of the game of the country. There may be as many as five or six thousand guanaco, numbers of cavies, perhaps even a puma or two, and many ostriches. As soon as the circle is close enough, the Indians light fires all round so that the game cannot escape. Then they rush in, and with their dogs and boleadores the slaughter begins.

These battues, for so we may term them, take place usually just before the breeding season, when the female guanacos are heavy with young, the reason being that the skin of the mature guanaco is valueless for the purpose of making capas, but the skins of the unborn young are very soft, and it is from these that the capas are fashioned.

As the Indians rush in there is a scene of terrible slaughter, and for many

CHILE: PATAGONIAN INDIANS

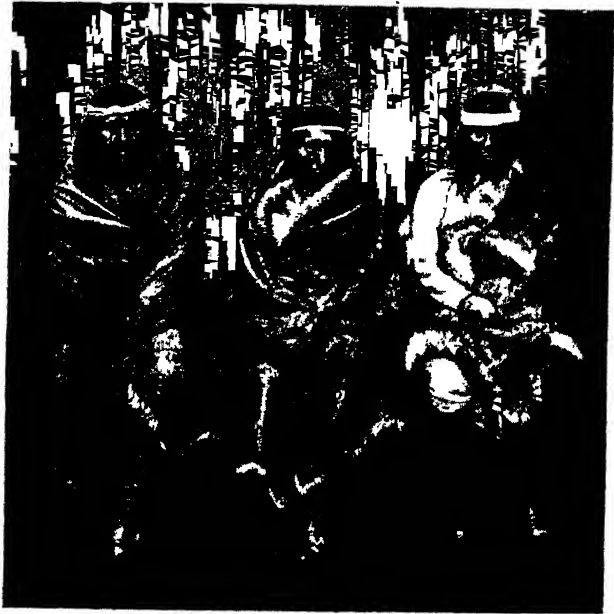
mile the ground is covered with the corpses of the hunted. When the hunt is over the tribe moves up and camps on the ground, and both women and men work at the skinning and preparation of the pelts, which lasts for several days. Afterwards these are handed over to the squaws, or, rather, as they call them among the Tehuelches, the *chinas*, who sew them into the capas which are sold for such high prices in the various coast towns.

It is a hard life that the Indians live in one of the hardest countries in the world. It is true that the game never decreases enough to cause a famine, but it is also true, a fact which is hardly realizable in more favoured countries, that Patagonia, both on the ground and in the air, is the home of more scavenging birds and beasts than can be easily imagined. It is quite impossible to tie out a horse with a hide sogá; he will not be there for a quarter of an hour before the foxes will have gnawed through the sogá in order to eat it. And if there does not happen to be a fox there, which is a very rare event, there is pretty sure to be a red wolf. If anything dies on the Patagonian pampas it is picked clean within a couple or three hours.

This is the doing of the great condors, which sometimes measure 12 ft. across the tips of the wings; but besides the condors there are many varieties of hawk and other birds of prey, such as the chimango and the corancho.

The character of the Tehuelches is distinctly pleasant, for though silent they are men of an open nature. A great many stories have come down of the great sufferings endured by Europeans who were captured by them, but

the writer of these pages was never able to substantiate any of these tales. On the contrary, the Indian respects the white man until he is driven to do otherwise, and will often give him a helping hand in gathering his horses, and accept no reward. The Indians are now at any rate quite peaceful, and never interfere with the traveller. They have always been of a quiet and stolid nature, living their picturesque lives in a world of their own. They have not been well treated by the various governments, and the great curse which

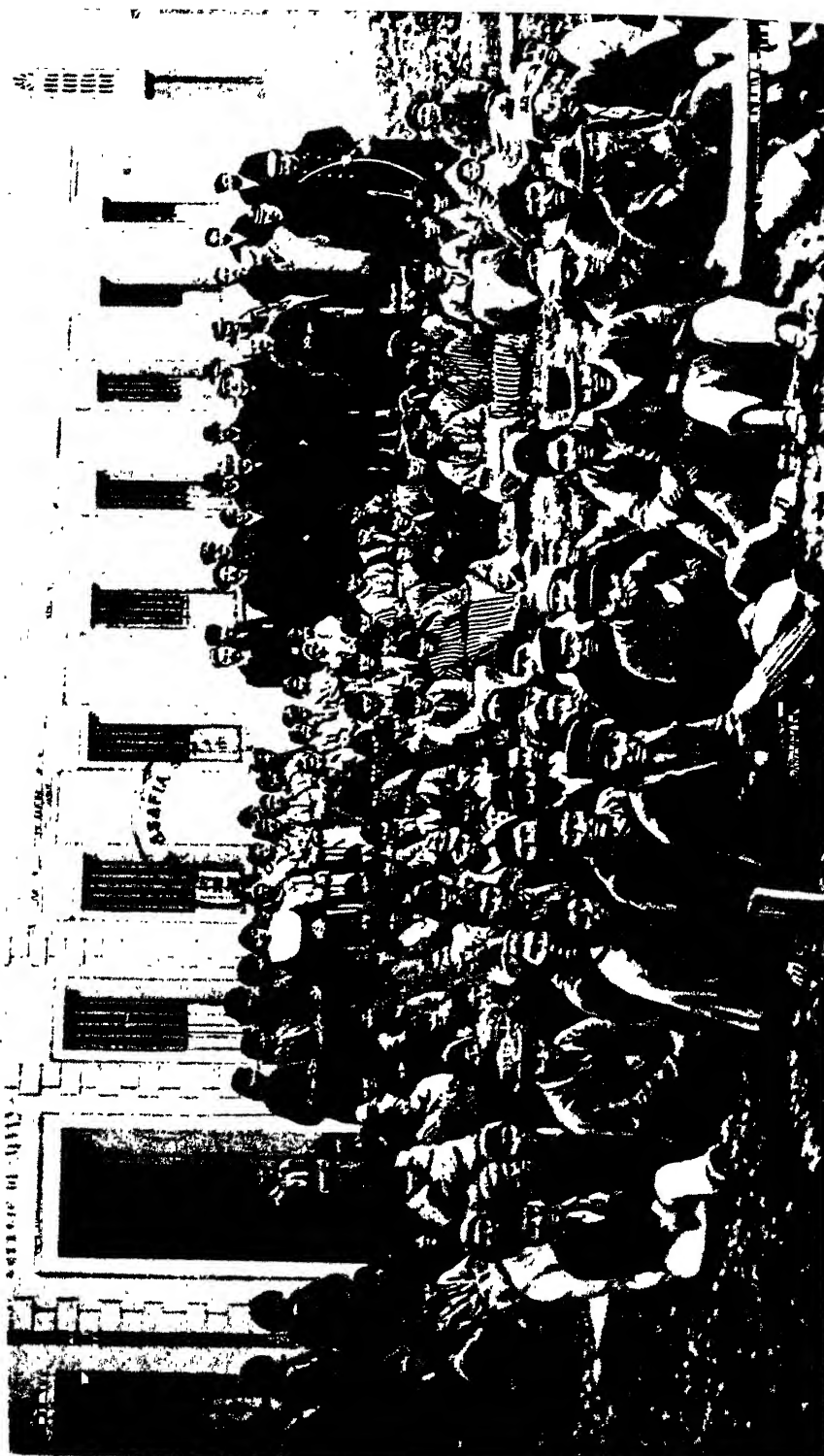


THREE MEN OF THE LARGE-FOOTED TRIBE

Hide overshoes cover their buskins in bad weather, partly explaining the term "*patagon*"—large foot, applied to the Tehuelches by their Spanish discoverers. Brave of heart, they fear nothing save the red wolf, great condor, and rapacious puma, which play havoc with their flocks

Photo, Allan, Valparaíso

for some years past has overshadowed their lives is the presence of the itinerant trader. This man carries with him the worst quality of whisky, which he sells to the Indians, and will continue to do so, law or no law. Once an Indian has drunk a glass or two he will sell everything he has got—his splendid horses, his store of capa robes, his everything, to obtain a little more. There is no need to labour the terrible possibilities which these weaknesses entail.



A CHILEAN GOVERNMENT SCHOOL WHERE ARAUCANIANS MAY RECEIVE AN ELEMENTARY EDUCATION

The warlike Araucanians stand out as the Indians of South America. In them the Spaniards found such worthy opponents that they were forced to abandon the continent. Now they are quiet and law-abiding, and the Chilean Government is doing its best to educate them.

Chile

III. The Foundations of the Republic

By W. H. Koebel

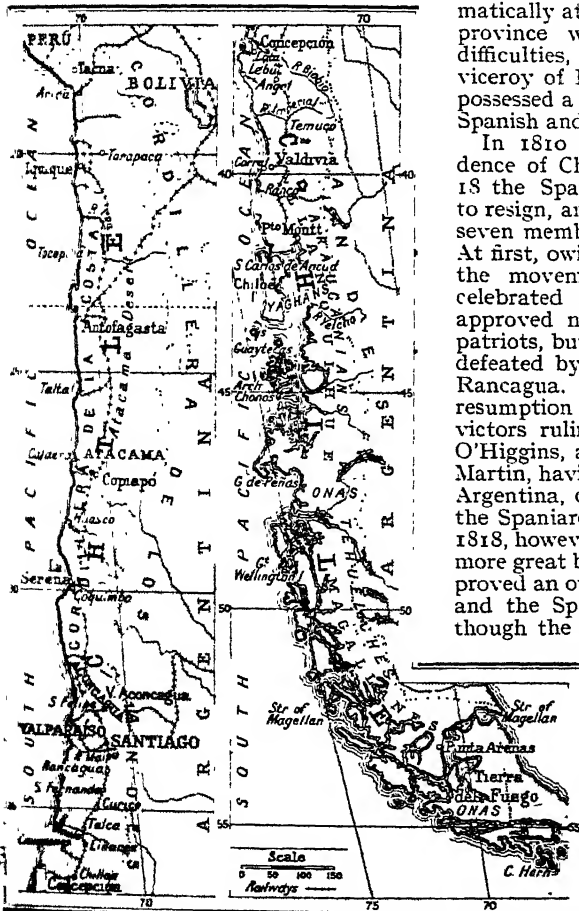
Author of "Modern Chile"

The original inhabitants of Chile were Indians of a not very high level of civilization. In the fifteenth century the northern and central parts of the country were invaded and conquered by the Incas of Peru, Yupanqui, but the southern portion continued to be held by fierce and warlike Araucanian Indians. In 1535 Chile was invaded from Bolivia by the Spanish leader Diego de Almagro, and in 1540 Pizarro sent Pedro de Valdivia to conquer the country. Valdivia founded several and other towns, but was captured and killed by the Indians in 1553.

During the next century a continuous warfare was waged between the Araucanian tribes and the Spaniards. An unparalleled resistance was offered, the Spanish settlements being repeatedly destroyed and their viceroy, De Villagran, being killed in 1563. In 1640 a treaty was signed by Quilín, leaving the Indians in undisturbed possession of the region south of the Bio-Bio. Fifteen years later war broke out again, and there were further desperate struggles in 1723 and 1766. The Araucanians continued to hold their own, and by a treaty of 1767 they were permitted the right to be represented diplomatically at Santiago. Spanish rule of the province was carried on under great difficulties, and was subservient to the viceroy of Peru at Lima. In 1800, Chile possessed a population of half a million, of Spanish and mixed nationality.

In 1810 a movement for the independence of Chile began, and on September 18 the Spanish governor was compelled to resign, and a provisional government of seven members was installed in his stead. At first, owing largely to divided councils, the movement did not succeed. The celebrated Bernardo O'Higgins was the approved military leader of the Chilean patriots, but in 1814 his army was signally defeated by the Spanish under Osorio at Rancagua. This led to the temporary resumption of Spanish authority, the victors ruling with great severity. But O'Higgins, and an Argentine general, San Martín, having organized a patriot army in Argentina, crossed the Andes, and routed the Spaniards at Chacabuco. On April 3, 1818, however, the patriots had to fight one more great battle, that of the Maipo. This proved an overwhelming defeat for Osorio, and the Spaniards were finally expelled, though the island of Chiloé held out for Spain until 1826.

During the next few years Chile greatly assisted in the independence of Peru, thanks to the co-operation of the British Admiral, Cochrane, and to the invasion of Peru by San Martín's army. Political dissensions brought about the resignation of O'Higgins in 1823, and then followed a period of anarchy. In 1830 a



CHILE AND ITS PEOPLES

CHILE: HISTORICAL

military coup d'état and the important battle of Lircay led to the election of General Prieto as president (1831-41). Prieto, who formulated the present Chilean constitution, waged successful war against Peru and Bolivia in 1836, and easily defeated them.

His next two successors as presidents were General Bulnes (1841-51) and Manuel Montt (1851-61). So far these administrations had been Conservative, but in 1861 a Liberal was returned to power in the person of José Pérez, who, in 1865, went to war with Spain. This campaign, which was entered upon out of sympathy for Peru in a local dispute, led to a Spanish blockade and the bombardment of Valparaíso. The chief episode of Federico Errázuriz' presidency (1871-76) was the increase and improvement of the navy. During the rule of President Pinto (1876-81), a serious financial crisis was averted by the issue of a paper currency, and war broke out with the Peru-Bolivian confederation in 1879. This struggle, waged for possession of the valuable mineral provinces of Tarapacá, Tacna and Arica, continued until 1881.

Chilean Triumphs on Land and Sea

The Chilean army and navy were completely triumphant at all points. On October 8, 1879, the Chilean cruisers *Almirante Cochrane* and *Esmeralda* sank the Peruvian ironclad *Huascar*, when the latter's brave commander Grau was killed. In 1880 the Chileans blockaded Lima and won the victory of Tacna, and in January, 1881, after further decisive victories at Chorrillos and Miraflores, the Peruvian capital was occupied. Before peace could be negotiated, Pinto was succeeded as president of Chile by Santa María (September, 1881). Peace was not ratified until 1884, when Peru ceded Tarapacá to Chile, while Tacna and Arica became Chilean for ten years, at the end of which period the inhabitants were to determine by vote whether they wished to be Peruvian or Chilean.

President Santa María's term ended in 1886, and José Manuel Balmaceda was elected. He became unpopular with the majority, and when (January 1, 1896) he illegally decreed that the budget for 1890 should be deemed the budget for 1891, a revolutionary movement broke out. The fleet was won over by Admiral Montt, whom Balmaceda proclaimed a traitor. The president now sought to assume dictatorial powers, and civil war began, the revolutionary party raising an army of ten thousand. In April, 1891, the cruiser *Blanco Encalada* was torpedoed in Caldera Bay by the Balmacedan ship *Almirante Lynch*, with a loss of 300 lives. A provisional government was inaugurated by the rebels at Iquique, with Admiral Montt at its head. Meanwhile, Balmaceda's

autocratic measures had alienated public opinion. In a pitched battle at Placillo (August 28, 1891) his army was utterly routed, his generals Alcérrika and Barbosa were killed, and Valparaíso and Santiago occupied. Balmaceda fled to the Argentine Legation, where on September 18 he committed suicide. So ended a civil war which had cost 10,000 lives and £10,000,000 sterling. A precedent to it was a peremptory demand of the U.S.A. for an indemnity, arising out of an affray between Chilean and United States seamen at Valparaíso, Chile being compelled to pay £15,000 as compensation.

Frontier Delimitation Problems

Señor Vicuña having been elected but declining to take office, Admiral Montt, the maritime hero of the revolutionary war, was now elected president of Chile by a practically unanimous vote. He promptly granted an amnesty to all concerned in the recent struggle. In 1895 he proclaimed a gold currency for Chile, and, trouble having arisen with Argentina over the boundary question, induced that country to agree to the arbitration of Great Britain. General Federico Errázuriz, the son of Federico Errázuriz (president 1871-76), became president in 1896. War with Argentina appeared imminent, and led to a financial panic and reversion to a paper-money currency. At length, two separate international commissions adjusted the disputes with Argentina concerning the Atacama and Patagonian territories respectively—a United States commissioner assisting in the one case, and the problem of Patagonia being confided to a British commission. The settlement of the outstanding questions with Peru and Bolivia still hung fire, Peru insisting that only Peruvian subjects, and not all nationals in the country, should vote as to the future of Tacna and Arica. Argentina took exception to a Chilean note to Bolivia (1900) to the effect that, after sixteen years' delay, Chile must insist upon a settlement and must decline to grant Bolivia any port upon the Pacific coast.

War Superseded by Arbitration

President Errázuriz resigned in May, 1901, and died a few weeks later, the liberal Señor Riesco being elected in his stead. At the close of the year relations again became so strained between Chile and Argentina that military measures were on the eve of being resorted to. A happy solution was found in the selection of one of the British arbitrators, Sir T. H. Holdich, to make a personal survey of the Chile-Argentina frontier. What has been styled the Holdich Award was signed by King Edward VII. on November 20, 1902, and was warmly greeted by both republics. It was further provided that any subsequent differences between the

CHILE: HISTORICAL

two Powers should be submitted either to the Government of Great Britain or to that of Switzerland. In 1905 the question at issue with Bolivia was also at last arranged. Bolivia relinquished her demand for a seaport, while Chile consented to build and equip a line of railway from Arica to La Paz, and to grant Bolivia free access to the sea.

The next president, Pedro Montt, assumed the reins of office in September, 1906—almost immediately after the devastating earthquake which laid Valparaíso in ruins, partially destroyed Santiago, and cost several thousand lives. Señor Montt chiefly concerned himself with the commercial prosperity of the country, and such

important enterprises as the linking-up of Valparaíso and Buenos Aires and of the far Chilean north with the distant south, by railway, were completed.

President Montt died in 1910, before his term of office had expired. It fell to the lot of his successor, Señor Ramón Barros Luco, to face the perilous situation created by the outbreak of the Great War in August, 1914. He was succeeded by President Juan Luis Sanfuentes (elected 1915), who was still in power when the struggle ended in 1918. In October, 1920, Señor Arturo Alessandri was elected to the presidency, the problems with which he had to contend being of the industrial order rather than those concerned with international politics.

CHILE: FACTS AND FIGURES

The Country

Extending in a long, narrow strip along the South Pacific coast, from Peru on the north to Cape Horn on the south, it is separated from Bolivia and Argentina on the east by the Andes (highest peak, Aconcagua, 23,997 ft.). Includes greater part of Tierra del Fuego, Juan Fernandez, and other islands, some uninhabited, and the Straits of Magellan. Width from 50 to 200 miles; length over 2,500 miles. Total area, 259,829 square miles; population, 3,792,000.

Mainland consists of agricultural and pastoral area, with desert to north and forest region in south; rich central valley lies between Andes and coast. Principal rivers: Bio-Bio, Maipo, Maule, Itata, Bueno. Several lakes in south (largest Llanquihue, 300 square miles; and Ranco, 200 square miles). Longitudinal railway, owned by Government, runs from north to south, with branches to chief ports. Railway from Arica and Antofagasta runs through Andine passes to Bolivia. Transandine line connects Valparaíso and Santiago with Buenos Aires. Total length of railways over 5,400 miles. Electrification of railways commenced 1921 between Valparaíso and Santiago. Over 30 wireless stations along coast. Coasting trade served by 56 ports, of which 12 open to foreign trade. There are 197 miles of navigable lakes and 850 miles of navigable rivers.

Government and Constitution

Republic, divided into 23 provinces, sub-divided into 82 departments and one territory. Executive power exercised by President, elected for term of five years, and Council, of which five members nominated by President and six by Congress. Legislative authority vested in National Congress, consisting of Senate of 37 members elected by provinces for six years, and Chamber of Deputies of 118 members elected by departments for three years. Both are returned by same electors, franchise being practically confined to literates and property-holders.

Defence

Service in national militia compulsory from 18 to 45; recruits receive one year's training, followed by 9 years in the active army reserve, then in second reserve till 45. Strength of regular army about 23,000. Air force formed under British instruction with 80 aeroplanes and 14 seaplanes purchased in Great Britain.

Navy consists of one battleship, formerly H.M.S. Canada, six cruisers, four destroyers, and six submarines purchased from Great Britain,

besides ten other destroyers, three torpedo-boats, patrol vessels, and other craft. Personnel about 5,000. Arsenal and dockyard at Talcahuano.

Commerce and Industries

Mining and agriculture are chief industries. Besides gold and silver, minerals include copper nitrates, coal and iron. Great deposits of nitrate are found in the north, in desert of Atacama, known as pampa salitrera, 500 miles long, and from 2,000 to 6,000 feet above sea level, and form with copper principal articles of export. Chile is world's second largest producer of copper. Other products are borax, cobalt, iodine, manganese, sulphur, guano. Iron-ore deposits in Atacama and Coquimbo estimated at 1,000,000,000 tons. Coal mines south of Valparaíso produced one-and-a-half million tons in 1919.

Wheat is most extensively cultivated cereal; vines yielded 26,000,000 gallons of wine in 1920. Fruit trees cover 277,000 acres; forest area, 9,500,000 acres. Live-stock include 43,000 alpacas. Sheep farming in Patagonia and Tierra del Fuego. Wool and frozen meat exported from Punta Arenas in Magellan Strait.

Imports, £34,130,945; exports, £58,412,642.

Chief Towns

Santiago de Chile, the capital (population, 507,296), Valparaíso (182,242), Concepción (66,074), Antofagasta (51,531), Iquique (37,421), Talca (36,079), Chillan (30,881), Viña del Mar (33,441), Temuco (28,546), Valdivia (26,854), Talcahuano (22,084), Curico (15,579), La Serena (15,240).

Religion and Education

State religion Roman Catholic, but toleration for all others. Archbishopric at Santiago; three bishops and four vicars apostolic. About 600 churches and 800 chapels. Education free and compulsory; over 3,900 schools with 460,000 pupils. State and Catholic universities have over 5,000 students. Industrial universities opened at Valparaíso and Concepción. National library contains over 286,000 volumes.

Peasantry and working population in towns show considerable Indian or Araucanian strain and are mostly illiterate. Indigenous inhabitants belong to three separate branches, Araucans in valleys and western slopes of Andes, Changos in north, employed almost entirely as labourers, and nomadic Fuegians in south. Araucans number over 100,000.



SHRINE OF SACRED MEMORIES: THE TEMPLE OF HEAVEN, PEKING

In the ancient Outer City of Peking, among the temples surrounding the Altar of Heaven, is the Temple of Heaven, wherein, at midnight of the winter solstice and during famine and drought, the emperor solemnly worshipped the Supreme Ruler Shang-ti. Circular, over one hundred feet in height, and triple-roofed with blue glazed porcelain tiles, it was burnt in 1889, but was rebuilt

Photo, Herbert G. Ponting, F.R.G.S.

China

I. How Its Teeming Millions Toil and Live

By Arthur Corbett-Smith, M.A.

Author of "The Evolution of Modern China," etc.

A CERTAIN British diplomat accredited to the court of Peking had occasion to interview a distinguished Chinese official. Our diplomat, in the course of a thirty odd years' residence in China, had acquired a sound working knowledge of the Chinese official language which, indeed, he spoke fluently. With care, he stated his case, the Chinese listening with exquisite courtesy. At the close the latter turned to a companion and, in a tone of amused surprise, remarked: "These barbarians speak a language strangely like our own."

The anecdote suggests the insuperable difficulty which confronts any man who would seek to understand the Chinese race, or to describe the people in such general terms as may be used in respect of a Western nation. Here is a race which numbers, roughly speaking, nearly a quarter of the inhabitants of our planet. It is a race which occupies a territory greater than Europe; which comprises more than sixty different peoples, and which speaks almost as many different dialects as there are cities and districts in the country.

China's Ancient Civilization

It has a civilization which was old a thousand years before Christ was born, and which to-day still clings tenaciously to the rites and customs observed when David was reigning at Jerusalem. The march of Western civilization has but reached the outer ramparts; while even in the great Treaty Ports and other spheres of foreign influence the West has again and again been compelled to confess its impotence when confronted by the unyielding conservatism and passive resistance of the East. In March, 1912, consequent upon the establishment of a republic,

the terms of the new provincial constitution were promulgated. This constitution and other decrees aimed, in a word, at bringing the ancient civilization into line with that of the progressive modern world. It set forth proposed reforms in every department of the national life, from the abolition of illegal arrest and imprisonment to the niceties of hat-raising in greeting an acquaintance. It is, for instance, expressly decreed that women shall not raise their hats. Somewhat unnecessary, one would think, as Chinese women do not wear hats.

Daily Life of the People

But the revolution had come from without, not from within. The reform party, imbued with the materialistic education of the West, would seem actually to have forgotten the existence of those social and economic facts and problems which have ever characterised their own race.

The real China is not the China of the Treaty Ports, which foreigners have virtually made their own, nor of the cities, but rather of the land and the thousands of villages scattered throughout the length and breadth of the country. The family is the unit of Chinese life, and then the village. So from these watch-towers we will take our bird's-eye view. But the warning must be repeated. No man within a life-time of residence and travel in China can hope to acquire the knowledge from which to describe the Chinese people, however skilled an observer he may be. The utmost that he can hope to do is faithfully to record his own few impressions, to collate the impressions of others and compare them with his own, and carefully to inquire into the why and wherefore of the incidents in the daily life of the

CHINA & THE CHINESE

people that he witnesses. But even then he may not say that such-and-such is true of China. For what is truth in the north is possibly false in the south; the east knows not the customs of the west. Further, the observer must invite something of a real sympathy on the part of his audience. The Chinese are a race of human beings such as ourselves, not a collection of marionettes with quaint, curious, upside-down habits, as might be imagined after a perusal of the superficial writings of too many globe-trotters. Their thoughts and feelings are not, perhaps, as ours, but none the less are they entitled to our respect. In some matters, indeed, it is the Western



DECOROUS DRESS OF A LADY

Chinese gentlewomen of birth and position wear well-cut trousers, exactly the same shape as a man's, tunic jacket of the same material with a high collar, and pointed shoes on their cramped, bandaged feet

Photo, Publishers' Photo Service



MANCHU DAME OF HIGH DEGREE

Severe modesty distinguishes the dress of all Chinese women, who refrain from exposure of any part of the body and conceal all the contours of the figure. Their garments are, however, often gorgeously embroidered

Photo, Underwood Press Service

nations who should learn with advantage from the Chinese.

With these limitations in mind, we may first consider the nature of the great moral foundation of the Chinese fabric; the moral and social characteristics of the people; their language, their ideas of government; their occupations and industries and, lastly, the arts in which the Chinese genius finds its best expression.



VICTIM OF A CRUEL CUSTOM

Bound at eight years old, at the cost of terrible suffering, her crippled feet seem much too small to be strong enough to support so fine a physique as this Chinese gentlewoman possesses

Photo, Miss C. J. Hunter

Ancestor-worship and filial piety form the real religion of China and the very heart-centre of Chinese national and social life. That a man shall ever pay tribute of deep reverence in thought and in deed to his parents during their life-time, to their spirits after death, and so to the spirits of all his ancestors; to leave nothing undone whereby such tribute may in turn be paid to him by his sons, and so forward through posterity: such, in brief, is the faith

which colours every act in the daily life of the individual Chinese, and has moulded the destinies of the Chinese nation. On the one hand, it is responsible for the fevered struggle by three-fourths of the race for a bare subsistence: for every man must beget as many sons as possible or, at worst, adopt them, and there is neither room nor employment for all. On the other hand, a man who cannot support at the same time his parents and his child must be prepared to sacrifice the latter.

This faith enjoins that a man shall marry at the earliest possible age, but that he, his wife, his children shall be wholly subject to his parents while they live, and to their spirits when they



AN EMANCIPATED YOUNG LADY

How European influences have modified Chinese fashions is shown in the skirt worn by this girl of good social standing, and in the shoes encasing feet that have been allowed to develop on natural lines

Photo, B. T. Pridoux



IMAGES AND PUPPETS, RELIGIOUS AND OTHERWISE, ARE IN GAUDY DISPLAY ON MANY A CHINESE BOOTH AND STALL in China, where material interests have full possession of the field, we find that the strong man of the nation is the merchant. He caters for all tastes and needs, if not always in wares then in a display of moral maxims for the edification of the passer-by. A poor arithmetician, he makes much use of the abacus to calculating table, and no transaction is effected without a considerable amount of keen bargaining.



PIOUS DETACHMENT FROM TEMPORAL CONCERNS: A BUDDHIST MONK IN YELLOW ROBE AND A BROWN STUDY. Stolid faces and eyes fixed on vacancy characterise the majority of Buddhist priests and monks. With head surmounted by a broad brimmed hat, whose steeple crown resembles the *hi* on a pagoda, this young monk has lapsed into meditation, that looks uncommonly like comolence, in a street of Kanton. The photographer taking advantage of so well-posed a study of spiritual aloofness from material affairs has himself become an object of interest to the lay population



"FANATICS HAVE THEIR DREAMS"

From under the hood of this Buddhist priest of Lin Yin the sombre eyes of a fanatic look forth, while his folded arms suggest, not meekness, but the resolution written in the set jaw

Photo, Maynard Owen Williams

die. "Hundreds of millions of living Chinese," it has been said, "are under the most galling subjection to the countless thousands of millions of their dead." Always, lest a curse befall, must the all-powerful departed spirits be propitiated, and their comfort in the underworld depends wholly upon the care of their living descendants. Food must be offered at intervals; acts of devotion must constantly be paid. For those poor spirits who possess no friends on earth provision is made by a great national annual offering. No man would ever dream of turning apostate, for he would become a dishonoured outcast in this world and a tortured soul in the next.

The universal struggle for a bare living is responsible for the absence of

a national patriotism, even of any public spirit on the part of individuals, for each man must fight hard to live at all. Thus it also indirectly accounts for one of the greatest curses of China: the system, which obtains from the highest to the lowest, of squeezing money from the one next below; the insensate greed of gain, and the bribery and corruption rampant throughout the official classes. The problem of China is essentially social and economic, and no man can appreciate it or understand her people who does not first study this doctrine of ancestor-worship and its effects.

Allied with this faith there obtains throughout China a vague form of polytheism, whereby a multitude of spirits and local deities, gods of earth, air, fire, and water, are honoured or propitiated. This religion may be summed up in the word *fêngshui*, which indicates some vast, malignant,

supernatural force which must constantly be appeased. For instance, the houses in a Chinese village or city are usually all of a low, monotonous height-level. Did one project above its neighbours the infuriated air-spirits would probably play havoc with it. Glance at the familiar "willow-pattern" plates and cups. It will be noted that the little bridges are built zigzag fashion, and that the roof eaves have the ends rounded upwards. These features are typically Chinese. The demons can follow swiftly along a straight path, but curves form serious obstacles. It is *fêngshui* which has prevented the sinking of mines and the development of China's vast mineral wealth; it has also hindered the construction of railways and



CHINA: WHERE BUDDHA REIGNS

The island of Pu Tu is wholly devoted to the cult of Buddha. Here, in many a latticed monastery, yellow-robed priests pass dreamy lives worshipping at the gilded lacquer shrines

Photo, B. T. Pringle



ISLE OF A GODDESS, WHERE NO WOMAN MAY DWELL

Pu Tu, off the east coast of Chusan, is a sacred island exclusively the abode of Buddhist monks, where no native woman may live on any pretext. Phosphorescent waves breaking on the shore in long billows of flame gave origin to a legend that the Goddess of Mercy was seen to arrive in a ship, burning but unconsumed, and to her the island is dedicated



DEGENERATE PROFESSORS OF A ONCE PURE AND LOFTY RELIGION

Many Buddhist priests are friendly, even merry looking fellows, but as a class they are ignorant and superstitious rather than religious. Their cleanliness, too, is as disputable as their godliness, and the Buddhist priesthood urgently needs reformation if it is ever again to hold the respect of the Chinese people, by whom it is now regarded as little better than a parasitical growth

Photos, Maynard Owen Williams



PAVEMENTS POLISHED BY THE SLIPPED FEET OF PRIESTS

Attired in plumed headdresses such as the ancient heroes wore, and cloaks like those affected by modern doctors of divinity, these Lama priests turn eyes left to a brother on the steps who looks for all the world like a field-marshal standing at ease. Note the immensely effective exterior decoration of the walls, its artistic value not, perhaps, depreciated by the crumbling of the stone

Photo, Camera Craft, Peking



VENERABLE PRIEST OF BUDDHA IN HIS STATELY ROBE OF OFFICE

His voluminous robe is composed of pieces of red cloth sewn together with white cotton with the edges showing. This symbolises the rags of poverty, in which state the priests are supposed to exist. They are, however, in the main, avaricious and immoral, their religion having sunk to a relatively low plane since its introduction from India in A.D. 61

Photo, B. T. Pridemore

CHINA & THE CHINESE

telegraphs. Fêngshui, not overcrowding and the total lack of sanitary measures, is held responsible for the recurrent devastating plagues. In every phase of the Chinese national and social life may be traced the sinister grip of this "hidden hand." Fortunately, however, the grip is steadily being loosened, to the great benefit of the people, but the superstition dies hard.

The third of the great moral forces of China is Confucianism. This is a

doctrine of human duty and general conduct rather than a religion, and the ideals which the Sage taught have strongly influenced all classes, for the undoubted moral good of China, for more than two thousand years. The doctrine of Confucius may be summed up in a single sentence: justice and right thinking must ultimately conquer might. It is to the practical application through the ages of this lofty ideal and its attendant precepts that the Chinese owe their marvellous stability as a



WAFING HIS PRAYERS ON WIDENING WAVES OF SOUND

Great reverence marks the demeanour of the Chinese priests when officiating at the temple services, and a truly devotional atmosphere envelops them. Genuflection and prostration before the altar, and processions round the temple to the accompaniment of chants form a large part of the ritual, as also does the striking of gongs and bells and very deep-toned drums

Photo, Maynard Owen Williams



SMILING IN THE FACE OF ADVERSITY

She has had the misfortune to be born a girl, not an enviable fate in China. Her parents consider education a sheer waste of money as she will soon belong to another family, and arduous tasks are always awaiting her. She is married, with or without her consent, seldom happily, for according to the Confucian theory a wife has no rights which a husband is bound to respect.

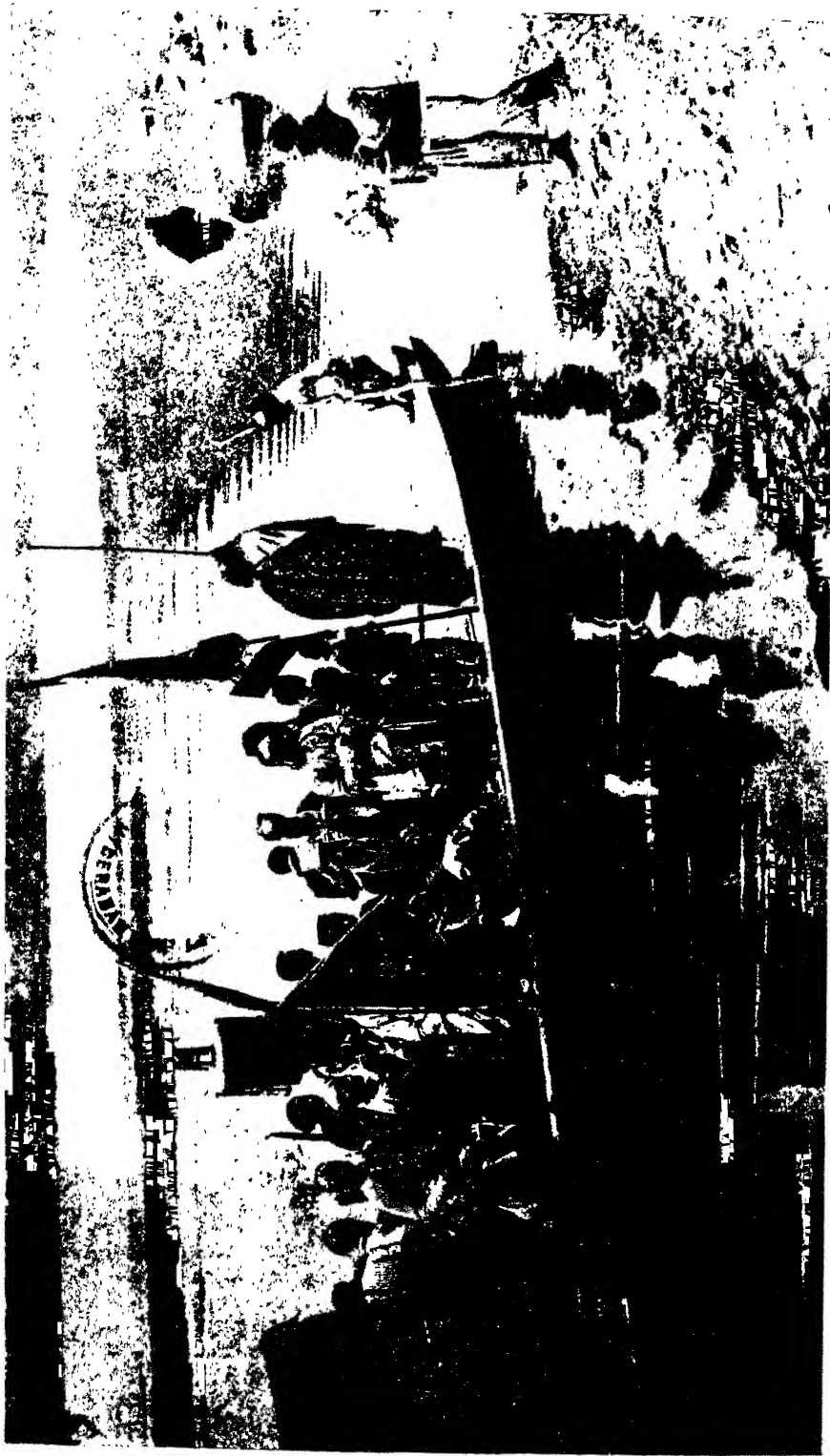
Photo, J. C. Carter

great nation. In 1912 the actual worship of Confucius was abolished, but the official birthday celebrations in schools and elsewhere are retained.

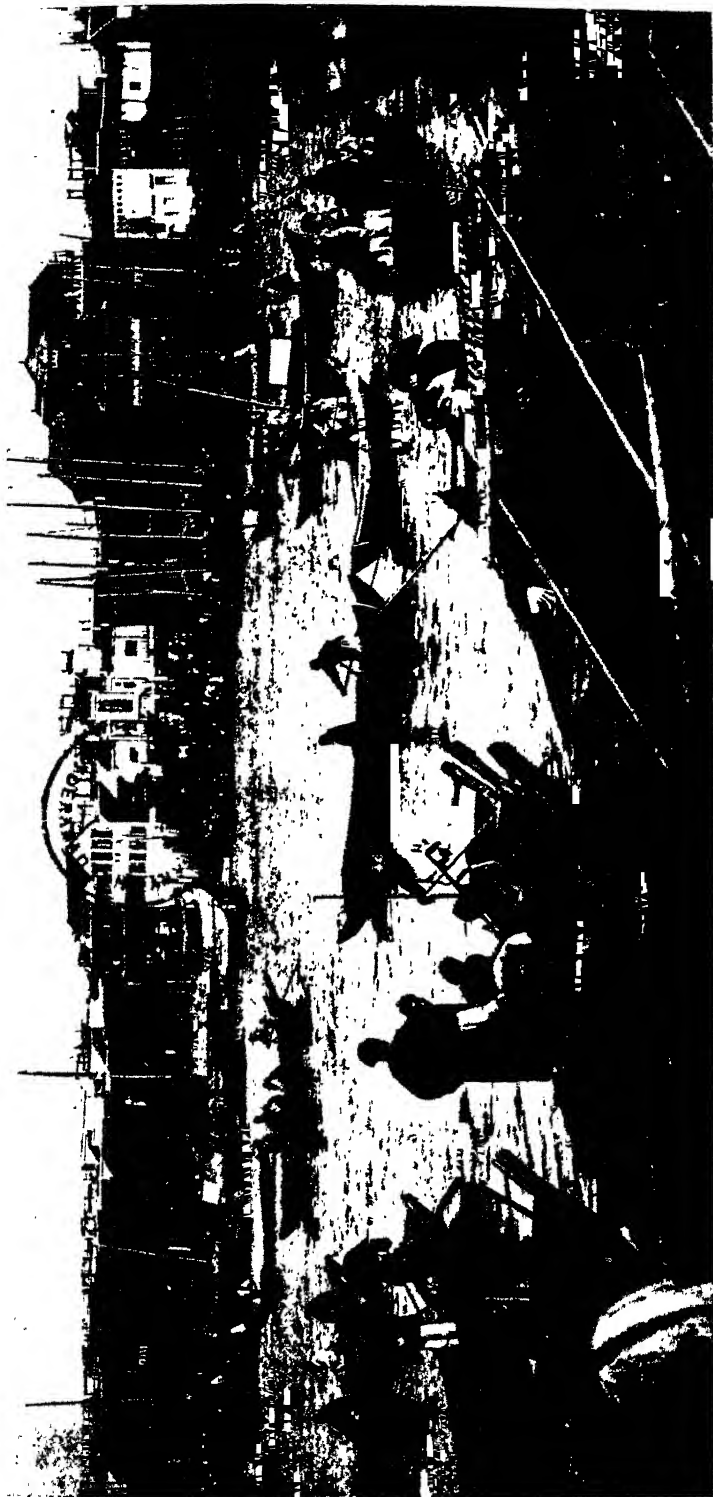
Buddhism and Taoism have, as formal religions, little or no hold upon the Chinese, although providing religious rituals and ceremonies for use upon various occasions. The doctrine of

universal charity and sympathy, the essence of Buddhism, seems to be recognized only in so far as the Chinese are a peace-loving people. Taoism is now little more than fêngshui and witchcraft combined.

Mahomedanism numbers, it is estimated, some 10,000,000 Chinese. These form almost a race apart, although



SETTING OFF DOWN THE RIVER TO SERENADE A NEIGHBOURING VILLAGE DURING THE MID-AUTUMN FESTIVAL
A tightly-packed load of humanity in best clothes and armed with lanterns, banners, food, and all the essentials of holiday making is slowly pushing off from the shore. The party is on its way to a village farther down the river, there to join in a general merry-making. The Chinese men in particular are "only boys grown tall," and therefore they welcome the least excuse for festivity, music, and games.
Photo, R. T. Pridemore

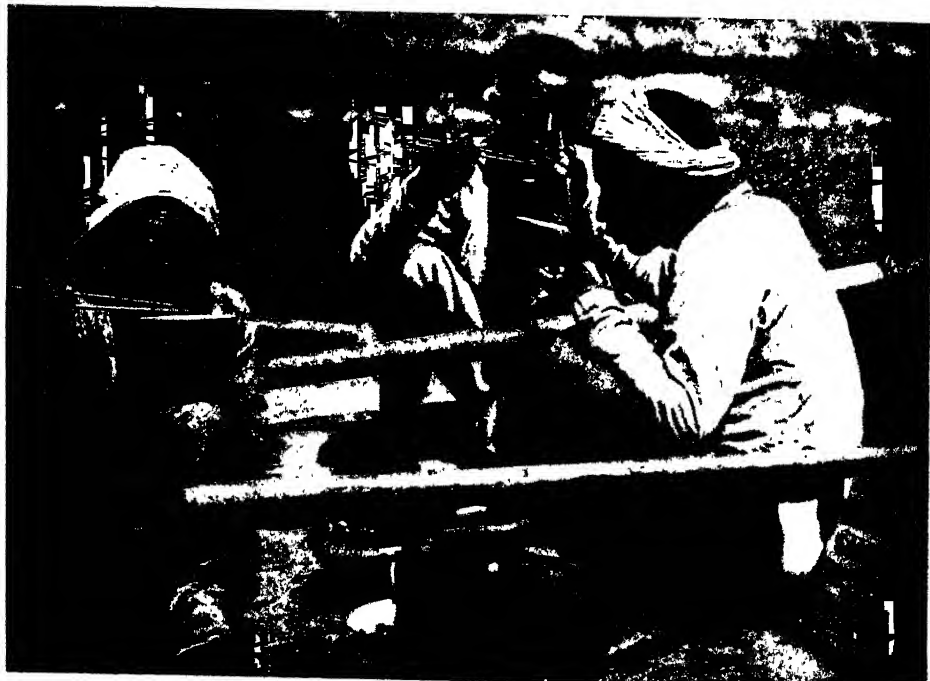


LIFE IN THE SAMPANS ON CHINA'S GREATEST RIVER, OUTSIDE HANKAU CITY, THE "MANCHESTER OF EAST CHINA"
The Yang-tse-Kiang, by far the chief waterway in China, with a length of over 3,000 miles, has the sobriquet of "Blue River," though its waters are as turbid as the Hwang-ho's, a distinction probably emanating from the fanciful idea of the Yellow River as the Son of Earth and the Blue River as the Son of Heaven. At its junction with the Han lie three large cities, the most important being Hankau, a great inland emporium and centre of the tea trade.



FLOATING HOME OF BEGGAR FAMILY AT NANKING

Ramshackle craft, barely watertight and indescribably dirty, are the homes of thousands of the vagrant classes with which China teems. Paying no rent, the inhabitants drift up and down the rivers earning a precarious livelihood supplemented by begging. The small boy in the foreground has already acquired the supplicating position of the accomplished mendicant



A MIDDAY MEAL ON THE YANG-TSE-KIANG

Although the labouring classes in China are of necessity tireless workers, they equally of necessity eat but the most frugal of meals. These boatmen, plying their long chop-sticks on the deck of their craft, are enjoying a simple midday meal. This consists of a few mouthfuls of boiled rice sometimes supplemented by a little fish or a few morsels of meat

Photos, Maynard Owen Williams



STURDY RIVER BOATWOMAN MANNING THE OARS OF HER CRAFT

Owing to the fact that such vast numbers of Chinese have their home and earn their living on the large rivers these waterways present pictures of great animation and bustle. Some of the boats are in such disrepair that it is remarkable how they hold together at all. It will be noticed that the roughly-fashioned oars are made in two parts, the blade being lashed on to the shaft with rope



MEMBERS OF CHINA'S ENORMOUS FLOATING POPULATION

Numbers of the inhabitants of these mobile homes never go on land, and are quite happy to spend their lives packed together in tight companionship on their houseboats. The children of such families have no fear of the water, and can swim long before they can walk, but their fondness for water decreases as their age increases, and many a Chinaman takes his last bath in childhood

Photos, B. T. Prideaux

CHINA & THE CHINESE

a Chinese Mahomedan is not debarred from taking office in the Government. In 1912 it was formally announced that full religious liberty was accorded to Christians, and that every government post would be open to them. In 1920, there were in China approximately 2,000,000 native Roman Catholics, and 600,000 native Protestants.

To a foreigner landing anywhere in China the first and most striking

his pony's shoe. He will turn to mount and find himself the centre of a circle of men, women, and children, sitting and standing, all watching the operation with big-eyed interest. China, despite its vast extent, not only seems to be crowded, but it actually is so. Here is the first result of ancestor-worship.

At the very outset we meet the inevitable contradiction—to the mind of the foreigner. China, the land where

everything goes contrariwise, lives up to her reputation. For among these massed millions, packed close in home as in village or city, snatching almost from hour to hour a minimum of bare subsistence, it is the priceless gift of humour which is everywhere rife just below the surface. Humour, contentment, sociability, amazing vitality, absence of nerves, politeness, invariable cheerfulness, and complete indifference to comfort—these are surely the chief social characteristics of the Chinese.

From his earliest years until at last he is carried out for burial every Chinese in the land, from the supreme ruler to the meanest beggar, plays his part in the great national comedy of "Face." The comedy has two phases of the same idea. A man may acquire or give face, or he may lose face. Here

are one or two typical scenes from the play.

Mrs. Chow was a wealthy widow. Po-Ho, her son, was a spendthrift, wasting her substance in riotous living. Mrs. Chow became seriously alarmed lest all her money should vanish before her death, and so she should be deprived of the magnificent funeral which was her due. This would mean an intolerable loss of face in the eyes of her

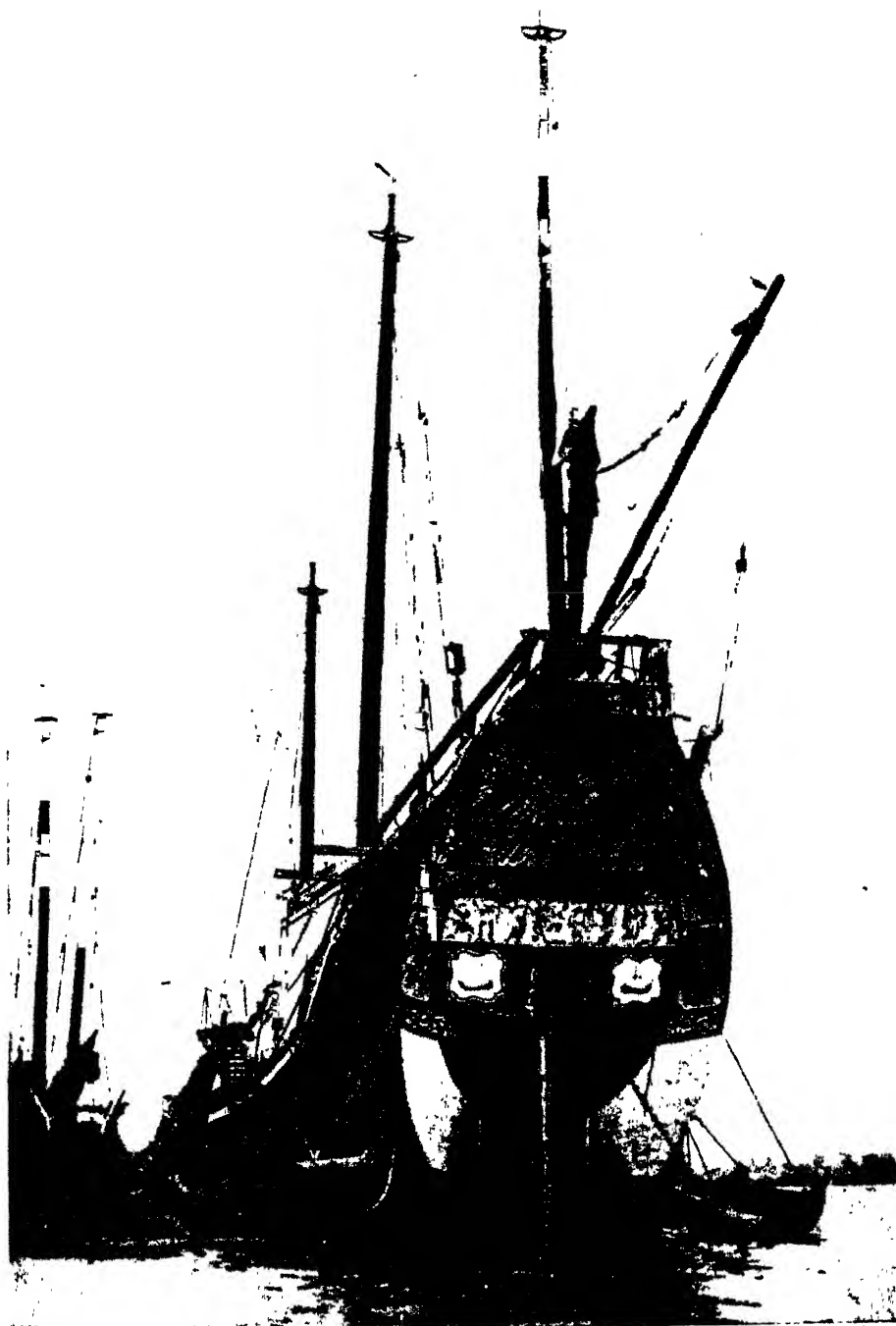


OFF THE CHUSAN ARCHIPELAGO

Fishing, the favourite occupation of so many diversified peoples, is specially indulged in by the Chinese, and numberless families of these fishermen have never known any other home but the flat-bottomed vessel with its tall, square matting sails

Photo, B. T. Prideaux

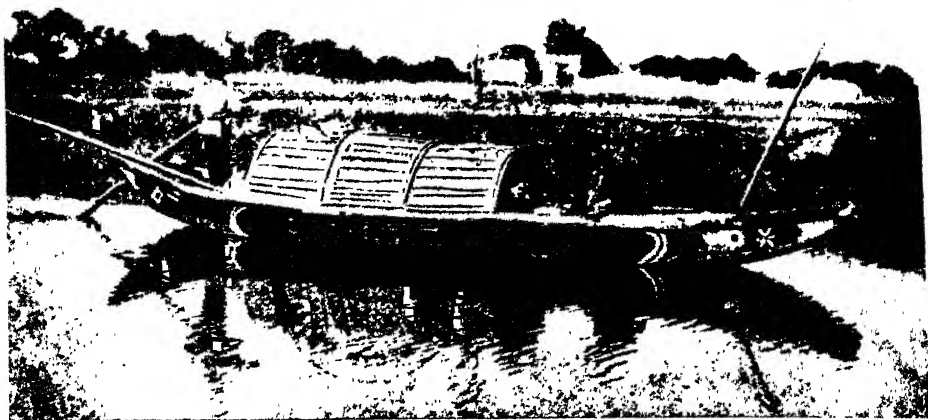
impression will probably be that of the density of the population. And the impression will be confirmed wherever he may go. "The teeming millions of China" is a true saying. A small cart has to be hauled on to a ferry; fifty men will suddenly appear out of nowhere and lay hold. The traveller will take a ride into the country, dismounting, perhaps, in the middle of an empty plain to extract a stone from



TALL AND STATELY ARGOSIES RICH WITH GAY ORNAMENTATIONS

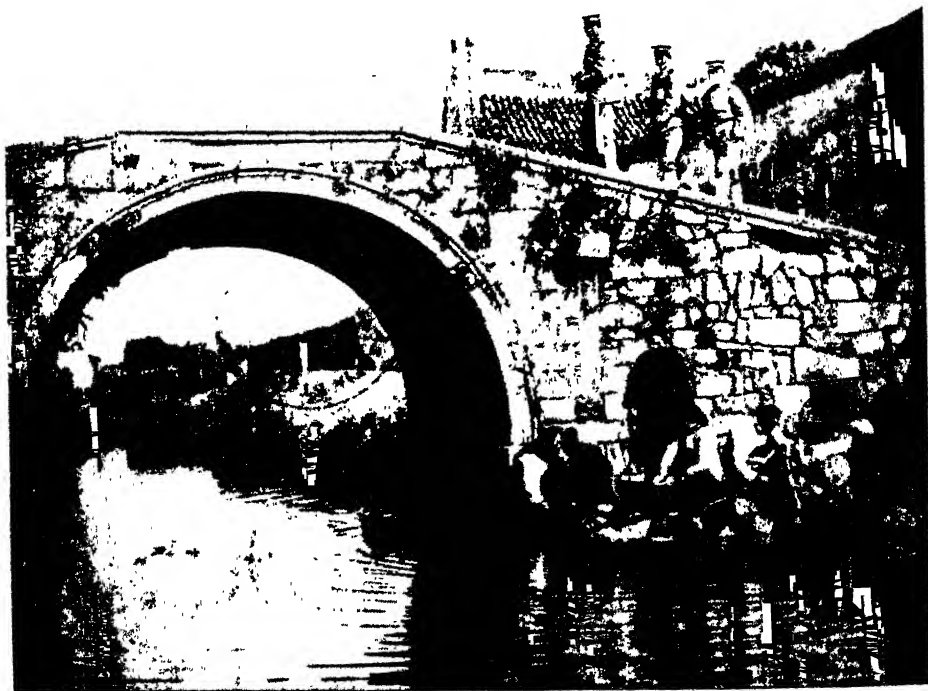
Just as the decorated war-canoe is emblematical of the islands of the South Seas, so the towering junks immediately suggest the flowery glories of old China. With square sails of matting and high, brightly-painted sterns they carry China's commerce over the eastern seas. Square-bowed, flat-bottomed, and standing high above the water-line, the Chinese junk has altered little with the years

Photo, B. T. Prideaux



FAR FROM THE MADDING CROWD ON THE GENTLY FLOWING RIVER

The helmsman perched in the stern keeps the nose of his craft from the river-bank by the aid of his strong oar which takes the place of a rudder. The remainder of the crew either rest in the shade of the crude straw covering or bask in the sun. To the bamboo pole in the bow is fastened the towing-line supplying the motive power



THE GRAND CANAL SERVES AS A WASHTUB TO HANG-CHOW HOUSEWIVES

This glimpse of the Yun-ho, or Grand Canal, on the outskirts of the city of Hang-chow, where it terminates, is insufficient to impart a correct impression of China's magnificent artificial river, parts of which are said to date back to the time of Confucius. This southern part was constructed in the seventh century, and the ravages of time have left many a mark on the fine stone walls and bridges

Photos, Maynard Owen Williams



SURE-FOOTED BOATMAN ON THE WINDING YANG-TSE

Hardy, healthy, and thrifty, the river folk who spend their lives on the broad waters of the Yang-tse bring the spices and silks of China many leagues to where the ocean-going steamers await their cargoes. Poised on the wide edge of his craft, his loose trousers rolled high, this boatman poles his vessel with a sure hand to its destination.

Photo, E. T. Prideaux



TOILING STRAINING COOLIES DRAW THE JUNK OVER THE RAPIDS

Nothing could better exemplify the strenuous workaday life of the Chinese than the above photograph of the long lines of men putting every ounce of energy into their task. Many of the rapids on the Yang-tse river are very strong, and the business of pulling a boat over them is no slight one. With leather straps fastened over their right shoulders the workers are hardly taxed to accomplish it

Photo, Maynard Owen Williams

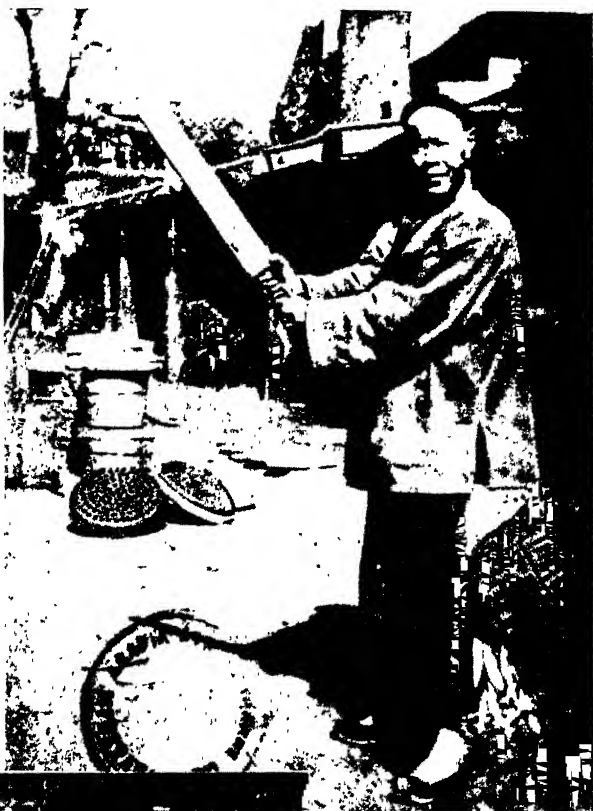
friends and neighbours—an indignity not to be suffered. Mrs. Chow must not only save her face at all costs, but she must acquire a goodly store of the same article for display in the next world. What more natural, then, and fitting than to have her funeral while she was still alive and able to superintend matters herself? And this is just what Mrs. Chow did. A lovely coffin was made, a gorgeous catafalque was secured, hundreds of bearers and attendants were engaged, funeral baked meats were spread in riotous profusion, and on the appointed day Mrs. Chow entered her sedan chair and was borne around the city behind her coffin in high procession amidst the wailings and lamentations of sorrowing relatives. Great was the accession of face to the honourable widow Chow, to the relatives, to the townsfolk. Even Master Po-Ho basked in the reflected glory. But he may possibly have found his share rather expensive, for, as prescribed by custom, he had to go into mourning for

three years. Here is another act. Scene I.—Outside the village yâmen, or courthouse. The usual motley crowd of jabbering rapsallions, aggressive police, dignified merchants, and officials. Mr. Ku, a rich farmer, just now in custody for some misdemeanour, is seen making a swift bargain with one Lin, an anaemic ragamuffin. Some money changes hands, the policeman taking tribute. Scene II.—Inside the yâmen, the mandarin sitting in state. Enter Ku in custody, Lin sneaking behind. Ku, kneeling, listens with respect to the fierce accusations of the mandarin. No defence is offered. Sentence is passed: sixty strokes of the bamboo. Ku quickly slips aside; Lin, the ragamuffin, takes his place, is thrown on the ground, and upon his luckless back and feet falls the bamboo.

Once again all are actors in the comedy. Mandarin and executioner know quite well that the wrong man is being beaten. But someone is being punished, so the law saves its face. Mr.

Ku has saved his face in avoiding the indignity of a public beating; but justice is appeased by his monetary loss. Lin is doing no more than earning his living—an honourable pursuit. So all are happy.

Of such is the national comedy. But, in particular, please observe this, or you will miss the clue of the drama. All are play-actors. Every man is as careful to save the face of his neighbour as of himself; and such acting up has been brought by the Chinese to a fine art. Witness the tearful grief of the Chow relatives; the stolid, unwinking attitude of the court officials. Ku knows and you know and they know the real facts, and each



A GHASTLY RECORD

Capital punishment in China is inflicted either by strangling or by decapitation with the sword. With the blade he is exhibiting this executioner is said to have decapitated something like twenty thousand criminals



ALMOST INSUPPORTABLE PORTABLE STOCKS

The cangue is a heavy rectangular wooden framework fastened round the neck of a convicted criminal, and so large that the wearer can neither lie down nor lean back

Photo, J. C. Carter

knows that the other knows, but each and every man must affect a sublime ignorance and sympathy, playing the comedy through to a triumphant fall of the curtain. Of all traits in the Chinese character this and one other only may be regarded as universal. It is easy, then, to appreciate the importance which the Chinese attach to preserving the national "face" before other peoples, and how deeply



ALL RAGS AND TATTERS UNDER THE OPEN SKY

Mendicancy has been brought almost to the state of a practical science in China. Mothers have even been known to deprive their children of eyesight that they may earn their living as blind beggars. These children are happy in having their sight, but it is a squalid and pitiful existence that they lead, begging always and stealing when they can

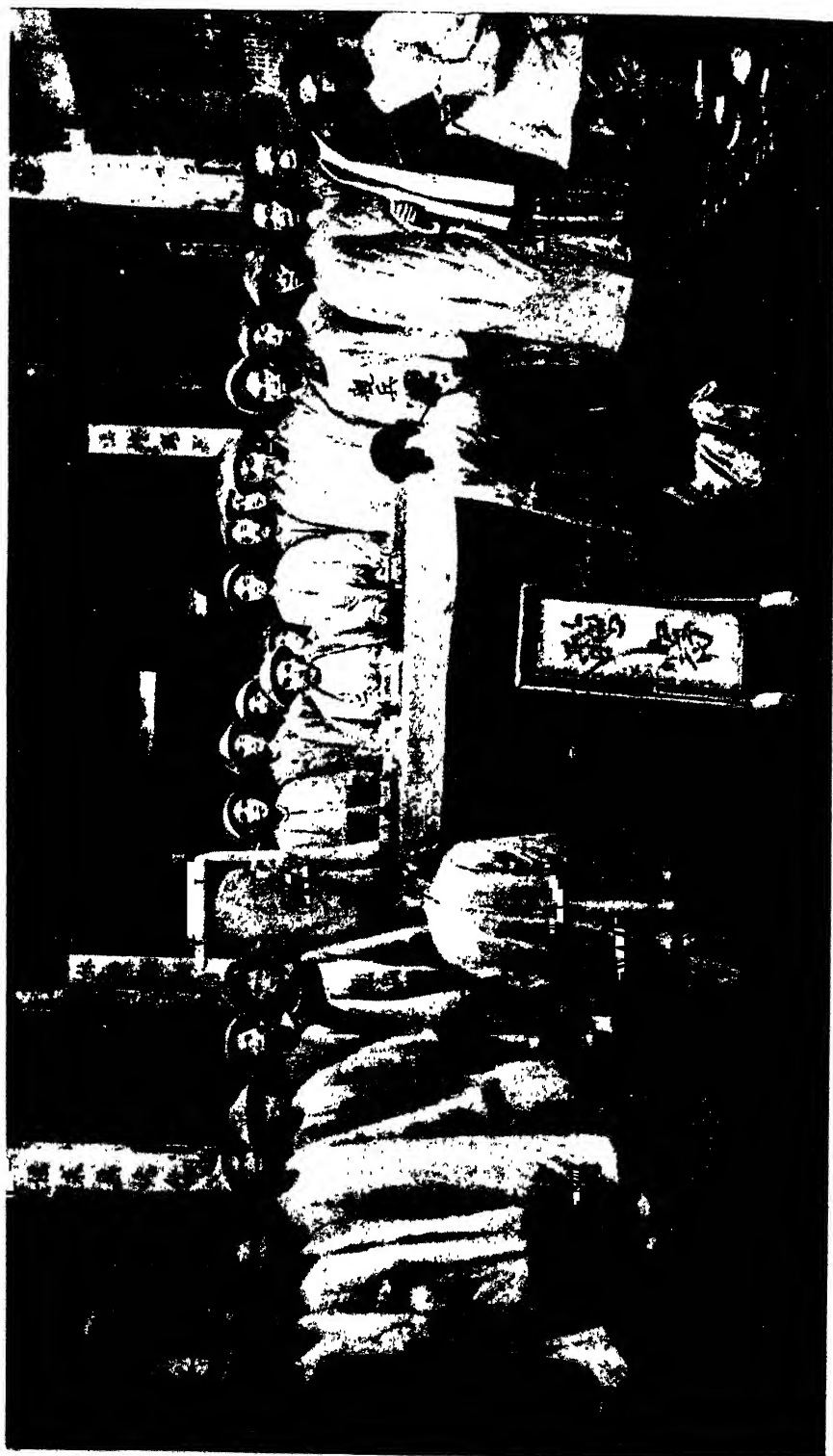
Photo, Maynard Owen Williams



RICH YOUNG WIDOW WITH HER FAITHFUL SLAVE GIRL

Although only twenty-four years of age, the little lady here seen enjoying her water-pipe is of great importance. The owner of thousands of acres bequeathed to her by her husband, she holds absolute sway over her tenants. She ranks as an "Earth Eye" or "Earth Controller," the Nosu equivalent of the feudal barons of the medieval period

Photo, S. Pollard, "In Unknown China."



WHERE MATTERS ARE ENDED AS A MAN IS BEFRIENDED: WITNESSES KNEELING IN A CHINESE LAW COURT
Examination in open court is an ordeal the mere thought of which sends shivers down the spine of the ordinarily impassive Chinese. Any sort of evidence is slanted, however irrelevant, and even when a magistrate means to be just, many a case is decided at last on some minor issue. Officials fetter every step of a trial not with a network of red tape, and subject him to "squeeze" at every stage of the proceedings.



YOUNG CITIZENS OF A YOUNG REPUBLIC RECEIVING TUITION IN A MISSIONARY SCHOOL AT TAI-YUEN, SHANSI

Education holds a prominent place in China. Knowledge is looked upon as a part of religion, and it is the duty of the Chinese boy to become familiar with the characters of the language and commit to memory the flowers of the national literature. Not so with the girls; through all the expense - often more than for a son - strictly withheld from them; now, however, thanks to missionary effort, they are permitted to receive a share of the fruits of the tree of knowledge.

Photo, Baptist Missionary Society

CHINA & THE CHINESE

their susceptibilities may be wounded by a compulsory loss of dignity at the hands of another nation.

A sense of humour and of humour's attributes has been and remains an asset of incomparable value to the Chinese. It has often been remarked that if you can make a Chinese smile—and no men in the world are more easily provoked to mirth—you may do anything with him. A trivial jest, some

taels (imitation money used at funeral ceremonies), which for convenience of carrying he had slipped inside his umbrella. Suddenly opening the umbrella over his head the tael came plumping down about him the while he made some little gesture of mock alarm. The leaders of the crowd pulled up in surprise. He then, by simple sleight of hand, proceeded to extract one or two silver Mexican dollars from the chins



EASTERN EXPONENT OF EUCLID, THE FATHER OF GEOMETRY

His pigtail, held in position on the blackboard, provides excellent compasses and enables him to describe a perfect circle in chalk. This incident recalls to mind the circle drawn by Giotto of Florence, whose O, fashioned with one free sweep of the brush, was sent as a sample of the painter's talent to Pope Benedict XI., who thereupon engaged him to adorn the papal residence at Avignon

little unpremeditated act with a hint of comedy, has again and again averted a serious situation. The present writer once chanced to find himself threatened by a rather ugly crowd in a Chinese village at a time when anti-foreign feeling was strong. He happened to have just purchased a dozen or so paper

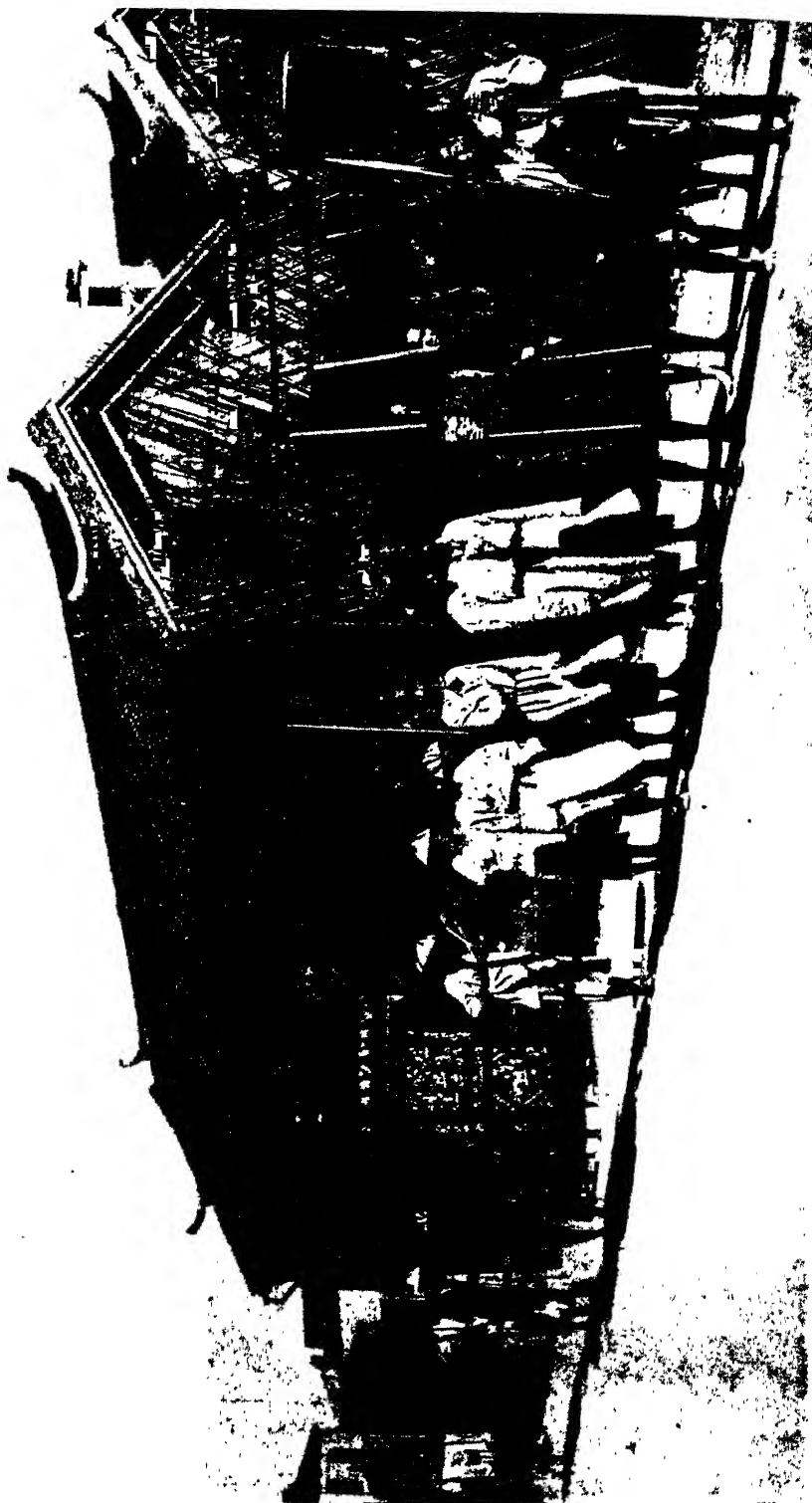
and ears of two of the graver-looking Chinese close by, offering in exchange a paper tael. The little conjuring trick, and especially the paper exchange, completely captivated the crowd of grown-up children, and the writer was able to go unmolested on his way, leaving the two reverend seigniors the



ASPIRANT FOR THE BACHELOR DEGREE OF "BUDDING GENIUS"

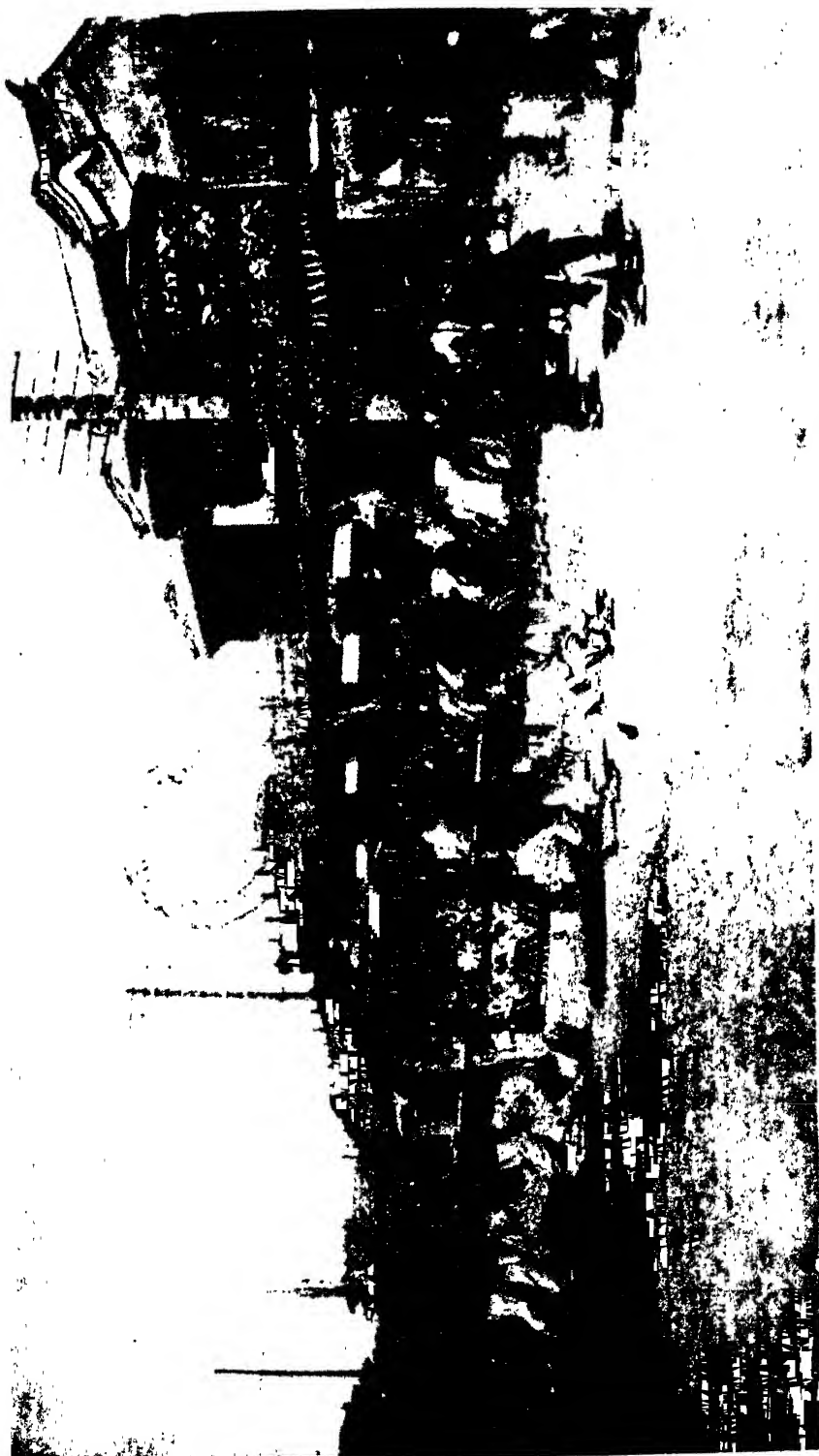
Gravity and dignity grow upon the Chinese student, whose education is drearily monotonous. Construction of sentences according to rules of precedent, the art of letter-writing, a smattering of Chinese history, artificial verse-making, and composition of essays are the essentials of the curriculum which will prepare him for the final goal of the Civil Service examination

Photo, Underwood Press Service



WITHIN HER RED WEDDING CHAIR THE BRIDE GOES TO HER NEW LORD

Marriage in China brings in its train a host of restrictions and penalties which the bride submissively suffers. On becoming engaged she retires into the strict seclusion, and intercourse even with her own brothers is greatly curtailed. Her trousseau is conveyed before her marriage in grand procession to her future home. Later, the bride herself is borne in state to the house of her new lord and master whom she has probably never seen.



CHINESE BRIDE ON HER WAY TO JOIN THE HUSBAND OF HER PARENTS' CHOICE

Preceded by a motley crowd carrying lanterns, banners, carved fans, and all the other essentials of a Chinese procession, the bride is borne, with the elaborate gongxi, to her husband's house. Seated in the cumulous, red marriage sedan-chair, highly ornamented with elaborate carvings and kingfisher feathers, she is protected from the profane gaze of onlookers by heavy curtains. Her younger brother follows in an ordinary chair

Photo, Camera Craft, Peking

butt of their friends' merry chaff over their poor bargain.

The absence of any adequate comparison makes it difficult to give any clear synopsis of Chinese characteristics. The simple, yet complex, social conditions of the Chinese, their outlook upon

affluence for a week. They will be happy on it. It will even supply toffee for the children. Yet probably in no single detail of such home life will a foreigner, however inured to hardship, find an atom of ordinary comfort. He could not tolerate it for a day. A Chinese may know

that before the month is out he will have to sell a loved little son to pay a rapacious creditor; that his poor remnant of a home will be taken; that he and his wife will be wanderers on the earth. He will accept the situation apparently with stoical indifference, even with cheerfulness. Yet a Chinese will love his wife and child as devotedly as an Englishman does. Nor, when it comes to the cruel climax, will he fail in one jot of ceremonious politeness to the creditor. This indifference to ordinary comfort, this cheery contentment—fatalism, if you will—the total absence of nerves, all these find their origin in the marvellous vitality and recuperative power of the Chinese. This is the cardinal fact which, above all else, most concerns the nations of the West in their consideration of economic pressure, industrial and labour competition on the part of China.

Just as China itself provides within its

borders every variety of temperature, from an arctic cold to tropical heat, so will a Chinese adapt himself with the greatest ease to any condition of life. He is as much at home in a fever-ridden South American swamp as he is on the antarctic ice-floes or in the Waldorf Astoria of New York. And he will over-work and under-live the men of every other living race. Take as an example



KNOWN BY HER FAITH AND WORKS

This is the elderly matron of the Baptist Missionary Society's hospital at Tai Yuen Fu, Shansi. Dispensaries and hospitals are keys which unlock Chinese hearts closed against all other influences, and every well-equipped mission station has them

Photo, Baptist Missionary Society

life, their needs, their aspirations, all differ so vastly from those of Western civilization. Indeed, it seems impossible to understand how millions of the Chinese can exist at all; how they can derive any pleasure from existence passes all comprehension. In village life, which is the condition of the majority of the Chinese, two shillings of English money may well keep a whole family in

CHINESE LIFE

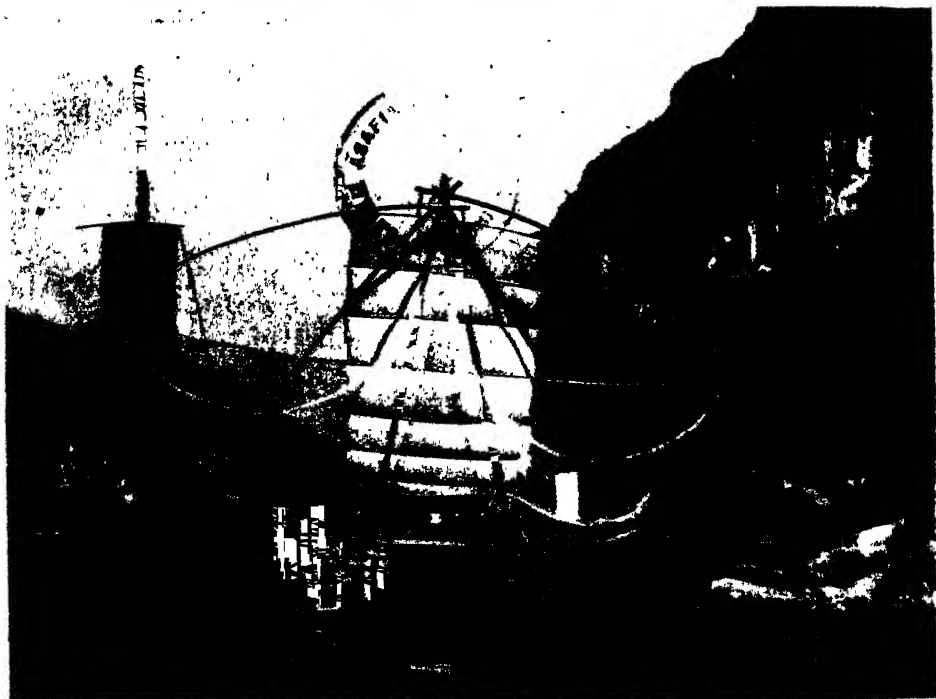
in Highway & Byway



Decorative arches and carved balconies brighten Tientsin's streets, where jinrickshas ply and Chinese pad along clad in white and blue

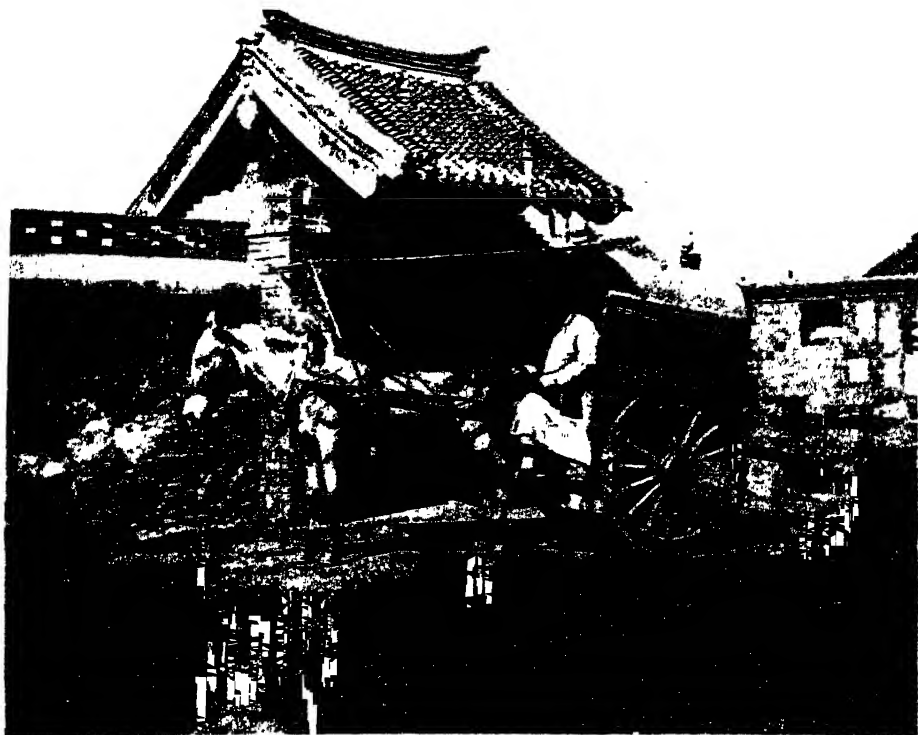


Peace enchants the boatman on West Lake, Hangchow, when sunset burnishes its tree-fringed waters and bathes the hills in liquid gold



Under the frowning cliffs of the Yang-tse gorges the fisherman skillfully plies his craft, lowering his nets from poles on either beam

Photos, Maynard Owen Williams



Seated on the shaft of his tilt-cart—a Saratoga trunk on cumbrous wheels—the Chinaman is shaded by an awning as he drives his ass

Photo, W. B. Moore



Very old jostles quite new in Peking—telegraph poles lining the ancient streets and electric lamps illumining the massive city gates

Photo, A. Corbett-Smith



At the tiller of his own fishing-boat the Chinese skipper looks the whole world boldly in the face, enjoying his long pipe the while

Photo, B. T. Prideaux



With his three-stringed guitar encased against the damp, the blind musician taps and flutes his melancholy way down street and alley

Photo, Camera Craft, Peking



In gorgeous brocades, lent for their wedding, the young pair enter the holy estate to raise up sons to carry on their ancestor worship



Even the baby manipulates her chopsticks deftly, and her chubby brother is evidence that the family dietary is nutritious, if exiguous

Photo, B. T. Prideaux



Her white veil and bouquet show that this bride of Hangchow is a Christian. Red for wedding and white for burial is the native rule

Photo, Maynard Owen Williams



Fourteen specimens of the generation with whom the future of China rests. The youngest of them appear the least disposed to reconciliation to the camera and other contraptions of the foreign barbarian

CHINA & THE CHINESE

of vitality the living conditions of a very considerable proportion of Chinese, that part which lives in boats on the rivers and waterways of China. A typical inland fishing-boat would be about 12 or 14 feet long and 4 feet by 11; a mat shed covers in the greater part. This is often the only home through life, not just of a fisherman and his boy, but often of a couple of families. The writer vividly recalls the anchorage of some 200 of these little boats, and in each of the six he visited there lived a man and his wife, their son and his wife, and one or even two little grandchildren. And with such competition, and with their primitive fishing-tackle, they yet earned enough to live on. And they seemed happy enough. But how or where could they all have slept? Not making shift for two or three nights, but every night for perhaps twenty-five years!

Again, the writer recalls seeing a little boy of about six years of age knocked down by a pony and brougham in a Shanghai street. The two near-side wheels went bump, bump over the child's body. The carriage was promptly stopped, but before the occupant could reach the child to pick him up the youngster picked himself up and ran away up a near-by-alley.

At the public classic examinations of China for degrees it is no uncommon thing for men over seventy years of age to submit themselves to the long ordeal. Dr. Arthur Smith has recorded some recent official figures. In Foochow, at one examination, nine candidates were over eighty years of age, and two over

ninety. In Ho-nan, there were thirteen candidates over eighty, and one over ninety. In Anhwei, there were actually thirty-five competitors over eighty, and eighteen over ninety. And one and all went through the nine days' ordeal writing essays "perfectly accurate in



GIVING HIS PET AN AIRING

One of the commonest sights in China is that of a man standing for half-an-hour at a time, outside his house, holding a small cage in which he is giving his pet bird an airing

diction and with no signs of failing years." It is also no uncommon event for a son, father, and grandfather to sit for the same examination.

This aspect of Chinese vitality suggests attendant qualities which the Chinese display in so marked a degree—patience and perseverance. These



AGED FATHER WITH HIS DAUGHTER, WHOM HE WILL SHORTLY LOSE
Seated on the edge of his highly-polished chair, the old Nosu man rests in the warm sunshine outside his house. His strapping daughter, who stands dutifully at his side, no longer wears the traditional dress of her people. Her hand has been won by a Chinese tailor, so from now onwards she must adopt the dress and customs of her husband

Photo, S. Pollard, "In Unknown China"



"SUPPORTED BY VOLUNTARY CONTRIBUTIONS "

Throughout the day he squats by the roadside, "a thing of rags and patches," awaiting the largesse of the passers-by. His broom with its bamboo shaft is by his side, suggesting that he might do a little work when so disposed. Beggars are in such great numbers in China that they form one of the largest professions, even possessing their own "king"

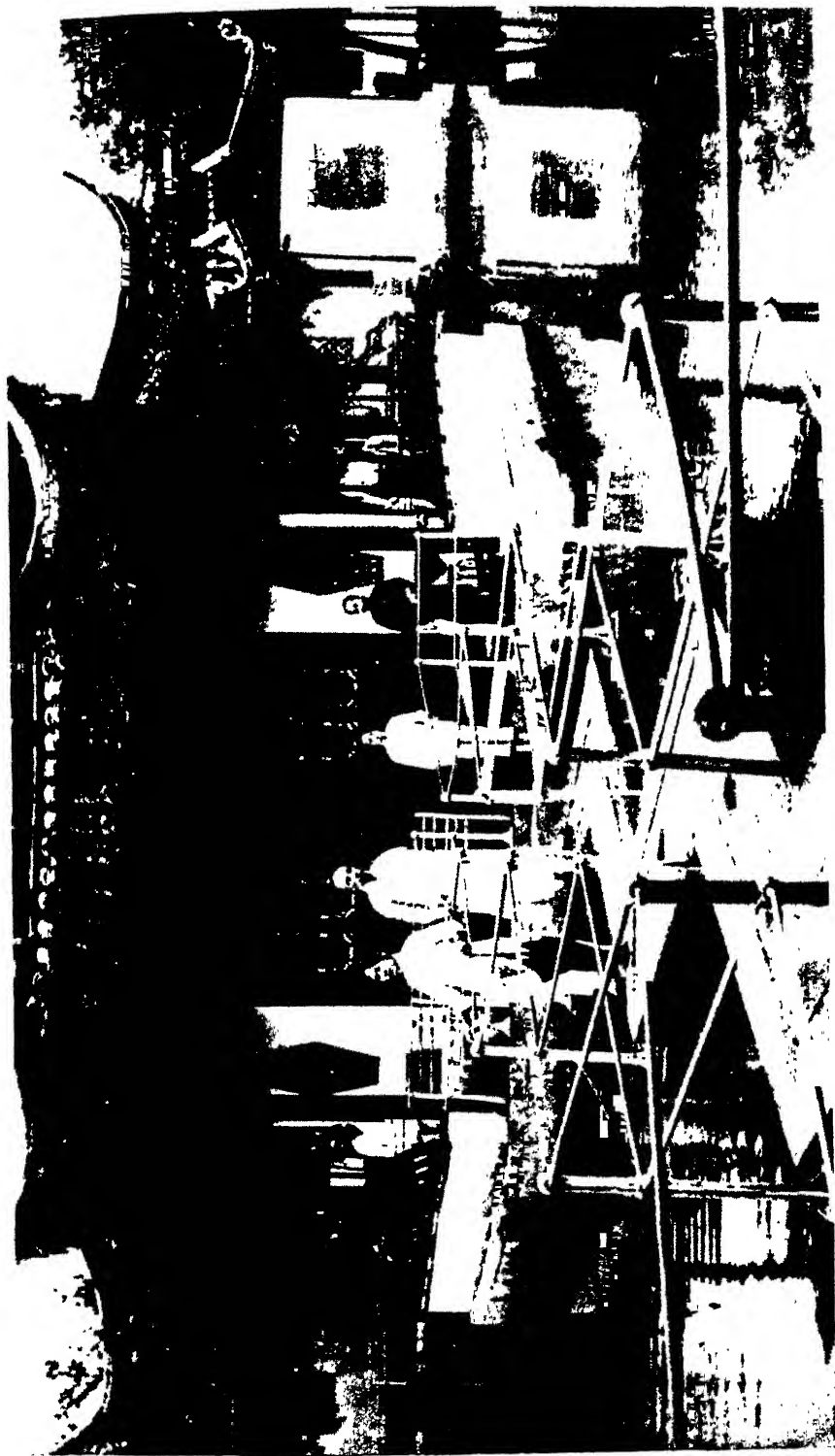
Photo, Maynard Owen Williams



"SOMETHING ACCOMPLISHED, SOMETHING DONE": WASHING DAY AT A COUNTRY HOUSE

Although abroad "John Chinaman" is an industrious washerman for foreign employees, at home his own laundry work is done for him by his womenfolk. Here, in the courtyard of a country house, the mothers are busy at the wash tub, while the youngsters lounge at the tables of the veranda. In the foreground, the women are washing the clothes of the men, and the children are playing. The scene is a typical example of the domestic life of the Chinese, whose dress is mainly washed every day, and who are usually quite.

Photo. H. J. P. 1900



A CHINESE VENICE CUNNINGLY CONTRIVED FOR THE DELIGHT OF THE WEALTHY

Built on the edge of the great lake in the province of Kiang-su, this elaborate Suzhou is still now presents a pleasing picture of cool place. Some 30,000 people are crowded in the quaint zigzag bridges provide a charming scene wherein the wealthy may pass the hours. The residences and grounds of the rich provide a nearly complete contrast to the squalid and teeming houses of the millions of China's poor, to whom surroundings such as this are unknown.

Photo, B. T. Prudence

CHINA & THE CHINESE

qualities are, or were, particularly noticeable in their beautiful arts, their paintings, carvings, embroideries and the like. A Chinese might well devote a lifetime to perfecting a work of art, taking as his motto, "If I cannot finish it my son will." Time has no meaning for a Chinese. If he can find a place in his garments for it, he will carry a

physical endurance and indifference to pain. Could any other people endure to such lengths the hideous tortures and punishments the Chinese have invented and practise? And it will be remembered that it was Chinese executioners who were specially engaged as instruments of Bolshevik vengeance in Russia. But there is one form of discomfort

which will defeat even the iron-nerved and iron-skinned Chinese. He cannot stand a shower of rain. The Chinese dread rain as much as cats do. The horrible massacre at Tientsin had just begun when a heaven-sent thunderstorm sent all the Chinese soldiery scuttling for shelter; and so most of the intended victims, preferring a drenching to being killed, managed to escape.

We may next review some of the vices, or, shall we say, "disabilities," of the Chinese from the foreign standpoint. Here again it is impossible to generalise, for, as always in things Chinese, we encounter direct contradictions. There are, however, one or two vices which are common to every social grade. Chief of these is the system of "squeeze" already mentioned. This, like "face" is not merely universally practised, but universally recognized as right and proper until carried to extremes. The following story, even

though rather exaggerated, is or was certainly two-thirds true. It also illustrates another notable disability, lack of public spirit.

Say £20,000 was an annual appropriation for the public lighting of the city of Peking. Of this sum the Minister in charge took just half as his



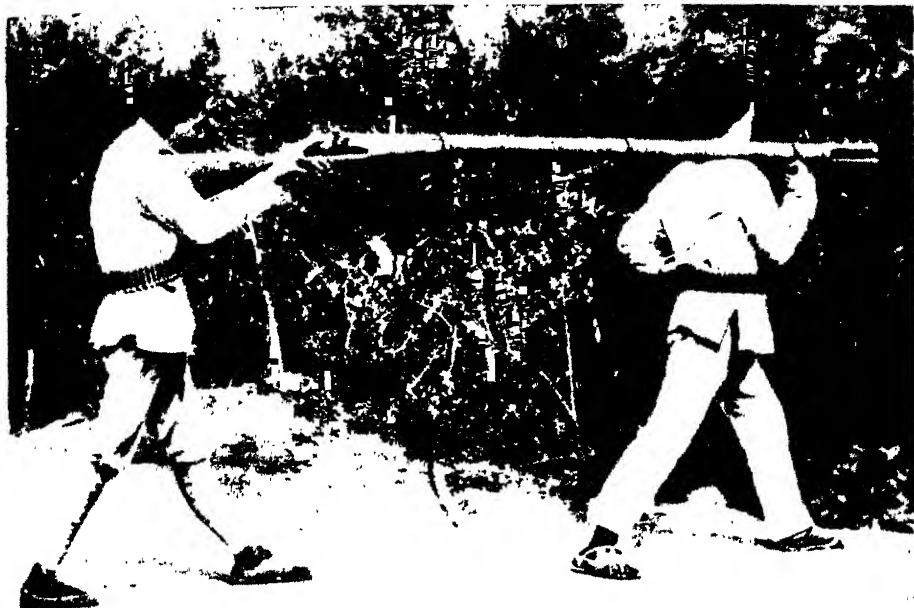
COIFFURE AND HAT COMBINED

Not content with dressing their own hair in artistic style, these Nosu girls have supplemented it with wool. After being dyed vast quantities are mixed with their own strands and the whole fastened with a band

Photo, S. Pollard, "In Unknown China"

watch, not to tell the time, but because the ticking amuses him. In a day or so he will forget to wind it up. Thus, regular working hours are anathema to the Chinese working folk; they don't understand them.

Instances of Chinese vitality can be multiplied indefinitely, especially of



ARMS AND THE MAN AS SEEN IN SOUTH-WESTERN CHINA

Captured during a raid on the Nosu, this lethal weapon is more of a curiosity than a really serviceable arm of attack. Of fearsome size, it requires the services of two men before it can be fired, and the trigger is probably sufficient to lay low the daring marksman who presses its heavy trigger. It is seldom used with a fixed bayonet.



LONG-HAIRED LASSES OF SOUTH-WEST CHINA

Hair of remarkable length and thickness is one of nature's gifts to the Nosu girls who hail from South-West China. Accorded much social freedom, the women are of hardy stock and scorn the use of shoes and stockings. The soles of their feet become very hardened and frequently crack badly. The sufferer then merely resorts to needle and thread to heal the wound.

Photos, S. Pollard, "In Unknown China"



NOSU MARKET VILLAGE IN A SYLVAN SETTING CURIOUSLY ENGLISH IN APPEARANCE

Nestling on the sunny slopes of the tree-covered hillside the only indication that these are not the outbuildings of a farm on the Sussex Downs is afforded by the crowd of natives in the foreground. The market is held every 14 days, and the country people flock in from the outlying districts to barter their produce and discuss the events of the day. These meetings serve as a medium for spreading news from east to west.

Photo, N. Pollard for The Illustrated London News

CHINA & THE CHINESE

commission or squeeze. The Permanent Secretary, being an equally important person, then takes his half, and hands on the balance, £5,000, to his underlings. From grade to grade the ever-decreasing balance descends, until at last the poor remnant reaches the contractor. And as the sum now in hand is about 7½d., one of the office coolies is given the contract, with instructions to provide some wick and a plate of oil. This, with a rare touch of conscience, he does—after deducting his 2d. A passing

farthing. The \$100 gradually vanished in the process, until at the last town he visited the money-hanger sadly remarked, "You owe me eighty-three cents."

Never has squeeze proved itself so great a curse in China as during the period subsequent to the 1911 revolution, when the Tuchuns, or provincial military governors, amassed great fortunes through the continued civil war. And no more scathing comment on the situation could be made than a recent



THEIR SON AND HEIR: THE FAMILY PRIDE

He is an important personage from the day of his birth. Chinese dote on their children, a Chinese mother being quite a slave where her offspring are concerned. Female children are of little account, but a boy is welcomed with intense delight. So fearful are some parents lest their only son should come to harm that they give him a girl's name in order to deceive the malicious spirits

Photo, Maynard Owen Williams

beggar, attracted by the unwonted illumination, finds the plate and drinks the oil.

The anecdote reminds one of another, wherein an Englishman, having heard of the practice, determined to test it for himself, devoting a currency note of \$100 to the purpose. This sum he merely changed at every Chinese town and city he visited from one local currency into the next, not spending a

remark by that distinguished and widely known Chinese, Tang Shao-Yi, to Mr. J. O. P. Bland, and recorded by the latter. "I think," said Tang Shao-Yi, "they (the Tuchuns) would like to resign, so as to have time to attend to their investments. At all events anything would be better than another revolution and a new lot of Tuchuns; for the new lot would be in a hurry to get rich, while the present lot ought to



"WHEN THE SUNNE SHINETH, MAKE HAY"

Fields laid down for hay and clover are virtually unknown in China, the low-lying valley lands suitable for that purpose being, for the most part, given up to rice-growing. These children have been cutting grass in a neglected corner with the peasant's clumsy-looking sickle, raking it together with an eight-pronged bamboo fork, and carrying it in baskets



TRIUMPH OF MIND OVER MATTER: A JUVENILE LAND GIRL

It seems to be troubled sense of responsibility that puckers the brow of this little Ningpo baby rather than fear of the mild-eyed cow snuffing at her flowered jacket. Quite small children hector and domineer over the buffaloes employed upon the land, tiny boys driving them to and from the fields, guiding them when pulling the plough and riding on their backs

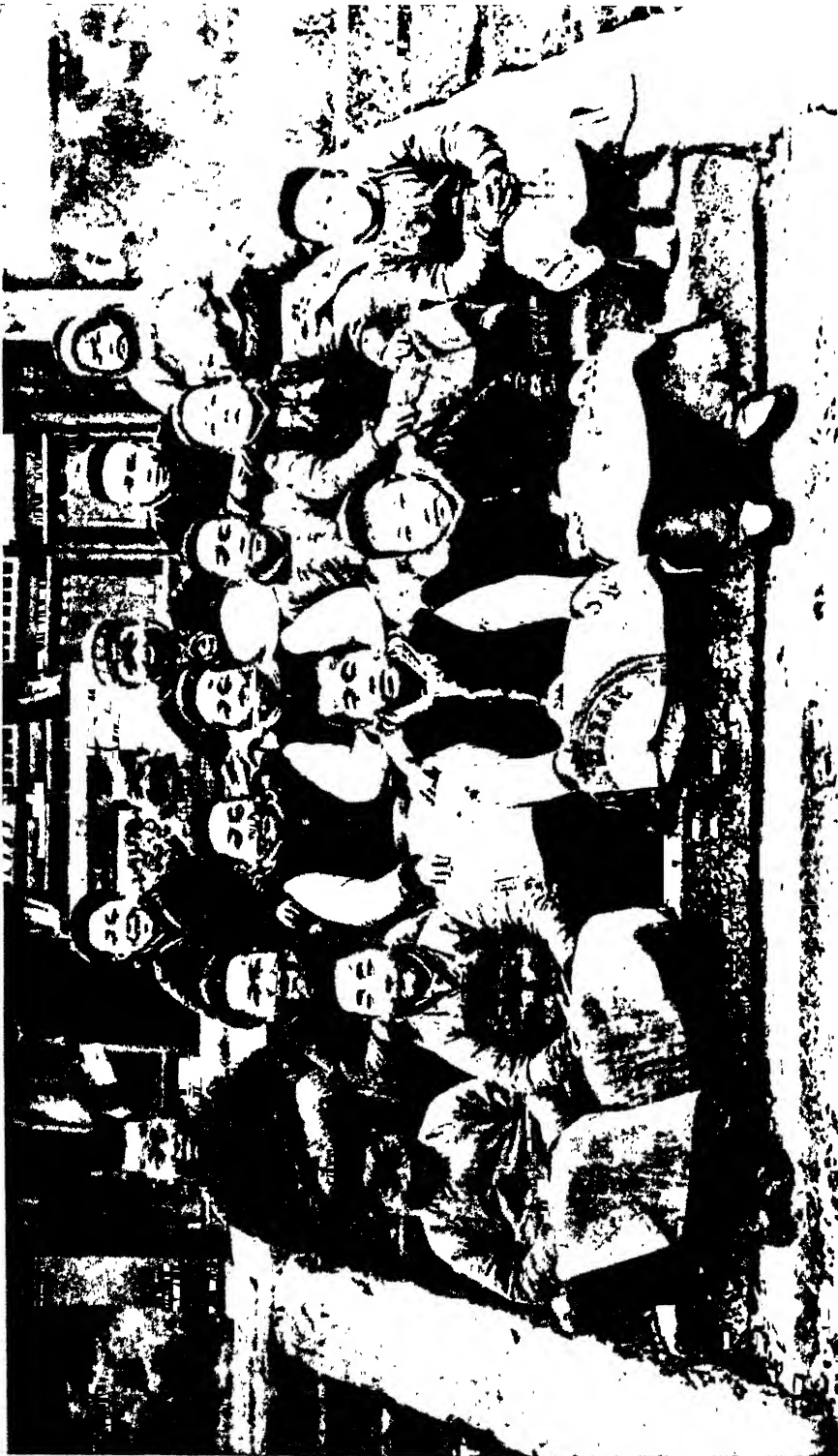
Photo, Maynard Owen Williams



"THE BABY FIGURE OF THE GIANT MASS OF THINGS TO COME"

Among China's crowded millions, the baby boy reigns supreme. His birth is heralded with great rejoicing, for he it is who is to help his parents rise in the social scale, and who, through diligent study, will become an honour to the ancestral clans and to the young Republic. Meanwhile, unconscious of his parents' ambitions, the mind of this sturdy baby is occupied solely with toys and sweetmeats

Photo, Maynard Owen William



VILLAGE SCHOOLBOYS OF CHE-KIANG: THE SOURCE FROM WHICH THE BRAINS OF THE CELESTIAL REPUBLIC ARE DRAWN
The Chinese have a profound reverence for instruction; nearly every village has a school. Many famous Chinese scholars have received their instruction in the village school, for, with perseverance, boys of humble origin may rise to the mandarin class. The mainstays of the great Communist are indeed training in the village school, for, with perseverance, boys of humble origin may rise to the mandarin class. The mainstays of the great Communist are indeed training in the village school, for, with perseverance, boys of humble origin may rise to the mandarin class. The mainstays of the great Communist are indeed training in the village school, for, with perseverance, boys of humble origin may rise to the mandarin class.

Photo, R. F. Pendergast

completely satisfied." Other disabilities may possibly be mentioned. Truthfulness, the desirable virtue, appears to be unknown among the Chinese. An obvious thing, if it be is, when discovered, a good deal less so if the other party has been so completely deceived. You chance to meet a Chinese whom you have not previously seen. He may possibly himself receive you and politely inform you that he is out. Similarly, a Chinese has little or no idea of accuracy, nor can he conceive why anyone should need to exercise such a quality. In nothing is this disability more conspicuous than in the nightmare of Chinese currency. Again, the Chinese are apparently quite incapable of grasping and keeping hold of the point of any matter; their brains do not function on such lines.

Thus, you attempt to argue with the cook over the question of nutmeg on rice puddings. Cook has used it all on the last pudding, and, as usual, has not troubled to get more.

"Hallo, cook, why no nutmeg on the pudding?"
 "Nutmeg no have got."
 "But you had some the other day." "Plenty nutmeg have got last day."
 "Yes, I know; but why not to-day?" "Nutmeg no have got." "You mean it's finished?" "No have got; makee finish."
 "All right. But why not ask for more?"
 "No have askee more." (No, I didn't ask for more.) And so on ad lib.

Their talent for misunderstanding, wilfully or otherwise, is quite astonishing and, to a foreigner, most maddening. Their hide-bound conservatism; determined reliance upon primeval methods and customs; immovable conviction

that their own ways are the best, combined with a stubborn resistance against any change, all these combine to render the attempt of foreign intercourse extremely difficult and offer serious obstacles to Chinese progress and participation in equal terms in the comity of nations. Show a Chinese some simple modern contriv-



A YOUNG DIOGENES IN HIS TUB

Snug in his wadded jacket he has been deposited in a barrel to keep him out of harm's way. The pom-pom on the top of his bonnet suggests the mandarin's button he may secure by-and-by

Photo, Maynard Owen Williams

ance that will make his work the easier, and he will regard it merely with the interest of a child watching a conjurer bring rabbits out of a hat. An American lady imported a patent washing-tub and clothes-wringer, hoping to save her garments from the rents and tears always resulting from Chinese laundry methods. She carefully explained the



"SEE WHAT I'VE FOUND"

These two little kiddies examining their find so intently are wearing their winter coats of thick quilt. Though very heavy the coats are not so warm as they look, being extremely draughty

Photo, R. T. Peckham



CRYING FOR THE MOON

Abominably spoiled, never slapped or beaten, the youthful Celestial generally gets what he wants. If thwarted he gives vent to his displeasure in the way usual with less pampered children.

Photo, J. C. Carter



YOUTHFUL CHINESE TRICKSTERS

The clever performers of juggles, acrobats, and ventriloquist—aboard popular street diversions—and small innocents daily deplore the tricks of the trade give clamorous demonstrations of pugilist

Photo, L. J. Pridmore



MINDING HIS MANNERS

Fingers were made before chopsticks, and to the Western mind would seem better adapted for picking up rice with. This Chinese baby patiently perseveres with his effort to eat properly

Photo, B. T. Pridemore



PERSEVERANCE IN A GOOD CAUSE

The soaring human boy's capacity for goodly, unmeasured everywhere, is largest in China. The Chinese have the "most unsupulous" stomachs in the world, able to digest anything

Photo, Camera Craft, Peking



DESERVES A FLEA IN HIS EAR

There is no minimum age below which a Chinese child should not be tickled. The custom is to be not proportioned to the youngster's size, but to the cleverest affected by him. I also

Photo, Margaret O. Williams



SHREWD AS THE WINTER WIND

Fur jacket, quilted petticoat, and huge sou'-wester keep this elderly shopkeeper of Kiang-su province warm while he peers over his spectacles for a chance of a bargain

Photo, B. T. Pridaux

mechanism, the great advantages of time-saving and preservation. Ah-wong understood perfectly and quite agreed. But next laundry day there was Ah-wong as usual beating the clothes to fragments upon a couple of stones in the yard. He remarked that the foreign fashion might be very clever, but that what his great-great-grandfather did must be the best method.

Are the Chinese trustworthy? Between the ayes and the noes the telling is equally divided; and who shall give the casting vote? Ask the great banking firms of the Far East and the ayes have it. In the banks of Japan Chinese clerks are distinctly preferred

to Japanese. Yet one can record cases where Chinese clerks have embezzled large sums. An English acquaintance of the writer had for twenty years a house-boy who was a prince among house-boys. In every respect he was a model. At the end of the twenty years that boy decamped with every article of value he could lay his hands on. The present writer had for years a cook who was, apparently, without a fault, save the usual Chinese failings. One fine day a police inspector turned up to arrest that cook. The writer naturally protested. The inspector replied by leading the way to the house cellar. There was revealed a primitive but most effective plant for making spurious coins—10 and 25 cent pieces—upon which for months past cookie and his friends had been leading the gay life in their off hours. Yet does the writer cast his vote with the ayes.



A VILLAGE PATRIARCH

Hard work, done on frugal fare and in insanitary conditions, is the lot of millions of Chinese, yet many of them attain a good old age, retaining vigour to the end

Photo, B. T. Pridaux



LIFE'S STRONG CURRENT FLOWING DOWN THE STREET

Bowl and chopsticks, fluttering fan, shorn brow before and long pigtail behind, cotton jacket and blue gown—all the details commonly associated in the Western mind with the old and inscrutable land of China appear in this photograph of a crowded street in Kiu-Kiang, the busy Treaty Port of Kiang-si province, on the Yang-tse-Kiang

Photo, H. I. Merriam

As a last sub-division of the Chinese character, we may suitably consider such aspects as sympathy, benevolence and their opposites, and so public spirit and patriotism. Here again we are at once confronted with a maze of contradictions. Of the Five Constant Virtues taught by Confucius, the practice of virtue, or Benevolence, comes first. And the Chinese are benevolent in many ways, but, as a rule, only when it suits their purpose to be so. It would seem that a quid pro quo is demanded, if not in this world, then in the next. The masses frequently cooperate most zealously in such charitable objects as famine relief measures; but, remembering how and why the Chinese give alms to the swarms of beggars that infest every district, it is not unreasonable to suggest that such benevolence is more often than not dictated by a fear of reprisals in some form or another. The Chinese, on the whole, appear to love their children; yet they can be very

cruel to them. Sociability and happy intercourse with their neighbours is the chief recreation of the Chinese; yet their indifference to suffering, even callousness, their cruel mockery of physical infirmity, are dreadful to witness. In the same way the Government of the country, faced with ever-recurring famines and devastating floods, could do so much to prevent, or at least alleviate the widespread distress; yet little or nothing has ever been done. And these famines and river devastations account, each one, not for hundreds or thousands of lives, but for millions.

Mention has been made of Chinese punishments. The infliction of them is by no means confined to legal officers, for it is very common for private individuals or a section of the community to take the law into their own hands and mete out to an unfortunate victim horrible tortures. These often end only with a murder—for a thief is frequently buried alive. Two or three thousand

CHINA & THE CHINESE

strokes with the bamboo is no uncommon sentence in a Chinese yâmen for even a trifling offence. Consequently it is often urged by foreigners that such barbarities must cease ere China can be dealt with on equal terms. Yet what is the alternative? Such awful cruelty is recognized and expected, but it is not always a sufficiently strong deterrent. As Dr. Arthur Smith has remarked: "Physical

force cannot safely be abandoned until some moral force is at hand to take its place." The republican Government proposes a sweeping prison reform. And the Chinese prisons are indescribable. But educated Chinese often remark that, if prisons are made at all habitable, crime will at once increase ten-fold and the prisons be crowded out in a week by men seeking a roof over their heads



HAPPY MOMENTS CHEERED WITH TEA AND TOBACCO

Refined simplicity distinguishes this aristocratic Cantonese home. A single flowering branch in a porcelain vase adds a touch of grace to the lacquered table on which are two little cups of tea, amber-coloured and scented with flower-petals, for the ladies. The younger lady holds her water-pipe ready for a whiff and a paper spill wherewith to light it

Photo, Underwood Press Service



AN AFTERNOON STROLL THROUGH THE STREETS OF OLD PEKING

Unlike so many of their Chinese sisters the Manchu women have always been able to enjoy the delights of walking in comfort. Their feet were never bound in childhood to obtain the deformity of the "lily-foot" which the women of China used to consider so becoming

Photo, A. Corbett-Smith

and the luxury of a meal every week. The idea that anything can exist for the good of the community generally is simply incomprehensible to the Chinese mind. Take, for instance, the condition of the roads (so-called) in China. Dismiss at once any conception of broad, metalled highways such as Europe can show. A road in China is simply a track made by the feet of travellers passing from one place to another. In time it will be worn down below the general ground level, and so in the rainy season will serve as a miniature canal. No adjoining property owner would dream of repairing his frontage, nor

would a number of local residents ever cooperate. Similarly, in a town or city every householder uses to the full the road-space in front of his dwelling, simply because he has nowhere else for his business or household affairs. A man will unload a cart in front of his house, and all traffic must cease or be diverted until the operation is finished. Or he will stack his bricks and mix his mortar in the middle of the road; or a family will decide to build a stage for a theatrical performance; or the good wife will hang out her clothes to dry; the barber will shave his customers; the carpenter will saw his wood—all in the



CONSULTING THE FORTUNE-TELLER AT HIS HUMBLE SEAT OF CUSTOM

Before the credulous Chinese will take any step in their daily lives—be it the selling of a wife or the selling of a pig—the fates must be consulted to determine a happy day. The street fortune-teller does a thriving trade in settling these momentous questions, and does not let his patrons forget that Confucius bade them consult the gods on all occasions

Photo, J. C. Carter



CHINESE CHESS PLAYERS AT THEIR "GAME OF WAR"

As used in China chessmen resemble the Western draughtsmen, with the names of the pieces they represent cut in the top of the wood. The board has sixty-four squares, all of one colour, and the pieces are placed on the intersections of the lines. The pieces are the general, pairs of secretaries, elephants, horses, chariots and cannon, and five soldiers

Photos, B. T. Pridcauz



SCHOOL-CHILDREN LISTENING TO THE MASTER'S VOICE

Teachers, both religious and secular, long ago discovered the value of the magic lantern as a means of arresting their pupils' attention and creating an interest on which knowledge could be built up. To the magic lantern the gramophone has succeeded, and good instruments, such as that shown here are now to be found in many schools in China

Photo, J. C. Carter



ITALIAN GAME THAT HAS WON THE CHINESE WOMAN'S FANCY

Several games of dominoes are played in China, especially by women, who may be seen thus amusing themselves at almost any hour of the day or night. Thirty-two dominoes make the set, with duplicates of each domino and no blanks. Dice are used in some of the more complicated games, upon one of which these girls are engaged

Photo, B. T. Pridemore

CHINA & THE CHINESE

middle of the track. No one will think of protesting.

Attempt to discuss with an average intelligent Chinese some public question of the moment, some proposed government reform or change of administration. He will probably regard you with astonishment and finally ask why in the world either of you should bother his head about it when the officials concerned are paid to attend to it. What does your Chinese care what officials are in power,

"he who is not in an office has no concern with plans for the administration of its duties." There is the maxim which would seem ever to guide the Chinese.

And a national patriotism. Does any such exist among the Chinese? In the Western conception of the term we should reply, certainly not. Chinese patriotism resolves itself primarily into a personal or family affair, a love of his home. In whatever far country a



FEET OF THE WOMEN WHO CAN NEITHER RUN NOR DANCE

For centuries the women of China have groaned under the tyranny of national fashion which condemns them in girlhood to years of torture through the senseless crippling of their feet, obliging them to totter through life on tiptoe. Unknown in the days of Confucius, this practice of foot-deformation is not religious in origin. Happily, the cruel absurdity of this enforced hobble in a shoe three or four inches long has been at last recognized

Photo, B. T. Prideaux

so long as he is left alone and their squeeze is not too exorbitant? In the same way a Chinese unused to the spectacle will regard with amazement a foreign lady running about hitting a tennis ball over a net. "Why, in Heaven's name," he exclaims, "does she do it, when for three-halfpence any coolie will gladly spend the whole day doing it for her?" "The Master said," so runs one of the Analects of Confucius,

Chinese may be obliged to live, his one overwhelming ambition and constant longing is that he may die and be buried in the land of his fathers. Thus, next to decapitation, the punishment most dreaded of all by a Chinese is a sentence of exile, banishment to a distant province. The offender is allowed perfect liberty within the confines of that province, but should he make any attempt to see or communicate with his



WESTERN INFLUENCES INVADE A STRONGHOLD OF EASTERN TRADITION

In their European skirts and trim shoes and stockings these two girls represent the growing emancipation of Chinese womanhood. Surrounded by the tokens of a civilization that was old before Europe had passed from a state of savagery they appear oblivious of the priest who, with hands on hips, stands sternly regarding them from the steps of the temple



DEFT FINGERS DRESS MY LADY'S HAIR IN THE MOST BECOMING FASHION

Seated at her dressing-table this lady of the upper classes patiently submits to the ministrations of her maid. Like their Western sisters the women of China take great pride in their hair, the arrangement of which is a matter of no small importance. No one style is preferred, the dressing being according to the personal taste of the individual

Photos, B. T. Pridoux

CHINA & THE CHINESE

wife or children, one or other of those loved ones will certainly be put to death. On the other hand, there certainly does exist among the official classes what may pass as patriotism—the passionate observance of the creed, China for the Chinese; an indifferently concealed hatred of and contempt for the foreigner and all his ways. It were mere folly to ignore this, or to imagine that the Chinese, even the Young China party, are adopting foreign customs and inventions for any other reason than that of compulsion and force of circumstances. That there have been many

are directly or indirectly responsible for wellnigh every phase of it. Altruism, charity, thought for others or for the common weal, can find little place in a man who needs must fight his sternest to support himself and his family. As for the saving virtues of humour, contentment, and the like, we may almost regard these as merciful heaven-sent gifts to alleviate the daily lives of toil and hardship.

There is no phase of Chinese social life in regard to which generalisations by a foreigner must prove more inaccurate and unjust than the position of Chinese



FEATHERS AND FINS: CORMORANT FISHING AT TUNGCHAU

Cormorants have been used by the Chinese for fishing for centuries. At a given signal they dive noiselessly into the water, dart in pursuit of a fish, and gulp it down into their pouch. A strap round the throat below the pouch prevents their swallowing it. Then, returning to the boat, they disgorge their prey and await orders to dive again

distinguished and self-sacrificing national patriots in the course of China's history may happily be conceded; also that upon occasion the people, or sections of the people, have followed them. But such exceptions only serve to intensify the general attitude.

It will be apparent that social conditions and physical environment have profoundly affected the Chinese character. In short, a racial fecundity which knows no bounds, and the consequent daily struggle of millions for the barest subsistence—these factors

women. How can any foreigner, even with exceptional opportunities, arrive at the truth? For to treat of a nation's women is to attempt the unveiling of the intimate home life of the people. And who may do that of any people with impunity? In the Chinese language one of the equivalents for "a woman" means, literally, "inside (or house) person." And such is the Chinese conception of their womenfolk. But there is one main factor which to the Chinese places women in a lower status apart and affects the entire relationship between



ANXIOUS TO SEE WHAT FORTUNE AWAITS HER CAST

Fishing for the sake of sport does not appeal to the Chinese, who are only interested in the occupation as a means of getting something to eat. This Chinese maid in her neat white dress dexterously manipulates a heavy four-sided net fastened to a stout bamboo pole. The corners of the net are supported by strong sticks which meet together and are fastened on to the head of the pole

Photo, B. T. Prideaux



CHINESE ANGLER PLYING HIS CRAFT AMONG THE WATER-LILIES

Busily trawling his net through the weed-strewn waters, this youth carries a bottle-shaped wicker basket slung at his side, in which he places his catch. Fish of all sorts are a favourite food in China and it is said that one can eat a different kind every day in the year; of carp alone there are fifty-two species. The Chinese even stock their flooded rice-fields with fish to ensure a plentiful supply

Photo, Maynard Owen Williams



"A MERRY HEART GOES ALL THE DAY"

Although his life is one long toil amid grinding poverty, his unflinching cheerfulness and sense of humour carry him through. The weather-beaten face of this Chusan Island fisherman is a mass of wrinkled good humour

Photo, Maynard Owen Williams

man and woman. A Chinese woman cannot perform or actively share in the ancestral sacrifice. From that point of view and all that it means a woman is, therefore, of little or no account in the Chinese scheme of life, save as a medium of reproduction and as a house-overseer.

If the Chinese knew the plays of Shakespeare, the words of Macbeth, "Bring forth men-children only," would be found emblazoned in every home.

Speaking of the thousands of Chinese families which exist on the verge of starvation, it may be said that if a girl-baby survives the first two or three hours of its life and is not murdered through disappointment it will stand a fair chance of being reared; bearing

always in mind the heavy infant mortality and the prevailing ignorance and carelessness in the care of children. From that hour until the far-off day when the girl becomes an autocratic mother-in-law her life is just an existence—flat, stale, and unprofitable. Even her marriage only serves to bring her under the subjection, often most harsh, of her husband's parents, and her only hope of happiness lies in her presenting the family with a son.

The separation of the sexes is very strictly observed by the Chinese. The Book of Rites, that great Chinese classic, enjoins that a brother may not sit at the same table with a sister over seven years of age; that a father may not sit in the same room as a daughter; that male and female garments may not be hung upon the same rack. Naturally enough, conditions do not always permit of such strict observances, but there at

least is the basis of the Chinese code. Technically speaking, the wife or daughter of a Chinese does not exist. A mixed dinner-party, for instance, would outrage all sense of Chinese decorum. And there is nothing to the Chinese mind more incredible and despicable than the dress, or lack of it, of foreign ladies.

Education for girls, apart from the handful of mission-schools, is practically unknown. For the attitude of parents is summed up in the idea: "If her future husband's parents want her educated, let them see to it themselves; why should we bother?" In fact, the principal object is to get rid of the daughter as soon as possible, by marriage for choice. If poverty presses too

CHINA & THE CHINESE

ably then the girl is a marketable article. The average Chinese girl knows nothing, save perhaps the routine of some manual labour, and goes nowhere until her marriage, when she merely exchanges one imprisoning circle for

another. In violent contrast are the spheres of foreign influence and education—Shanghai, for instance. Here you may find Chinese women engaging in all the activities of their Western sisters, from political tub-thumping on



GAMBLING FOR SWEETS AT "ROULET, OTHERWISE ROLY-POLY"

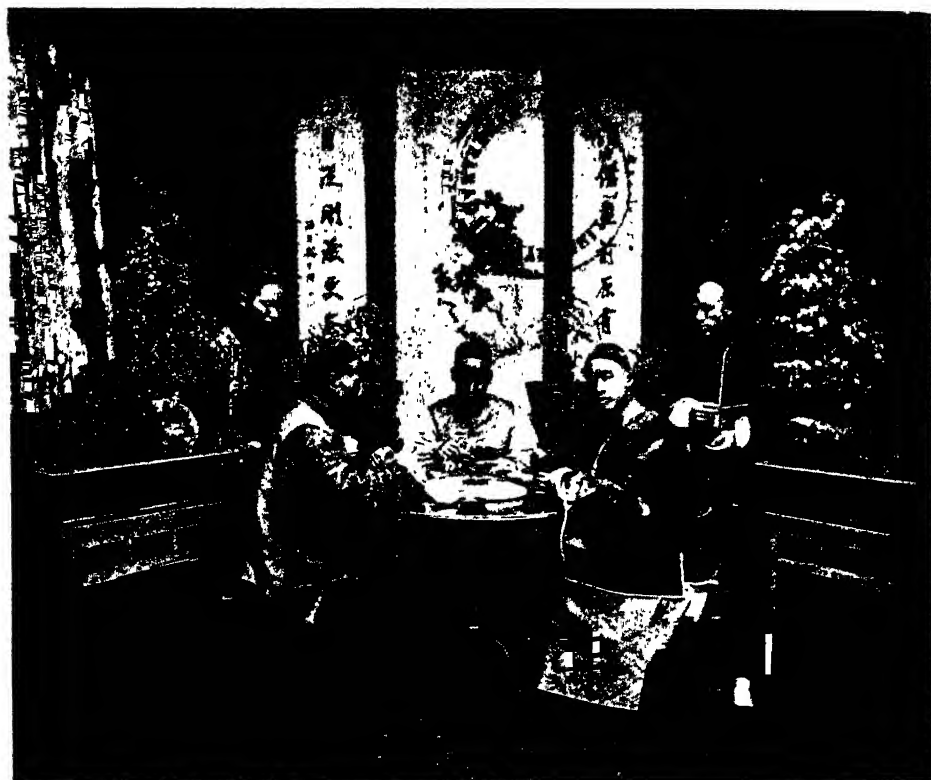
All Chinese, men and women alike, are possessed by the gambling spirit. They begin in earliest youth, venturing a cash or two on the chance of winning a sweet or cake from the itinerant bankers who set up their roulette apparatus in the streets. Gambling sheds are found in the shams of every city and are always crowded with clients

Photo, B. T. Pridoux



MUSICIANS PLAYING A TRIO FOR GUITAR AND VIOLINS

Guitars of various forms exist in China, blind musicians playing one kind, while blind singing-girls accompany themselves on another. Violins also are diverse, the bow passing between the strings of some, as here illustrated. Western ears are quite unable to appreciate Chinese music, in which the melodies are wearisomely monotonous and harmony as understood elsewhere is non-existent



CANTONESE GENTLEMEN ENJOYING A QUIET FLUTTER

Games of chance are dear to the heart of all Chinese. The cards they use are pasteboard slips about two inches long and half an inch wide, and for the game of Cha-Kam thirty-two constitute a pack. In another popular game, Ngau-pai, or Cow-cards—so called because, according to tradition, it was first played by cow-herds ages ago—the pack consists of thirty-six cards



MEN ADAPTED TO THE MASTERY OF ACROBATIC FEATS

The Chinese are rightly called a nation of acrobats. The very existence of the dense masses is based more or less on the theory of the survival of the fittest, and it is not surprising that the powers of endurance of the "man in the street" are developed to the utmost. No matter what the exhibition, if the entertainers can provide really stimulating amusement, the "dense crowd" will be there

Photo, B. T. Pridoux



AN ALLUREMENT WHICH FEW CELESTIALS CAN RESIST

When swords come into play in the hands of the Chinese juggler the ring of spectators widens as if by magic. The professional "outfit" is composed of simple, everyday objects which, however, at the juggler's touch, become possessed of strange supernatural powers. The crowd has thinned somewhat at the approach of the camera; it will melt away more rapidly when the act is next round

Photo, H. I. Merriman

public platforms to glee-clubs and physical training classes. But this is not China. Nor is the official world of Peking the real China.

Nothing indicates more forcibly the position of Chinese women than the details of a girl's betrothal and marriage.



A MEMBER OF THE MIAO CLAN

Among the wild grandeur and beauty of mountain and valley in Yun-nan province, dwell various tribes whose origin is as unfathomable as the expression of this small Miao-tse maiden—a representative of one of the principal aboriginal clans

Photo, H. Parsons

Needless to say there is never any question of meeting a future husband and falling in love. Romance of that kind is not for the Chinese girl. She will rarely, if ever, see her betrothed until the marriage. And not always then, for

the husband may not even be present at his own wedding; he may be away on some business or reading for an examination. The marriage is arranged (exactly the word), frequently by some professional match-maker and at the earliest possible age. Once this is done, the girl is held to belong to her future husband's family. Thus her freedom, if she ever had any, is further curtailed, and she is kept in still stricter seclusion. And on no account must the girl be seen by any member of her future family. Hence it rarely happens that a girl marries into a family living in the same neighbourhood. If a girl should thus unluckily be seen, both families consider themselves under the baneful influence of the evil eye. The one exception to this rule would seem to be the death of a senior member of the in-law family; the bride-to-be is then expected to do reverence at the coffin.

The actual delivery of the bride at the door of her future home is the crucial point of the wedding ceremony, although the ceremonial festivities and customs differ in almost every district. The wedding-feast, an affair of riotous colour, is also universal. In this neither bride nor bridegroom, although present, seems to participate. Later in the day comes the general inspection of the bride by the guests. This practice is often carried to extremes, for the unfortunate girl is displayed, and her good and bad points commented upon, as though she were a horse for sale.

It is the respective parents who receive congratulations on the marriage, not the contracting parties. The girl's parents are felicitated upon having got rid of the daughter so fortunately; the man's parents on receiving extra help in the house, with the prospect of sons arriving to worship at their graves. Nor is there any particular reason why bride and bridegroom should receive felicitations, for any sentiment about the possibility of future happiness never enters their minds. At the same time, the man and woman must frequently become in time deeply attached to each other, simply because of the common humanity. But on no account would



ABORIGINES OF YÜN-NAN IN COATS OF MANY COLOURS

The ethnological map of Yün-nan is a veritable patchwork; in the province are to be found, side by side and yet quite distinct, several tribes descended from the aborigines who inhabited the territory when its annexation to China took place in the thirteenth century. The Chinese have neither exterminated these people, nor brought them to any extent under their influence.

Photo, H. Parson

CHINA & THE CHINESE

either permit their friends and neighbours to have an inkling that so happy a state existed, and a wife would deny through everything that she loved her husband.

Girl infanticide is all too prevalent in China, and once again we find the main cause is the pressure of population and poverty. Prevalent also is the sale of daughters, even of wives, and for the same reasons. Official edicts forbidding these practices under penalty are frequently issued, but it is difficult to imagine that any effect can be produced, either by laws or the spread of foreign doctrines, until the root cause is adequately dealt with.

The simplest method of picturing the conditions of Chinese home life is to



OUT AFTER WILD FOWL

Falconry has been a popular pastime in China for something like four thousand years. In the East falconers carry their hawk on the right hand

Photo, Camera Craft, Peking



STRENGTH AND ENDURANCE

This standard railroad sleeper of oak timber represents no mean burden, but a Chinese coolie thinks nothing of carrying logs weighing 200 lb ten miles a day

Photo, Camera Craft, Peking

enumerate everything which the average Anglo-Saxon expects and demands in his own home, and note that a Chinese prefers or is content with precisely the opposite. Privacy, one of our first essentials, is unknown in China, where the ever open door is universal. A Chinese conducts his domestic affairs, if not in the roadway, at least in view of any passers-by who care to look into his house and sit down. Nor would a Chinese ever have the heart to deprive his neighbours of the entertainment of witnessing a family quarrel. And as that party wins who can shout the loudest, it does not take long to secure an audience. Similarly, the news will soon spread that a man is quietly discussing some purely personal business with his wife. And as no one in China



A STREET QUACK

His stock-in-trade is a tray of articles unknown to the pharmacopœia, and of these he makes nauseating compounds

Photo, Maynard Owen Williams

ever has any secrets, it is quite fitting that his friends should drop in and form an interested circle around the couple.

The more relatives and families of one stock that a house can accommodate, the better is your Chinese pleased. Married sons, grandchildren, brothers, and their families, will all crowd in where there is an inch of room. And that very few inches are required the illustration given already of the fisher-folk and their boats will testify.

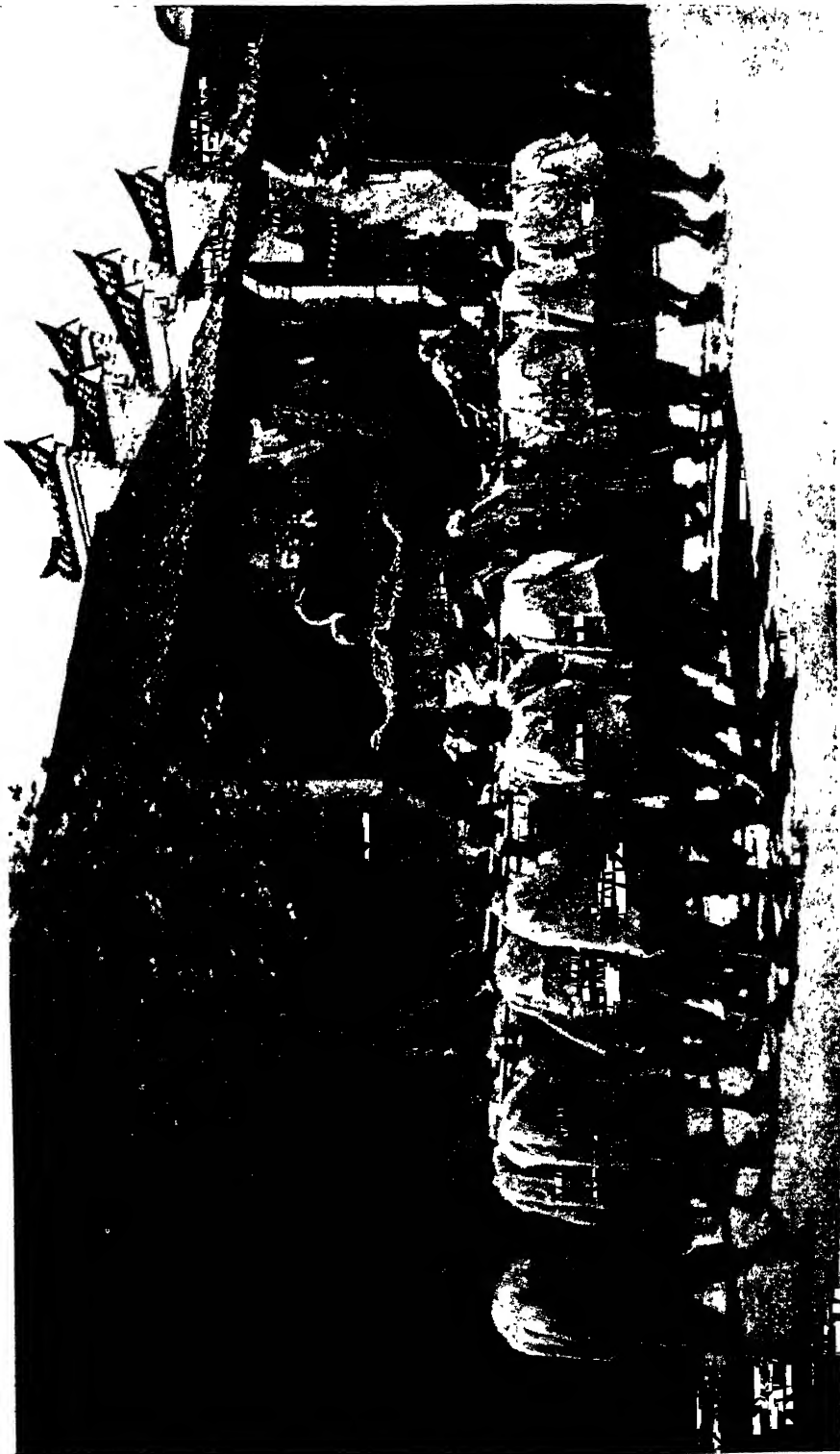
Peace and quiet at reasonable hours are

also wanted, and generally considered important. In China, the banging of doors, the knocking of the beating of a clock, the clucking of fowls the live-long night through are unnoticed save as gentle incentives to slumber. The Chinese indifference to ordinary comfort has already been noticed. Such a bed and furniture as a household possesses is invariably designed to secure the most cramped and tortured postures that the human frame is capable of. A single large cooking utensil will serve the needs of a family not only for food, but for the heating of water. Bed-clothes are



WHERE THE HOOD MAKES THE DOCTOR

Chinese doctors pass no examinations and require no qualifications beyond an air of profound wisdom and an old book of prescriptions. Almost anything nasty is deemed good as medicine, and the larger the dose the more likely the cure. Doctors, however, are judged entirely by results, and no cure no fee is the rule



WITH HEAVY TREAD AND SLOW THE HIRED MOURNERS GO

Two dozen stalwart bearers are required to sustain the weight of the immensely heavy coffin containing the poor remains of one who was abundantly dowered with the riches of this world, and crowds have gathered to watch him make his last imposing progress along the tree-lined streets. Poised ready for flight on the top of the carved casket is the effigy of the sacred crane that shall carry his soul to Paradise

Photo. Mrs. Lewinson



'NOTHING IN HIS LIFE BECAME HIM LIKE THE LEAVING IT'

Funerals in China are conducted on a scale of the greatest possible lavishness, for a cheap ceremony would result in much loss of "face." Most of the men but a small portion of the funeral procession of a wealthy man, with all its attendant splendour. In the foreground the white-robed, pale-faced bearers are marshalling the bearers who support the weight of the elaborate catafalque. Armed men, priests, and musicians all play their part.

Photo, Camera Craft, Peking



TAOIST PRIESTS LEAD THE DECEASED ALONG THE PROPER ROAD

Preceded by a ragged band of urchins bearing funeral signs come the solemn priests in their bright-hued vestments. Funerals in China are often attended by the representatives of more than one denomination, for religious tolerance attains a stage unknown in Christian lands. Moreover, if both Buddhist and Taoist priests are present the deceased is little likely to take the wrong direction

Photo, Mrs. Levinson



OSTENTATIOUS PAGEANTRY OF A CHINESE FUNERAL

A coffin is often numbered among the pieces of furniture in a Chinaman's house, and many a Celestial thinks it well to keep such a memento mori by him. In China the highest forms of joy or grief appear to find expression in eating, and the funeral procession, attended by continuous wailing, excruciating music, and detonations of fireworks, counts for little when compared with the funeral feast

Photo, A. Corbett-Smith



THE PAUPER HURRIED TO HIS GRAVE, "UNWEPT, UNHONOURED, AND UNSUNG"

In vivid contrast to the elaborate ceremonial processions which characterise the last journey of the rich, the body of the poor Chinese is rushed through the streets. In place of the gorgeous catafalque with its many attendants comes the simple coffin covered with the dead man's best robe. Borne on the strong shoulders of six coolies, the coffin is hurried to the graveside

Photo, Mrs. Levinson



DOWN THE ROUGH STEPS TO HIS FINAL RESTING-PLACE

The bearers toil under their unwieldy burden as they slowly make their way down the steep path to the burial ground. Slung on long bamboo poles the coffin is covered with a plain white cloth, white being the Chinese mourning colour. As a propitiation to the gods a fowl has been slain and placed on the coffin over the head of the dead man

Photo, Maynard Owen Williams



WHERE TIRED PORTERS MAY ENJOY FIVE MINUTES' EASE

Having divested themselves of their burdens, the coolies take refuge from the hot sun under a shady tree and are soon engaged in animated conversation. The Chinese have none of the reserve of the Western nations, and often address each other as "brother," even when meeting for the first time, assuming the existence of a relationship on the principle that "within the four seas all are brethren."

Photo, Maynard Owen Williams

often at a discount; the bed itself is heated by the building of a fire underneath. Where we Westerners, unenlightened mortals, rest our heads upon a pillow, the Chinese rest their necks on bricks or pallets of wood.

Chinese clothes are certainly dignified and picturesque, but, according to foreign ideas, they are not designed for usefulness and comfort either in summer or winter. To a Chinese foreign clothes are madly grotesque, as indeed in many respects they are. It is, by the way, a curious fact that among the Chinese the use of wool for clothing is almost unknown. Cotton is the staple article. But any foreign resident in China will tell how his undervests have a mysterious habit of disappearing. Careful observation will reveal the fact that his house-boy and coolies will flaunt them on high days and holidays before envious friends, wearing them outside their ordinary garments.

The last remark suggests a number of other little everyday matters in which the Chinese differ from Western peoples. For instance, the Englishman will take his dog out for a walk; the Chinese will give his pet bird an airing. One of the commonest sights in China is that of a man, young or old, standing for half an hour at a time outside his house or in the country, holding at arm's length a little cage with a bird in it. A foreigner in greeting a friend grasps him by the hand; a Chinese shakes hands with himself. Should you be the principal guest at a dinner-party you will leave the table with the remark that you have put your host to great inconvenience. To this he should reply "Not at all; you are far too polite. It is really I who have treated you with insolent rudeness." Ask a Chinese as to the number of his "honourable and distinguished children," he will reply, omitting, of course, all mention of his

CHINA & THE CHINESE.

laughters, that his 'miserable bratlings are but a contemptible three.' If your host thinks that you have rather overstayed the reasonable time for a call, he will probably order a fresh pot of tea to be brought for you. A Chinese uses his family or surname in front of his given names. A Chinese visitor keeps his hat on in a friend's house. The foreigner generally builds his house with the most attractive side to the front, and throws his refuse out at the back; the Chinese builds his attractive side to the back, and throws his refuse out of the front door into the street. Our magnetic compass points to the north: the Chinese to the south. A foreign



SOLID CASH FOR THIS WORLD: PAPER MONEY FOR THE NEXT

One of the minor odd customs originating in ancestor-worship is that of supplying the spirits with money for their use in their new sphere. Imitation paper money is made up into packets addressed to the dear departed and burnt over their graves. Above, a practical person is shown carrying thirty shillings' worth of solid cash in strings round his neck for use in this material world.

Top photo, Maynard Owen Williams

lady sews a garment towards her; a Chinese will pin hers to her breast and sew from her. A Chinese book begins at the end, and is read backwards from right to left; the footnotes come at the top of the page, and the chapter headings down the side.

Much Learning Brings High Honour

The home-lore and customs of the Chinese are a bottomless well from which to draw; one may go on dipping for a lifetime, and at the end be little nearer an appreciation of the Chinese character. Shall we, perhaps, peep into a boys' school and see how and what the youngsters learn? A scholar in China is a great man, honoured above all men. He may be poorer than a village dog, but if only he has won through to a literary degree he may hold his head far higher, and be infinitely more respected, than a great merchant prince. Schools are everywhere; but, once more, do not imagine that until quite recently they have taught in them anything of the least practical use. The one subject taught, the knowledge of which is the highway to fame and honour, is the ancient classics of China—dreary, dry, and dismal studies in metaphysics. A boy of eight will begin with one such a volume and be driven through it merely by the sound of the Chinese characters; what the hieroglyphics mean he has no conception, nor will the teacher dream of explaining. In five years' time he will have worked his way through several books in just such a fashion.

Victims of their Own Credulity

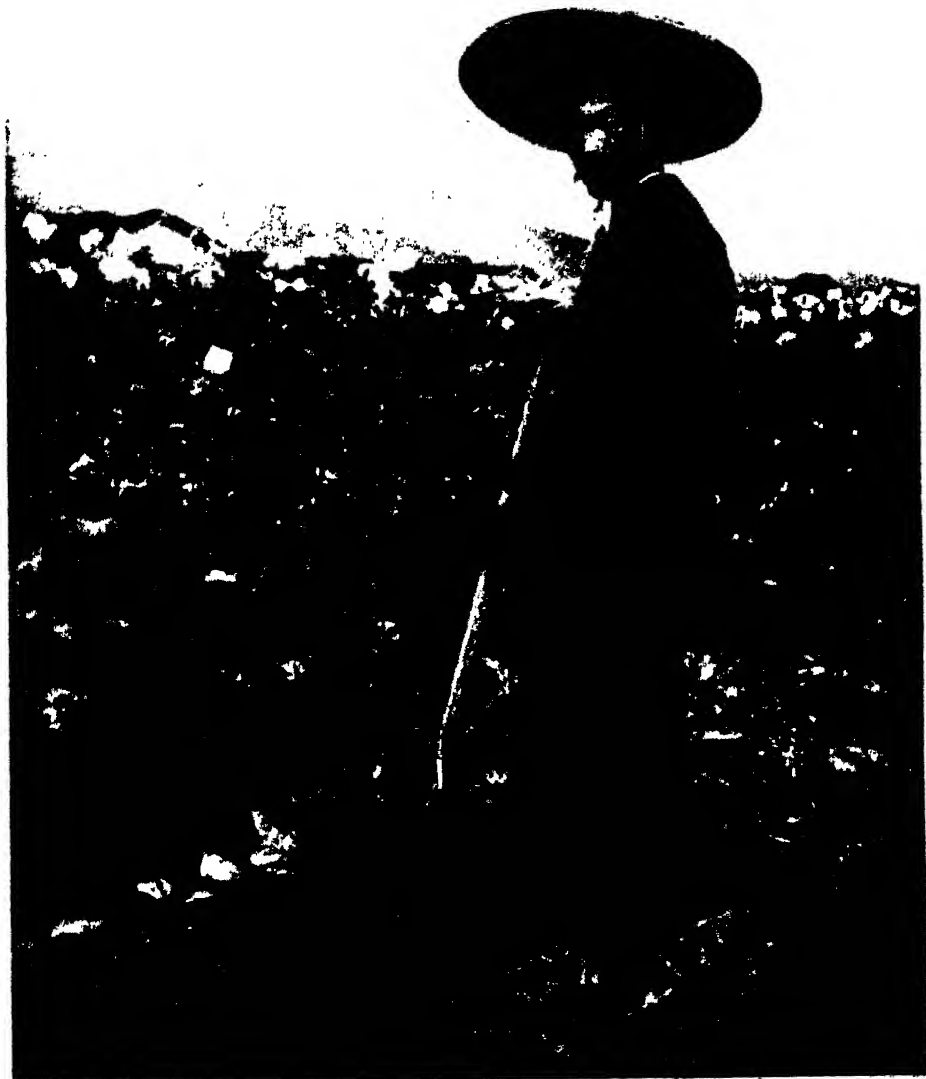
He is studying the same books, and in precisely the same way, as boys did a thousand years before him. And to the Chinese what was good enough then is ten centuries better now. But here at least some change is beginning to creep in through some districts and sweeping reforms are proposed. A great step forward was taken in 1918, when an alphabet of 39 symbols was invented and officially adopted. The educational aim of the new Government was announced in these terms: "to

pay special attention to the development of morals, supplementing it with technical and military training, and completing it with a cultivation of the aesthetic powers." It is a pronouncement of the deepest interest to the student of human nature and the affairs of the nations.

Let us take another dip into the well. Fortune-telling quacks and doctors' The terms are almost synonymous in China. Superstition runs riot among the people. Astrologers are consulted upon every important and unimportant occasion. Calendars are published indicating the red-letter "happy" days for weddings, funerals, journeys, and the like. Chair-bearers and hirers-out of festive paraphernalia are more expensive on such days. The giver of the feast must therefore decide whether or no he will save his pocket and run the risk of, say, a drought ruining his rice crop by giving his entertainment a day or two earlier. They are mighty clever fellows these fortune-tellers, and so are the doctors.

Remedies Worse than Diseases

For the science and art of medicine stands precisely where it did in China two thousand years ago. A well-to-do and educated Chinese of the writer's acquaintance had, one day, the misfortune to find a fish bone stuck fast in his throat. Friends, relatives, and neighbours hurried to the scene, some score of more or less dirty fingers were pushed into the patient's mouth, but all efforts to dislodge the bone were unavailing. A distinguished Chinese doctor was summoned. The doctor placed his spectacles on his nose and gravely inquired the nature of the obstacle. "Fish bone!" was shouted at him by a dozen eager voices. "Ah," said the doctor, "the remedy is obvious. Since the obstacle is of the nature of fish, methods of fishing must be employed. A net is too bulky; let a fishing-bird cormorant be fetched." After some time a great flapping bird was carried in. The patient was tied in a chair, the bird was perched on the back, and its beak was guided to the



BEAUTY BRINGING IN HER TRAIN DROWSY SLEEP AND DEATH

Since 1906 both the cultivation of the poppy and the consumption of opium have been illegal in China. The poppy grown in that country was mainly the white-flowered variety. A poppy-field in the season presents a lovely spectacle, the wide white flowers towering on erect stems above the variously lobed and cut leaves, and followed, as the petals fall, by swelling light green capsules.

Photo, Maynard Owen Williams

CHINA & THE CHINESE

patient's mouth. The frantic struggles of the patient, the well-directed energy of the bird, the shouts of the relatives, combined to effect a perfect cure. The bone was rammed right down the man's throat, and the doctor departed proudly, with a great accession of "face."

In China anyone may be a doctor, and consequently everybody is one, if not professionally, at least as an amateur. Everybody is ready to prescribe on the moment some infallible cure. And if Mr. Wang, the barber, has nothing the

with the pills, as they are only made of flour paste.

With the entire absence of any attempt at sanitation that obtains everywhere; the overcrowding in house and village and city, and, generally, the dirty habits and customs of the Chinese, it is only natural that the country should be ravaged by plague, dysentery, tuberculosis, venereal, and other diseases. The writer suggests that it is mainly owing to the practice of drinking tea as the universal beverage,



PUMPING WATER BY OX-POWER ON A RICE ESTATE

Since rice grows best in water irrigation occupies much of the Chinese agriculturist's attention. In the southern provinces cattle are often employed to turn the water-wheel, and an ox patiently tramping round and round under a thatched beehive hut like this is a common feature of the landscape. In the north of the country the rain supply in summer and the snow in winter furnish all the moisture the farmers require in ordinary years

matter with him, Mr. Yin, the doctor, will soon make him think that he has, or soon will have. And Mr. Wang, having been duly terrified by the wise and loquacious Yin, is only too eager to purchase the handful of greasy pills which Yin has ready for him. Wang rushes home, swallows the pills in one dose, finds himself as well as ever the next day, and the fame of Yin waxes great. And Yin is quite content to run the risk of Wang overeating himself

and the boiling of the water, that the results are not infinitely more disastrous. It should be added that no sanitary laws appear ever to have been enacted by any Chinese Government, and that, with the exception of a Medical Congress in 1911, no official notice has ever been taken of the appalling conditions that prevail. Some medical education and Red Cross work is being promoted, and the foreign missions, within their very limited range, have ever done good



CHINESE FARMERS' INGENIOUS METHOD OF IRRIGATION

Where better mechanical appliances are not available a shallow vessel with ropes attached to each side is used to scoop up water from a running stream. Two men swing the pail so that it skims just under the surface of the stream, is brought up nearly full, and emptied with a jerking motion into the channel. This process is repeated with surprising rapidity and smoothness.



CHEERFULNESS ON THE TREADMILL AS THE WHEEL GOES ROUND

More fortunate than his brother farmer seen above, this man possesses a water-wheel whereby water may be pumped into the channels that irrigate his fields. Daily he may be seen with his sons cheerfully toiling on the treadmill and mentally calculating the value of each foot-pound of energy as it will be represented later on in strings of cash for his rice crop.

Photos, Maynard Owen Williams

CHINA & THE CHINESE

medical and preventive work. The Chinese National Medical Association was formed in 1915.

In China, the step between doctors and funerals is no great one. And as funerals, and all that they connote, are of the first importance in the national life, a brief description must be given. The object of ancestor-worship is, broadly speaking, twofold—the preservation to posterity of a man's name, and the inculcation of filial piety. The latter is the bed-rock of Chinese social life, and Confucius has summed up under five heads a son's duties to his

cripple him for the rest of his life; and a Chinese funeral can be very expensive. Incidentally, one of the most appropriate presents that a son can make to an aged father or mother is a coffin. This is placed in the courtyard, and becomes an object of great pride and congratulation. If the son chance to occupy an official position, the death of a parent compels him to abandon his duties and pay and go into mourning for three years. Then it is probable that the funeral order will be placed with a firm of funeral providers, because the son, through grief, cannot himself supervise



ANTIQUATED METHODS OF PLOUGHING THE RICE-FIELDS

Made wholly of wood except for the iron-edged share, which lies flat and penetrates about eight inches into the soil, the Chinese plough is a crude implement upon which no improvement has been effected in the many centuries it has been in use. Light enough to be carried on to the field by the farmer, it is drawn over the soil by a buffalo

Photo, B. T. Prideaux

parents—the utmost reverence in general conduct; in nourishing to give the utmost pleasure; to experience the greatest anxiety in illness; to display the utmost grief in death; to sacrifice with the utmost solemnity.

A son may rigidly obey the first three canons during his parents' lifetime, but it is at their death that, in the eyes of the world, his great opportunity comes. Hence no sacrifice is too great for a son to make that the funeral obsequies may be worthy. If necessary, he is prepared to sell or mortgage everything he possesses, and the funeral debt may

arrangements. And it is to the commercial interest of the firm to arrange for as many and elaborate rites and ceremonies as possible. These may perhaps be extended over a period of forty-nine days before the actual interment takes place.

The character of the funeral naturally varies with the social position of the deceased, and the amount of money likely to be available. Coffin-bearers will be provided, from some 600 for a dead emperor to a couple for a poor suicide. A gorgeous catafalque will be erected across the street; priests, both



IN A CHINESE PADDY-FIELD: THE WORK OF TRANSPLANTATION

The rice, known when in the husk as "paddy," grows in thick clusters after it has been sown, and is left thus until it has attained a height of some six inches. The workers, men and women, then pull it up, exercising the greatest care to avoid damaging the roots before transplanting it in the water-logged fields with a wider and more even distribution

Photo, B. T. Prideaux



MUD FLATS SOON TO BECOME A MASS OF LIVING, DELICATE GREEN

No walls or fences mark the boundaries of the rice flats. Each section is divided from its fellow by a low mud mound, which affords a path broad enough for a man to walk on when it has dried. The coolies are busy transplanting the rice in the manner described above. Two and sometimes three crops of rice can be gathered from one field

Photo, Kadd & Herbert



"HULLING" THE GATHERED GRAIN

Before the rice is ready for consumption the hard outer husks must be removed, for which purpose the Chinese workman is busily ladling out the grain with a scoop, and so transferring it to the circular crusher

Photo, Maynard Owen Williams

Buddhist and Taoist, will be engaged, that no risk may be run in following the wrong road; a great feast must be set out; mourning for the relatives; bands of musicians in relays to howl and scrape all and every day and night; cartloads of fire-crackers to keep pace with the musicians and scare the evil spirits and delight the youth of the neighbourhood; paper models of all the furniture and other articles once valued by the deceased, to be ceremoniously burned, that he may have them for use in the next world; paper money to be burned or scattered behind the funeral cortège, the idea being that the demons will be kept so busy picking up the money that the coffin will arrive first at the graveyard; dozens of rapscallions and ragamuffins to carry

banners, umbrellas, and other emblems, and to respond with a yelling chanty chorus to the shouts of the overseer, as the procession winds its way to the ancestral cemetery.

For the feast some financial help is always forthcoming, for every guest contributes a recognized share in money. In fact, anyone who is prepared to put down, say, 1,000 cash (about 2s. 6d.), to display a mourning band of white, and to howl and groan nicely, can join in the banquet. The more guests there are the greater will be the "face" of the feast-giver. Needless to say, the guests, even the near relatives, will secure full value by eating or decamping with every article of food they can lay hands on, the host being too prostrated with grief to interfere. One prospective host on his way to market to buy meat for the feast was

actually robbed of all the money by a crowd of his own relatives. He made another journey, bought the meat, got it safely home. But the night before the feast thieves broke in and carried off every scrap, leaving only vegetables for the guests. The loss of "face" was terrible, but the host was not going to run any more risks, and there the coffin remained for his son to bury it in the years to come.

Whether all this tawdry display and ostentatious grief is designed by the Chinese to hide their deeper emotions we cannot say. The writer has witnessed many a Chinese funeral, and each has been just of this character. The intense beauty of solemnity is absolutely unknown in China. Dignity and simplicity in such a connexion are



"GOOD ENOUGH IN 100 B.C., TWO THOUSAND YEARS BETTER NOW"

Rather than save themselves time and labour by adopting modern machinery, the Chinese cling to the elementary ways of their forefathers. This boy is drawing his heavy roller over the rice to grind it into flour, and is holding a hard brush with which he sweeps up the grain into compact heaps

Photo, E. M. Newman



A PAUSE FROM HIS LABOUR IN ORDER TO "LOOK PLEASANT, PLEASE"
Outside the door of his hut the Chinese labourer, watched by his family, sifts his rice. He places the grain in the open basket which he is holding, and deftly shakes it over the large wicker pan. The result of his labours is to be seen in the well-filled trays resting on the trestles in the background

Photo, E. T. Pridemore

inconceivable to the Chinese mind. Thus, once again, we are confronted by another inexplicable contradiction between Chinese moral purpose and material fulfilment.

By way of stepping-stones to an outline of China's creative work, her produce and her arts, we may briefly consider the language of her people, the currency in vogue, and the government.

Intonation and Interpretation

Of the spoken language there are in use a great number of different dialects. For instance, the speech of a native of Shanghai would probably be unintelligible to his compatriot in Canton. A foreigner setting out to learn Chinese would perhaps be best advised to study the Mandarin dialect. This has three varieties, but at least it will be understood by about two-thirds of the population. The language is certainly very difficult to acquire, and a foreigner may well spend a lifetime in the country and yet be unable to speak a word of it, save some horrid oaths. Intonation is one of the great difficulties, for the same word will carry different meanings, according as it is pronounced. Take the expression *chi*, for instance. For this there are actually 135 written characters, and all are pronounced *chi*. You may mean by it "impatient" or "chicken" or "push" or "remember," and to convey the right meaning the correct delicate inflexion must be used. When one comes to speak even a single sentence of half a dozen words, with the necessity of remembering and using the correct intonation for each word, something of the immense difficulty of the spoken language will be realised.

The Written not Spoken Word

The written language is another thing altogether, for a Chinese does not write as he speaks; he must needs transpose the expressions into a scholarly idiom. Similarly, it would be hopeless for a Chinese to recite to an audience a passage from a Chinese Milton or Browning, because no one would understand him. An audience will perhaps be able to follow a Chinese classical or

historical play because the book or plot will be familiar. But should a Chinese go to see a performance of, say, a Chinese "The School for Scandal," without having studied the play beforehand, the dialogue might equally well be delivered in Spanish for all the meaning it will convey to him. Then there are several varieties of the written language. An advertisement of somebody's pills will appear on the hoardings in characters quite different from an official proclamation. And a student will write his essay in a language quite unlike that of a Confucius classic.

But if the language is such, what can be said of Chinese currency? Ten years of close application will probably enable a man to speak and write official Chinese with some degree of fluency; but one is strongly tempted to assert that no Chinese can ever fully understand his own coinage and its value.

Chaos of the Currency

The recognised unit of currency for Chinese and foreign commerce is the tael. Of this unit there are said with authority to be 170 varieties in use. For instance, the Maritime Customs dues are calculated in the Haikwan tael; the commerce of Shanghai uses another variety, Canton another, and so on. The tael is divided up on the decimal system, and its actual purchasing value varies from day to day, and in each locality.

But the comedy begins when we learn that there is no such coin as a tael. Actually it is a weight of silver. You may purchase a table in Tientsin for, say, twenty taels, the marked price, but you cannot put the money down, because it doesn't exist. So you, or the seller, make a mental calculation—how many dollars to-day go to the tael? And if you are better at the game than the seller, you win. Of course, you may write a cheque for it on your local bankers, but the chances are that by next day, when the cheque is passed for payment, that elusive tael will be worth more dollars, and so you will lose. Incidentally, Jews are accounted smart business men, but the Chinese can give



CHINESE ACTOR PLAYING LEADING LADY

Gorgeous robes of rich hues glittering with gold are worn by the Guild of the Young Folks of the Pear Garden, as actors are called in China. All female characters are taken by men

To face page 1376

Photo, B. T. Pridmore

CHINA & THE CHINESE

from 75 in 100, and leave them standing. The dollar (again of a dozen varieties) is a foreign invention for the convenience of foreigners, where most they congregate. A mile or so away from such localities the dollar will be virtually unknown. The coin for the Chinese is the cash, ten-cash and one-cash pieces, and the latter are the more popular because you will find a difficulty in making your tradesman believe one of the former to be genuine. To-day about 2,000 cash go to the Shanghai tael, and a tael is worth about five shillings. A cash is a little disk of copper with a hole in it, and you string about 100 cash together. That is roughly about threepence in English money. Thus the good wife going to market for the Sunday family dinner is confronted with a serious problem. The dead weight of a dozen or so strings of cash is not lightly to be borne, so it will probably cost her a fair proportion of her marketing money to pay for its transport in a wheelbarrow.

We can only give the main features of the currency comedy, the details must be imagined. As one of the many sub-plots the number of cash in 100 cash varies in nearly every locality. Your greengrocer, for instance, will ask 120 cash for a dozen cabbages, knowing well that he will be lucky to get 100. But Mrs. Wang happens to be still more wide-awake, and she will only pay 80 and call it 100. And as a sub-sub-plot perhaps 30 cash of that 80 will be counterfeit coin. For counterfeit coin appear to be legal tender, although their purchasing power is not so great.

A thorough reform of the nation's finance was one of the most urgent measures with which the new regime had to deal. But under the existing chaotic conditions it has so far been found impossible. Unless matters mend very speedily some form of foreign



IN A WORKSHOP THAT BRINGS FAME TO TIENTSIN

The beautiful multi-hued carpets of Tientsin are well known in the East and in the West. This peep behind the scenes discloses the indefatigable carpet-maker at his artistic work, surrounded by lengths of coloured wools

Photo, B. T. Pridoux

intervention and financial administration will become inevitable. A noteworthy example of complete success in this direction is found in the Chinese Maritime Customs, with which the name of Sir Robert Hart will ever be honourably



THE WOMAN AT THE WHEEL

Her nimble fingers twist the yarn into threads as the automatic movement of her feet causes the revolution of the wheel. All the large import of Indian yarn, besides that locally manufactured, is worked into cloth by the Chinese housewives, and four-fifths of the clothing of the lower classes is supplied by this domestic industry. The spinning and weaving of cotton still remain the handiwork of women, for machinery has not yet superseded the primitive processes common to the cloth-making Chinese

Photo, B. T. Prideaux

associated. China is blessed in that its people know little or no taxation. The revenue is derived principally from four sources—land tax; the customs; salt, a government monopoly; likin, a tax of one-tenth of 1 per cent. upon goods in inland transit. For the first time in China's history a domestic loan was floated in 1914, and this was almost immediately over-subscribed by half. Other similar loans have been equally successful.

It might be presumed that with the restoration of order in the country some more equitable method of collecting the land tax will be devised. But great revolutions have swept through China many times in her history, and the old system, or lack of one, still obtains. While in Great Britain tax-collectors and revenue officials are paid government employees, the exact opposite holds good in China. For there, if a man wants to make money, without being over-squeamish as to his methods, he pays a government representative cash

down and a yearly commission for the privilege of tax-collecting. Thereupon, since the post carries no salary, he sets himself to squeezing as much as he can out of the unlucky tax-payers in his district, though taking care always to keep within the letter of the law. With the spirit he is not concerned. Here is a case of squeeze working upwards from the bottom, an interesting comparison with the public lighting case quoted where it works downwards from the top. One may infer that the officials in each successive grade owe their appointments to the amount of money they are prepared to expend in purchase of them.

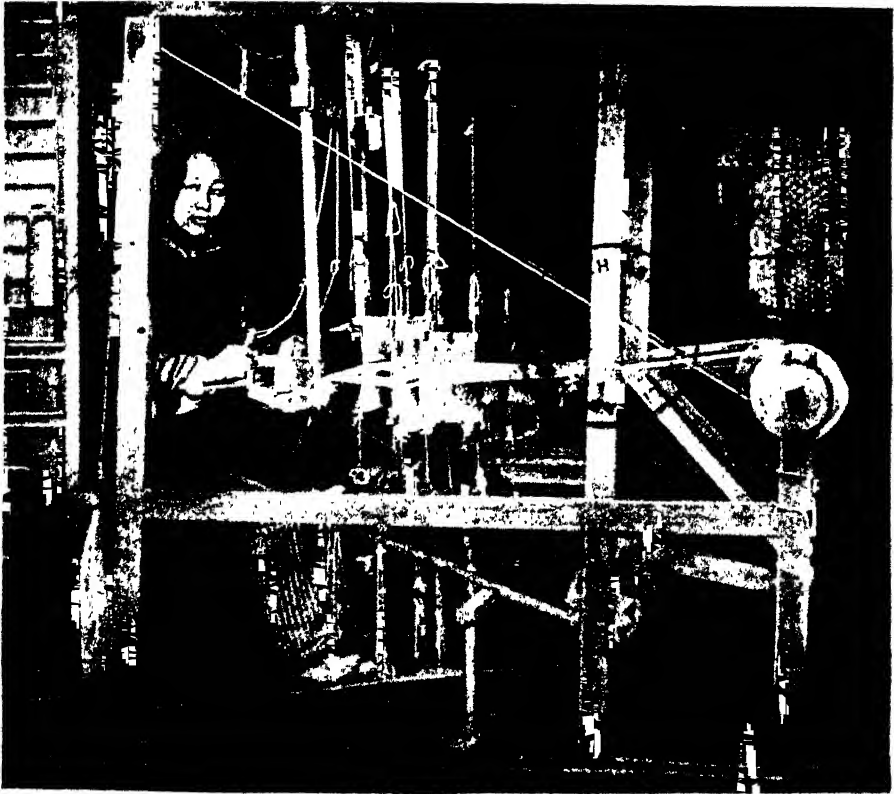
As regards the private finance of the people, everybody, save the officials and other well-to-do persons, seems to live in a chronic state of poverty. Everybody borrows and everybody lends. The possibility of this apparent contradiction will be clear when it is remarked that directly a man finds himself the lucky possessor of a spare

CHINA & THE CHINESE

If or so he at once looks round for someone to whom he can lend it, and at a good rate of interest. There are no savings banks, and it is rather doubtful if a Chinese would trust them if there were. He cannot hoard it away, first, because there would be nowhere in his house to put it (though he might dig a hole in his field), and, secondly, because, everyone knowing that he had it, his neighbours would be making inquiries.

In setting out to give a bird's-eye view of a country and its people, some description of its form of government is obviously desirable. But the writer frankly confesses his inability to give even the barest intelligible outline of present-day conditions in China without first giving a résumé of the course of events since about 1908. And this is not

possible here. There exists no central government in China today. Further, it is the almost unanimous opinion of all the leading Chinese in the country, whether merchants or bankers, scholars or patriotic officials, that there exists in the country no creative force strong enough to secure such a government, and that in foreign intervention only can salvation be found. To quote the "North China Herald": "Chinese officialdom under the so-called democracy has become more irresponsible and more flagrantly venal than ever before. Its special activities have been directed to the business of recruiting private forces with public money, and of selling the power thus acquired to the highest bidder." It is squeeze, the old curse of China, over again. There are two



WEAVING WARP AND WOOF ON AN OLD-WORLD LOOM

Her hands are never idle; she is plying her shuttle the livelong day, working the threads dexterously into cloth. Her garments are of cotton, the common material for dress in China. Later, she will carefully choose the dyes, for each colour has a significance of its own; blue is the favourite dye that colours a Chinese crowd, yellow is the colour of State, red of happiness, white of mourning.

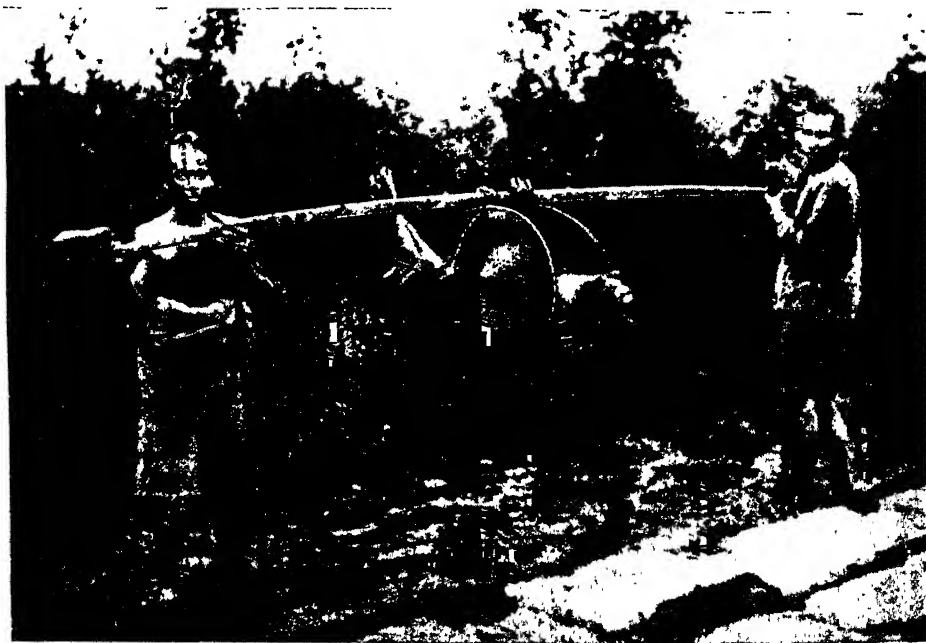
Photo, B. T. Pridoux



EGGS OF YESTERDAY KEEPING FRESH IN EARTHENWARE JARS

The diet of the Chinese has often been the cause of much merriment to Occidentals, and, undoubtedly, some Chinese have a sweet tooth for dogs and rats. The northern Chinese transport their eggs in earthenware crocks wrapped in oil paper, to keep them fresh; an unnecessary course it would appear, seeing that the Chinese do not object to eating eggs which are several years old

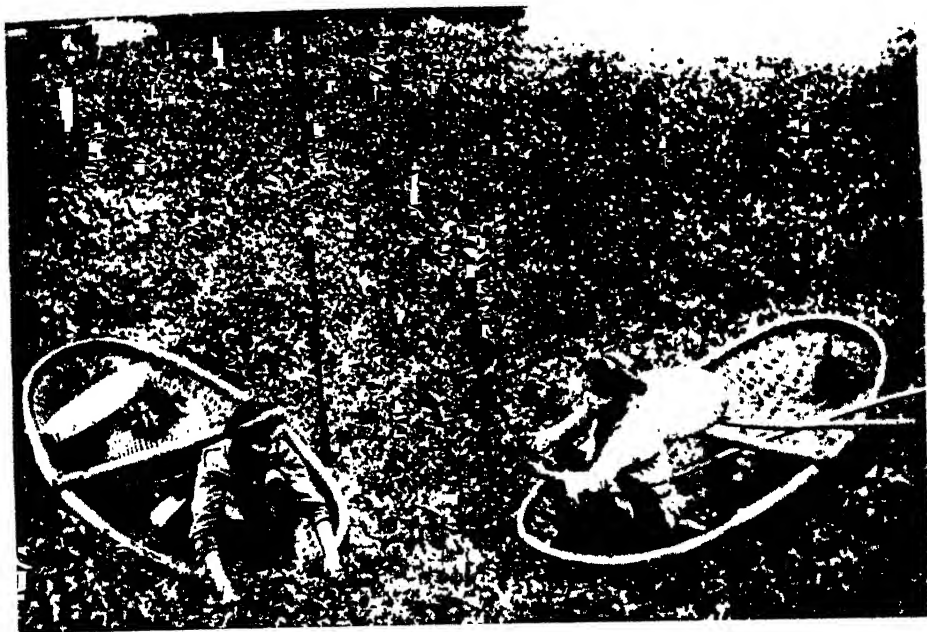
Photo, Kadel & Herbert



"THIS LITTLE PIG GOES TO MARKET" IN CHINESE FASHION

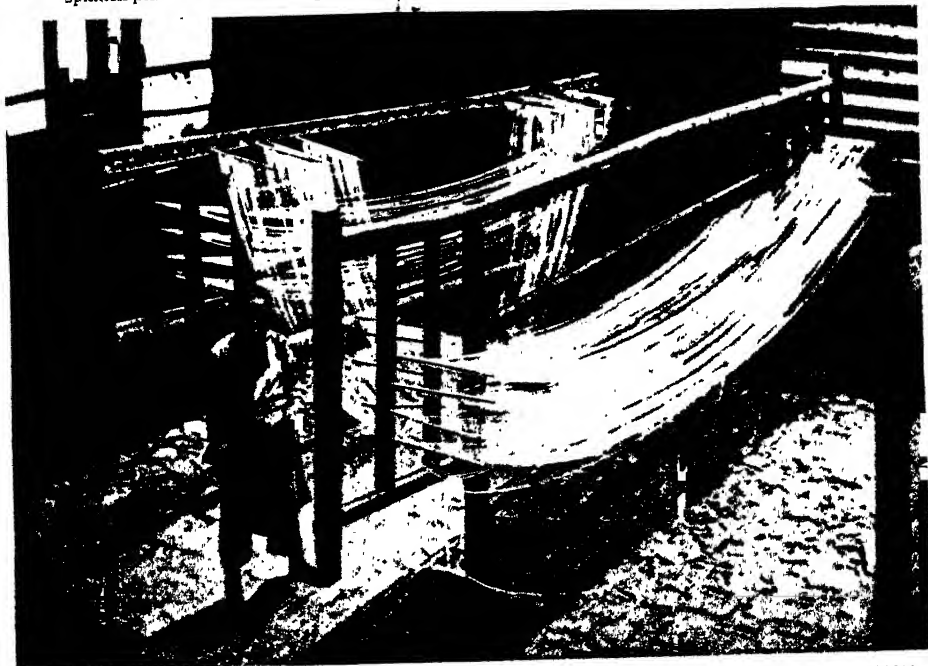
The back of a Chinese carries many a diversified load, coal, wood, town merchandise, country produce, pigs—as we see, and men, if they are rich enough to pay the fee demanded. Wide awake to the wayward nature of their present burden, these cautious countrymen have trussed him securely to a wicker sling, and in this undignified style King Porker will be borne in state to market

Photo, Maynard Owen Williams



QUAINT BASKET BOATS AFLOAT ON A GREEN SEA OF SPINACH

To people unaware of the labour involved in picking spinach the occupation of these women might seem to have a certain fascination. In little vessels of plaited bamboo, more like trays than boats, they move about the spinach beds in the marshes gathering the generous harvest of succulent leaves. The spinach plant is of eastern origin, and was introduced into Europe about the fifteenth century.



A NOVEL SCENE IN CHINA: YARDS OF SPAGHETTI DRYING IN THE SUN

A scene such as the above is common enough in Italy, where the making of spaghetti forms one of the large industries. In China, however, the sight of the long thin strands stretched out to dry in the sun, looking like threads on a loom, might present a puzzling picture to the casual observer unversed in the mysteries of its manufacture. When dry, spaghetti is broken into pieces and sold by weight.

Photos, Kadel & Herbert



A FAMILIAR FIGURE OF CHINESE STREET LIFE

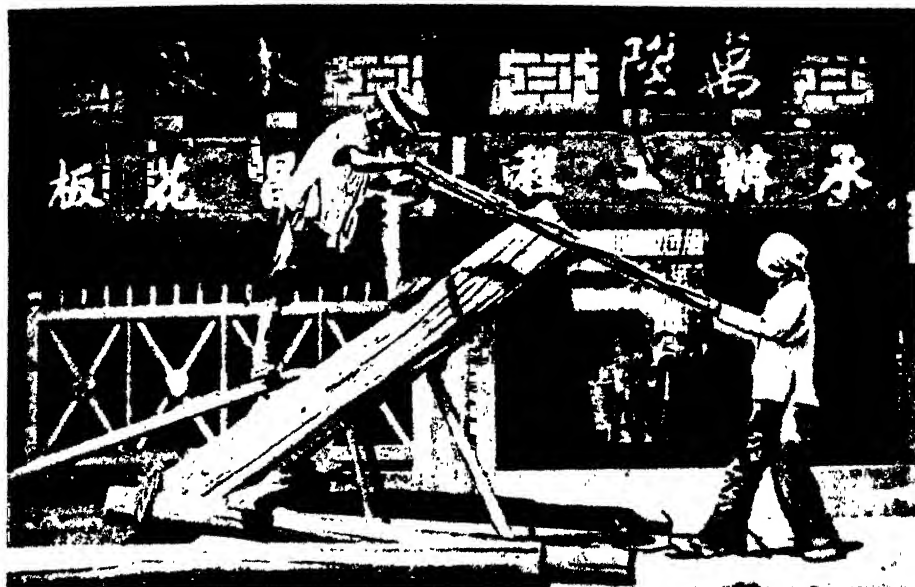
Not in a village street but beside a Peking highway is this barber carrying on his calling, stolidly regardless of the photographer, who, however, has excited the curiosity of the onlookers in the background. The barber, a very necessary member of the Chinese community, occupies a social standing similar to that of the actor, neither being allowed to enter the state examinations



TAKING PRECAUTIONS WITH A REFRACTORY CLIENT

The ingenious sling method of shoeing horses is practised in many countries, and the Chinese take no chances when shoeing a bad-tempered horse. The tight girths, the bound hind leg, and numerous ropes and knots savour of Inquisitorial measures, but the reclining position of the Bulgarian ox, page 1022, undergoing similar treatment, could scarcely prove to be more comfortable

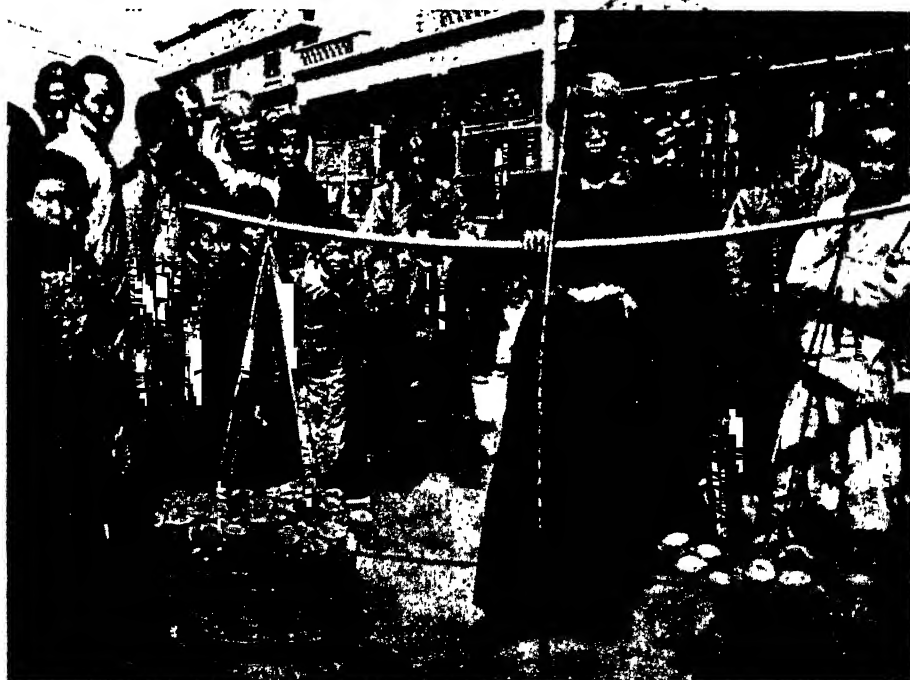
Photo, Camera Craft, Peking



WORKERS WHO "STOOP TO CONQUER"

At home and abroad the Chinese has almost a passion for work. Ever ready to sell his labour for a price, he is patient, docile, and temperate. In China itself the carpenter would seem to have an advantage over many of his fellows, for wood and bamboo are chiefly used in house construction, but the Chinese sawmill, as shown in the photograph, is run on methods of a rather crude kind

Photo, Camera Craft, Peking



HAWKER OF ARTIFICIAL FLOWERS HAND-CARVED FROM VEGETABLES

This photograph adequately proves beyond further doubt that the Chinese do not all look alike and do not all wear pigtails. It likewise serves to illustrate the truism that "human nature is much the same the world over," for no sooner was the camera fixed to "snap" this Peking pedlar with his quaint wares, than from street and shop came young and old, each anxious to satisfy his curiosity

Photo, Maynard Owen Williams



A SLUMP IN TRADE

The philosophy of this itinerant cobbler is worthy of the most imperturbable Stoic. Who may read his thoughts?

Photo, Maynard Owen Williams

shadowy forms of government in existence, one in the North at Peking, the other at Canton in the South. But more powerful, brooding heavily over the unfortunate peoples, are the Tu Chüns, the governors of the provinces. Upon these men there is no check, from them there is no redress, for each is his own law and the executor thereof. If a whip was the implement wielded by the Manchus and their emperors, scorpions are now the fashion. Under the

Manchus there was some appeal to the Son of Heaven at Peking; now, indeed, are the heavens closed up and the parched land is in travail.

Yet to the sympathetic onlooker this would not be China were there not gleams of humour peeping through the murk. The two factions of North and South, although ever in dire straits for money, are ever at war with each other. One fine day the customs revenues came in, and, the customs control being in the North, the Peking treasury waxed fat. Whereupon came a plaintive embassy from the South. "We be of one blood, thou and I," said the South, "suffer us a few crumbs from thy honourable, well-laden



TRADE IS LOOKING UP

The cobbler is one of the leading figures in Chinese street industries. He makes little distinction between day and night, and when not under the influence of the kindly god Morpheus is roaming through the streets in search of possible clients

Photo, J. C. Carter



ONE OF THE CRAFT TO WHICH JOHN BUNYAN BELONGED

With his outfit of files and hammers and portable stove, whereon to melt his solder, the itinerant tinker moves about the streets of Peking, pitching his temporary quarters wherever business is likely to be brisk. He may be seen in almost any shady corner out of the way of disturbing street traffic, pipe in mouth and surrounded by kettles and cans and pots and pans

Photo, A. Corbett-Smith

table." So North and South foregathered for a few brief hours in friendly converse, and South departed, bearing with them not a few golden crusts with which to feed their hungry soldiery and encourage them to further efforts against their friends of the North. Civil war is a lucrative form of sport, and it must not be permitted to lapse. Thus each side helps the other when there is any danger of peace by exhaustion.

At the outset it was suggested that the new republican party, having become imbued with the materialistic doctrines of the modern world, had in the process forgotten the essentially moral code of its own race; that it was seeking to graft a number of new foreign cuttings upon an old stock which was incapable of assimilating them. The fact is that a government by the people for the people is a conception which the Chinese

mind cannot grasp; it is wholly foreign to the Chinese social, national, and moral code. A democracy implies absence of responsibility, and responsibility in one form or another is the solid foundation upon which the domestic and national life of the Chinese is constructed. Ancestor-worship and filial piety are at the same time the origin and the outcome of this responsibility. Beginning with the family, the unit of Chinese life, and extending right up to the Emperor, who was himself answerable to Heaven, there existed a definite chain of responsibility, every link of which was clean-cut and tempered. To the end of their lives sons were responsible to their parents, parents to their sons; a family was responsible to the headman or tipao of the ward; the tipao to his immediate superior, and so in succession. And in that chain no man could plead that he did not

CHINA & THE CHINESE

know or could not possibly have learned of a subordinate's misdeeds. The inexorable reply came that it was his business to know, and that he must suffer accordingly. A murder may have been committed at midnight in a lonely village house. The tipao, in bed and asleep a mile away, could not possibly have known of the incident, but he was held responsible and suitably punished.

In every department of Chinese life the links of this chain are visible. In

may not be the actual evil-doer, but, being punished himself, it is morally certain that he will retaliate upon the guilty one.

It will thus be readily imagined how each and every man regarded the person of the Emperor himself, the fount of justice and wisdom, an ultimate court of appeal. Every rood of land in China, whether nominally in private ownership or no, was the Emperor's. He could take it as and when he willed,



BY YOUR LEAVE! TRUNDLING COTTON TO A GOODS STATION

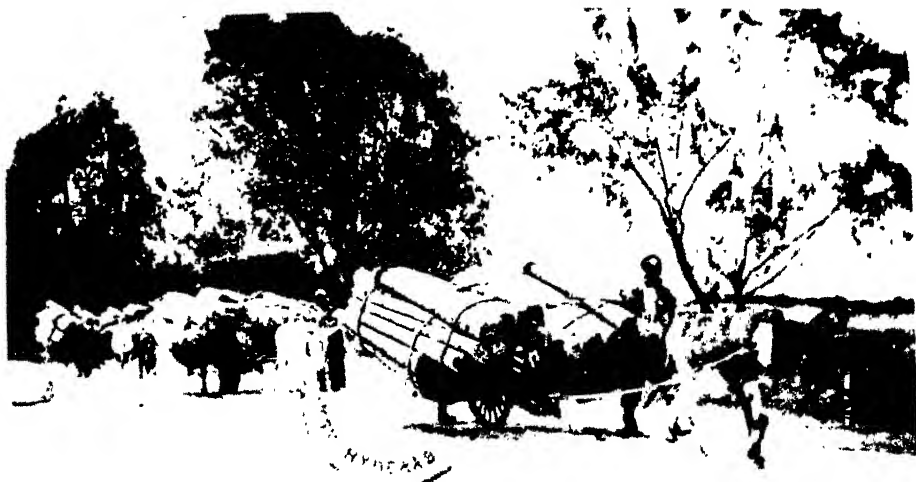
Viewed from behind, this Chinese coolie doing his daily job seems to be performing a feat of combined strength and balancing that would make the reputation of a professional strong man in a European music hall. Each of these bales of cotton weighs something like 500 lb., and thus loosely dumped on the barrow the centre of gravity of the load shifts at every step

Photo, Maynard Owen Williams

every group of industry or occupation there is always found some responsible head. The beggars of a city, the halt, the maimed and the blind, have their king whom residents and shopkeepers must always conciliate, lest a worse thing befall them. The pawnbrokers of a city have one responsible head. One of half a dozen coolies staggering under a load is their leader. A foreign resident wishing to engage a staff of servants engages but one "boy," who will secure and be wholly responsible for the remainder. Always is there someone upon whom responsibility lies. He

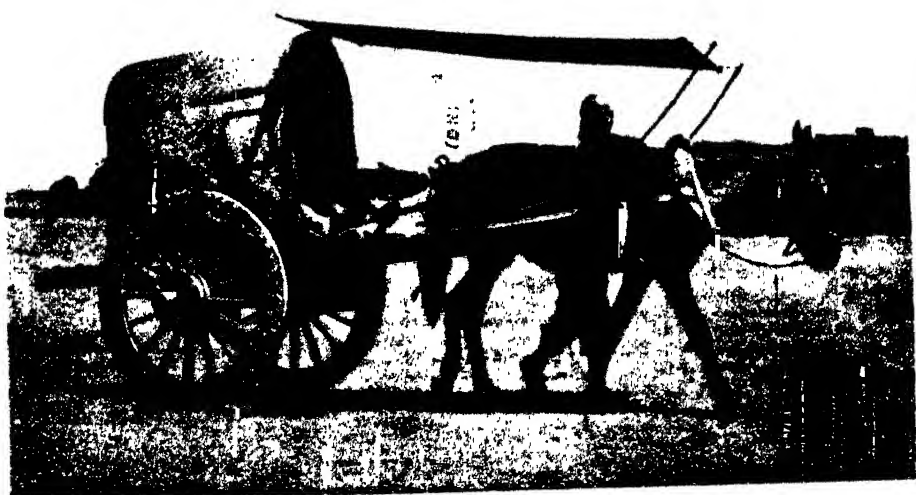
with or without compensation. There was the last responsible head. "How can the land belong to the people?" say the Chinese. "How can the people govern themselves? There must exist someone finally responsible." Add to this the Chinese indifference to public affairs, the desire only to be left alone, and we begin to understand how and why the Chinese democracy, with its numberless warring factions, has so far proved a signal failure.

Communications beget courtesies, and one of the most powerful obstacles to progress in China, whether internal or



FOUR-FOOTED FRIENDS TO THE RESCUE

Despite the daily performance of extraordinary feats of strength and endurance the wheelbarrow coolies could not undertake the transport of these enormous loads single-handed. The operation of a Chinese wheelbarrow is complicated and dangerous, many a broken rib and back resulting therefrom; the continual physical strain tells on these sturdy men and they are very quickly



UNLIKELY TO EXCEED ANY SPEED LIMIT: A PEKING CART

The Chinese two-wheeled cart is very decorative with its heavily embossed broad felloes and awning stretched from the tilt to horns up-curved from the shafts. As a vehicle for passengers it leaves much to be desired, being cramped for space, springless, and very slow—disadvantages wholly unappreciated by the natives, who have small concern for physical comfort and no regard for time

Photos, Camera Craft, Peking

CHINA & THE CHINESE

as a nation, has been, and is, lack of means of inter-communication. Railways are but in their infancy. In fact, in all the vast country there are in operation barely 7,000 miles of railways. The English Great Western system alone comprises 6,700 miles. Further con-

to Hankau. For a further 1,600 miles the river is navigable for small river steamers. The Grand Canal, joining Hang-chow and Tientsin and passing through four provinces, is about 850 miles in length.

It was not until 1896 that, by imperial decree, an all-China national post office was created. From that date this government department has gradually been extended and developed, and its increasing success may be attributed in great measure to the exercise of foreign advice and administration.

By far the most widespread occupation of the Chinese is agriculture. Small holdings and tiny farms cover the face of the country, and there is very little of the land that is not under cultivation. And in nothing is the genius of the Chinese more apparent. During the seasons when land-work is possible the story is of one long, grim struggle against heavy odds in the stubborn, difficult soil, the spells of drought, the numbing effect of poverty. But cheeriest of souls, ever looking to the bright side, somehow or other your Chinese wins through. It's dogged as does it. His economy of means and method is astonishing. With a prehistoric hand-plough and a primitive hoe he will secure results which many

a Western farmer with his modern implements might envy. Nothing is left to chance. But with the Chinese genius is something more than the capacity for taking infinite pains. He seems to possess some natural spiritual affinity with the soil which causes the earth to throb responsive to his lightest



ENGINE AND CHAUFFEUR TOO

Wheelbarrows are the cabs of the Chinese, and are not uncomfortable vehicles for a short journey. As a rule the seats are covered with red cloths, but the wheelbarrow-men substitute blue cloths on occasions of national mourning as formerly, for example, the death of the Emperor. Actuated by the same punctilio, European drivers put a crape bow on their whip

Photo, Maynard Owen Williams

struction in the near future upon any adequate scale is very problematical.

The waterways form the great media of transit in China: the two mighty rivers, Yang-tse-Kiang and Hwang-ho, the Grand Canal, and lesser waterways. For close upon 600 miles from its mouth a battleship can steam up the Yang-tse



MULETEERS AND MULE-LITTERS ON THE OUTSKIRTS OF PEKING

In the big Tartar city the traveller has no difficulty in obtaining a conveyance—autos, rickshaws, canopied carts, wheelbarrows, sedan-chairs, mule-litters, all are eagerly placed at his disposal. On account of their height and toughness mules are chiefly employed by litter-owners, but when not available their place is taken by a smaller equine hybrid, neither horse nor mule, nor yet ass

Photo, Camera Craft, Peking



SMALL FACTORY GIRLS OFF TO BUSINESS BY THE WORKMEN'S TRAIN

They are employed in a cotton mill and have chartered a wheelbarrow to take them to their work. The joylessness of their life is reflected in their faces. Only one of them evinces any trace of unshared interest in the photographer securing a picture of their—to him unfamiliar—mode of progression. The others observe him with an almost apathetic expression

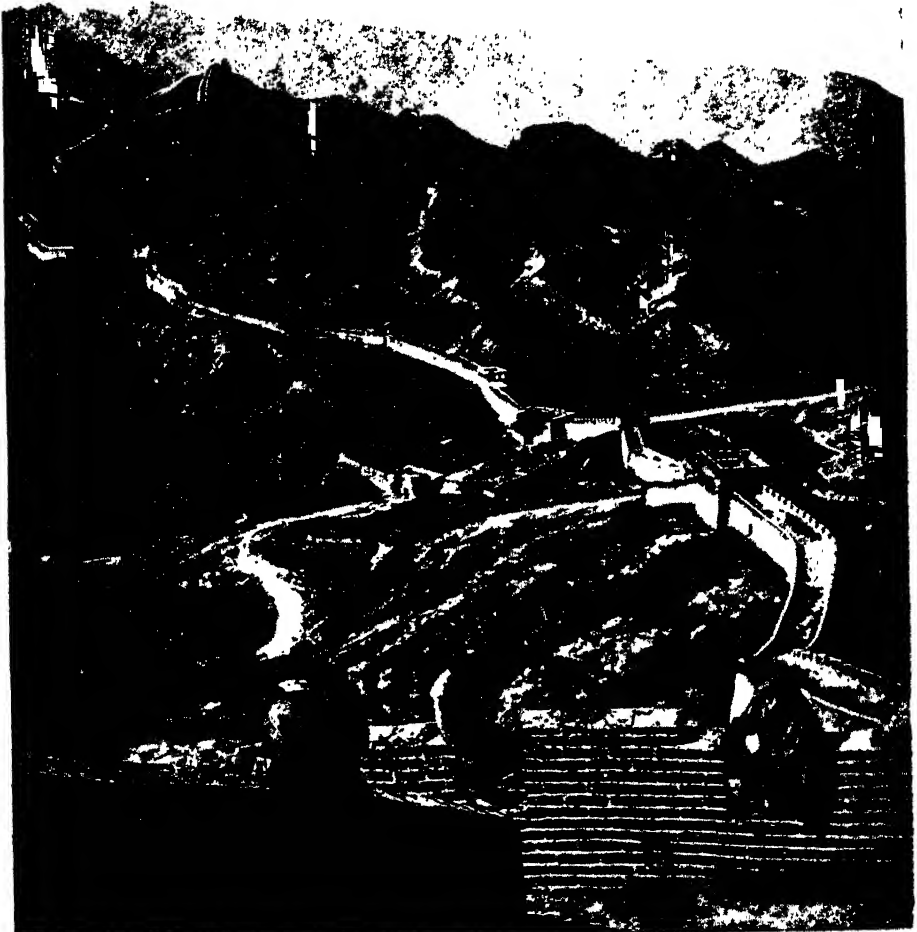
Photo, J. G. Carter

CHINA & THE CHINESE

touch. Take your farmer direct from his paddy-fields of rice or bean-fields and set him down in a gracious flower-garden among blossoms of the existence of which he never dreamed. He will make initial mistakes, but very soon, with the unerring adaptability of his race, he will come to tend each single flower as though it were a child, and take pride in doing so.

But the Chinese farmer turns readily to a score of other occupations when

necessity drives and the land does not call him. In one place you will find him as a deep-sea fisherman, in another a dockside porter. The mountain passes know him as a sure-footed, unerring guide, the city knows him as a sturdy bearer. Nor do his women-folk lag behind in the heavy toil of field work, the portering of the manure, the tending and gathering of the rice crops. And all, men and women, will exist, and even thrive, upon the merest pittance



ONE OF THE WONDERS OF THE WORLD: CHINA'S GREAT WALL

Built over two hundred years before the Christian era, and reconstructed once or twice, the Great Wall winds its way like some great snake for some 1,400 miles along the northern border of the old empire to lose itself in the west. Built as a defence against Tartar hordes, and rising supreme above all obstacles, it is so thick that two carriages can be driven abreast on its rampart

Photo, H. C. White & Co.

of food—a handful of rice, a salted turnip, sweet potatoes, a scrap of fish, perhaps

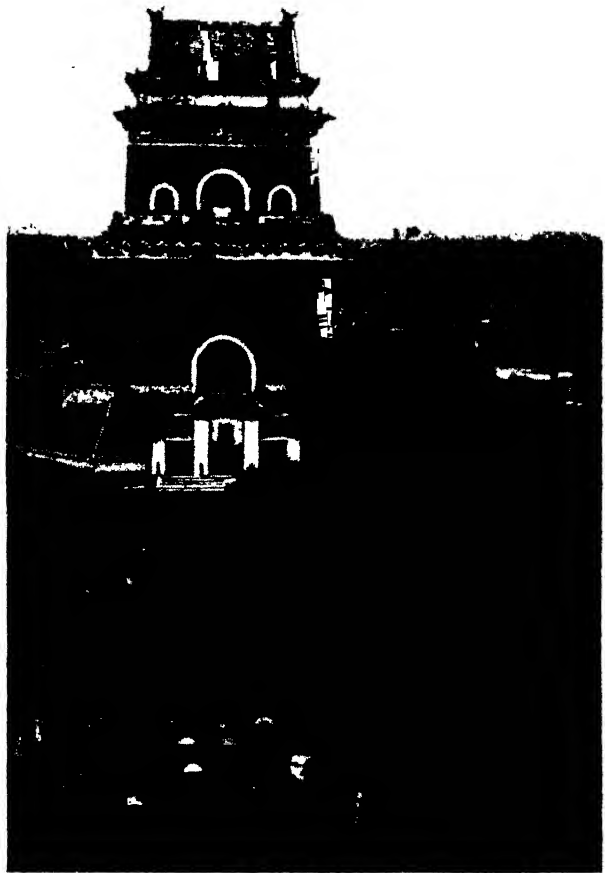
So practical in agriculture, the Chinese are most impractical in afforestation, of the science of which they know nothing. The great forests of China are now almost entirely destroyed, and little has been done to replace the loss. In fact, China has now to import as much timber as formerly could be produced within her own borders to satisfy all needs as well as export purposes.

In agriculture the chief products are silk, rice, tea, cotton, beans and bean-cake. The silk industry is said to be 4,000 years old, and until the latter half of the nineteenth century China supplied half the silk trade of the world. In the tea industry, as in silk and many other products, China suffers increasingly from her rigid adherence to her old conservative methods and from lack of scientific application. Her wealth, mineral and agricultural, is boundless, her capabilities are unlimited. If only from sentimental reasons, lovers of China and her people would view with deep regret an industrial revolution and the consequent inevitable exploitation of the country by foreigners, but in the world of men stronger nations will certainly take by foul means what they cannot secure by fair, and China must needs look to herself.

The one exception in China's decreasing production is the soya bean and its derivatives. In 1907 the value of the bean exports approximated £600,000; in 1917 it was over £13,000,000. Here

are some of the uses to which the bean is put—as foodstuff in margarine, as a fertiliser, as a sauce and a paste, an illuminant, a lubricant in making water-proof cloth, Chinese lanterns and umbrellas, a substitute for coffee-beans, animal food and the fattening of live stock, a table vegetable, the making of sweets and confectionery, varnish, printing-ink. And last, but not least in a country like China, the scent from a field of bean-blossom is deliciously fragrant.

Opium would require a volume to itself. The cult of the poppy has been



"WATCHMAN, WHAT OF THE NIGHT?"

A plain brick structure about 100 feet high, this tower in the Tartar City, Peking, contains a massive bell on which a watchman strikes the four watches into which the night is divided. Simultaneously on the Drum Tower, a hundred yards away, a mighty drum is beaten

Photo, A. Corbett-Smith

making history in China for centuries. One of the most valuable of medicines known to man, it is at the same time a deadly moral and physical poison. In 1906 an imperial decree ordered the beginning of the end of opium smoking in China and of poppy planting, and in due course the republican government confirmed the decree; but, in spite of this, opium smuggling is conducted with that facility which only official connivance, active or passive, can give.

Inability to Apply Science

Of China's mineral resources coal comes first, the estimated production at present being something like 19,000,000 tons. In iron ore China is certainly exceedingly rich, but its production, or rather lack of production, illustrates only too forcibly the hampering effect of Chinese methods. Tin, copper, and antimony are other important mineral products.

In science the Chinese, like other Eastern nations, have little or nothing to their account. Practical in many ways, they are certainly not scientific. They may stumble upon some invention or scientific truth, as they have often done, but no attempt at development is ever made. Printing by wooden blocks was in use in China about A.D. 200, and movable type seems to have been invented there about 800 years later, but it is only since the latter half of the nineteenth century that the latter method has begun to supersede the former. The magnetic compass was known in China about 1000 B.C.; an explosive powder for crackers before the Christian era.

Lack of Initiative

But in the use of scientific appliances the Chinese always recur to the formula: "What was good enough in 100 B.C., is 2,000 years better now." And as labour is absurdly cheap and unlimited in quantity, they cannot see why it should not be utilised. Thus when they were compelled to erect a memorial arch (a very simple structure) to the German, Von Kettler, who was murdered at the Siege of the Legations by the

Boxers, the contractors must needs erect a complicated staging of some 17,000 bamboo poles, with 60,000 lb. of binding rope, just to hoist the stones in place.

Professor I. T. Headland, the American, has told about that clever Chinese toy, the diablo, a bamboo whistling top spun by two sticks and a piece of string, which he introduced into America. The toy seems to have been the work of an old Chinese in Peking. For thirty odd years he had been making the tops during the mornings and selling them in the afternoons. His only tools were a saw, a knife, and a piece of sand-paper. Perfectly content, it never occurred to him, as Professor Headland says, to invent a simple machine to do the work and to open even a small factory. And that is absolutely typical of the race.

Architecture and Colour Symbolism

The strongest impression which the traveller in China will probably receive from Chinese architecture, whether religious, official, or domestic, is a sense of monotony. And, with certain notable exceptions, it undoubtedly is monotonous. It would almost seem that, ages ago, one particular model type was decided upon, and that this has guided Chinese architects and builders ever since. A view of Peking will illustrate the low height to which houses and shops are built. Indeed, Chinese buildings are rarely of more than one storey. If necessary, an extension is made horizontally, not vertically by additional storeys. It is to the design of the roof, the principal feature, that the architect devotes his greatest care, and effects of rare beauty in carving and colour combinations, denoting the owner's rank or position, are frequently produced. To gain additional effect a second roof, even a third, is often superimposed. The Temple of Heaven at Peking is a particularly beautiful specimen of these various features. The base upon which the temple stands is of pure white marble, delicately carved. The three roofs are of deep cobalt blue glazed tiles; the underneath

CHINESE SCENES

In Temple & Town



Reclining in slippered ease against a shutter, this Shanghai elderly gentleman of Shanghai peruses his paper in the afternoon.

Photo, J. C. Currier



Austere dignity invests the high priest of the Temple of the Lamas at Peking, one of the richest religious foundations in the city



"The Jewel of the Lamas. Amen." His turning mill uncoils paper strips bearing invocations of his prayer, thus offered by the Lama

Picture, El. P. M. M. M. M.



*From the resinous joss-sticks burned as symbols of devotion,
the Buddhist priest a fragrant incense rises to heaven.*

Photo: D. T. Phillips

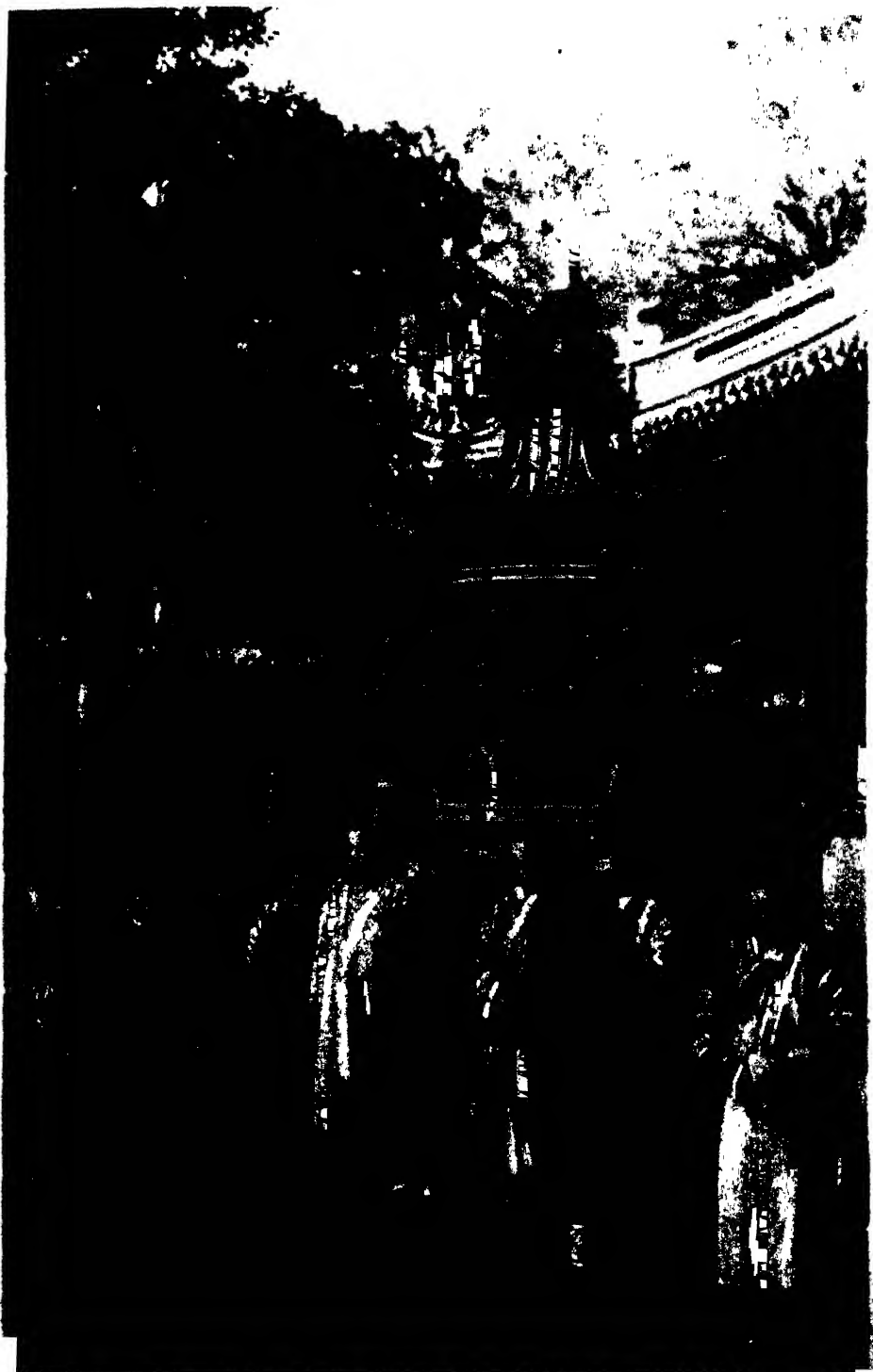


While his white-coated partner roars invitations to the crowd to watch the miracle, the half-naked juggler swallows the naked sword



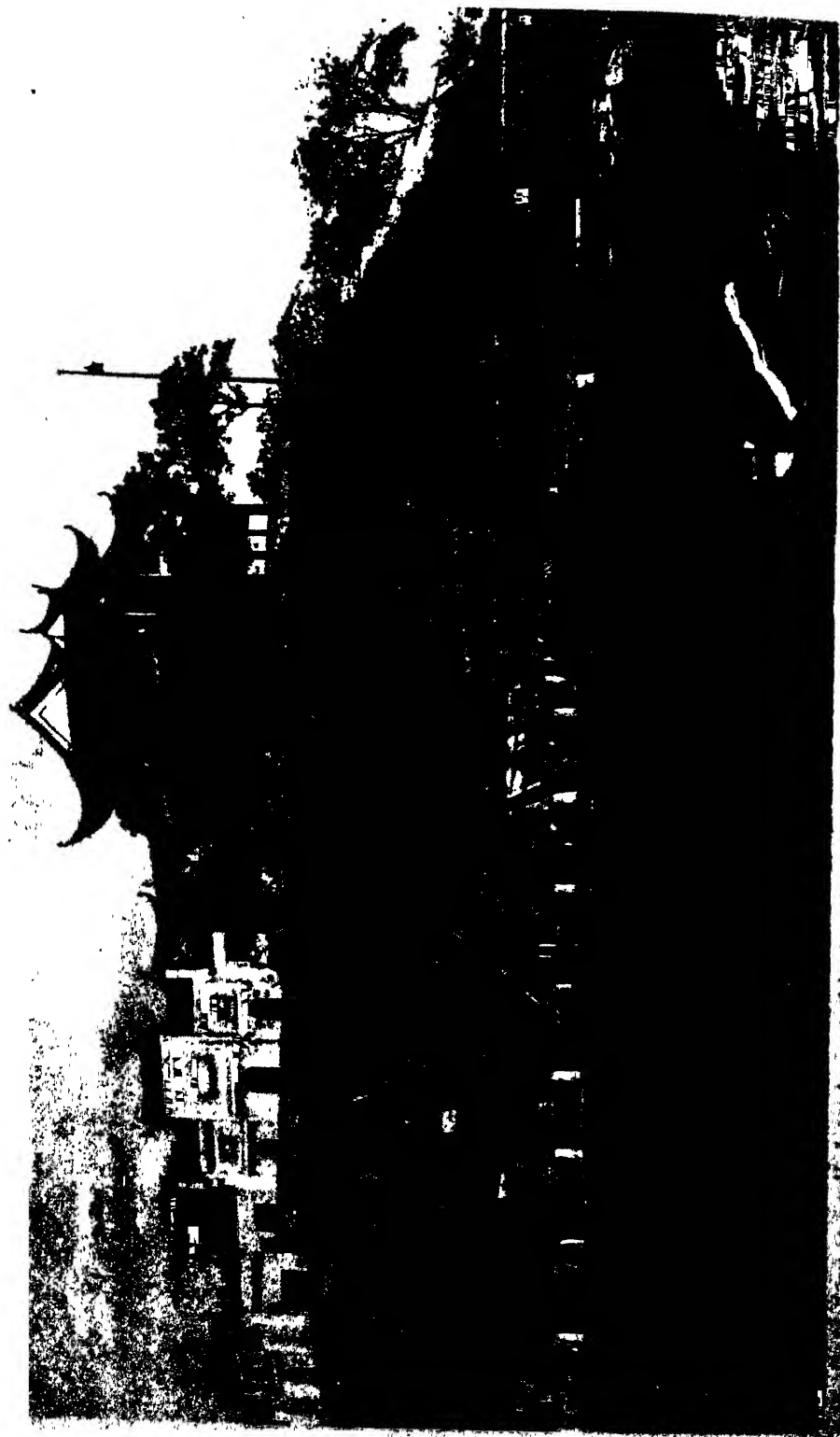
In any Chinese street entertainers can be seen giving a show. Story-tellers, jugglers, and acrobats always have appreciative audiences

Photos, *J. C. Carter

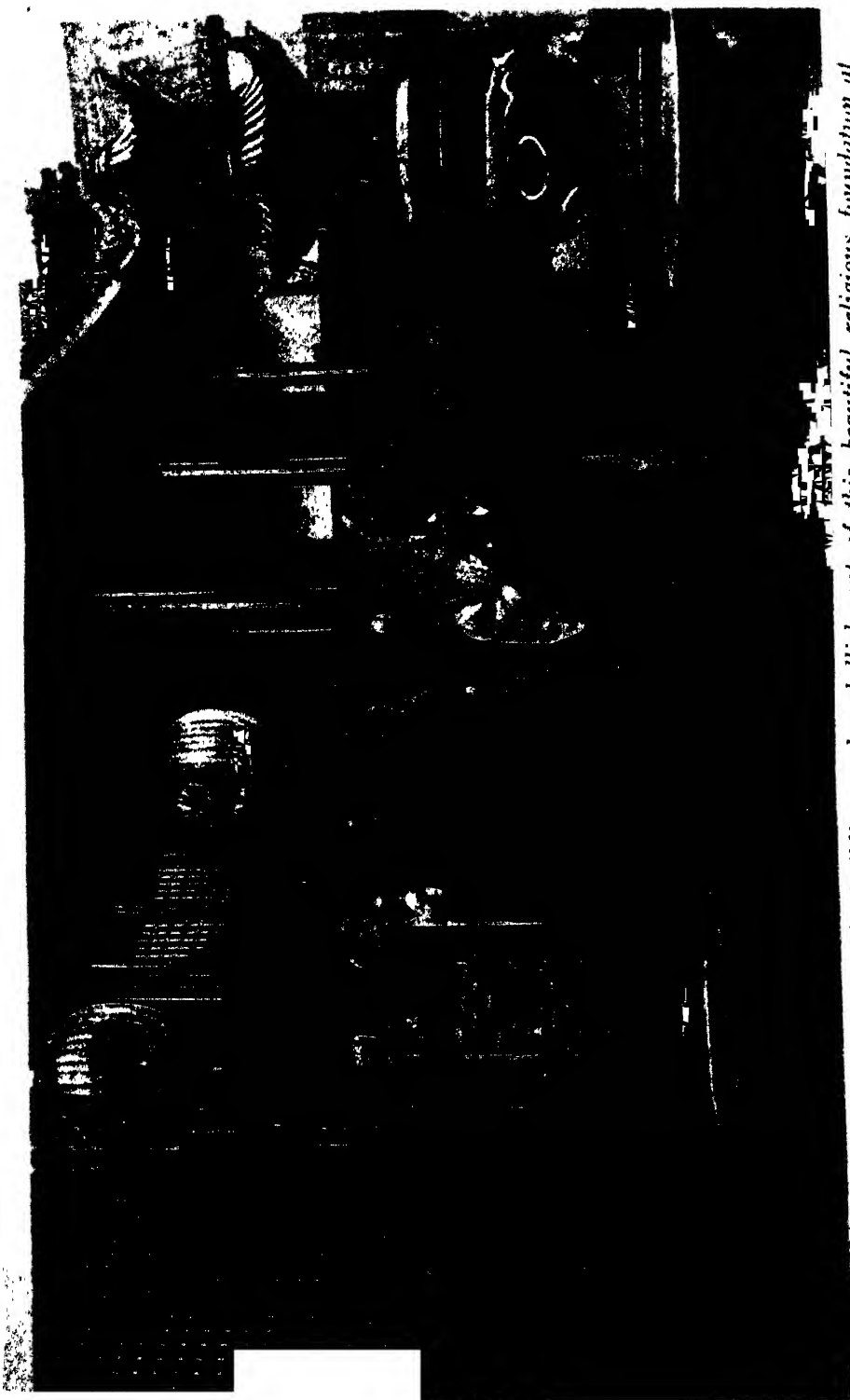


Monasteries, splendid with gilded images and carving, stand on the island of Pu T'o, whereon, as on Iona of old, only monks live.

Photo. Maynard Owen Williams



When a small lantern is placed on the roof of the house is a picturesque landmark for boatmen on the Yang-tse-Kiang. The lantern is placed on the roof of the house, and the high-lying lamp gives a guiding light by night.



They found the money for the building and embellishment of this beautiful religious foundation at the expense of the inmates, and their inmates pious funds

Photo. B. T. Pridmore



*Much toil and care have graven deep lines on her face but, peace
fills her heart as her gnarled hands hold her son's son on her knee*

Photo, B. T. Prideaux

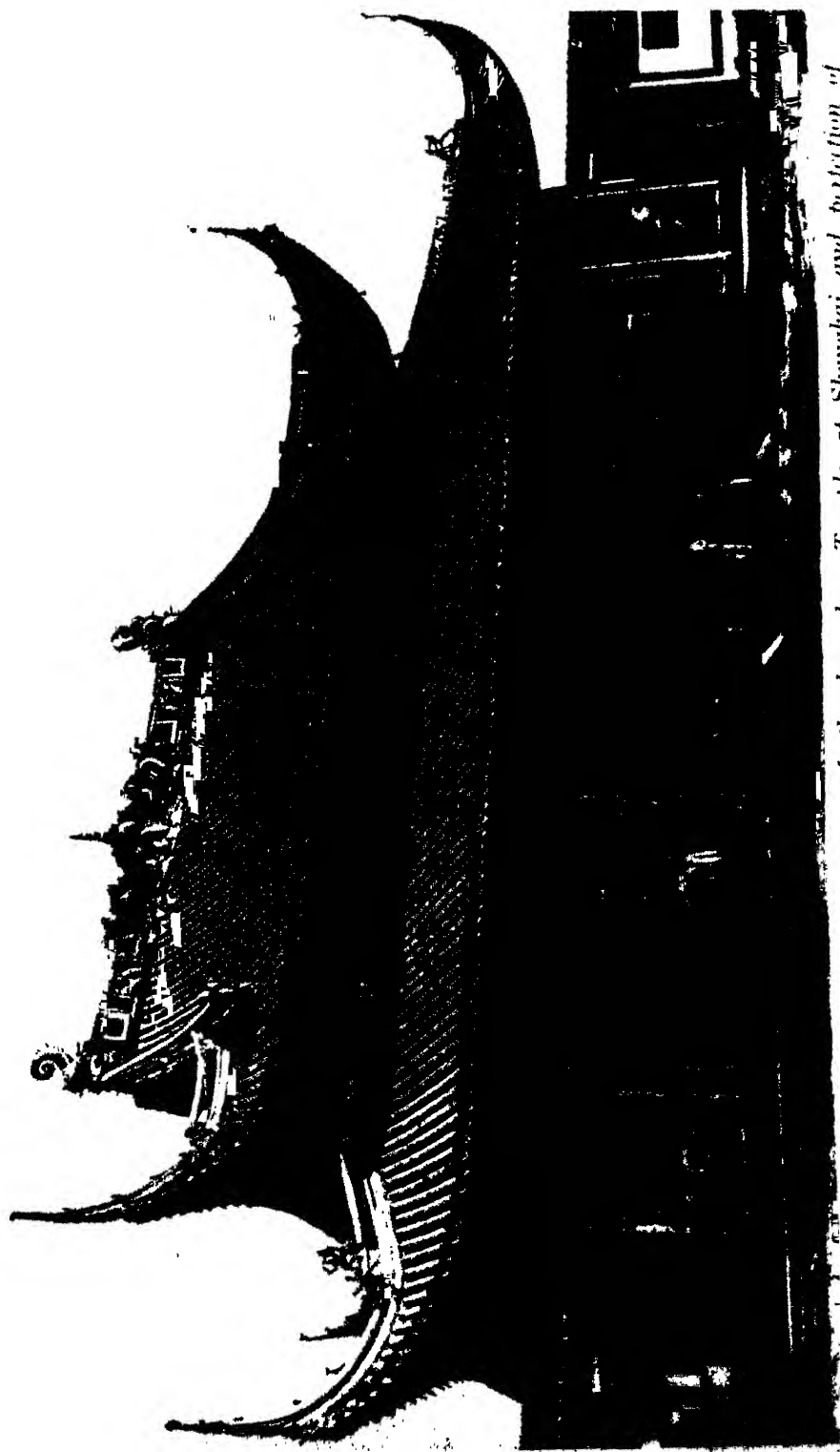


*Smoking is his favourite pastime, tea his favourite beverage, and thus
equipped with pipe and pot the Chinese is contentment incarnate*

Photo, Camera Craft, Peking



Peculiar to China are the provincial Examination Halls, such as this at Honan. Enclosed within walls a wide avenue is flanked by cells in one of which each candidate is immured for nine days' anxious work



Grace of outline distinguishes the architecture of the Lung-hua Temple at Shanghai and perfection of detail its ornamentation, in which dragons, human figures, and conventional arabesques appear



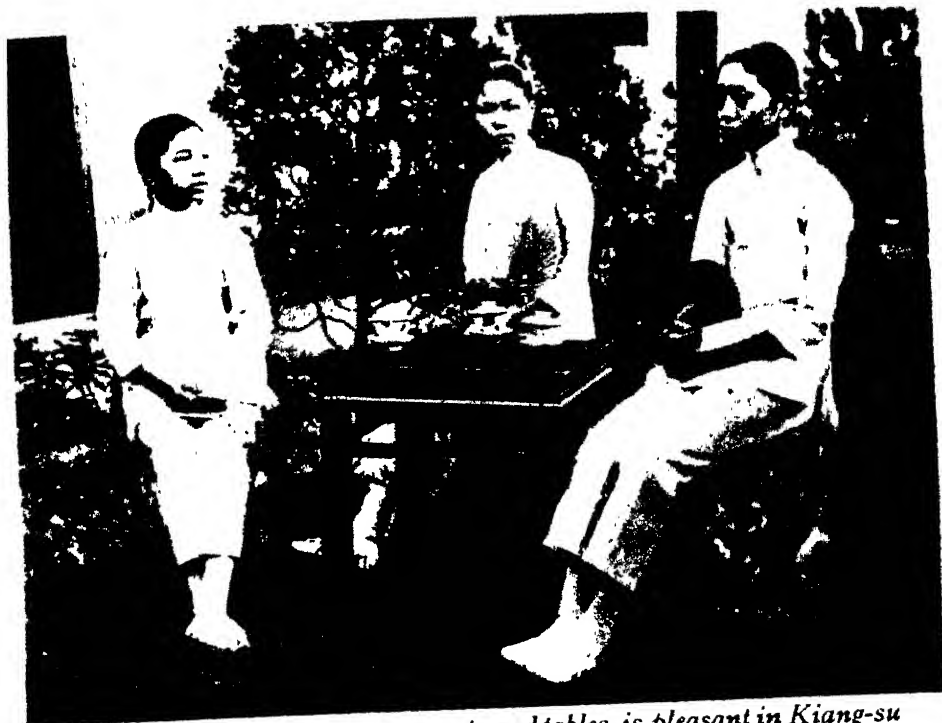
Strings of solemn silent-footed camels continually pass under Peking's walls, a deep-toned bell jangling from the leader's shaggy neck

Photo, Camera Craft, Peking



From Siberia this caravan has padded its arid way. The camels seem to lift their heads in pride as they enter the gate of Peking

Photo, A. Corbett-Smith



Tea in the garden, with pretty seats and tables, is pleasant in Kiang-su when girls wear cool, white clothes, and have untortured feet

Photo, E. C. Prideaux



Although—perhaps, alas! because—they have no parents, these orphans at Changsha are merry souls prancing by with their books

Photo, Maynard Owen Williams



*Outside Tientsin stretches a vast Chinese necropolis, the graves
—mounds of earth overlaid with limestone—looking like anthills*



*Prettier and more peaceful is this grass-grown cemetery at Fengtu-hsien
on the Yangtze-Kiang, where white goats browse beneath the trees*

Photo, Maynard Owen Williams



So narrow that no wheeled traffic can pass along it, this street of Kiu-kiang resembles hundreds in China in its brilliant decoration.

Photo, H. I. Morrison



Forests of poles mask the main approach to the native quarter of Hankau—scaffolds on which the houses are built, and masts of boats that ply on the turbid river whence crowds swarm up the broad stairway

portions are of glazed tiles, variously green, blue, and pale mauve. The pattern at the top is golden. It may be

that in all Chinese rites colour and form is of the first importance. At the annual sacrifices at this temple blue predominates. The sacrificial vessels are of blue porcelain, the robes worn are of blue brocade, and the light filtering through special blinds is also blue. Peking, as befits the capital city, is very rich in Chinese architecture at its best, and within the Imperial Summer Palace the visitor will find a treasure-house of beautiful specimens, some 200 distinct buildings.

We must not, however, leave the subject without mention of two wonders, not merely of China, but of the world. The first is the Pai Tai, the immense altar which stands open to the sky hard by the Temple of Heaven. The second is the Great Wall of China. No verbal description, no pictures, can convey any conception of the nobility and grandeur of these two marvellous works of man.

Two Wonders of the World

The vision of the Taj Mahal at Agra in all its peerless, unearthly beauty, will bring tears to the eyes for the wonder of it; but to come suddenly, as one does, before the Pai Tai in sunlight or moonlight, or to view for the first time a little portion of the Great Wall, is to remain stricken with awe and reverence. Nor does that sense of awe vanish with familiarity. The Pai Tai is of white marble, 210 feet across, built in three tiers of twenty-seven steps to each. But why attempt a description?

The Great Wall—and if China had nothing else for the visitor this alone would repay the journey—was begun about 220 B.C. Rising from the eastern sea at Shanhaikuan, it is carried, bordering the northern edge of the old empire, for 1,400 miles, until at last it loses itself in a desert of desolation and nothingness in the far western interior. One thousand four hundred miles of a primeval stone rampart, as fresh to-day over its greater part as the day of its construction; so thick that two carriages can be driven abreast on the

rampart. And this, though it has endured a time of 2,000 years, offers no resistance but a continuous and unobstructed and seemingly effortless ascent. One may stand up in the middle of a deep ravine, and with the Wall on one side dip down from one's feet to the bottom of the pass; turn it as it will, and look to the ascent opposite, and at the moment where it vanishes over the crest, and then in another world glimpse it as it falls and rises up and over the distant mountain peaks until it vanishes in a shroud of mist.

Man's Handiwork and Nature's

The mountain gorges of Norway are grander, but it is the combination of man's handiwork with nature's that produces so overwhelming an effect. They say that every third able-bodied man in the empire was made to labour in the building; that dilatory workmen were promptly immured in the masonry. The legends about the Great Wall are endless; but the legends matter not, for the stupendous achievement stands, the wonder of the world.

To appreciate the pictorial art of the Chinese school, if so it may be termed, it is necessary to forget all that one has ever seen or learned of the great European schools, old and modern, and to approach the Chinese solely from its own points of view, which are absolutely different from the Western. It is, for instance, invidious to set side by side equestrian portraits by Velazquez and Choo Yung, and to remark upon the "quaint curiosity" of the latter.

Chinese Pictorial Art

Save that each painting depicts a horse and its rider the Western and Eastern pictorial conceptions of such a subject are totally distinct. The effects in painting to which we are accustomed, the light and shade, the modelling, the foreshortening, the attention to anatomy, all these are foreign to the Chinese art. Some high Chinese officials, upon receiving some portraits of the British school sent to them by George III., asked quite seriously whether English men and women had one side of the face darker



ON THE GREAT BLACK WAY THAT TRAVERSES THE CITY OF PEKING

Straight as an arrow runs the road till it vanishes from sight in the direction of Coal Hill, whose tree-girt slopes dominate the background. The absence of heavy traffic is due to the road being merely a mass of deep, black sand which renders the progress of heavy carts toilsome and laborious in the extreme. The houses and shops on either side are low, squat buildings rarely possessing more than two storeys

Photo, A. Corbett Smith

than the other. But if we can rigorously set aside our own established ideas and take Chinese pictures for what they are, looking to the beauty of line and draughtsmanship, the harmony of composition, the unity and symmetry of conception and execution, the attention to detail, the delicacy of colouring, the art amateur will find in Chinese art a wealth of interest. "Chinese painters are, first of all, draughtsmen and calligraphists." In fact, the Chinese rate a fine writer of their script as higher than an artist. Originally the Chinese written language was merely actual pictures of the objects themselves, and it is from such pictures that through the centuries their pictorial art and modern script developed. In landscape work the Chinese particularly excel, and one of the finest specimens in existence may be seen in the British Museum, a roll painting on silk seventeen feet long by Chao Mêng-fu (about A.D. 1300). Animals, birds, insects, and flowers have also always been favourite subjects in which Chinese

artists have excelled. Sad to tell, pictorial art in China began to languish about the years 1640-1660, and in the twentieth century there appear to be no painters at all of any particular note.

It seems at first sight curious that so little is generally known about Chinese art in all its varied forms and perfection of design and workmanship. The truth is that the European market has been so flooded with those tawdry, meretricious products of Japan specially manufactured for that market, that the



FOLKS WHOSE WORK IS NEVER DONE

Farmers in China are unsurpassably industrious. For the most part they are small peasant proprietors, very poor, but at least independent. Their implements are of the rudest, like this wooden fork for raking up and spreading manure

Photo, Camera Craft, Peking

incomparably more beautiful art of the Chinese has found but few loopholes of entry. Here we can do no more than enumerate some of the more important varieties in the hope that the reader may one day find the leisure and opportunity for a practical acquaintance: pottery and porcelain; cloisonné and enamelling; woven silks, embroidery, and carpets; carvings in ivory, jade, etc.; lacquer; bronzes; furniture. Nor does the artistic excellence of the Chinese craftsmen belong only



A HAUNT OF ANCIENT PEACE IN THE HEART OF HONAN

It would be hard to find a greater contrast to the congested city and river life of China than this sylvan retreat. The Buddhist pavilion in the centre displays that attention to roof construction that is the chief feature of Chinese architecture. To the Western eye these upturned roofs appeal by their grace, to the Chinese they form an effective safeguard against the evil spirits of the air

to the past. It is a living thing to-day if the art-lover will seek for it with care and appreciation. The Chinese are as ready to-day to devote years of patient and loving toil to the perfection of a single piece of art-work as they were centuries ago. To this the writer can bear personal testimony from the execution to his own commission of several exquisite pieces of carving and enamel work.

A point in friendly comparison between Chinese and Japanese may be suggested. While Chinese art is indubitably the more worthy, the Japanese as a people seem to possess a finer aesthetic sense, just as to-day Britain leads the world in the art of musical composition while

her people are far behind other nations in musical instinct and appreciation. It was to China that Japan originally owed nearly all her art, and only here and there can one trace any improved development. Japan and China (down the coast-line) are deluged to-day with the gaudy trash and machine-made shoddy of America and the West. The real China is rather ready to admit this stuff into its homes; the real Japan refuses. In the bedrooms and private apartments of the highest Chinese in the land, in the Imperial Palaces and other notable residences, there are to be seen in use ugly, trashy articles from modern Birmingham such as no Japanese peasant would tolerate for an instant. The



TAKING THEIR PLEASURES SADLY IN A FASHIONABLE SHANGHAI TEA-SHOP

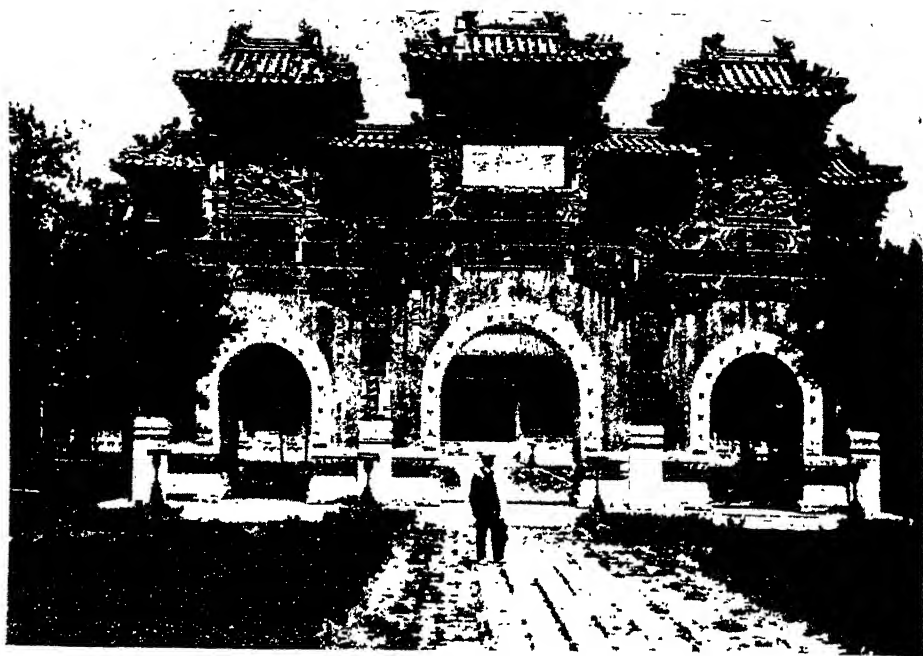
Tea-drinking in China is an undertaking not to be entered into in any spirit of light-hearted revelry. The Chinese consider themselves experts on niceties of blend and aroma, sampling their national beverage as critically as the Briton sips his port. The water-pipes on the table in the foreground are essential to the full enjoyment of the occasion

Photo, Underwood Press Service

well-to-do and cultured Chinese are apt sometimes to overload their rooms with a mass of lovely Chinese objets-d'art, where a Japanese will display to the best advantage a single beautiful thing, changing it perhaps each day.

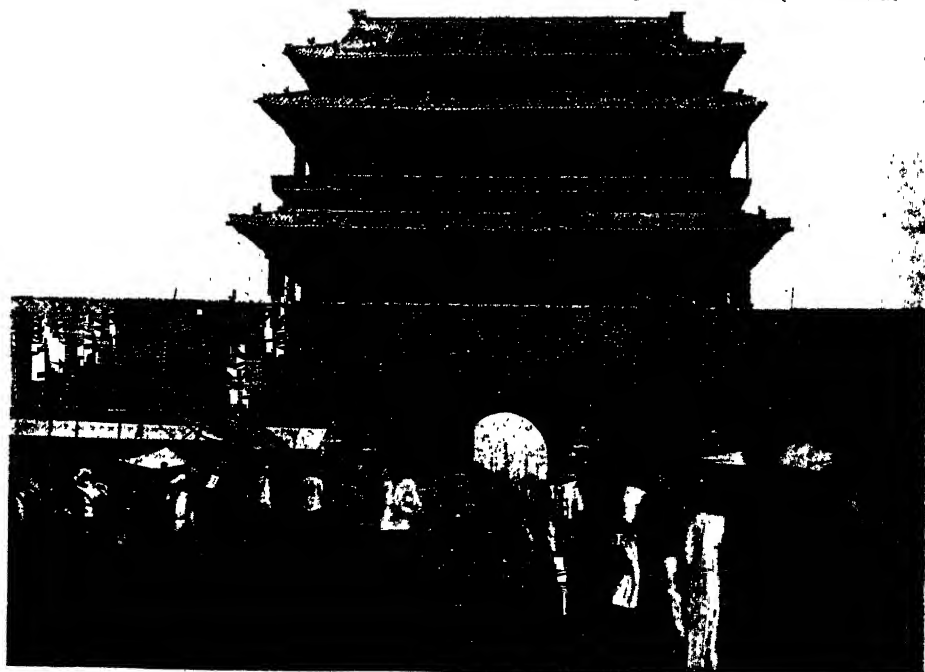
Chinese literature is of enormous proportions and embraces works upon wellnigh every subject, save strictly modern ones. About the year 1700 there was compiled a great national catalogue of the existing literature. This catalogue divides the literature under four heads: The Classics, together with dictionaries and commentaries thereon; histories; philosophy and the arts; poetry and belles-lettres. With the exception of a few collections of

Chinese poetry, one or two works like the famous "Art of War," by Sun Tzu (about 580 B.C.), the Analects of Confucius, and a handful of novels and romances, little or nothing of Chinese literature is available in an English translation. Apropos of poetry, the Chinese are great lovers of the art. The best Chinese poetry treats of various phases of nature, or, like the well-known Rubáiyát of Omar Khayyám, of melancholy views on life and the winecup. It is also of interest to note that Confucius went about collecting folk-songs and stories, and that records of Chinese national lyrics and ballads are found even 1,000 years previous to that date. As regards the classics and



WHERE PRIESTLY POMP ABODE ITS HOUR AND WENT ITS WAY

While their temples and principal public buildings are magnificent and highly decorative, the Chinese are content to let them, when once erected, fend for themselves. The triple-arched stone gateway, ornamented with intricate carving and delicate designs, gives access to the temple. The stone pavement, uneven and weed-covered, forms a strange contrast to the magnificence of the gateway itself



TRAFFIC'S BUSY JUNCTION BETWEEN THE TWO CITIES OF PEKING

Three gates pierce the frowning wall, forty feet high and fifty feet wide at the top, that separates the Chinese from the Tartar or Manchu City of Peking. This is the Ha-Ta gate, passing through which the wayfarer has the observatory and Parliament Buildings on his right, and on his left Legation Quarter, which, since 1900, has been reserved for foreign residents

Photo, H. I. Merriman



WHERE ASTRONOMERS OF OLD STUDIED THE STARS IN THEIR COURSES

In the south-east corner of the Tartar city stands the observatory, which is claimed to be the oldest in the world. Erected by the great Kublai Khan towards the close of the thirteenth century its quaintly devised instruments of brass were erected by the Jesuits, who were in ascendancy at the end of the seventeenth and beginning of the eighteenth centuries.



QUIET CORNER FOR NEEDLEWORK AND GOSSIP IN A PEKING STREET

One would imagine that women's rights would make a burning question in China, but these oppressed women are amazingly submissive to the tyranny of married life. One of the few luxuries of their existence is a quiet gossip, often snatched, as seen here, under the guise of industry; at home they are less eloquent, for loquacity is recognised by Chinese law as a ground for a wife's divorce.

CHINA & THE CHINESE

the books of Confucius, it has already been noted how the doctrines taught therein have ever profoundly affected and influenced the Chinese people. Their reverence for literature and the written or printed page is instanced by the fact that a Chinese would no more dream of wrapping up an article in a newspaper than an Englishman would of keeping his hat on in Westminster Abbey.

Among every people, however primitive, music in some form or other has always found a place. It may be no more than the notes from a reed pipe over the drone bass of a wooden drum, but the sound will awaken response in the hearts of that people attuned to it. With the Chinese, ever since they became conscious of a national life, music has taken a definite place among

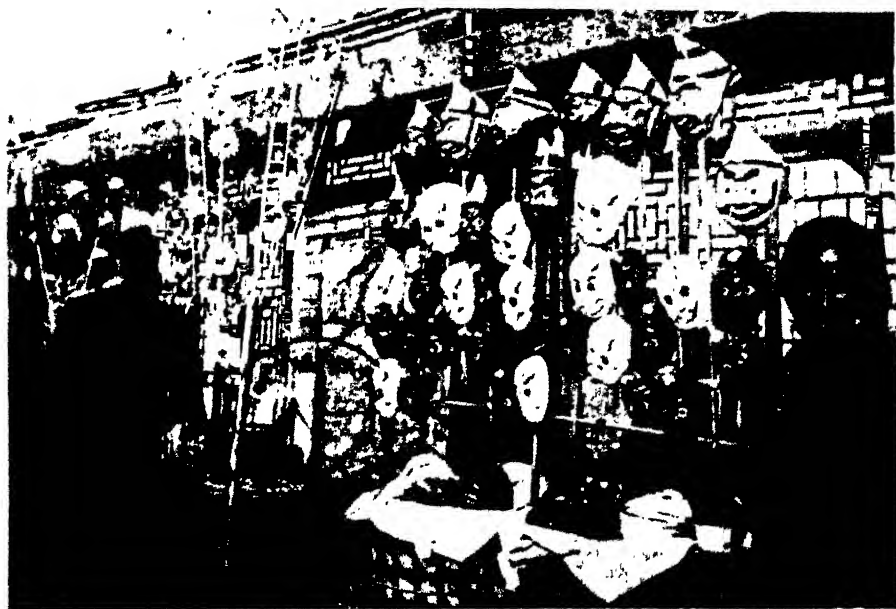
the arts, although to-day that place is much lower than it was. To a Western ear even the simple melodies swiftly become monotonous. Harmony, as we understand it, is absolutely unknown, and after hearing a band of Chinese musicians the foreigner will remark that the noise is insupportable. Yet to the Chinese their music is wholly sufficing, and, after all, that is all that matters.

The Chinese musical scale is one of five notes, and our own scale of C major, omitting the E and B, is generally quoted as representing that of the Chinese. Hence foreign composers often write a melody with appropriate harmony on those notes and call it Chinese. For instance, with a very little adapting, the well-known "Tipperary," played entirely on the black notes of a piano,



COMMERCIAL ENTERPRISE CARRIED TO EXTREMES

One would be surprised to see gaudy posters decorating the walls of European churches or chapels, but the Chinese see nothing incongruous in the idea. Seated by the wall of a Honan temple, and accompanied by his wife, the Italian commercial traveller has just put up a poster proclaiming the merits of a digestive liqueur. Far from resenting this the priests consider it a becoming ornament



PEKING BAZAAR, WHERE LAUGHTER MAY BE BOUGHT CHEAP

Eastern children have much the same taste in toys as young Westerners. The delight of childhood in the burlesque is in evidence all the world over, but perhaps more especially marked in China, where small and grown-up children spend hours in watching the droll nursery of masked buffoons, and the cheery face of this shopkeeper testifies that his trade is by no means a losing one.

Photo, Mynart O. & N. Williams

will sound quite Chinesey. But the real Chinese scale is best represented by playing F sharp, G sharp, A sharp, C and D natural. And if this experiment be made it will be seen at once that the scale is neither major nor minor. With that piece of knowledge for a foundation, and adding that the instruments most in use, singly or as an ensemble, are a large moon-shaped guitar of four strings, another of three strings, a violin of two strings, a clarinet, and odds and ends of drums, gongs, castanets, etc., adding also that a Chinese appears to use only his nose in singing, we shall then get some dim idea of a Chinese ballad concert.

Music is used by the Chinese on every festal occasion—birthdays, marriages, funerals, and the like, but the musicians are almost invariably professional; very rarely does one hear an amateur performer. In the theatre music always plays an important part. In fact, by the character of the music, the changes of tempo, etc., the regular theatre-goer knows exactly what action to expect upon the stage. He can tell to

a nicety whether the general and his army will be victorious or no; whether the village Romeo will be happily united to the Juliet of his choice, or will suffer a lingering death at the hands of the local apothecary. To the long list of Chinese inventions we may surely add that of "programme" music.

This brings us to the form of recreation easily foremost in the affections of the Chinese. The drama is the national form of amusement par excellence. What may happen when the cinematograph penetrates up country it is impossible to forecast, but it may seriously be doubted whether even the world-popular "movies" will oust the spoken drama from the hearts of this conservative people.

Once upon a time a certain Emperor of China, one Huam Tsung by name, was deeply enamoured of the lovely Princess Yang Kuei-fei. One evening they stood side by side upon a little bridge that spanned a lotus-starred lake in the gardens of the Imperial Palace. The Princess, moved by tender recollections of an old legend of two lovers with

whom that bridge had been associated, shyly declared that she herself would be no less faithful in her vows. So enchanting did she appear to the Emperor that he laid his hand, his heart, and his throne at her feet.

Now the Emperor took counsel with his Prime Minister how there might be devised some new and delightful form of entertainment with which to please the Princess. And the Minister, after deep thought, said to the Emperor, "Let us collect some of the noblest and most graceful youths about the Court. We will attire them in lordly robes, and I, searching the historical records, will



YOUNG CHINESE SPINSTER

Dressed in a short-sleeved tunic of flowered silk, the only ornaments this girl of the middle classes wears are the brooch at her throat and her ear-rings

Photo, B. T. Pridoux



HAPPY THOUGH MARRIED

Although love too seldom makes marriage in China, marriage sometimes makes love, and this young Shanghai wife looks happy enough in her wedded state

Photo, B. T. Pridoux

instruct them how to recite the narratives of the illustrious deeds of your Majesty's deeply-revered Imperial Ancestors."

So the entertainment was duly presented in a gorgeous pavilion amidst blossoming fruit trees, and great was the pleasure of the Emperor and his lovely Princess. So great that the Emperor decreed then and there the establishment of a Guild of Dramatic Art, and named it "The Guild of the Young Folks of the Pear Garden." Thus, so the story runs, was the Chinese Drama created, and by that name are the actor-folk sometimes called even to this day. And the Minister for his reward was thereafter able to boast that his great-great-grandfather had been ennobled.

The stage is virtually the current literature of the Chinese. Yet it is the historical romance which is the most popular of all plays. And Chinese history is most rich in dramatic incident.

Here your Chinese actor is at his proudest and best. Gorgeous in costume, weighty and pompous in speech, his audience will hang upon every word with reverential awe. Outside the great theatres of the Treaty Ports scenery and properties are practically unknown. But a Chinese audience will make-believe with any children's party. A mountain pass will be represented by a heap of chairs and tables piled upon the stage. And even a Hannibal would be hard put to it to lead an army with becoming dignity over so difficult a range of Alps. It is a tour de force such as the Chinese love.

The Chinese will seize every possible opportunity to secure a theatrical performance of some kind. The successful issue of a law-suit, a bounteous rice harvest, the arrival of a distinguished visitor, will thus be celebrated. And only then is your Chinese public-spirited or thoughtful for his neighbours. He will have the stage rigged up in the very middle of the street before his front door.

Imagine the arrival of a travelling company of actors in a Chinese village which for weeks past has been in a fever of excitement; relatives, friends, odd acquaintances, and children swarming in from all over the neighbourhood. Before the sun is up all the small boys of the village, together with, it would seem, every stray mongrel in the province, crowd out to the creek-path to welcome the players. You picture the distinguished actor-manager staggering along, at the head of his tatterdemalion

company laden with the most valuable articles of wardrobe or property list. Arriving with his baggage selected and most carefully chosen choice in the middle of the street thoroughfare—he at once proceeds to superintend the erection of the stage. Nor is he above turning his hand to the nice adjustment of a plank or the levelling of the proscenium bamboos. Soon the hour arrives for making up, and



HUNGER PAYS NO HEED TO ELEGANCE

Eating with chopsticks is not the prettiest mode of taking food. The bowl is held close to the lips and the food, chopped very small, is pushed into the mouth with the chopsticks and swallowed with the minimum of mastication.

Photo, E. T. Friedman



TEA-LADEN COOLIES AT HANKAU, ON THE YANG-TSE-KIANG

Hankau, the Chinese say, is the mart of eight provinces and the centre of the earth. It is certainly the chief distributing centre of the Yang-tse valley, with an important trade in tea. Along the quays that line the Yang-tse river, coolies tramp in unending procession, picturesque cotton-clad figures, laden with the decorative chests in which the tea is packed

Photo, Underwood Press Service

as this is one of the most interesting features of the entertainment—for it all takes place in public—the crowd assumes phenomenal proportions. Stout old gentlemen crawl under the staging and good-humouredly bump their heads in the endeavour to share in the delights of a peep behind the scenes. One mischievous urchin will seize a gaudy tinsel crown and clap it on his head, to the admiring applause of others less daring.

And so the play begins, a feast of dramatic fare which outvies in its variety the efforts of the old English stock companies of the 'sixties with their five plays a night. From nine in the

morning to sunset one follows close upon another, the "whole to conclude," as the play-bills have it, "with a grand harlequinade for the children." At least, it is something very like it, and equally appreciated by the small folk. The lanterns are lighted, the stage is pulled down and packed up, and our actor-manager and his company vanish into the mists of the rice-fields, on their way to the next village, before the last fire-cracker has exploded.

In the spirit of comedy, then, that happy attribute of the Chinese people, this brief review may fittingly close. We have seen wherein the morality of that great race differs from the

CHINA & THE CHINESE

materialism of the West, suggesting how each must ever eternally war with the other. We have traced in some measure the effects of that moral code upon the Chinese social life; that it is responsible through the faith of ancestor-worship for the serious social and economic problems that weigh so heavily upon the China of to-day. We have noted—shall we say, with sympathetic eye?—some of the virtues and disabilities that characterise the people, catching occasional glimpses of their home lives and their customs. With many regrettable omissions we have passed to a consideration of the political ruling forces of China, to the products of the

Chinese hand, and to the people who labour there; and we have seen the artistic impulse which in China finds its expression.

"We are firm believers in the right of all right judgement of any man, and if it is useful, nay, essential, to set his good qualities before pronouncing on his bad." In the mind of anyone who has spent a considerable time among the Chinese their good qualities leave a more abiding impression than their bad, and they are remembered as a lovable people. If this review contributes to the formation of a right judgement on them, the writer of it will be well repaid.



NOISY VENDOR OF CLOYING ORIENTAL DELIGHT

The Chinese has one attribute in common with other Oriental peoples. He has a particularly "sweet" tooth, and highly flavoured confectionery makes a great appeal to him. This party youngster, armed with his round wooden tray, laden with delicacies, is doing a thriving trade among the passers-by. His wares are of the nougat variety, but are too sickly for European palates.

Photo, Maynard Owen Williams



WEARY WORK WHEN YOUR TEETH ARE NOT WHAT THEY WERE

She is cracking and shelling pea-nuts, commonly called monkey-nuts, and although the pods—wrinkled as her own face—are not of the hardest they give trouble to her old jaws. The Chinese consume quantities of the nuts as food and use the oil in their soups. The shells become the perquisite of the people who crack them, and are used as fuel in the winter

Photo, J. C. Carter



HAGGLING OVER PRICES AT A CRAB STALL IN PEKING

Bargaining is a prime instinct of all Chinese, who find actual pleasure in chaffering over prices. The vendor will take as much as he can get and begins by asking a third more than he expects to receive, while the buyer starts by offering half what he is prepared to pay. The one comes down as the other goes up, until, reaching neutral ground, they split the difference and both are happy

Photo, Camera Craft, Peking

China

II. Its Past Dynasties and Present Republic

By Lionel Giles, M.A.

Of the Oriental Department, British Museum

HERE is nothing in the existing records to show where the Chinese originally came from, though it is on the whole probable that they entered China from the north-west in the third millennium B.C. At any rate, we first find them settled in the lower valley of the Yellow River. Symbolical of their gradual progress in the arts of civilization are the names of their mythical rulers: Fire-producer, Animal-tamer, and Divine Husbandman. The first great warrior monarch called himself the Yellow Emperor—perhaps in allusion to the colour of the soil in the rich loess country of Shansi. One gathers that the early Chinese were a small community surrounded by more or less savage tribes, who were at first a serious menace to the infant state.

The long list of inventions attributed to the Yellow Emperor seems to show that the civilization of the Chinese was already far advanced before we come to the reigns of Yao and Shun, the first recorded in the ancient Canon of History. The outstanding event of the time was a great and disastrous flood, caused, no doubt, by one of the periodical overflows of the Yellow River. The man who arose to cope with the gigantic task of draining the country and protecting it against future inundation was a marvel of restless energy called the Great Yü. "But for Yü," the Chinese say, "we should all have been fishes." He founded the Hsia dynasty, which is said to have lasted till 1766 B.C., though virtually nothing is known about most of the sovereigns except their names. The last, a voluptuary and tyrant, was finally defeated and deposed by Tang, called the Completer.

In the next dynasty, named Shang, after the principality of its founder, we emerge a little further from the twilight of myth and legend; for although indubitable historical facts are few and far between, a large number of bone

fragments belonging to this period and inscribed with oracular responses have of late years been dug up in Honan. Several hundred of these can be seen in the British Museum, and serve to attest the antiquity of the art of writing in China. Towards the middle of the dynasty the capital was moved southwards to Yin, a little to the east of the present town of Honan, a site which it has occupied in many later dynasties.

The Yin dynasty, as it was now called, slowly degenerated, and in the twelfth century B.C. there was a general rising against its last ruler, who was another monster of cruelty and vice. The feudal chieftain by whom he was overthrown now established himself as the first sovereign of the Chou dynasty. He only reigned a few years, however, and the task of organizing the empire on a new basis fell to his younger brother the duke of Chou, as regent. This man is one of the greatest figures in Chinese history: he distinguished himself equally as general, statesman, and philosopher, and laid the foundations of an elaborate feudal system which endured for nearly 900 years.



CHINA: BOUNDARIES OF THE REPUBLIC

CHINA : HISTORICAL

China at this time included the greater part of the territory lying between the Yellow River and the Yang-tse from the eastern part of Kansu to the sea, as well as Shansi and the southern portion of Chih-li. This extensive tract of country was parcelled out in a very large number of fiefs among members of the royal house and other supporters, while the capital and adjoining district were reserved for the king himself.

For some three hundred years the system appears to have worked fairly well, but even from the beginning there was a tendency for the smaller states to be absorbed by their neighbours; thus, in time, the great feudal princes became far more powerful than their nominal sovereign. In 842 B.C. the people rose in rebellion against a king who had ruled tyrannically, and for the next fifteen years there was a remarkable interregnum, during which the two leading dukes governed the country. Authentic dated history may now be considered as having begun. After the restoration of the monarchy, the energies of the nation were absorbed in a struggle against nomadic tribes, especially in the north and west, and in 770 B.C. it was found advisable to move the capital from Shensi to Loyang in Honan. From first to last Chinese history has been profoundly influenced by the necessity of protecting the frontier against Turks or Tartars. Whenever the Chinese were weakened by internal disunion and conflict, some barbarian horde was always ready to take advantage of the opportunity.

Our main authority for the next period is the Spring and Autumn Annals of Confucius, with its invaluable commentary. The number of feudal states had by this time greatly diminished, and only the following were of first-class importance:

Chin, comprising Shansi, and parts of Honan and Chih-li; Ch'i, occupying the greater part of Shantung, and extending into Chih-li; Wu, on the lower course of the Yang-tse, comprising Kiang-su and parts of the adjacent provinces; Ch'u, a large state corresponding roughly to Hu-peh and Hu-nan. It lay on the southern borders of the empire, and was also known as the Jungle. Only the

northern part was purely Chinese. Ch'in, another semi-civilized state on the extreme west, corresponded to Shensi and part of Kansu.

Each of these large states obtained, at one time or another, a sort of hegemony in the empire. It will be observed that



SYMBOLISM OF WILLOW PATTERN WARE

On the familiar willow pattern plates and cups the little bridges are zigzag and the roof eaves rounded upwards in harmony with the efforts of Chinese builders to leave no straight path for malignant earth spirits

they form a ring round the central plain of Honan, which was occupied by the royal domain and a number of smaller states, which suffered severely from the quarrels of their powerful neighbours. These, on the other hand, acted as buffers between the heart of Chinese civilization and the pressure of the surrounding barbarian tribes.

During the seventh century B.C., the two great rivals, Chin and Ch'u, were in almost continuous conflict. The rise of Ch'in into prominence dates from the cession of the old royal patrimony in Shensi, when the capital was shifted to the East; but for a long time it was occupied with the conquest of Sze Chuen, and stood for the most part aloof from the struggles between the other states. In 545 B.C., a notable peace congress was held in one of the smaller states, having for its object general disarmament and the cessation of strife. But, as in ancient Greece, the springs of ambition and jealousy were too strong, and the ensuing era saw even more confusion and bloodshed.

CHINA: HISTORICAL

It was in these turbulent times that Kung Ch'ao Confucius lived. He rose to high office in his native state of Lu, but his influence in a national sense did not amount to much during his lifetime. The end of the sixth century is marked by the meteoric rise of the Wu state, which by defeating Ch'u and taking her capital acquired enormous military prestige. The decline, however, was equally rapid; Wu was conquered and annexed by Yueh, her southern neighbour, and both were finally swallowed up by Ch'in. Before this happened, the Chin state had been partitioned among three of its great families. Thus destroyed the balance of power so essential to the authority of the royal house for the three independent states thus created were unable to oppose an effective resistance to the fast-growing power of Ch'in.

It was in the fourth century B.C. that the fate of the Chou dynasty was really decided. Ch'in and Ch'u then possessed each about a third of China, the rest being divided among five states, which it became the object of each to draw into an alliance against the other. This is

the period of the Warring States, and the final result was the complete domination of China by the state of Ch'in. The Ch'in rulers were determined to crush all opposition, and were seeking to control the whole of China with a double-headed spear, pointing east to west. In the process they proved herself superior to all opponents in warfare and in 221 B.C. they had devoured state after state with an insatiable appetite, she ventured on the decisive step of deposing the last Chou sovereign. For more than half the total duration of the dynasty its rulers had been little more than puppets, and if China was to present a united front to her external foes, it was high time that the feudal system should be largely modified or abolished.

The man who was destined to accomplish this stupendous task succeeded to the dukedom of Ch'in as a boy of thirteen; twenty-five years later he found himself the sole ruler of China, and took the title of Shih Huang Ti (First Sovereign Emperor). The Chinese at that date were emphatically a nation in arms. War



CHINESE WOMEN AND POLICEMEN IN A STREET OF PEKING

Shy and superstitious, Chinese adults of both sexes, particularly women, often resent being photographed and regard the camera with something akin to fear, but a liberal and well-timed "cushow" will sometimes bring about what persuasive powers have failed to secure. The ladies, however, being able to walk neither far nor fast on their tiny club feet, easily fall a prey to the camera-man.

Photo, H. I. Morrison

chariots had been superseded by cavalry, and centuries of fighting had greatly developed their military skill. This, and the energy of the emperor, probably saved China from being overrun by the Hsiung-nu, or Huns, a nation of Turkic nomads, whose dominion now covered a vast area in Mongolia and Turkistan. The Great Wall was built—that is to say, a number of previously existing walls were linked up, extended and fortified—and conscript armies were stationed along the frontiers. For the first time regular colonies were planted in the South of China, and even in Tongking.

Swords Preferred to Pens

A more centralised system of government was introduced, the power of the vassal princes curtailed, and other reforms carried out which transformed the empire into the likeness which, in essentials, it has borne ever since. The constructive measures of Shih Huang Ti were beneficial on the whole, but his pride and megalomania also led him into a fury of destruction. Thus, in order that recorded history might begin from his own reign, he decreed the burning of all existing literature, except that on agriculture, medicine, and divination. This famous decree, enforced with the utmost ruthlessness, has brought down upon his head the undying hatred of the Chinese literati, and consequently full justice has never been done to his wonderful achievements.

After his death, the inevitable reaction set in. His son and successor proved himself incapable, and soon disappeared in a tempest of anarchy. Ch'u made a desperate effort to regain her old hegemony, and the empire seemed in danger of crumbling to pieces once more. But finally Liu Pang, a bold soldier of fortune, succeeded in crushing his chief rival, and proclaimed himself emperor of the Han dynasty. He shared to the full Shih Huang Ti's aversion for musty literature. "I conquered the empire on horseback!" he exclaimed. "What do I want with books?" But one of his ministers pointed out that, though an empire might be conquered, it could not be governed on horseback. It was not until the reign of Wên Ti, a wise and virtuous prince, that the country really began to settle down.

Retribution Overtakes the Huns

About this time the Huns were becoming more and more aggressive; they even penetrated across the Yellow River into Shensi and carried off enormous spoil. But the hour of retribution was at hand. During the long and glorious reign of Wu Ti (140-87 B.C.) they were crushed in a series of brilliant campaigns, and the important trade routes to the

West were made secure. The Annamese kingdom of Nan-yüeh, with its capital at Canton, was also subjugated, and made into a Chinese province. The internal administration of the Hans followed the main lines laid down by the first emperor. The central authority was strengthened, and the separatist tendency of the provinces restrained by the gradual substitution of officially appointed governors for the vassal princes of olden days.

In the middle of the first century B.C., Chinese prestige in Asia stood at its highest point. Then a temporary decline set in, due chiefly to intrigues in the palace. Wang Mang, a kinsman of the empress, craftily wormed himself into power, and finally usurped the throne, which he occupied for about thirteen years. Though he called his dynasty Hsin, meaning new, his settled policy was the revival of all the obsolete institutions of Chou, in order to curry favour with the literary class. He perished, however, in the midst of rebellions which broke out on all sides, and the old dynasty was re-established, the capital being transferred from Ch'ang-an (the modern Sianfu) to Loyang.

Introduction of Buddhism

Kuang Wu Ti, a kindly, peaceable man, devoted himself mainly to domestic reform, but also sent successful expeditions to Annam and Manchuria. Relations with Japan commenced in this reign, and ambassadors with tribute were sent from that country at intervals until the T'ang dynasty. Perhaps the most notable event of this period was the introduction of Buddhism into China. The new religion found the field already occupied by Confucianism, with which was bound up ancestral worship, the fundamental religion of China, and Taoism, a system of sorcery and magic. With neither of these did it come into serious conflict, but quietly developed side by side with them. Religion in China, standing aloof from politics, has never been marred by fierce sectarian hatred, as in Europe.

A forward policy was now resumed against the Huns, who had thrown off their allegiance. A great soldier named Pan Ch'ao spent his life in the reduction of the western regions, a task which he accomplished at the minimum of cost in blood and treasure. The Hun menace was extinguished for good and all, and even distant countries like Parthia sent tribute.

The decline of the eastern Han dynasty is attributable in large measure to the pernicious influence of eunuchs, which always brought corruption and misgovernment in its train. The rebellion of the Yellow Turbans threw the empire

into a state of anarchy, and ultimately led to its splitting up into three independent and mutually hostile states. The northernmost, called Wei, was founded by Ts'ao Ts'ao, an extraordinarily able but unscrupulous man, who derived authority from the fact that he had seized the last Han emperor and held him captive; Shu, with its capital at Cheng-tu, was under the rule of Liu Pei, a lineal descendant of the Hans; and Wu in the south-east, with its capital at Nanking, under an adventurer of humble origin named Sun Ch'üan. The two weaker powers formed an alliance which enabled them to resist the attacks of Wei. Afterwards they quarrelled, and Shu was only able to carry on the war against Wei through the genius of Chu-ko Liang, one of China's most famous generals. This condition of unstable equilibrium could not last very long. Shu was finally conquered by Wei, and a powerful minister of the latter kingdom founded the new dynasty of the Chin, which a little later annexed the kingdom of Wu. The use of tea is said to have begun at this time.

Darkness Falls upon the Empire

The epoch of the Three Kingdoms is famed for its chivalry and romance; but the Chinese had to pay heavily for this interlude of civil war, which caused them to neglect the essential duty of keeping the frontier tribes in check. The next three hundred years form the nearest Chinese equivalent to the Dark Ages which descended on Europe at a somewhat later date, but for a much longer period. And just as Christianity spread over Europe during the Middle Ages, so did Buddhism now take firm root in the soil of China. A rising of the Turkic tribes settled in Shansi gradually gathered in strength, until the Chin rulers were forced to take refuge on the south side of the Yang-tse, while the whole of Northern China was overrun by the barbarians. Within the space of 135 years no fewer than sixteen kingdoms sprang up and disappeared like mushrooms. Once only during this period was North China reunited for a brief space; but an ill-advised attempt to invade the South resulted in utter disaster, and the federation fell to pieces. One of the fragments, however—originally a small state established by the Toba Tartars in Shansi—soon grew so powerful that it was able to absorb its rivals and create an empire which endured for the best part of two centuries. But "China is a great sea which salts all the rivers that flow into it," and long before the close of this period the Tartars had adopted Chinese civilization, and were hardly distinguishable in their manner of life from the race over whom they were ruling. Meanwhile, the legitimate Chin

dynasty in the South had disappeared, and been succeeded by four others, also Chinese, and each with its capital at Nanking. In spite of many conflicts between North and South, the status quo remained unaltered until late in the sixth century A.D., when an ambitious minister of the last Northern dynasty dethroned his sovereign and proceeded to the conquest of the Southern empire. Thus the whole of China was re-united at last under the house of Sui. This short but important dynasty was a precursor to the T'ang, much as the Ch'in had previously prepared the ground for the more stable house of Han. Under its first sovereign the population of China is said to have doubled, so immediate were the effects of a strong and settled government.

A Chinese Julius Caesar

His successor squandered immense sums on his personal pleasures, but on the other hand it is to him that the Chinese owe the Grand Canal, connecting the basins of the Yellow River and the Yang-tse, a masterpiece of engineering, which has been of incalculable benefit to posterity.

The great T'ang dynasty, like so many others, owed its origin to a rebellious governor. Li Yüan made common cause with the Turkic tribes in Shansi, whom he had been sent to hold in check, and by their help was soon established as emperor in Ch'ang-an. But rebellions were breaking out all over China; no fewer than eleven pretenders to the throne had started up, and a veritable superman was needed to cope with the situation. Happily, the crown prince answered fully to this description. Brave, humane, tenacious of purpose, yet tolerant and broad-minded, he possessed a rare combination of qualities, reminding one of Julius Caesar, and stamping him as one of the greatest men in the history of the world. T'ai Tsung (to use the posthumous title by which he is generally known) was the virtual founder of the T'ang dynasty, and occupied the throne for twenty-two glorious years, during which the Chinese arms and Chinese civilization were triumphantly carried to the four corners of Asia. Even the East Roman emperor Theodosius sent an embassy to his court in 643.

Augustan Age of Chinese History

The empire of the T'angs was the largest that has ever acknowledged the sway of a purely Chinese dynasty. Apart from China proper, which was then divided into ten circuits, or provinces, the great dependencies were governed by six viceroyalties—two in Mongolia, two in Turkistan, one in Korea, and one in Tongking.

None of T'ai Tsung's legitimate successors rose much above mediocrity; but



THE SOOTHING BUBBLE OF THE WATER-PIPE

Although tobacco was not introduced into China until the sixteenth century all classes now delight in smoking. This old country-woman derives much pleasure from her water-pipe made of copper and an alloy known as argentan

Photo, B. T. Prideaux

towards the end of the seventh century the throne was usurped by a remarkable woman, whose character has some points of likeness to that of the English Elizabeth. Despite her inordinate vanity and feminine caprices, she ruled firmly and well, and left the empire in a flourishing condition. The longest reign of the T'ang dynasty, constituting the Augustan era of Chinese history, was that of Hsüan Tsung. But his character had a strain of weakness and self-indulgence, which ultimately proved his ruin and brought

his great house within an ace of destruction.

About the middle of the eighth century, the court favourite, An Lu-shan, headed a rebellion which lasted eight years, causing widespread misery; but although the rebels captured the capital, they failed to force their way south into the rich Yang-tse valley. Civil war at home was followed, as usual, by the encroachments of border tribes. These included the Uighurs (semi-civilized Turks), the Tibetans, who annexed extensive territories in the north-west, and the aborigines farther south, who founded the state of Nan-chao, in Yün-nan. There was also continual trouble with disaffected governors, while the eunuchs, regaining control in the palace, made or unmade emperors at their will.

These and other causes led to another rebellion, even more disastrous than the first, which spread like wild-fire through the south-eastern and central provinces to Ch'ang-an, which was again sacked and burnt. The dynasty reeled under this second blow, and fell soon after. Though the rebels were finally exterminated with the help of a Turkic tribe, the dismemberment of the empire was inevitable. The Chinese under the T'ang dynasty were unquestionably the most civilized and enlightened nation on the globe. While Europe was plunged in the darkness of the Middle Ages, literature and the

arts in China were at their zenith, and the invention of block-printing was giving a great impetus to education and culture.

The succeeding period was one of anarchy alternating with military despotism. Five short dynasties rose and fell, but their dominion was confined to Central China, being hemmed in by barbarian tribes on the north, and a number of semi-independent states in the south. For the next 300 years, China was engaged in a more or less continuous struggle with hordes that

poured over the northern frontier in three successive waves, until at last the whole country was engulfed. The first enemies were the Khitans, whose name has been perpetuated in the word Cathay. They had profited by the disruption of the T'ang empire to extend their sway over Mongolia and Manchuria, and now hung over northern China like a threatening cloud. Soon after the establishment of the Sung dynasty, which had reunited the greater part of China, their inroads became more audacious, and the fatal expedient was resorted to of buying them off with annual sums of money. At the same time, a new power, known as Hsi Hsia, had arisen in the northwest, and it, too, had to be placated with thinly disguised tribute. These drains on the exchequer exhausted the finances of the country, and a number of drastic reforms of a socialistic tendency were introduced on the advice of the minister Wang An-shih. They proved a failure, however, and did not remain long in force.

Meanwhile, the second wave of invasion was advancing from Manchuria. The intervention of the Nü-chên was welcomed at first by the Chinese, because they were the sworn foes of the Khitans; but their own encroachments soon made them even less desirable as neighbours. Farther and farther did they push the Chinese back, until, in 1126, we find them across the Yellow River, besieging the capital itself, then Kaifeng in Honan. Two emperors were carried into captivity, and the panic-stricken court migrated to Hangchow, in Che-kiang. For several years the stout-hearted general Yo Fei and his comrades fought heroically, and with considerable success, against the invaders; but their work was undone by treachery at court, and an inglorious peace was made in which the northern portion of the empire was permanently ceded to the Nü-chên. Hence the latter half of the Sung dynasty is known as the Southern Sung. The Nü-chên set up their own emperor, with the dynastic title of Chin (Gold).

There was now a breathing space before the third and greatest wave began to roll up. In 1206, Jenghiz Khan had made himself master of Mongolia, and immediately turned his arms against the Hsi Hsia and Chin empires. The Chinese, as before, hastened to ally themselves with the new conquerors, only to discover that they had leapt from the frying-pan into the fire. For the Mongols, having dispossessed the Nü-chên, proceeded to the conquest of the Sung empire as well. This was retarded by their great expeditions to the west, but in the end they prevailed, after many years of stubborn fighting, and for the first time the Chinese saw the whole of their country subject to an alien ruler.

Kublai Khan, the grandson of Jenghiz, ruled over an empire which at first stretched from the Yellow Sea to the Volga, and from Lake Baikal to Indo-China. It was in his reign that Marco



FAIR MANCHUS CLAD IN CAP AND GOWN

In their voluminous robes and quaint headgear perched precariously on the top of their heads these Manchurian women present a picture suggestive of the scholar's vestments seen in European universities

Photo, Miss Hunter

Polo came to China, and was astounded by its wealth and civilization. The capital was fixed at Peking, and the Chinese name Yüan (Original) adopted for the new dynasty. Thus Kublai gradually became more of a Chinese emperor, and less of a Mongol khan. He himself proved a great and enlightened ruler, but his successors showed none of his capacity. The people were harshly treated, and Lamaism, the state religion of the Mongols, made itself highly unpopular through the lawlessness of its priests. Altogether, the country was badly misgoverned, and was ripe for rebellion when Chu Yüan-chang, an ex-Buddhist monk, raised his banner in the south. Having disposed of rival claimants, he sent his generals against the capital, but they encountered surprisingly little opposition. Luxury had sapped the martial qualities of the once dreaded Mongols, and they were soon driven back to their native deserts.

Indian Ocean a Chinese Lake

The Ming, or Bright, dynasty opened auspiciously enough. The new ruler not only recovered by degrees the whole of China proper, but inflicted crushing defeats on the Mongols beyond the Great Wall. He divided the empire into fifteen provinces, most of them the same as those still existing. The capital at first was Nanking, but in 1421 it was transferred to Peking, where it has remained ever since. This happened in the reign of Yung Lo, one of those masterful rulers under whom China has always seemed to prosper most. An important feature of the same period was a vast extension of sea-borne trade as far as the east coast of Africa and the Persian Gulf. Tribute was exacted from Burma, Bengal, and many of the larger islands; so that for a time the Indian Ocean almost became a Chinese lake.

As usual, the second half of the dynasty was not equal to the first; the character of the later rulers deteriorated, while eunuchs and court favourites got the upper hand. The marauding expeditions of the Mongols caused much trouble, and Japanese pirates harried the Chinese coasts unmercifully. In 1517, the first Portuguese traders appeared off Canton; later on, the Spaniards and the Dutch settled in the Philippines and Formosa respectively. The last Ming emperor, who came to the throne in 1627, was a man of very different stamp from his feeble predecessors. But it was then too late to avert the consequences of past misgovernment. Rebellions broke out and smouldered for some years, until at last a brigand chief forced his way into Peking, and the emperor committed suicide.

Meanwhile the Manchus, a well-organized military race, descended from the Nü-chên tribe, were also knocking at the door. Under their great leader, Nurhachu, they had conquered the whole of Manchuria, and now they were invading China itself. One of the imperial generals besought their aid against the rebels; but after the latter had been defeated, the Manchus refused to evacuate Peking, and established the Ch'ing (Pure) dynasty in 1644. For a time the Ming adherents struggled to maintain a separate empire in the south like the Sung; but by the year 1662, when the great K'ang Hsi succeeded to the throne, all resistance was at an end.

Prosperity under Manchu Rule

A little later came the formidable rebellion of the Chinese vassal princes, which may be regarded as the final flicker of feudalism. After this had been suppressed, chiefly through the coolness and courage of the young emperor, China entered upon a lengthy period of peace and prosperity, such as it had not known since the palmy days of the early T'ang dynasty. The rule of the Manchus was firm yet mild, and they gained the respect and affection of the people in a way that the Mongols had never done. The old forms of government were mostly retained, high offices of state thrown open to the Chinese, and though Manchu garrisons were installed in all the principal cities, there was remarkably little friction between the two races. The only exception to the general rule of personal liberty was the compulsory shaving of the head, and even this soon came to be accepted as a national custom rather than resented as a token of subjection.

Decline and Fall of the Empire

During the long reigns of K'ang Hsi and his grandson Ch'ien Lung, the internal peace of the realm was hardly disturbed, while the majesty of the empire was asserted abroad by the pacification of Burma, Tibet, Mongolia, and Eastern Turkistan. These foreign wars were little felt by the people at large, especially as under the careful administration of Ch'ien Lung taxation was extremely light and the treasury full to overflowing. In the nineteenth century a change comes over the scene. With the passing of the great emperors an era of insurrection set in, which lasted many decades. At the same time trade with Europe, especially Great Britain, was increasing by leaps and bounds, and a long struggle was necessary to decide the national and commercial relations which should exist between the East and the West. It began with the Opium War, and ended with the capture

CHINA: HISTORICAL

of Peking by British and French troops in 1860. China was then in the throes of the T'ai-p'ing rebellion, one of the most frightful upheavals that ever desolated the Central provinces. Thanks in some measure to foreign aid, the Manchus succeeded in restoring order, but neglected to take in hand the reforms which the new condition of things rendered imperative. The result was seen in the disastrous war with Japan and the aggressive acts of European Powers, which in turn led to the Boxer uprising and the second occupation of Peking by

allied troops. This, coupled with the moral effect of the Russo-Japanese War, brought about the long-expected awakening of China. The revolution of 1911 met with but feeble opposition, and the present republic was established in the following year. Since then the country has been in an unsettled state owing to the unhappy antagonism between north and south. There are signs, however, that the statesmen of China are beginning to realize the importance of national unity—the prime lesson to be derived from her age-long history.

CHINA: FACTS AND FIGURES

The Country

Extends approximately from latitude 18° to 43° N., and from longitude 98° to 122° E. Land frontier (mountain and desert) about 4,000 miles; coastline about 2,500 miles. Exclusive of Manchuria and other dependencies, Mongolia, the new dominion of Sin Kiang, and Tibet (all dealt with separately), the country includes 18 provinces: Sze-Chuen, Yun-nan, Kansu, Chih-li (Pe-chi-li), Kwang-tun, Hu-nan, Shansi, Kwang-si, Shensi, Hu-peh, Kiang-si, Honan, Kwei-chow, Shantung, Anhwei, Fu-kien, Kiang-su, Che-kiang. Total area 1,532,420 square miles; estimated population over 400,000,000.

There are three great rivers—the Hwang-ho or Yellow River (about 2,600 miles), Yang-tse-Kiang (3,200 miles), Si-kiang or West River (1,250 miles). Smaller rivers of importance include the Pai-ho, Hwai-ho, and Min. There are two groups of lakes on both sides of the Yang-tse, several feeding the Grand Canal joining Hwang-chow and Tientsin. The south coast is notable for its good natural harbours.

Railway mileage about 7,000 miles, several new lines under construction or projected; Government telegraphs (50,000 miles) connect principal cities, which have telephonic communication. Wireless stations are increasing in number. Postal service under the Ministry of Communications.

Government and Constitution

The Republic of China (Chung-Hua Min-Kuo) came into existence in 1912. The Government at Peking was planned to consist of President, Vice-President, Senate of 264, and House of Representatives of 596 members; the executive being a Premier nominated by the President and a Cabinet of nine, with foreign advisers and foreign officials. The provinces, under civil and military governors, are divided into circuits, the latter into districts. An independent Southern Government arose in 1920, with headquarters in Canton.

Defence

No national army, but large forces are maintained by several provincial governors. An air force is being organized. The navy includes 6 protected cruisers, 3 torpedo gunboats, 11 gunboats, 4 destroyers, and 8 small torpedo-boats.

Commerce and Industries

Chief industries agriculture and silk. Small holdings, intensively cultivated, are general. Wheat, barley, maize, millet, peas, beans, grown in north; rice, sugar, indigo in south. Tallow, varnish, and camphor trees, pine, banyan, cypress, and mulberry flourish in the north; the coconut and other palms, fruits and nuts in the south. There are some 60 varieties of bamboo, turned

to innumerable uses. Fruit, vegetables, and tobacco are largely cultivated. Cotton grown widely, especially in Yang-tse valley. Yield in 1920: 6,696,612 piculs (picul = 133½ lb.). Area under tea, west and south, 320,470 acres; export, 1920: 1,305,900 piculs. Silk production in 1919: 73,079,000 piculs. Weaving, embroidery, engraving, gold and silver and lacquer work, carving, and bronze casting are notable. Cotton and wool, flour and rice mills increasing. Pig-keeping and poultry-keeping are general, birds are numerous, and wild game abounds.

Coal-fields cover 133,500 acres; annual output about 19,000,000 tons. Yield of iron ore about 1,500,000 tons annually. Petroleum, copper, tin, antimony, glass are important industries, and gold, silver, lead, and wolfram mining is carried on. Foreign imports (cotton, metals, cigarettes, coal, hemp, hides, leather, matches, condensed milk, oil, flour, sugar, etc.) in 1920 were valued at £258,847,474; exports (silk, cotton, tea, eggs, beans and bean cake, cattle, poultry, hides, tin, sesame, etc.), £183,928,962. Shipping tonnage entered and cleared in 1920 at ports, 104,266,695. Of over 3,421 foreign firms 534 are British, 955 Japanese, 136 American.

Currency (taels, dollars, copper cash and bank-notes) is on a silver basis.

Religion and Education

Most of the Chinese are Buddhists, but practise Confucianism and Taoism also; Mahomedans number about 10,000,000; Roman Catholics about 2,000,000; Protestants about 600,000; Nature worship survives among the hill tribes. Education, since abandonment in 1905 of system of examination in Chinese classical literature for State employment, has made headway. Compulsory elementary instruction is projected, and there are normal, middle, primary, technical and industrial schools, in addition to State universities in Peking, Tientsin, and Taiyuanfu, and several privately endowed universities, apart from foreign medical missionary and other foundations at Shanghai and elsewhere; figures for 1918-19 showing 134,000 schools with 4,500,000 scholars, progress being greatly stimulated by adoption of phonetic script system.

Chief Cities

Peking (capital), estimated population, 920,000, or, if the suburbs be included, nearly 1,300,000; Amoy (400,000), Canton (1,400,000), Chang-sha-fu (500,000), Chinkiang (478,300), Chung-king (1,000,000), Foochow (1,500,000), Hang-chow (730,000), Hankau (with Hanyang and Wuchang) between 824,000 and 1,443,000; Nanking (900,000), Shanghai (1,500,000), Siang-Tan (200,000), Si-ngan (about 1,000,000), Suchau (1,050,000), Tientsin (800,000), Wenchau (1,700,000), Wuhu (235,000).



FAIR SPECTATORS IN A CORNER OF THE AVIATION GROUND NEAR PASTO

Fashionable Pasto has ample scope for the display of fine feathers, and when not strolling through the shady walks of the famous park, El Centenario, may often be encountered on the aviation ground watching with enthusiastic delight the aerial feats of an intrepid Spanish airman. On these exciting occasions the spectators are many and varied, the Spanish mantilla intermixes with picture hats, and the well-clad Colombian rubs shoulders with the dusky Indian in poncho and hemp sandal

Colombia

I. Spaniard and Indian in the Land of El Dorado

By J. A. Hammerton

Author of "The Argentine through English Eyes," etc.

COLOMBIA is the land of the fabled El Dorado, one of the most interesting and persistent of American legends. Whenever a new chief came to power over an Indian tribe that dwelt upon the tableland of Bogotá, his installation was marked by elaborate ceremonial, a feature of which was his being covered entirely with gold dust (whence *el dorado*, or the golden one), and plunging into the sacred lake of Guatavita. His tribesmen, while he was in the water, cast gold and precious stones into the lake as votive offerings to the spirit of the place, who was the protector and inspirer of the chief in his reign over the tribe. Even in recent years there have been those who believed sufficiently in this old legend to contemplate the locating of the sacred lake and dredging the same for these imaginary treasures of gold.

Sir Walter Raleigh, in 1595, thought he had discovered it, but when the German, von Humboldt, in the nineteenth century concluded that no such lake existed, a near approach to cold truth had been made. Yet there was a time when the Spaniards so thoroughly believed the story that governors of Guiana were also styled governors of El Dorado, and, of course, in our own day the phrase has come to mean any place where treasure or

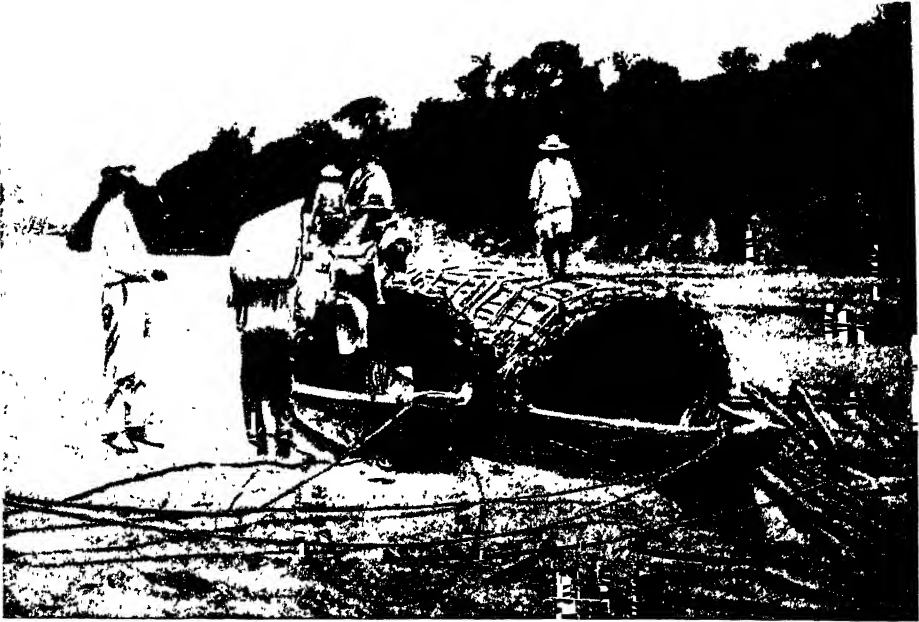
wealth may be acquired with little effort. Although the whole thing is no doubt a myth, there is a real sense in which Colombia might well claim to be the land of El Dorado, for there is in all the world no country so bounteously endowed by nature with mineral treasures or fertility of soil and climate. It has lacked only a stable government and industrial enterprise to turn the myth of El Dorado into an actuality of progress and prosperity. But politically the country has been for many generations the most turbulent of all the South American republics, having been engaged between 1830 and the end of the last century in no fewer than two international wars, nine civil wars, fourteen local rebellions and several military conspiracies, which drained the treasury of the country beyond any hope of recuperation other than might come from honest industry and development of their natural resources.

Thus what might have been—and what some day will be—one of the richest and most prosperous countries of the world remains one of the most backward, although the Colombians themselves talk a great deal about the high pitch of civilization to which they have attained. Their capital city, which on account of its situation in the high Andes has been called, not



REFRESHING FRUIT FOR ALL

Pineapples and bananas, oranges, lemons and limes, breadfruit, guavas and cashews, together with many common fruits of temperate zones, fill the stalls in Bogotá fruit market



LOADING UP THE BOATS WITH THEIR FRAGRANT FREIGHT

The Colombian coffee bean is specially appreciated in the American market, about 85 per cent. of this commodity exported from Colombia finding its way there and selling readily. These boats are being loaded with sacks of coffee at Girardot, and will then be taken down stream till they reach the steamers on the Magdalena, which carry their cargo to the great ocean-going craft

Photo, Ewing Galloway

inaptly, "the Lhasa of South America," is esteemed by the natives as the Athens of Spanish America, nor without reason, for the comparatively small ruling class have given themselves up to literary pursuits instead of to the commercial life, and many citizens of Bogotá are more interested in the varying forms of Spanish verse than in the material progress of their native land. Consequently, out of all proportion to the population, Colombia takes a high place among the Spanish-speaking countries in Hispanic literature; even the mother country honours many Colombian men of letters.

If the truth must be told, however, the cultured Colombian has been more content to discourse in choice Castilian about the natural beauties of his country, which are incontestable, and the progress it is going to make, than to take an active and practical part in the realization of that progress. Unlike most of the other South American countries, Colombia was slow to encourage the foreigner to come in with his money and his energy to develop the country. The

native Indians might well have been helped to rise above their present degraded condition, and even the negroes, who form an unhappy element in the population, could have been improved by sympathy and education. Scarcely anything has been done in these directions. Schooling of the elementary kind is free, but it is not compulsory, and very little of it goes to any but the white and to some of the half-white people.

These people have the usual Spanish-American distaste for trade, and indeed for enterprise in any shape. Their preference is for well-paid official posts, where they have security and not much to do. Politics is the occupation of the more active among them; the others are content to be civil servants. Both are a curse to the community and a bar to the advance of their country either in prosperity or in civilization.

A Minister of Finance in 1911 described the bureaucracy of Colombia as a "social calamity." There were far too many officials. They were paid better than they would have been in private employ, and they did far less work than private

COLOMBIA & ITS PEOPLES

employers would have required of them. Since then reforms have been made and there has been some improvement. But the "calamity" is not yet removed.

The cutting of the Panamá Canal has brought great opportunities to Colombia's door. The Republic might, if its ruling men had been far-seeing and energetic, have kept the territory through which the Canal runs. They were indignant when Panamá revolted in 1903, proclaimed its independence, was recognized by the United States, and gave the Americans the right to make the Canal across the isthmus which separated the Atlantic and Pacific Oceans. They complained with some reason that the revolt of Panamá was largely the work



SAVOURIES FOR EPICURES

They are avocados, or alligator pears, this peon is offering for sale in Santa Marta. The oily marrow is eaten with lime-juice, spice, or pepper and salt



CHAMPION CHACHAFRUTO

Market gardening is profitable near the towns of Colombia. This young fellow is justifiably proud of the size of his beans, locally known as chachafruto

of Americans. What they did not seem to realize was that they might themselves have taken part in the great work if they had paid more heed to their country's interests and not been so intent upon their small political squabbles, which had always for their object the personal advancement of politicians.

When Colombia protested against what was called the theft of this territory by the United States there was a good deal of sympathy felt with the complaint. What had happened was plain enough. Panamá revolted against Colombia on November 3, 1903. Only fifteen days later the treaty which handed the Canal zone over to the United States was



INSPECTING HIS WELL-FRUITING PAPAW TREE

A small evergreen tree, native of South America, the papaw is cultivated in Colombia—and hardly anywhere else—for the sake of its fruit, a dingy orange-coloured oval, sometimes nearly a foot long with fleshy, gourd-like rind. Boiled or pickled, the fruit is eaten as a vegetable, and it also yields the proteid-ferment papain, used as a digestive



AS PLEASING TO THE EYE AS TO THE PALATE

Growing in thick clusters over the garden door, the granadillas form a pleasing spectacle. The plant is a species of passion-flower, and the blossoms are white and red, giving forth a strong and pungent scent. The fruit itself is greenish-yellow and attains a diameter of some six inches. The pulp is purple in colour, and is sweet and slightly acid to the taste

COLOMBIA & ITS PEOPLES

signed at Washington. But the considered opinion of the world soon came round to approval of the result secured, questionable though the means of securing it might have been. The world needed the Canal. The United States Government was ready to build it and was sure to make it a competent job. It had been talked and written about for a great many years, and it looked as if Colombia was quite ready to let it go on being discussed for another half-century.

of them, have been immensely widened, though the capital and other important towns are still peculiarly isolated.

At the time when the passage quoted was written there were scarcely any railways in Colombia. There are not more than a few hundred miles of track even now. To reach the capital then meant a tedious journey on a river steamboat, across mountains on mule-back or in chairs carried by Indians, through desolate regions where the roads



COFFEE BEANS ON THE FIRST STAGE OF THEIR WAY TO THE CONSUMER

From the coffee plantations come long trains of mules bearing the beans, carried in well-filled sacks. The convoy seen above is on its way to one of the big warehouses where beans are stored prior to export. They are later shipped down the Magdalena, on their way to the port of Santa Marta, on the Caribbean Sea, one of several seaports of the trade

Photo, Ewing Galloway

Now it was going to be done. The Colombian protest therefore fell flat.

How changed was the position of the Republic after the isthmus had been pierced may be illustrated by a sentence from a book about the country published in 1887. It was, the writer said, "about as far distant by days, if not by miles, from New York as the interior of India, and quite as difficult to reach." Now the country, as a whole, has been brought quite near to New York and its trading prospects, if it chooses to take advantage

were little more than tracks worn by ox-carts and strings of baggage animals. Even now one has to face a journey of 540 miles in a stern-wheel steamer up the Lower Magdalena to the falls of La Dorada, then a railway stage of eighty miles through Andine passes to Ambalema, followed by another river trip of fifty miles in a still smaller vessel along the Upper Magdalena to Girardot, and finally a picturesque but fatiguing journey of 110 miles on the Colombia National and Sabana railways in order



WITH VERDURE CLAD: A PLANTATION IN THE MOUNTAIN REGION

Colombia's principal plantations are in the interior of the country, coffee and palms of many kinds growing luxuriantly on the higher altitudes inland. Peons supply the labour. They are fairly good workers, but rather heedless of the morrow and independent of spirit, asserting the opinion that to earn his own living does not make one man the servant of another



TUMBLING ASSORTMENT OF EARTHENWARE IN THE BOGOTÁ MARKET

Stacks of pots, ewers, dishes, and vessels of all shapes and sizes, fresh from the potter's wheel, litter the courtyard of the market. Down the centre runs a narrow cobble path flanked by the goods exposed for sale. Here buyer and seller conduct their business, extol the merit of their wares, and argue over prices asked or offered



COLOMBIAN OFFICIALS OF THE PASTO LAW COURTS

Some well-known figures in the world of Pasto jurisdiction are here seen grouped on the balcony of the Casa de Juzgado, or local Law Court. This capital-town of Nariño Department, with an estimated population of 28,000, is situated on the eastern flank of the most active of Colombia's volcanoes, the Pasto, 14,000 feet high, from the crater of which flows a copious stream charged with sulphuric acid

to reach Bogotá (formerly Bogotá, capital of the Chibcha Empire, benignly civilized, worshipping gods of Mercy, Wisdom, and Agriculture). Here the President lives and the business of the state is carried on, although there is also a presidential palace in the important town of Medellín.

With a climate that is described as "almost ideal" (wet from March to May and from September to November, but seldom very wet, and dry the rest of the year), and with freedom from tropical diseases, thanks to its high situation, nearly 9,000 ft., Bogotá might seem to be a very pleasant place to live in for those who are content with a quiet life and can provide their own amusements. The streets, it is true, are ill-paved, but they are wide and well planted with trees; the buildings are agreeable to the eye, mostly in the old Spanish style. Scarcely a house has more than one storey, and a great many are of the bungalow type. Their tiled roofs lend them a certain picturesqueness,

and there are many corners which tempt one to linger and admire, such as that green spot in which the post-office stands.

The situation is magnificent. Above the town tower the Guadalupe and Montserrat Hills. Many distant peaks are visible on a clear day. There is a glorious view of the Mesa de Herves, which is indeed a table (mesa, Latin mensa), for it has a level top from five to six miles across, while down its side for more than 3,000 ft. hangs a spotless white drapery of snow, gleaming like a new and shiny table-cloth. Not far from Bogotá is a waterfall, which is three



PRIZE FRUIT OF A COLOMBIAN GARDEN

This country of contrasts possesses many high-lying desert tracts where nothing flourishes save small wild potatoes, but elsewhere fruits abound in unlimited luxuriance, and this young gardener exhibits a basketful of large and luscious berries

times the height of Niagara and worthy to be compared with the Victoria Falls in Rhodesia. This provides electric light and power for Bogotá; Tequendama is its name. In many respects, therefore, this so-called "Athens of South America" is a desirable place of residence in spite of its remoteness and of what the Germans would call its klein-städtisch character. But it has a worse drawback than these. No one can live long in Bogotá without finding out the reason for the lethargy of the inhabitants. The climate is productive of energy, but only a small amount of energy can be expended with safety. Five



STERN-WHEELER ON COLOMBIA'S FAMOUS RIVER, THE RIO MAGDALENA, NEAR GIRARDOT

For many miles in its upper reaches the Magdalena has the aspect of a mountain torrent, and rushes like the Cauca down a steep incline between the rocky walls of the Central and Eastern Cordilleras; its lower course, however, presents a clear navigable waterway of over 600 miles, and its tranquil waters between Girardot and Honda are utilised by many steamers, all stern-wheelers. The suspension bridge in the distance connects the departments of Cundinamarca and Tolima

COLOMBIA & ITS PEOPLES

hours' work a day is all that can be wisely attempted. Those who try to do more, those who work very hard even during that limited time, soon find their nerves giving them trouble. A large amount of sleep appears to be necessary, though many who go there are for their first few nights unable to sleep.

The streets are, as a rule, deserted at night. The only sounds which break the stillness are the whistles of the policemen, who are obliged to sound them, whenever an alarm goes off in the centre of the town, to show that they are awake. The police are only on duty at night and they do not have a great deal to do then, though they are provided with lassoes for the catching of runaway offenders, and with revolvers as well. Even the pianos which are to be found in all houses of any pretension to style are seldom heard at night, and if there is music in public it is early over. Music is a favourite diversion with the Colombians; and as we have seen, they are also noted for the prevalence of literary ambition among them.

Politics and the Press

The number of those described as "men of letters" is surprising; almost everyone appears to have written either in prose or poetry. Yet the newspapers are mostly disappointing. They are political organs, devoted to the interest of this or that politician. They do not show the wide sweep of acquaintance with world affairs which is a feature of so many South American journals.

The Colombian constitution was copied from that of the United States, but the Colombians have had for a long time a much warmer feeling towards the French than towards their North American neighbours. The educated among them speak French, as a rule, as well as Spanish; their fashions and luxuries come from France. The North Americans are disliked for their "abrupt" manners and for the conduct of their Government over Panamá. But there was little substance in the Federal versus Central controversy which produced the Civil War of 1899-1903. The real dispute between the two parties was

as to which should be in office. The Liberals were ready to attack the Church because the Church did its best to keep them out of office. The Conservatives supported it for the same reason. Neither cared very deeply about religion or had any real enthusiasm for tolerance.

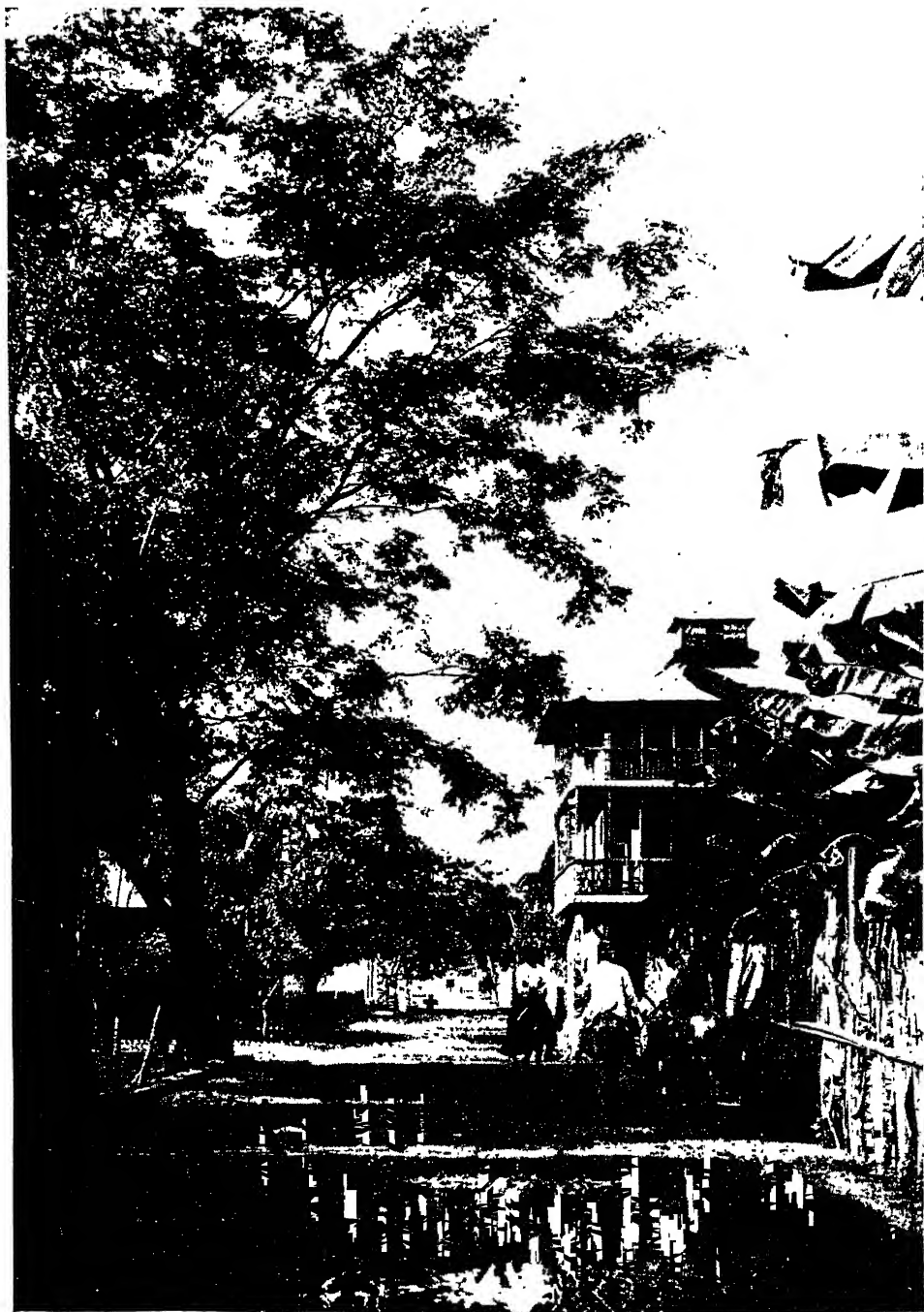
Bad Manners Breed Bad Feeling

In any case the toleration for other sects is sufficiently wide so far as public worship is concerned. Once there was reported in the American newspapers an attack on the houses of Protestants in Bogotá, and hard things were said about fanaticism. But the cause of the ill-feeling was discovered to be the behaviour of some Protestant foreigners, ill-bred, offensive persons who sat in a balcony watching the Corpus Christi procession and refused to take off their hats when the sacred Host was carried by them. This was especially foolish in Colombia, for there even the men go to church as a rule, which is not the case in most South American countries.

The politicians being what they are, a good many people say that what Colombia needs is a strong ruler of the Porfirio Diaz type. She had one for a time when President Reyes (1904-1909) was in power. He was dictatorial in his methods. In some departments he did good. But he did not make himself either sufficiently feared or sufficiently popular. He was the only president upon whose life an attempt had ever been made, and he was forced in the end to leave the country, saying bitterly that he had had enough of a people who would neither govern themselves nor let anyone govern them.

Relics of Old Pirate Days

For a long time after Spanish America became independent of Spain, Colombia was united with Venezuela and Ecuador. It had been one of the favourite Spanish colonies and had a particularly hard fight for its freedom. Although it is called after Columbus, it was not discovered by him, but by Alonso de Ojeda, one of the great navigator's companions. The Spaniards took away shipments of gold and silver for a great



STREET IN THE REGION OF BANANAS: RIO FRIO

The banana trees on the right indicate the region in which the small town of Rio Frio is situated. In this part of North Colombia immense banana plantations are cultivated and the fruit is carried to Santa Marta by a railroad especially constructed for the purpose. The Aruacos of the Santa Marta heights, more civilized than many of Colombia's wild tribes, take an important part in the industry



RESTING BY THE ROADSIDE IN THE UPLANDS OF COLOMBIA

The conditions of the country roads are such that motors or heavy traffic find them for the most part impassable. Mules, donkeys and oxen are the burden-bearers and tread the difficult tracks with sure-footed ease. Land travel among the uplands of the Republic has to be done on mule-back or in jolting ox-wagons and is an experience whose aching pains outweigh its pleasures

COLOMBIA & ITS PEOPLES

many years, and the fortifications with which they defended the port of Cartagena can still be seen ; it was necessary to build these to keep off the attacks of pirates in search of precious cargoes. One such pirate, who is said to have tried to raid Cartagena, was Sir Francis Drake ! Towards the end of the seventeenth century the attempt was made to start a Scottish colony at Darien. This was the scheme of William Paterson, the founder of the Bank of England, and it came to disaster largely on account of the climate.

Colombia, which is the fourth largest of the South American States, has the usual three climates of Central and South America. Its coasts, which are on both the Atlantic and Pacific Oceans, are hot and unhealthy. In its mountain regions the sun is tempered by the snows of the high peaks, which send down cool airs. Then there is a third region consisting partly of forests and partly of green prairies, which would pasture

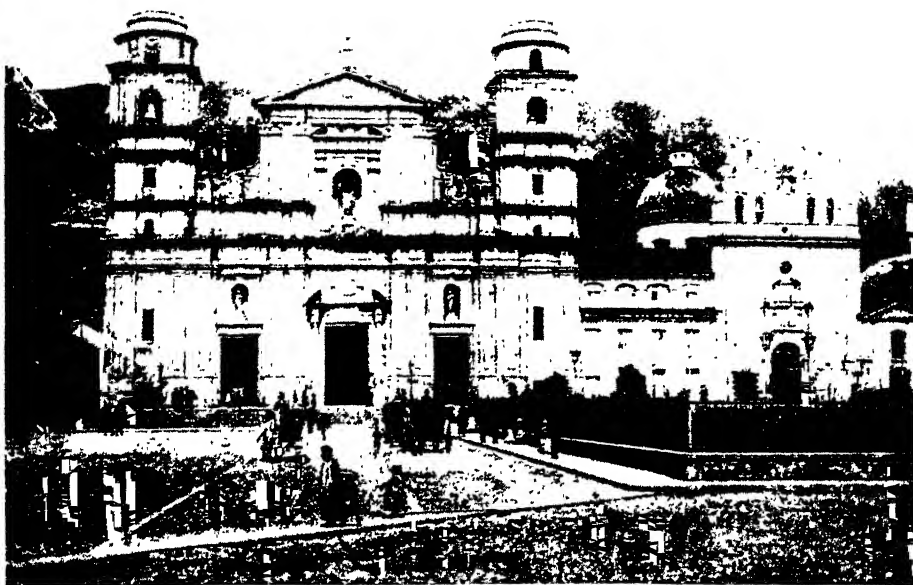
millions of cattle if that industry were to be taken up. The forest areas are uninhabited except by savage Indians ; not all of them have yet been even explored. The forests have not, however, been so much of a misfortune to Colombia as her mountain ranges, which have separated the people into small communities cut off from one another, and made railway building very difficult.

This difficulty might have been more rapidly overcome if Colombian governments had behaved with such probity as to win the confidence of investors. Unfortunately they have frequently defaulted in their payment of interest on loans, and they have also been engaged in many disputes with foreigners who have tried to open up the country. For example, it is still not clear whether the Colombian Government has the right to purchase for £400,000 the undertaking of an English railway company, the Santa Marta, when it is completed. This uncertainty has prevented the



OLD STONE FOUNTAIN IN A COLOMBIAN PLAZA

If it could speak it would narrate many a strange tale of stirring scenes enacted in its vicinity, for Cundinamarca has played an important part in Colombian history. The whitewashed convent, terminating in the little church, forms a picturesque background. The religion of the Republic of Colombia is Roman Catholicism. Tolerance is extended to all others, so far as they conform to the law and to the general precepts of Christian morality



THE CATHEDRAL FRONTING THE PLAZA BOLÍVAR IN COLOMBIA'S CAPITAL

This chief plaza of Bogotá is named after Bolívar, the famous general and statesman, whose statue—a fine work in bronze—is its chief ornament. The town possesses the beautiful old Spanish cathedral, seen above, and, among other notable buildings, a university, library, and observatory, but the lack of easy communications with surrounding lands has hampered its prosperity, and the three railway schemes taken in hand are still incomplete

railway from being finished for a long time past. All that is operated is a section used for the conveyance of bananas to the coast. To complete the line would cost a million sterling. Naturally the company will not lay out this amount if they are to be forced to sell for less than half the cost as soon as the line is ready for traffic.

When the construction of a complete railway system is taken in hand, it will have to be planned from the beginning. The short lines which exist already can be of little help towards a scheme for opening up the country as a whole. They are all detached pieces. Trunk lines do not exist. Whether they would pay if they were brought into existence is not altogether certain, so it may be a long time before the money is subscribed to start their construction. Faith in Colombia as a field for investment must be recreated first.

It may be admitted that the defaults in payment of interest on loans have been rather the result of misfortune than of deliberate dishonesty. Even if the latter had been the cause, there would

not be much room for moral indignation in Europe. The terms on which the early loans were granted to the Republic were as dishonest as could be. The financial houses which arranged them acted like the worst kind of fraudulent money-lenders. The Republic did not receive more than a percentage of the sum for which its inhabitants were made liable. Large slices were taken off for commission, for brokerage, and other charges, and part had to be accepted in merchandise instead of in money.

Yet finance has always been the weak point of Colombian governments. Their paper money sank, for a variety of reasons, to a value deplorably low. The dollar came to be worth no more than a cent or so. That is to say, a note of which the face value was two shillings had only the purchasing power of a halfpenny. Thus it was common enough to pay a hundred dollars for a modest meal and thousands for a suit of clothes. The experience which came to Germany and Austria after the Great War had been habitual in Colombia for many years. This has been improved along with

COLOMBIA & ITS PEOPLES

much else, and now that the Panamá Canal has brought the country into closer touch with civilization it may be expected to mend its ways in all directions. Unless further rich deposits of precious metals should be discovered (which is not unlikely), it will never be a land of more than moderate prosperity, but it can supply several commodities of which the world stands in need. Coffee is its largest export. It could increase very largely its shipments of hides for leather and of rubber. Besides gold and silver, it supplies the European and North American markets with platinum and with the finest emeralds that are procurable anywhere. These

are found in limestone. Indian operatives are clever at working the steel bars pointed at one end with which the limestone is broken up so that the calcite in which the emeralds are embedded may be detached. Great care must be taken to avoid breaking the stones themselves.

The skill with which the Indians handle the bars, using just the amount of force necessary and no more, proves that they can be trained to use their intelligence. It is an English company which employs them. They make contracts to work for three months at a time, and during that period they do not leave the mine compounds. Work goes



BUSINESS CORNER AND PLAYGROUND IN SANTA FÉ DE BOGOTÁ

At this evening hour the usually busy market-street is deserted, save for the childish figures at play on its rugged surface. The long shop windows are shut and barred, but on the morrow they will be opened at an early hour and filled with tempting wares, for Bogotá is the chief town of Colombia, and can display choice goods from America, Britain, and several European countries.

on night and day, but the workers have no objection to this. They are well treated, and they respond by doing their best.

The Colombian Indian, in general, is ready to undertake the heaviest toil with patience and surprising immunity from fatigue. He is docile and a lover of peace. "Naturally civil, kind-hearted and hospitable" is the description given by one who was American Minister to the Republic. He loves his patch of land. Something of those qualities implanted by Nature has been effaced, or at any rate overlaid by the brutality of man, but enough remains to show what the Indians might be. They are capable of warm affection in family relations. If they are timid and suspicious it is because they have good reason to fear and distrust the white man.

Of course these Indians are superstitious; they love the processional part of religion; they believe implicitly the most absurd tales, such as that about the finely-carved marble pulpit in Cartagena Cathedral. This, it is related, was sent by a Pope as a present to the faithful people of the port between two and three hundred years ago. On the voyage out the ship which carried it was boarded by pirates, who threw it over the side as they had no use for such burdensome booty. The pulpit, however, refused to sink, and when the pirates had cleared off it was hauled into the ship again.

Unfortunately a second lot of pirates made their appearance, and this time the ship was set on fire. Down it went, with everything in it, excepting the pulpit. This floated as before, and beached itself near Cartagena as if it



DEFT AND DAINTY FACTORY GIRL OF BOGOTÁ

The town of Bogotá possesses many a modern establishment with up-to-date equipment, and in the light and airy hygienic laboratory of a well-known Spanish firm this pretty Colombian girl may be seen at her work of preparing small packing-cases

knew quite well where to go. On the beach it remained for many years, until an enterprising sea-captain about to sail for Spain thought he might as well take it to Spain and sell it there. This notion came to the knowledge of the Archbishop of Cartagena (it was apparently the first he had heard of the pulpit's arrival), and he informed the captain that it was the property of the cathedral. In spite of this the captain got the pulpit aboard and set sail. The Archbishop pursued him with a curse so terrible that immediately a storm arose and the vessel was lost with all hands. But the unsinkable pulpit floated back to Cartagena, and this time was picked up and placed in the cathedral where it belonged. Such stories as that the Indians

COLOMBIA & ITS PEOPLES

believe to this day, but, on the whole, the Roman Catholic mission priests have done good work among the natives. The regular priesthood, which is largely composed of half-breeds, is less highly spoken of. Some attribute the poorness of the educational system to the Church, which by the Constitution is given a good deal of power in this department. Education, it is laid down, must be "organized and directed in accordance with the Catholic religion."

Sad Results of an Evil System

Of the negroes, originally imported from Africa to do work which was too heavy for the native inhabitants, the American Minister already quoted from wrote that they were "idle, vain, superstitious, cruel, cunning and brutal." A heavy indictment! Few people who know them have any good word to say for them. They were imported as slaves to make the Spaniards rich. No effort was ever spent on trying to civilize them. Now that they are free from control those consequences appear which might have been foreseen. They dwell for the most part in the hotter and more unhealthy regions, but the heat and the unhealthiness seem to agree with them. They do as little work as they need. Morals they have none, and their habits are unpleasant, to say the least. Yet, as experience has shown elsewhere, the African negro can be led upwards in the scale of human development and can be made a useful citizen and a self-respecting man.

Mosquitoes, Mud, and Alligators

The unhealthiness mentioned, which prevails over large areas, is due chiefly to the damp heat of the river regions and to the mosquitoes which carry the germs of disease. On the Magdalena river they are of specially stalwart build and fierce in proportion. It is told how a swarm of them which had driven a river steamer's crew below decks, followed the men down and tried to burst in the cabin doors! If that story must be set beside the tale of the pulpit, there is no doubt that the mosquitoes have sometimes so maddened cattle on

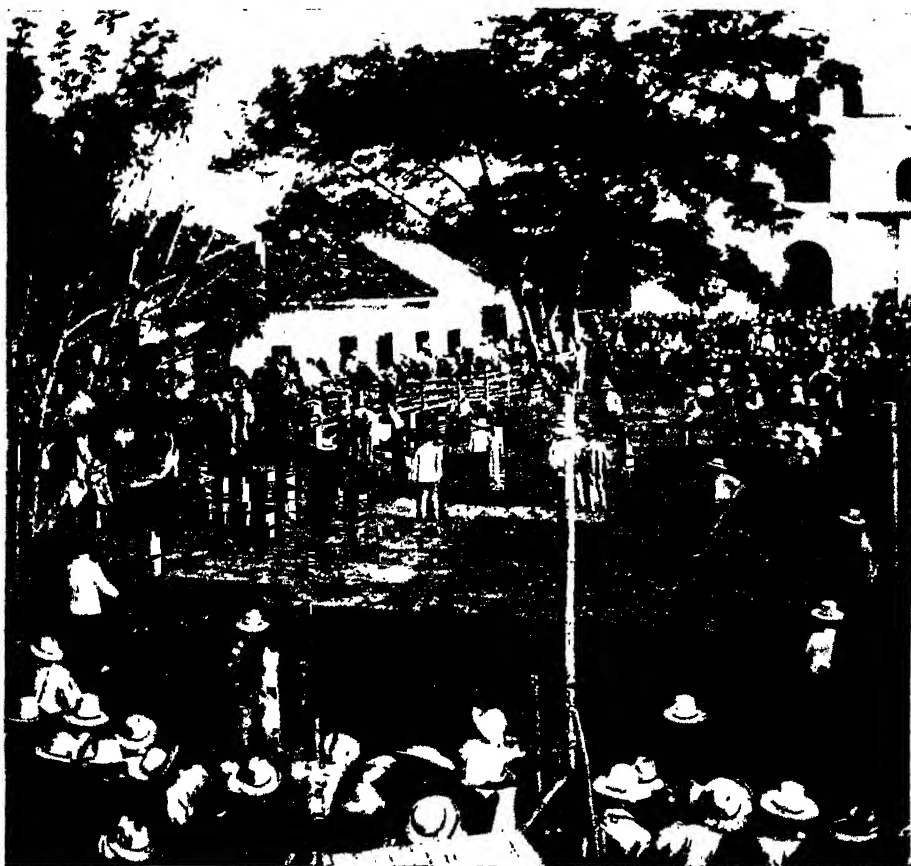
board the steamers as to make them jump into the stream.

The Magdalena, the chief river in the Republic, is full of mud and alligators. The alligators lie so thick along the banks that travellers are told it is possible to walk for miles on their backs without touching earth. The river is difficult to navigate because of the numbers of sandbanks in its course which frequently shift their shape or position and cause the steamers to run aground. Tourists do not welcome any lengthening of the voyage, for the food is very bad and the dirt disgusting. The boats are like those on the Mississippi, described by Dickens in "Martin Chuzzlewit." They burn wood fuel, and tie up for hours sometimes in order to take it on board. Yet travellers have been known to wish themselves back even upon the river steam-boats after a short experience of land travel away from the railroad.

Penitential Progress Overland

In bumping ox-carts on rough tracks or on mule-back up and down mountains, they think with regret of the smoothness of river transport. Their aching bodies yearn for the dolce far niente of the chair on deck, shaded from the sun. By some the variety and the vicissitudes of such travel are found amusing. They enjoy the company at out-of-the-way inns, the strange characters they meet in them, the open-air life, the beauty of the changing scene. Where there are no villages, rest-houses for travellers are kept up. These are dirty, but their shelter is accepted gratefully when there is no other available.

Near the mouth of the Magdalena river is Puerto Colombia, which disputes with Cartagena the honour of being the chief port of the country. That place was once held firmly by Cartagena, until it was superseded by Barranquilla, some distance up the river. To-day Barranquilla is the chief river port, and has a railway to Puerto Colombia. A description of Savanilla, from which Puerto Colombia is an offshoot, written some thirty years ago, shows how small its



COLOMBIAN TOREADORS IN THE RING AT ST. ANA, TOLIMA

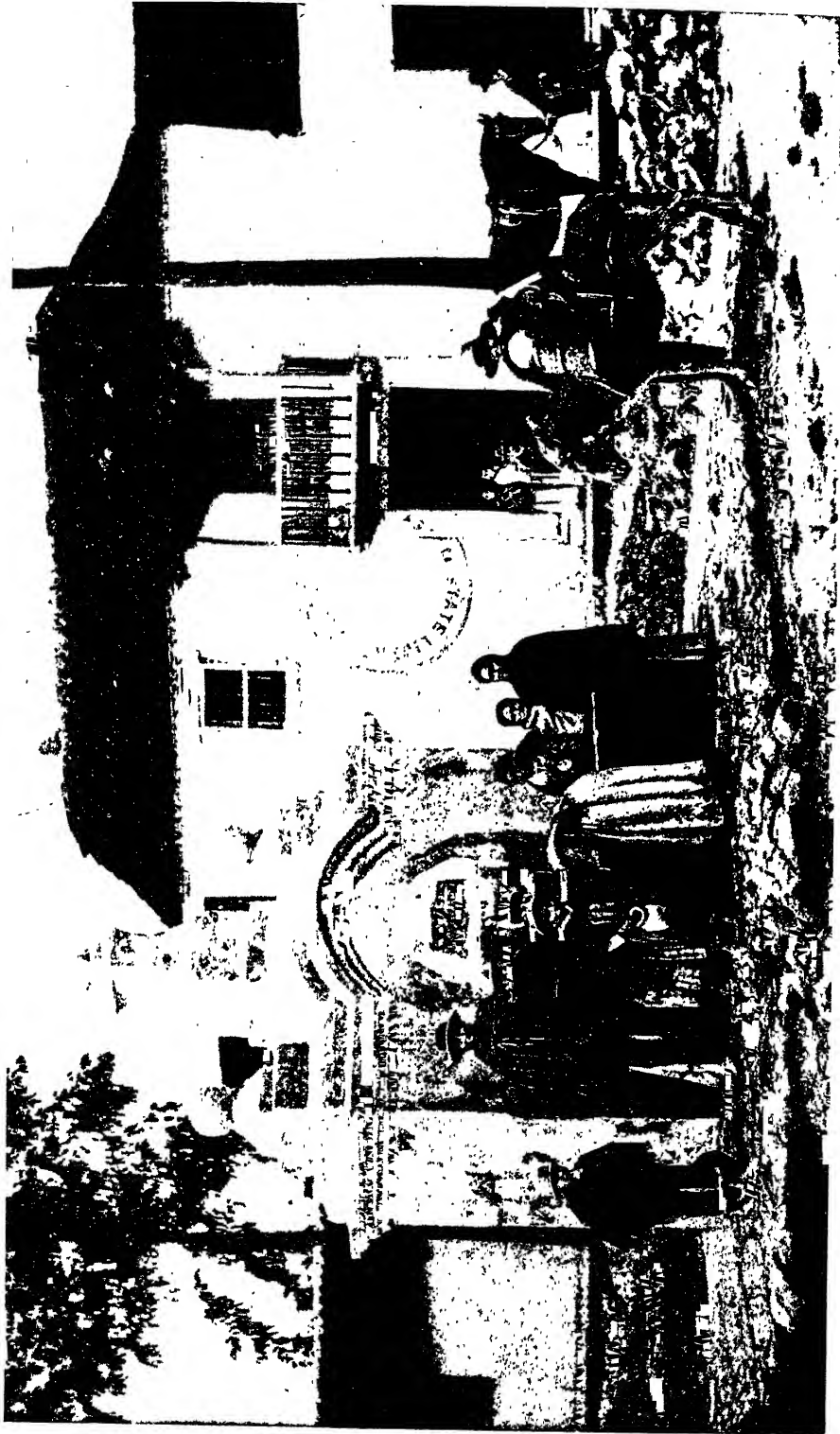
The bull-fight, the national sport of the Spaniard, is no unusual sight in the department of Tolima, and never fails to draw together a large throng of enthusiastic spectators from the Spanish and Indian communities. It is the favourite diversion of many of the workers in the far-famed Tolima gold mines, and no great holiday would be deemed complete which had not witnessed this spectacle

Photo, Edwin Edwards

beginnings were. It was then a desolate spit of sand, uninhabited save for a colony of longshoremen, boatmen and "roustabouts," who swarmed "like so many animals in filthy huts built of palm leaves," and exchanged the money they earned for wine in the disreputable saloons. "Murder is frequent among them," the description went on, "and fighting their chief amusement."

All that belongs to the past, and the change which has been brought to pass there may be typical of a change that will come over the Republic as a whole now that it is in closer touch with the United States and with Europe. It has a broad basis of resources on which to

build, and as its future prospects expand, so will a Colombian nation be formed. This will be, in the opinion of those who know the country well, a mixture of Spanish and Indian. There is no race barrier in the Republic. No one is ashamed of being a mestizo (half-breed). Most of these are labourers, small farmers, fishermen, domestic servants, artisans or shopkeepers. But many are found among the lawyers, doctors and business men. The number of families with an unmixed Spanish descent is small and grows smaller. The new race is in process of formation. How it will turn out must be doubtful for a century or two.



WHERE COLOMBIANS MEET TO PASS THE TIME OF DAY WHILE DRAWING WATER FROM THE FOUNTAIN

All the world over the well or the pool serves as a centre for gossip and the circulation of the news of the day. At this whitewashed fountain on the outskirts of their town a crowd of citizens may be seen at all hours of the day drawing water for their household needs. Those who live in the outlying districts carry it home in casks strapped on their mules

Colombia

II. The Republic's Long Fight for Freedom

By F. Loraine Petre

Author of "The Republic of Colombia," etc.

SPANISH settlements at Santa Marta and Cartagena, on the northern coast of what is now the Republic of Colombia, were founded early in the sixteenth century; but it was not till 1536 that Gonzalo Jiménez de Quesada set forth southwards. A year later, he reached the plateau of Bogotá with only 170 followers out of the 1,000 with whom he had left Santa Marta. The rest had perished in the swamps of the Magdalena valley, from disease or the attacks of wild beasts and wilder savages. For nearly three centuries the history of the Kingdom of New Granada, as Quesada called his conquest in memory of his Spanish birth-place, differs only in detail from that of the other Spanish-American colonies.

The native population, less civilized and more submissive than Mexicans or Peruvians, were never a source of anxiety after their first subjugation. Treated virtually as a slave by his conquerors, made to work in conditions fatal to his health, the native Indian found his lot only slightly ameliorated by the introduction of the African slave to take his place on work which spelt death for him. Both these classes counted for nothing with the temporary Spanish administrators, generally men sent out from the mother country, who looked forward to returning to Europe, after a few years of exile, enriched by the spoil of the countries for the benefit of which they were supposed to work.

Spain's Vicious Colonial Policy

The home Government professed, and perhaps felt, great interest in and affection for its new subjects, and sent out a steady stream of orders and laws designed to provide for their spiritual and bodily welfare. Of the former the Inquisition, of the latter the viceroys, captains-general, presidents, and their subordinates were the curators—not a satisfactory agency in either case. Both were too far away in time and space to be controlled from Spain, and an administrator of a colony, if called to account for his stewardship, could rely on impunity, provided he could claim credit for ample remittances of treasure and strict attention to Spain's commercial policy.

But there was another class from which the revolt against Spain eventually proceeded. The Creoles, descendants of the original Conquistadores or of other domiciled immigrants, were sometimes of pure

Spanish descent, more often the offspring of intermarriages or illicit connexions with the native population. They were, by law, eligible for the highest administrative posts; in practice, all the plums of the military and civil services fell to the officials from Spain and their hangers-on.

Naturally, the Creole hated the Spanish official, who repaid hatred with contempt. Both Spaniard and Creole oppressed the Indian who, when he found himself compelled by circumstances to side with one or the other, was only swayed in his choice by personal or local considerations. The narrow and selfish colonial policy of Spain aimed at extracting from the New World every possible ounce of gold and silver, of cotton and wool, and other things which she did not herself produce. At the same time, by suppressing every industry, such as weaving or viticulture, which could compete with her own, she sought to create a dumping ground for her own surplus products.

Bolívar's Dream and Disillusionment

It must be clearly understood that when revolt at last came, it was the movement, not of the Indians or the slaves, but of the Creoles. Discontent with the rule of Spain was rife when the successful revolt of the British North American colonies held out the first hopes of throwing off the yoke. The country, indeed, was ripe for rebellion, but the Creoles, unlike the North American colonists, had much to learn before they were fitted to bear the responsibilities of self-government. A few half-hearted insurrections in the latter part of the eighteenth century were easily subdued. With the crippling of Spain by Napoleon's action came the Creoles' opportunity. The first serious attempts to throw off the yoke in New Granada occurred in 1810; but it took nearly ten years of alternate victory and defeat, of massacring and being massacred, before Simon Bolívar, passing the Andes from Venezuela, finally broke the Spanish power at the battle of Boyacá, August 7, 1819.

At one time the Liberator thought he had succeeded in uniting in one vast republic of Colombia the territories now constituting the states of Venezuela, Colombia, and Ecuador. But before he died, Venezuela and Ecuador had broken away, and even the presidency of Colombia had slipped from his hands. He died uttering despairing prognostications of the

COLOMBIA'S STORY

fate of the countries for which he had sacrificed his fortune and his life. They were not far wide of the truth; for the next three-quarters of a century is filled by a succession of civil wars, waged nominally for constitutional reforms, really, in the majority of cases, by rival candidates for power and personal aggrandisement.

In 1831 Santander succeeded the Liberator, and in 1832 a new constitution was framed. The state became the Republic of New Granada, a loose federation of provinces endowed with extensive powers of self-government. Santander's popularity soon waned, largely owing to his having honestly accepted for his state a fair share of the debt of Bolívar's greater Colombia. He was unable to secure the succession of his protégé Obando to the presidency, and up to 1841 civil war raged, ending in the triumph of Mosquera, who had been elected Santander's successor. A new constitution was framed in 1843, in accordance with Mosquera's views. When at last Obando succeeded in getting himself elected, there was a fresh constitution in 1853, which recognized the right of secession by the provinces, a right which had already been temporarily assumed by several of them. It was again exercised by Panamá and Antioquia in 1856 for a time.

Friction with Panamá

The conservatives, led by Ospino the lawyer, now had a short tenure of office, but were ejected in 1859 by a rebellion promoted by Mosquera the soldier. Of course, there was a new constitution, and this time the name of the state was changed to the United States of Colombia. Mosquera, having put down an insurrection in which the aid of Ecuador had been called in by the insurgents, entered on his last presidential term in 1864, was impeached by Congress, and banished. Fighting still went on for a time, especially in Panamá, and then followed some years of very necessary peace under Presidents Salgar, Murillo, Perez, Parra, and Trujillo. Under the first of these the first treaty in connexion with the Panamá Canal was concluded with the U.S.A.

During the next ten years, the chief figure in the presidential chair was Rafael Nuñez, who occupied it for three terms. He had to suppress several revolts, which broke out when his supporters, who had elected him in his absence, believing him to be a liberal, discovered that he had, in the meanwhile, changed his views. On the plea that his health would not stand residence in Bogotá, most of his last presidency was spent in Cartagena, the government at Bogotá being carried on by his deputies. He was responsible for the new constitution of 1886, which reduced the sovereign states of the Republic to the status of departments of a centralized republic, and once more, for the last time so far, renamed the state the Republic of Colombia.

Canal Complications Settled

Nuñez died in 1895, and was succeeded by Caro, his deputy at Bogotá. His successor, the aged conservative San Clemente, was deposed by his vice-president, Marroquin, and died in confinement. A fresh revolt against Marroquin broke out in 1900 and lasted till 1903. There was much fighting on the Isthmus of Panamá, which induced the U.S.A. and Great Britain to land marines to protect their nationals. On November 3, 1903, Panamá seceded and declared its independence. The part played by the U.S.A. in this revolt is mixed up with all the complicated negotiations between the U.S.A., M. de Lesseps and his successors, and Colombia, regarding the Panamá Canal. It is said that the commander of the Colombian troops on the isthmus was induced to ship them on a British steamer, and, when he repented him of his treason, found his return to the shore barred by American troops. Colombia has always maintained that America was mainly responsible for the secession which, at any rate, enabled her to get the Canal question settled to her satisfaction.

When President Marroquin's term ended, in 1904, he was succeeded by General Rafael Reyes, who promptly dissolved a hostile Congress, and propounded a new



THE REPUBLIC OF COLOMBIA

COLOMBIA'S STORY

constitution to the Constituent Assembly, which he summoned in 1905. Under this, though the presidential term was fixed at four years, Reyes himself was installed for ten. He appeared to be virtually a dictator; but opposition soon commenced, and an attempt to assassinate him was made in 1906. By 1909, finding the opposition too strong, he retired to Europe, leaving his understudy, J. Holguín, in charge till Congress could be assembled to elect a successor. Their choice fell on General Valencia, who was elected for one year only. After him the presidents have been Carlos Restrepo, 1910-14; José Vicente Concha, 1914-18; and Marco Fedel Suarez.

One of the questions which, since the emancipation, has always threatened external trouble, is that of the boundaries of Colombia on the side of Venezuela, Brazil, Peru, and Ecuador. More than once there had been talk of reconstituting the greater Colombia of Bolívar, which would, of course, have solved the difficulty with Venezuela and Ecuador. But the negotiations fell through, owing to the objections raised by the two last-named republics. In 1883 an agreement was come to, referring the case between Colombia and Venezuela to the arbitration of the King of Spain, whose decision was promulgated in 1891. The rival claims of Colombia and Brazil to territory about the head waters of the Amazon and its

tributaries are still unsettled. In the case of Peru, attempts have been made to come to an agreement, and in that of Ecuador a treaty on the subject has actually been signed.

Ever since Panamá seceded in 1903, negotiations had been going on with the U.S.A. Colombia, as stated, attributed the secession of Panamá to American action, and maintained that she could have recovered her lost province, had not the U.S.A. stood in the way and prohibited invasion by sea, practically the only way of reaching Panamá. America has offered the following terms in full satisfaction: A payment of £5,000,000 in five yearly instalments of £1,000,000 each; Colombia to be allowed free passage through the Panamá Canal for warships, troops, and war material; coal, oil, and marine salt, produced in Colombia for home consumption, also to be allowed free passage. The last two offers would bring the Pacific provinces into communication with Bogotá, from which they are separated by the great range of the Central Cordillera.

Several years of internal and external peace have undoubtedly enabled Colombia to make great strides, and to attract to her some of the capital which is so badly needed for opening out her internal communications and the vast mineral and agricultural resources which she possesses. It is to be hoped that political stability, based on unselfish patriotism, may ensure the continuance of peace and progress.

COLOMBIA: FACTS AND FIGURES

The Country

Occupies north-west corner of South America, bordered east by Venezuela and Brazil, on south by Ecuador and Peru. Area about 440,850 square miles. Coastline on Caribbean Sea and Pacific Ocean about 3,000 miles, with good harbours. Country is within tropics; startling contrasts of altitude, climate, character and products, between Andean region (Western, Central, and Eastern Cordilleras), roughly parallel to Pacific Coast and immense plains stretching eastward into regions of the Orinoco and Amazon. Southern part of Andean system has highest peaks (Mount Huila, 18,600 ft.). Independence of Panamá (dealt with separately), formally recognized in 1921. Population about 5,850,000, mainly of Spanish, African, and Indian origin; pure whites about one-fifth; Indian half-breeds more than half.

Government and Constitution

Republic consists of fourteen departments, three intendencies, and six commissaries, under President elected for four years, with Congress (Senate of thirty-four elected for four years and House of Representatives of ninety-two members elected for two years).

Defence

Army service compulsory for from one to one and a half years. Peace effective about 6,000; war effective about 50,000. No navy.

Commerce and Industries

Coffee plant, fig and cinchona trees flourish in temperate zone; rice, cacao, sugar cane, bananas, yams, tobacco, indigo, cotton, caoutchouc, vegetable ivory, medicinal plants, resins, dye woods in hot region. Rubber tree grows wild.

Large crops of potatoes, grain and leguminous plants raised in cold region. Much of soil fertile; wealth of iron, copper, lead, platinum, coal, sulphur, zinc, antimony, gold, silver, and precious stones, but land and minerals little developed. Petroleum exists. Cattle raising extensive in temperate zone. Panamá hat industry of growing importance. Exports (largely coffee, hides, bananas, rubber, gold, silver, platinum) valued in 1920 at £14,074,349; imports (foodstuffs, drugs, metals, cotton goods), £18,845,054. External trade mainly with U.S.A. and Great Britain. Monetary unit, gold dollar equal to one-fifth of pound sterling. Metric system adopted in 1857.

Communications

Railway mileage about 900. Inland traffic mainly by river. Magdalena navigable for 900 miles, tributaries affording some 200 miles in addition. Government telegraph lines, about 13,640 miles.

Religion and Education

State religion Roman Catholic, but other faiths permitted. Primary education free but not compulsory. Educational establishments include 5,300 primary schools with 337,300 pupils; seventy-three secondary schools with 7,300 pupils; twenty-eight professional schools with 2,780 pupils; thirty-five art and trade schools with 1,600 pupils; and universities of Bogotá, Medellín, Cartagena, Popayan, Pasto.

Chief Towns

Bogotá, capital (population about 160,000), Barranquilla (64,540), Manizales (43,200), Cartagena (51,380), Medellín (79,140), Cali (45,800), Bucaramanga (24,900), Cúcuta (29,490).



"BETTER BUILD SCHOOL-ROOMS FOR THE BOY THAN CELLS AND GIBBETS FOR THE MAN"

Education is taken very seriously in Costa Rica, and school attendance is not only legally compulsory, but is actually enforced in all but the very remote districts. There are numerous good primary schools and a few good secondary schools for both boys and girls, besides a training college for teachers in the capital. For students of exceptional promise there are State scholarships tenable at European universities.

Photo, Percy F. Martin

Costa Rica

I. A Rich Land & a Contented People

By Hamilton Fyfe

Author of "The Real Mexico," etc.

SCENICALLY and climatically, Costa Rica, discovered in 1502 by Columbus on his fourth and last voyage, may be considered one of the most suitable of the Caribbean states for European settlement. Tropical forests and savannahs, picturesque mountain-chains, a number of rapid yet navigable rivers, and a generally healthy climate, combine to render this small Central American republic exceedingly attractive. The mountains do not form a continuous chain; they are divided into two main groups, north-west and south-east, the former including the volcanoes Irazú, Turrialba, Baba, and Paos. From their destructive peaks have issued at different periods appalling eruptions, the last as recently as 1910. More than one half of the superficial area of Costa Rica, lying between 2,900 ft. and 6,825 ft. above the sea, is covered with virgin forests of valuable timber and vegetation so dense that it is almost impossible to enter the interior except by way of the rivers.

Struck by its fertility and by the variety of its profuse vegetation, Columbus, when he sailed along its Atlantic shore, named it the Rich Coast. No one has ever disputed the

fitness of the title. The great explorer named also what is now the chief port on the Atlantic shore of the republic. He called it Puerto de Limón, from the limes which he saw growing. Landing there from the steamer, the visitor sees a town consisting mostly of shacks and bamboo huts, with wharves, warehouses, railway workshops and sidings, all presenting a busy appearance.

Beyond the area of human occupation spread swamps and forest, filled with tropical trees, flowers, orchids, and birds, while deep within the jungle lurk deadly snakes and stealthy jaguars. It is an unhealthy place, and when the train carrying one away towards the

chief centres of population on the slope towards the Pacific clears the tropical zone and begins to climb the mountain range between the two oceans, one feels relief from ever-present danger and fills one's lungs contentedly with the fresh air of the hills.

The Atlantic shore is, however, the only region of Costa Rica which has a really bad climate. The country has been called the healthiest tropical region in the New World. On the high plateau which occupies the whole of the interior, the weather resembles



SUNSHINE IN HER HEART

Mixed blood, Spanish and West Indian, runs in this Costa Rican girl's veins. To the one strain she owes her charming grace and to the other her sunny good temper

Photo, Publishers' Photo Service



THATCH RESIDENCE OF THE CHIEF OF THE TALAMANCAS

The scattered Indian tribes of the Atlantic forest zone of Costa Rica are grouped together in a single family under the name of Talamanca. Their numbers, greatly reduced in recent years, are now estimated at about 3,000. They made such a stubborn resistance against their Spanish conquerors that history records them as having fought "with greater valour than any other nation of the Indies"

Photo, H. Wimmer

perpetual spring in some latitude where spring means hot days and pleasantly cool nights. At San José, the capital, the mercury in a Fahrenheit thermometer never falls below 60, and does not often rise above 80 degrees. The houses have no fireplaces; if you wanted an overcoat there, it would have to be sent out to you.

The town of San José lies in a rich and charming valley between high mountains. The geological nature of the country is impressed on you at once when you are told that eight volcanoes can be seen among them. From one or other of these smoke is pretty sure to be gently drifting in the clear, calm air. It is not often that they show more active signs of life, but the inhabitants are glad to see the smoke; indeed, if they did not see it, they would fear the worst. The belief is that underground fires and gases find a vent so long as any of the craters acts as a chimney; if the chimneys got stopped up there would be a fearful rending of the earth's surface. Because of the risk of such disasters the houses of the Costa Ricans are usually of one storey, at most of two, and many are built still with light mud walls,

though red brick is becoming more common.

Cartago, the old capital, was three times destroyed by earthquakes, the last time in 1910. It lies higher than San José, and has an even better climate for those whose hearts are not affected by altitude. The slopes of the mountain above it are like those of a Scottish moor. The railway from Puerto Limón to the Pacific port, Punta Arenas, runs through Cartago after leaving the capital. Another port, Boca del Toro, has been created by enterprise and ingenuity out of a swamp. For many months sea-water was pumped over the swamp, and within a year the sand and shells which came through the pipe from the sea formed a hard, white surface, on which a town was built, and in which trees and flowers flourish.

Such transformations are unusual in the Central American states, and this surprises those who know the Costa Ricans well, since they are not famous for their energy. Yet, by comparison with most of their neighbours, they make a good showing. Their trade in coffee, for example, has greatly increased. In

COSTA RICA & ITS PEOPLE

1850, when this product began to be known, especially in France and England, for its excellent flavour, only fourteen million pounds were exported. In a quarter of a century that quantity was nearly trebled, and now it has gone very far beyond that.

A good deal of the credit for the development of this and other resources

of Costa Rica—bananas, for instance—must be given to the American and British planters who moved into the Republic from the United States and the West Indies. The land was wisely offered on very easy terms, which benefited the country as much as the settlers; they improved methods of cultivation and sending to market, and



SOCIETY BELLES OF COSTA RICA'S CAPITAL

Costa Rica is said to be "the healthiest country in the New World," and, judging from the appearance of these handsome girls of its capital, San José, the climate deserves its reputation. Except for short intervals San José has been the capital for the last hundred years, the seat of government having been transferred from Cartago because of the eruptions of its volcanic neighbour Irazú

Photo, Publishers' Photo Service



WEST INDIAN WORKERS IN A BANANA-PACKING CENTRE

Americans have played an important part in the commercial development of Costa Rica, and have virtually monopolised the banana trade. One American business concern holds thousands of acres of banana plantations, cultivated and worked on the most scientific principles. These plantations present a wonderful spectacle of luxuriant vegetation and provide labour for a large number of negroes from the West Indies, both in the field and in the packing-sheds

Photo, Publishers' Photo Service

so helped on the prosperity of the people. Of course, there is still ample room for vigorous and intelligent utilisation of the Costa Ricans' resources. They have many good qualities, but they are not likely to undertake this themselves. Their steady-going, peaceable disposition, however, gives Costa Rica a far better name as a country for settlers than

any other Central American state enjoys. It has not been disgraced and damaged by the frequent revolutions which have disturbed the rest. Even when dictators have arisen, there has been no fighting to speak of, and next to no bloodshed.

The chief reason for this uncommon proof of good sense is the faint interest taken in politics, apparently due to the

COSTA RICA & ITS PEOPLE

existence of a peasant proprietor class, which values stability and order. The small farmers derive far more satisfaction from working their land and disposing of their produce than they could find in the feverish excitement of killing each other in civil war for no reason except to change one tyrant for another. Wealth is more evenly distributed in Costa Rica than elsewhere. A more genuine effort is made to educate the people: school-attendance is not merely compulsory on paper: parents are made to send their children, save in the very remote districts, where there are no schools. Political life is comparatively clean, governments do not employ large numbers of spies to watch what their opponents are doing, ministers attend to the business of the

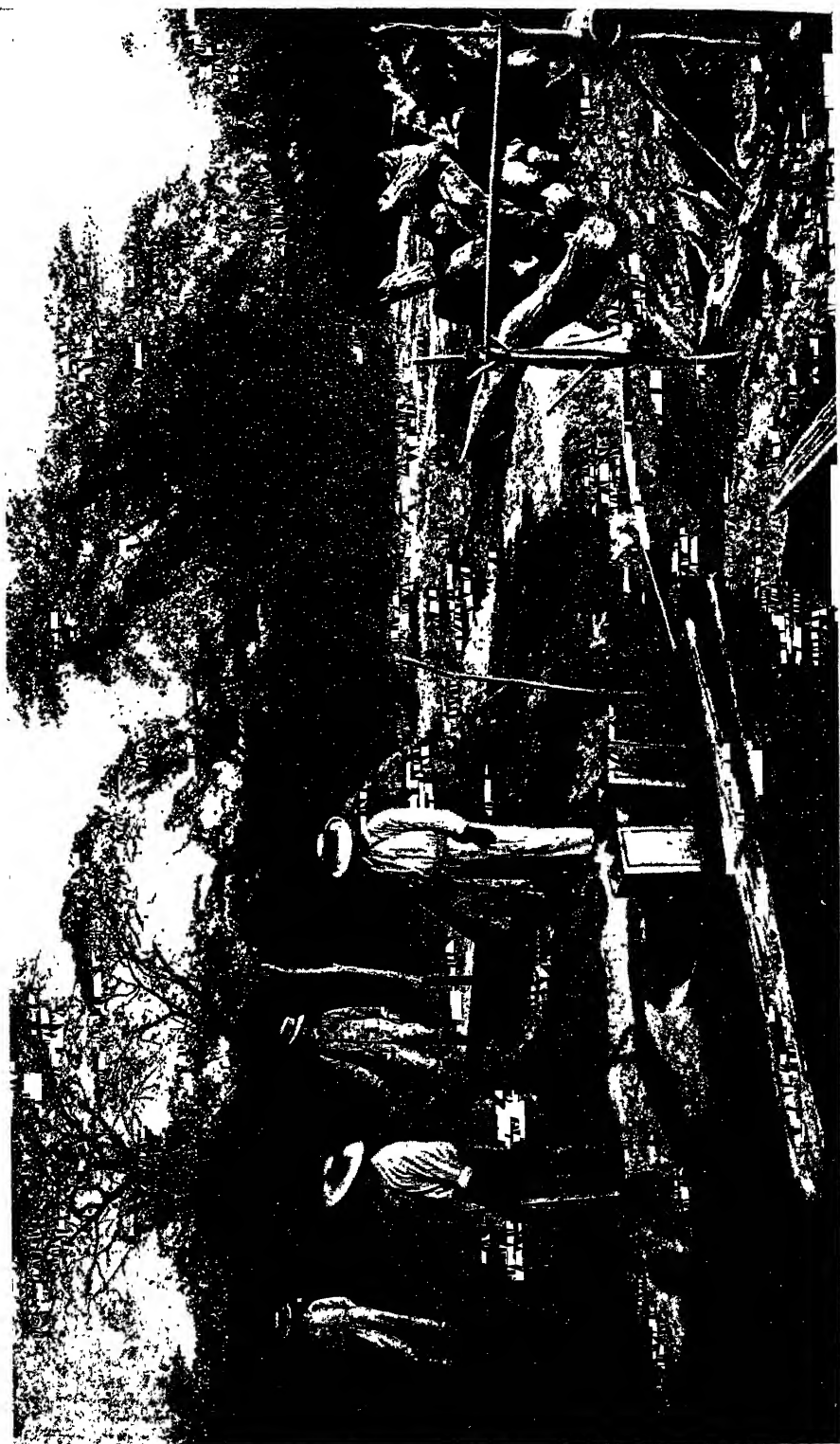
country, party strife is rarely roused beyond a moderate degree of fervour.

The man who did more than any other to set the feet of the Costa Ricans on the path of good sense and prosperity was an Indian who could neither read nor write. His name was Tomás Guardia. He was employed in 1872 to carry out a revolution, his name having become known as that of a daring cavalry leader during a war with Nicaragua. At the head of a hundred men he surprised the capital, overpowered the "army" with the greatest ease, and seized the government offices, driving out the president. The plan of his employers was that one of them should be chosen to fill the vacancy, but Guardia fancied the position for himself, and he was duly elected. On the whole



ON THE MODEL FARM OF EL SALVADOR IN COSTA RICA

Some two-thirds of the population of the Republic are peasant proprietors. The land is wonderfully fertile, ample sunshine and frequent rains ensuring splendid crops. As many domestic animals are imported by the State to improve the native breeds, stock-farming is developing rapidly. The one enemy of farmers—and that only in certain districts—is the huge, migratory vampire bat, which can bleed the strongest animal to death in one night



WORKING THE SALT MINES ON THE SHORES OF THE GULF OF NICOYA IN THE REPUBLIC OF COSTA RICA
Costa Rica is often known as the Land of Bananas, and from the innumerable plantations a colossal amount of this fruit is exported annually to the United States and Europe. Although its resources are not yet fully drawn upon Costa Rica—which is Spanish for "Rich Coast"—has well earned its name, and has untold wealth both above and below ground, salt being but one of the many minerals in which its earth is rich.

COSTA RICA & ITS PEOPLE

his reign was in many ways a benefit to his country, though he left it with a heavy burden of debt hanging round its neck.

It was owing to the rivalry between two English bankers, who each wanted to arrange a loan for the Republic, that the revolution was planned. The money supplied was to be expended upon the making of railways; and as soon as Guardia was firmly in power, he agreed that the loan should be raised in London and should amount nominally to £3,400,000. Of that sum it is said that only one million went into the state treasury. The remainder seems to have been swallowed up in commissions and other forms of chicanery before any credit was transferred from London to San José. Thus, by allowing himself to fall among thieves, President Guardia put the nation under the necessity of paying interest upon a very large sum of money which it had not received.

He also muddled the laying of the railway for which the loan was floated, though here there was a certain method in his madness. The material was landed at Punta Arenas after its voyage from England round Cape Horn. Clearly the line to San José ought to have been begun at Punta Arenas. But Guardia was afraid that the ox-carters, who saw their living about to be taken from them by the railway, would provoke a revolution. The Spanish upper class was opposed to any change, and the mass of the Indian and half-caste population was so ignorant and superstitious that its feelings could have been worked upon and its fear of the unknown aroused.

The president accordingly had the rails, the engines, and the carriages all dragged up and over the mountains in ox-carts and landed at the capital, where with great ceremony he laid the first rail and got the work started. The expense of this proceeding was so heavy that for a very long time the completion of the line was delayed, and its cost was far greater than it need have been if it had been built in the natural way. The railway has been costly to the people in another direction. It was from the first made use of by the government as an instrument



THE CHOSEN OF THE PEOPLE

This thoughtful-faced chief exerts nominal authority over the remaining Indian tribes in the district of Talamanca, who retained their independence despite the efforts of the Conquistadores to subjugate them

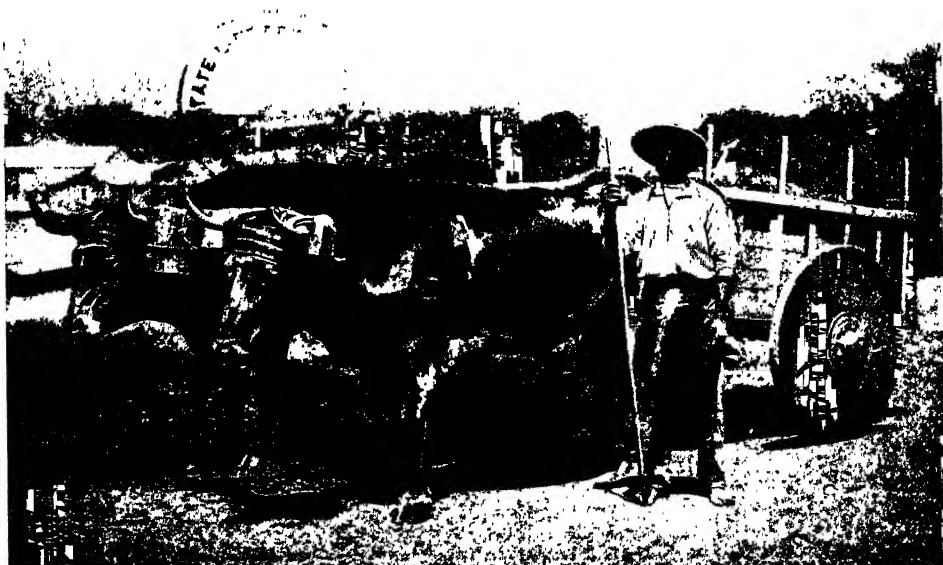
Photo, Percy F. Martin

of patronage. Numbers of hangers-on made their living out of it without doing any useful work. The staff was always far larger than it need have been. The guards of trains were compared to



"GOOD PULL-UP FOR CARTERS" IN SAN JOSÉ

Nearly all the heavy transport of Costa Rica is still done by ox-wagon, the carters travelling in long caravans such as this, halted outside a wine-shop in the capital. Joy-riding on the tramway that runs straight through the town is an evening amusement of many women, who travel up and down the line in the brightly-lighted cars, a mutual admiration society



SLOW BUT SURE SURVIVES IN CENTRAL AMERICA

Light carts with solid wheels, employed to prevent the mud on the bad roads from clogging the axles, are the vehicles in most common use in Costa Rica. They are drawn by a pair of oxen, which the carter guides with a long goad, whistling to them when he wants them to stop or to move on

Photos, Publishers' Photo Service

major-generals, so gorgeous was their uniform and so overbearing their demeanour.

Ox-carts continued to be used, although the railway had come, and the carters continued their practice of travelling in caravans, a great many at a time. Like the mass of the Costa Ricans, they are an honest, courteous body of men, but nothing will make them hurry or move at all unless the whole procession is ready. The powerful oxen they drive come from the fine, grassy plains of the table-land, which might pasture millions of cattle. Of this possibility little advantage is taken, nor are the minerals in the soil of the Republic worked to any extent, though it is believed by some to be as rich in gold as the South African Rand. Silver and copper are known to exist also in rich deposits. The Spaniards, while they owned the country, did a good deal of mining, and there is no doubt that the industry will be revived some day. The principal crops, in addition to coffee and bananas, are maize, sugar-cane, rice, and potatoes; indeed, the nature of the soil and climate is such that almost everything might be grown on Costa Rican territory.

The natives are, it need scarcely be said, content with what they have grown for centuries and with the most primitive methods of cultivation. Nor are the Spanish families which form the aristocracy of the nation any more enterprising. The people of this class are, as a rule, well-educated in the conventional sense. They are clever at languages, they are superficially good talkers, they are fond of music. But nothing in the



GATHERING NUTS WHOLESALE

Cohune palm nuts grow in clusters nearly as large as a man, and yield oils that are expressed like coconut-oil. During the Great War their shells provided the best charcoal for use in gas masks

shape of progress is to be expected from their endeavours.

The manners of the Indians are also softened by a taste for music. The national instrument is the marimba, made on the same principle as the xylophone. Across a framework of bamboo three or four feet long are fixed bars of the same wood; underneath these are gourds strung on wire. The bars are struck with hammers and the gourds act as sounding-boards. A plaintive, sweet melody is thus produced; the people are passionately fond of it. They sing their pretty national airs to its



PLEASANT WORK IN PRETTY SETTING: PICKING COFFEE BERRIES

Most of the excellent Costa Rica coffee is grown on the plateau on which the capital stands, and the railway to the town passes through acres of coffee plantations. Many girls and women are employed in picking the berries, the preparation of which for export is an important occupation in San José. The coffee, like the banana, industry is largely in American and British hands

Photo, Publishers' Photo Service

accompaniment, they dance to it as well, and very graceful dancers are the younger women.

The women's feet are shapely and small; they mostly wear nothing on them, not even sandals. They dress in sleeveless blouses of white cotton and short skirts reaching only to the knee, with a coloured rebosa or scarf round the shoulders and over the head. This is a variation of the Spanish mantilla, and is worn among all classes. The features of the Indians are regular and might often be called refined. They are plainly of a higher race than the negroes from the West Indies, who are to be found in large numbers, especially in the hot swamps of the coast, where they thrive in an atmosphere like that of the African tropical marshes whence their ancestors came. They are cheerful, lazy, good-tempered generally, and thievish in their habits. They do not call theft stealing, however; they call it "taking."

There are several thousand pure Indians who live in the forests near the northern frontier, and about whom little is known. They are said by the few who have been among them to be quiet, inoffensive people, living in a state of absolute savagery. Yet there are indications that they do not by any means lack intelligence. Their habit of worshipping evil spirits because (they say) it is safer to be on good terms with them than with the good ones, may not be proof of a high spirituality, but it marks the possession of a certain amount of reasoning power.

Again, their method of stalking deer with oxen is exceedingly clever. From its youth up the ox that is destined for this occupation is trained by its owner. First its horns are loosened by blows and made sore about their roots; then cords are tied to them, and the animal is made to turn its head this way or that at the owner's will. The horns soon cease to

COSTA RICA & ITS PEOPLE

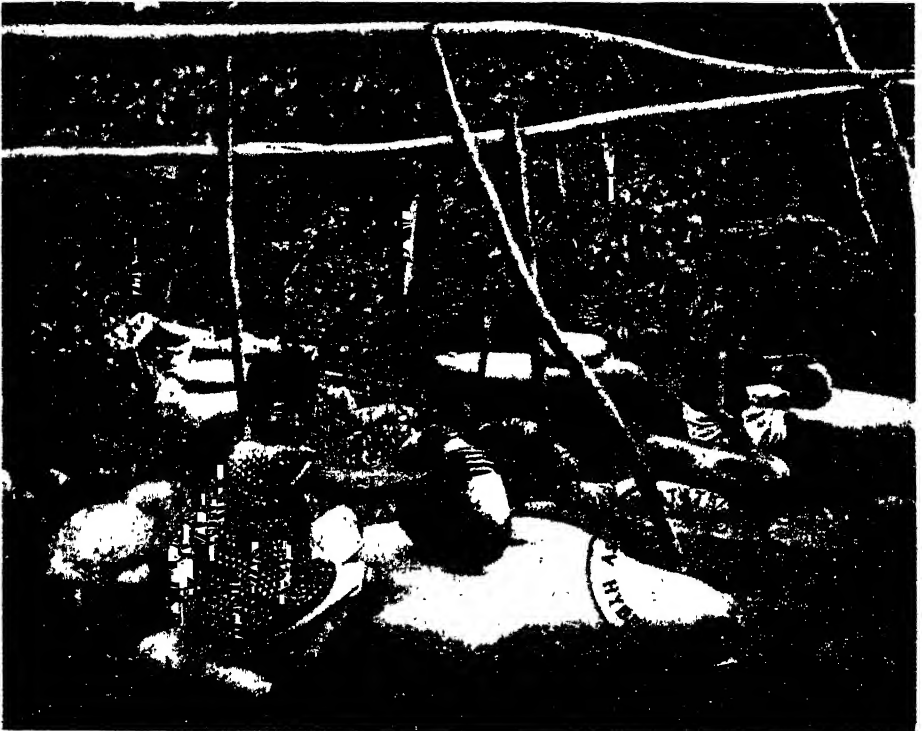
give trouble, but the habit of responding to the reins persists ; the slightest touch is enough to control the animal's movements.

Walking close to the ox and keeping hidden behind its shoulder the Indian hunter circles round the deer he has chosen. The deer sees only the ox and continues to browse without alarm. When he has got within about twenty yards of his quarry the hunter lets his arrow fly. Pierced by it, the deer is helpless. The arrow prevents it from moving easily ; it is soon taken and dispatched.

The Indians live principally on maize made into the flat, flabby cakes called tortillas and on the beans known as frijoles. An acre of forest land roughly cleared will produce enough food for a number of families ; each has in or around its dwelling (usually a mud or bamboo hut) a few fowls and wild

turkeys, a cow very likely, and a pony or mule. The men fish and trap rabbits. sometimes shoot a wild pig. They supply themselves with honey from their beehives and take the wax into the nearest town, where they get a good price for it, as the consumption of wax candles in the churches is so large.

The women do a great deal of washing ; they seem to spend a large part of their day by the river, chatting and laughing among themselves. Yet the male Indian never looks clean, unless you see him on a Sunday morning just after he has put on his fresh shirt and linen trousers. Both sexes smoke the perpetual cigarette ; both are fond of gold ear-rings. The men will do almost anything to get spirits ; the more fiery the liquor is the better it is liked. Drink is their curse here as elsewhere, and will be so while their education is such a sham.



TALAMANCA INDIAN GIRLS GRINDING GRAIN IN ANCIENT STYLE

Although they have within easy reach many conveniences and comforts of modern civilization the Talamancas prefer to live in the simple manner of their forebears, and steadfastly maintain their ancestral customs and speech. A quiet, inoffensive people, they dwell together in unruffled tribal fraternity in fixed abodes known as palenques, or stockaded encampments

Photo, H. N. Ruess

Costa Rica

II. The Story of Its Emancipation

By Percy F. Martin, F.R.G.S.

Author of "Through Five Republics of South America," etc.

COSTA RICA, which was among the earliest colonies established by Spain, about 1522, remains the one Central American republic of preponderantly white blood; descendants of its first settlers are especially proud of their Iberian origin. In the highlands may be seen what exists in hardly any other tropical country—white men on their farms bending over their hoes instead of watching the operations of native labour. Indian tribes proved so intractable under Spanish rule that they were almost eliminated, a fact which explains the large number of inhabitants of European blood. Fewer than 20,000 negroes and half-breeds are now to be found in the republic; they dwell, with some 3,000 uncivilized Indians, on the coast-lands. The whole population is estimated at 468,300.

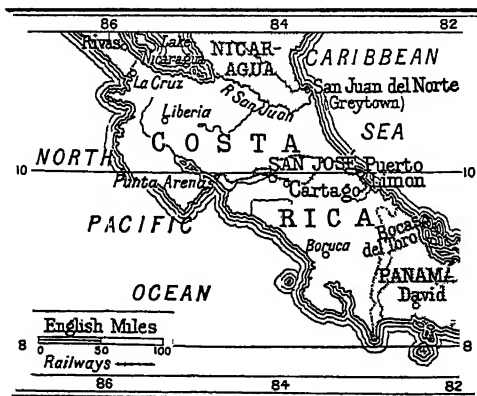
Created a separate province about 1540, Costa Rica henceforward had about sixty governors, and did not secure independence from Spain until 1821. During the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries, between the rapacity of the Spaniards and the ravages of pirates, it sank into poverty and wretchedness, from which it did not rise until the discovery of gold in 1823, two years after it had secured emancipation from Spain.

On September 15, 1821, the country, with other weak Central American states, entered into a union with Mexico, then under the Emperor Iturbide, a dependence lasting for three years only. Later followed the experimental Republic of the United States of Central America, 1823-40, Costa Rica's part in which was not a very active one. Complete independence was not achieved until 1848. The constitution, modified several times since, was promulgated on December 7, 1871, but from about 1870 until 1882 the country was virtually under a dictatorship. Preceding 1910, the republic was

governed by some twenty-seven chief magistrates, among them men endowed with patriotism and intelligence, Costa Rican political history proving comparatively free from trouble such as afflicted its neighbours, an exception being the part played in the war against the filibuster General William Walker in 1856. Some trouble arose from time to time in connexion with frontier delimitation, notably with Colombia and Panamá, but these disputes were adjusted by arbitration, the trouble with Colombia being settled in favour of Costa Rica by the arbitration of the French President, Émile Loubet, in 1900, and that with Panamá in 1910, by the arbitration of the Chief Justice of the United States Supreme Court. A Greater Republic of Central America was formed in 1895 by Honduras, Nicaragua, and Salvador, and dissolved in 1898, and Costa Rica for a time threw in her lot with this short-lived confederation. Between 1886 and 1910 every President served his full term. But in 1918 Señor Federico Tinoco Granados was deposed after serving but one year, and was succeeded by Señor Francisco Aguilar Barquero, who ruled for ten months, after which Señor Julio Acosta became President, assuming office for four years on May 8, 1920.

The superior administrative—and, as was believed, safer geographical—position of Costa Rica was recognized when, in 1907, it was decided to establish in that country a Central American Court of Justice and a Central American Pedagogical Institute.

The city of Cartago, established in 1523 at the base of the volcano Irazú, was selected. By the spring of 1910 a stately building, the gift of Andrew Carnegie, had been reared. Later, however, notwithstanding the declaration by its founders and architects that the construction was earthquake-proof, a disastrous eruption wrecked both the Palace of Peace



THE REPUBLIC OF COSTA RICA

COSTA RICA: HISTORICAL

and a large part of the city. To-day, Cartago presents the appearance of a modern Pompeii. For administrative purposes the republic is divided into the seven provinces of San José, containing the capital of the same name, Alajuela, Heredia, Cartago, Guanacaste, Punta Arenas, and Limón. The state religion is Roman Catholic, the chief ecclesiastic, the Bishop of San José, being under the jurisdiction of the Archbishop of Guatemala.

The government of Costa Rica has always been more or less an oligarchy. For generations the rule has been vested in some forty old Spanish families, closely intermarried. These well-to-do people claim the right of selecting the president. Political parties are conservative and liberal, the latter having been mostly in power of recent years. Congress has its old-fashioned members, its scholarly orators, proud of their Castilian pronunciation; its rising young lawyers, seeking forensic reputation at any cost; and its communistic members, largely engaged in denunciation of foreigners, especially North Americans. Their dislike of aliens, however, has not extended to reluctance to borrowing their money; foreign capitalists have liberally financed Costa Rican economic enterprises, as well as their not-infrequent boundary wars with neighbours. The latest has been with Panamá over the possession of certain rich lands in Coto, Chiriquí.

In the spring of 1921, oil and other

government concessions granted to British firms were repudiated, like others given to Lords Cowdray and Murray in 1913. Coffee-raising and fruit-growing are the main industries, the systematic cultivation of bananas having increased remarkably. Costa Rica is now recognised as the leading exporter of this fruit. Until 1915, cattle were not exported; to-day, they form a thriving industry which has met with the active support of the Government.

Transportation is largely in the hands of United States interests, the only British line (the Costa Rica Railway) having been handed over to Americans to operate upon an interest basis. Leased since 1905, at varying rentals, under a concession which will not expire until 1990, the return to British shareholders is small. The republic contains some 500 miles of track of 3½ ft. gauge. The main systems are the Northern Railway, Port Limón to San José (the capital), 103 miles, and San José to Alajuela, 14 miles; the Pacific Railway, Punta Arenas to San José, 69 miles. Considerable water transportation is conducted on the San Juan river, connecting with Lake Nicaragua, and between Punta Arenas and other local ports on the Gulf of Nicoya. Steamship connexions with most parts of the world are numerous and generally good, the completion of the Panamá waterway having had a profound influence upon this Central American state; new ports are being created to serve the enlarged traffic brought by the canal.

COSTA RICA: FACTS AND FIGURES

The Country

Southern state of Central America, between Nicaragua and Panamá. Area about 23,000 square miles, divided into seven provinces: San José, Alajuela, Heredia, Cartago, Guanacaste, Punta Arenas, and Limón. Population 468,300. Europeans, many of pure Spanish blood, mainly in and around San José and other towns. About 18,000 British West Indians on the banana farms in Limón; there are some 3,000 aboriginal Indians on the coast lands. Interior traversed by two mountain ranges; highest peaks of Talamanca range over 12,700 ft. Earthquakes frequent. Caribbean coast generally low, with one inlet, Port Limón; Pacific coast elevated, with two large gulfs, Nicoya and Dulce. Chief river the San Juan. Language, Spanish.

Government and Constitution

Republic with President with Cabinet of four, and Constitutional Congress of forty-three deputies elected for four years. Universal suffrage for all males of age and self-supporting.

Defence

Army includes reserve and national guard of 52,000, active army 38,950; every male between ages of eighteen and fifty liable to serve in militia.

Communications

Railway mileage about 500, being extended. Telegraph lines 1,840 miles, telephones about 1,390

miles. Several wireless installations. Government station at Colorado.

Commerce and Industries

Chief products coffee and bananas. Gold and silver mining on Pacific slope. Bee-keeping is carried on, and maize, sugar cane, rice, potatoes, and tobacco are cultivated. Live-stock in 1915 included 347,475 cattle, 64,700 horses, 76,200 pigs, in addition to mules, sheep, and goats. Total exports 1920 valued at £2,563,929 (coffee £917,420, bananas £827,988, sugar £271,660, gold, silver, etc., £200,754, cacao £96,352); imports £3,645,873 (cotton goods, cattle, coffee bags, drugs, flour, etc.). Chief trade with United States and United Kingdom. Monetary unit, the colon, equals 22.9d. Metric system in use.

Religion and Education

State religion Roman Catholic; other religions tolerated. Elementary education free and compulsory. In 1920 there were 411 elementary schools, 1,348 teachers, and 32,840 pupils. Colleges at Cartago, Alajuela, and Heredia; lyceum for boys and girls' college at San José; normal school at Heredia. Study of medicine, law, pharmacy, and dentistry provided for.

Chief Towns

San José, capital (population 38,930, with suburbs, 51,390), Alajuela (11,900), Cartago (17,400), Heredia (13,880), Limón (10,230), Punta Arenas (5,100).



HOUSE TO HOUSE DELIVERY OF VEGETABLES BY PACK-HORSEMEN

Horses were introduced into Cuba by the Spaniards, and the animals now bred in all parts of the island are descendants of the old Andalusian stock. The characteristic Cuban horse is a stout pony with the build of a cob, and a peculiar prancing gait which makes it an easy riding animal. For purposes of retail trade in the towns, the pack-horses carry very large panniers

Photo, A. W. Cutler

Cuba

I. Life in "The Pearl of The Antilles"

By Richard Curle

Author of "Wanderings : A Book of Travel and Reminiscence "

WHEN Columbus discovered Cuba in October, 1492, it was inhabited, apparently, by one of the mildest races of people the world has ever known ; an innocent, happy, indolent race who lived on fish and fruit and sweet potatoes, and who smoked tobacco. In the shade of royal palms—Cuba's most famous tree—they idled away life in a state of idyllic contentment. Columbus was immensely impressed by Cuba and her islanders, but in his subsequent journeys to the West, save for one brief landing in 1502, he was never able to revisit it, and the inhabitants fell rapidly under the sway of his fanatic and mercenary followers. They were impressed into the mines and into field labour, and though they were declared emancipated in 1544, yet by then most of them had already died out. Now, as a separate race, they are merely a memory, though it is not unreasonable to suppose that their blood is mingled in some of the oldest Cuban families.

Cultured, Sensitive Gentlemen

Indeed, whether it be owing to the climate or to inherited traits, there is much in the character of the average Cuban of to-day that reminds one of the recorded character of the aboriginal inhabitants. Politically he may have the impulsive lack of solidity of the South American, but as a private individual he is remarkable above all for his perfect manners, his genuine hospitality, his embarrassing generosity, and his love of children. To the Cuban of the present, as to his forerunners, life is not a matter to be taken too seriously. He wants to be at ease, and he wants to make others at ease, and the rush of modern existence is alien to his philosophic scheme. Economic pressure forces him to work, but he loves to turn

from work to the things that give zest to life—to politics, to love-making, and to play.

The psychology of Cubans is volatile. Gentle by nature, they are also excitable, and readily show resentment. They are sensitive to criticism and like to be praised. They are fond of music—especially the opera—flowers, bright colours, and pets, such as caged birds. Cubans of the better class do not overtax their energies in business. Many men in the towns devote but a few hours daily to the task of making money, but, on the other hand, they will practise fencing tirelessly and ride with the greatest gusto.

Pleasant Life in the Towns

As for the women, theirs is a rather cloistered existence. They do not go out much in the streets, save in the late afternoon. A young girl, of course, must never appear alone in public. She sits at home, her face white with powder, working at embroidery, and dreaming, maybe, of her lover's evening visit ; for courtship is a highly formal proceeding among the more distinguished families. Once a girl is engaged she abandons social functions, and as the engagement is likely to last anything from one to six years, it must be rather a trying time. With the utmost regularity the young man calls upon her every evening ; but, alas ! he may only see her in the presence of a third person. Spanish etiquette in such matters is rigidly enforced.

The custom in the towns is to rise early, have a light breakfast (*desayuno*), and partake of lunch (*almuerzo*) about eleven. Then you will lie down for a siesta till two or three, and then go shopping, etc. From five until nightfall is a favourite time for transacting business, and then about seven comes

CUBA & THE CUBANS

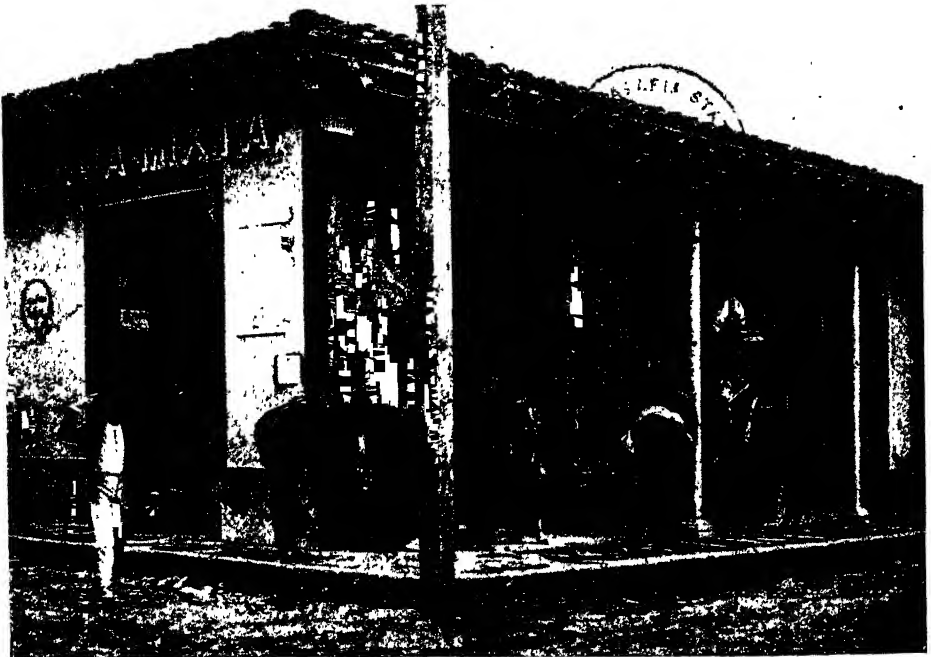
dinner (comida). The visitor—unless he feeds only at some Europeanised hotel—will soon discover two things ; first, that the bread is invariably most delicious ; second, that a copious use of garlic in cooking does not add to the pleasures of an ordinary palate. After dinner the serious work of the day begins. You meet your friends, you drive in the parks, you go to the opera, you dance, and you sip drinks and swap gossip in cafés.

Havana, like Madrid, is at its liveliest from nine p.m. till three a.m. One might almost suppose that the order of nature had been reversed, and that man had developed into a nocturnal animal.

The poorer classes, which in the influx of foreigners during the last half century are less purely Cuban throughout than the richer members of society, have their own particular customs and pleasures. Cock-fighting, with all the lore that has sprung up around this ancient pastime, is a matter of engrossing interest to many a humble

sportsman, and favourite cocks have their serious and passionate backers. Bull-fighting, also, used to be very popular. The women, like their sisters of the upper class, are very religious, and though there is no State religion under the Republic, yet Roman Catholicism is almost universal, and has a genuine sway in public sentiment.

The State lottery is one of the chief excitements in the life of the populace. The tickets are hawked everywhere, and everybody invests. The mere hope of making a fortune by a small outlay adds a touch of colour to many a drab existence, and as hope is the most indestructible of all things, constant disappointment only adds fuel to the fire. Cubans love a gamble ; indeed, it would be true to say that they love anything that will lift their imaginations above the routine of their daily tasks. They get readily carried away, but this is not because they are lacking in sense, but because they are of southern origin, and because they positively like being



PATIENT OBEDIENCE WAITING UNCONSTRAINED

Cuban horses stand without hitching, and a number of them waiting for their masters, like these outside the Commercial General Store, are a common sight in any Cuban town. Minor evidence of the Cuban's humane regard for his horse is furnished by the undocked tails of these patient creatures

Photo, A. W. Culler



LIVE TURKEYS FOR SALE IN THE STREETS OF HAVANA

Meat and poultry will not remain in good condition for long in a hot climate. The Cubans obviate the chance of their table poultry going bad by buying it before it is killed. This merchant goes from door to door with his turkeys fastened on to his horse. The customer selects a bird to his choice and the vendor kills it for him

Photo, Underwood Press Service

carried away. As once they threw their heart into the contest with Spain, so now do they throw their heart into other contests of much less urgency; in fact, one might sometimes surmise, of no urgency whatsoever.

While the original stock of the Cuban race was recruited mainly from the Iberian peninsula, there is also a good deal of old French blood in the country, arising from traders and privateers of

the seventeenth century and from the settlers forced to flee thither from San Domingo about the time of the Revolution. This mingling of French strains with the original Spanish has produced a nation quite individual as a whole, though Latin in its main characteristics. The sense of nationality and patriotism is as powerfully felt in Cuba as in the South American Republics. By the end of the sixteenth



SMILES AND CONTENTMENT THE ORDER OF THE DAY

Cubans are a pleasant, care-free folk, whose aim in life is to be as comfortable as possible while making others comfortable also. This peasant family grouped by the door of their hut typify the national bonhomie to the full. The long machete carried by the youth on the right is used for cutting down hedges and making clearings

Photo, A. W. Cutler



RIBBONS FOR TRESSES AND LACE FOR DRESSES

Through the streets of Havana goes the pedlar with his store of materials and laces. The box on the pavement at his side contains buttons, needles, cottons, and all the odds and ends of the drapery business. The cloths and laces he carries in a box on his shoulder. To the bottom of the box is fixed a long pole, which serves as prop when he is standing still

Photo, A. W. Cutler

CUBA & THE CUBANS

century Cubans had already begun to regard themselves as Cubans rather than as Spaniards, and from 1820 until 1895, when the War of Independence against Spain broke out, there was endless political unrest punctuated by one abortive revolution in 1869.

Negroes began to be imported from West Africa as slaves as early as 1520, and the practice was not legally abolished until 1820. Slavery was not fully abolished by law until 1886, and, in practice, it lingered on still later. Like the southern United States, Cuba was influenced in this direction by its

labour problems. Of a total population of about 2,889,000, some 29 per cent. are negroes and people of mixed descent, figures comparing with 1,000,000 in 1841, of whom the majority were negroes.

The Cuban negro is an inconsequent, humorous sort of fellow, very excitable, very superstitious, and given at times to dark ancestral dreams. If he must work he prefers to work in the fields on tobacco, sugar, or banana plantations, but he would rather work as little as possible and loiter outside his tiny shack (bohio) enjoying the sun, surrounded by his ragged and shouting

family. Politically and socially there is great tolerance in the country, the colour bar is not so serious as it is in many of the islands, and there is political equality. But there is much poverty among the negroes, little mental stability, and, on the whole, little ambition to rise above their lot. In their own way they are happy and contented.

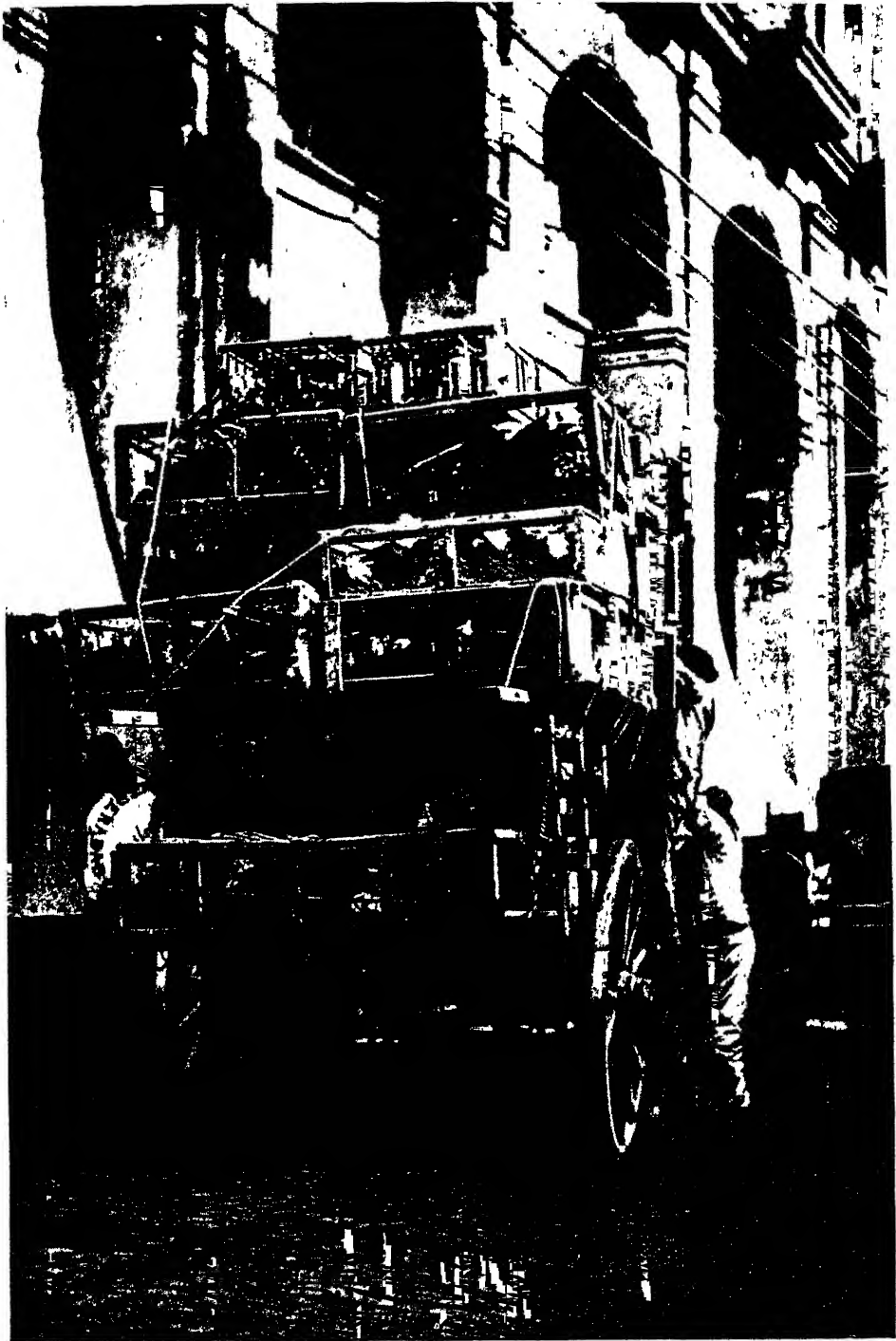
Cuba is the largest of the West Indies, and it is divided into six provinces—Havana, Pinar del Rio, Matanzas, Santa Clara, Camagüey, and Oriente. The eastern third of Oriente is mountainous; the greater part of Camagüey is made up of gently rolling plains with occasional hills rising to 1,500 feet; the greater part of Santa Clara is mountainous; the western part of this province, together with all Matanzas and Havana, is plain, broken here and there by low hills of a few hundred feet; the northern half of Pinar del Rio is traversed by ranges of hills and the southern half is a flat plain, into which project the foothills of the main ranges. None of the many



LIFE'S STAFF AND ONE OF ITS SPICES

To the Cuban, as to everybody else, bread is indispensable. Gambling in some form is hardly less so. This baker's man, with his delicious rolls, at the national lottery office door symbolises gratification of two national appetites

Photo, A. W. Culler



POULTERERS' MEN DELIVERING LIVE-STOCK AT TACÓN MARKET

Large markets are notable features of Havana, where the bulk of the wholesale trade of the western half of the island is carried on. Among the chief of these is the market of Tacón, where a consignment of live poultry from the outlying districts is being delivered. Poultry flourishes everywhere in Cuba and abundant supplies are to be found in all markets

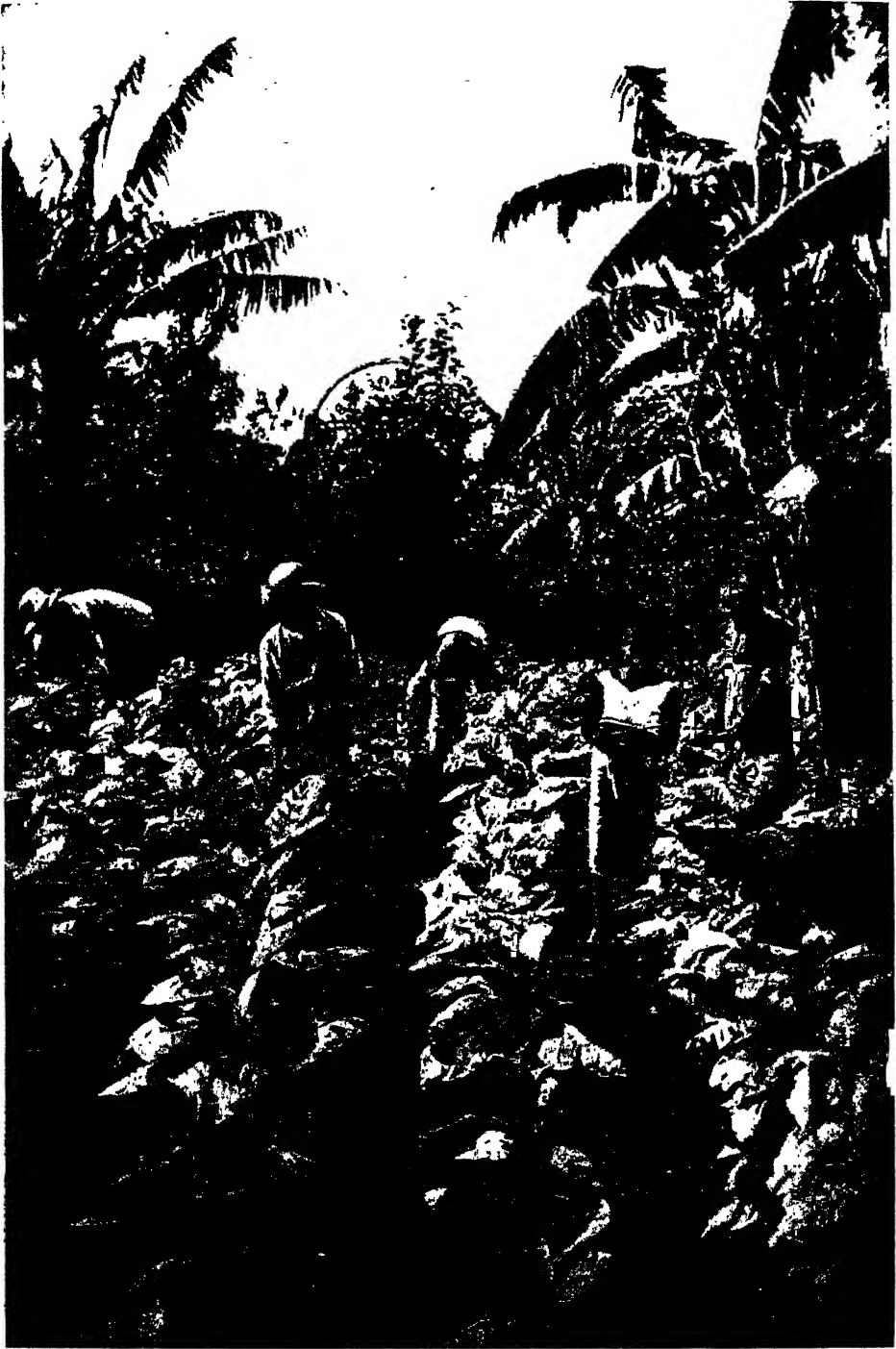
Photo, A. W. Custer



FOCUS OF HUMAN INTEREST IN THE EARLY MORNING

Activity hums over the Plaza del Vapor, the great arcaded building where the daily food supplies of Havana are marketed. Outside the market the streets are crowded with pack animals and covered wagons that have brought in supplies from the country, and with the horses of traders who have come to buy poultry or sugar-cane which presently they will sell retail on horseback

Photo, Underwood Press Service



TENDING YOUNG PLANTS IN A TOBACCO PLANTATION

Tobacco plants are grown from seed sown in nursery-beds and planted out on ridges about three feet apart. While maturing the plants are kept free from weeds and "topped" to prevent seed formation, only a certain number of leaves being left on each plant, according to the kind of tobacco desired. For the best quality tobaccos the leaves are picked singly as they ripen

Photo, Underwood Press Service



CLEVER HANDS IN A HAVANA FACTORY ROLLING CIGARS FOR WEALTHY CONNOISSEURS

Great skill is required in the manufacture of "legitimas," the genuine Havana cigars made only in Cuba. The finest material is selected, and the operator rolls together enough to form the filling of one cigar. He wraps this in an inner cover of leaf prepared of the length desired, rolls it into proper shape and consistency, and then enfolds it in the outer wrapper of a single leaf, which he winds spirally from the thick to the pointed end and finishes with a twist

Photo, Underwood Press Service



MONOTONY OF LABOUR RELIEVED BY THE PROFESSIONAL READER

Most of the tobacco factories in Havana employ a reader who entertains the hands while at work by reading to them the news of the day or selections from the national classics. The workpeople themselves choose this official by vote, and each contributes ten cents a week towards his payment

Photo, Henry Clay & Bock & Co., Ltd.



WORKERS AT THE DRYING-SHEDS HANGING UP THE LEAVES

Primed leaves, gathered separately, are carried at once to the drying-shed where they are strung on wire or string and hung up on laths. Plants cut whole, when the middle leaves are about ripe, are spitted on laths and left in the field to wilt before being hung up in the ventilating barn

Photo, Publishers' Photo Service



DARKIES WHO HOLD THAT "THE SLEEP OF A LABOURING MAN IS SWEET"

Although the negroes in Cuba are not fond of work many of them find light employment in the tobacco and sugar-fields. Humorous, care-free, and exceedingly superstitious, they were first imported from Africa in 1520. Lacking in ambition and initiative, they enjoy great social and political tolerance



LAUGHTER HOLDING BOTH HIS SIDES IN FACE OF HIGH ADVENTURE

Childhood's ingenuous enjoyment of the unexpected is amusingly displayed by these Cuban children on suddenly finding greatness thrust upon them by the photographer's flattering attention. To the small boy the adventure appeals as a huge joke, the only repartee to which is uncontrolled hilarity

Photo. Publishers' Photo Service



AN EVER OPEN DOOR

To this hatch in the wall of the orphanage unwanted children, usually illegitimate, may be brought by their mothers under cover of night. The turning stile rings a bell inside



BROUGHT TO A QUIET HAVEN

No child thus brought to the orphanage is turned away. Carefully tended, they are taught some industry whereby they may earn a living on leaving the home at twenty-three



WHERE THE SUMMER CALM OF CHARITY PERPETUALLY REIGNS

Notable among the many charitable and benevolent institutions of Havana is the Casa de Beneficencia, founded by Las Casas and opened in 1794. It comprises an orphanage, maternity ward, infirmary, lunatic asylum, and home for vagrants. In the long nursery ward the babies, watched over by a motherly sister, are laid on matting on the floor to rest and stretch their limbs

Photos, A. W. Culler



CUBAN PEDLAR ARMED WITH A NOVEL BOUQUET

At first sight it may seem that the man crossing this sunlit square is carrying a gargantuan bunch of flowers, prize chrysanthemums, or perhaps more prosaic cauliflowers. In fact, he is a sponge seller, laden with a stock of his wares

Photo, A. W. Cutler

rivers is of any significance save the Cauto in Oriente. The country is beautiful in the perpetual green of its vegetation, and its climate—which, next to Australia, is said to be the healthiest in the world—is equable, ranging from an average of 71 degrees in January to 82 degrees in July.

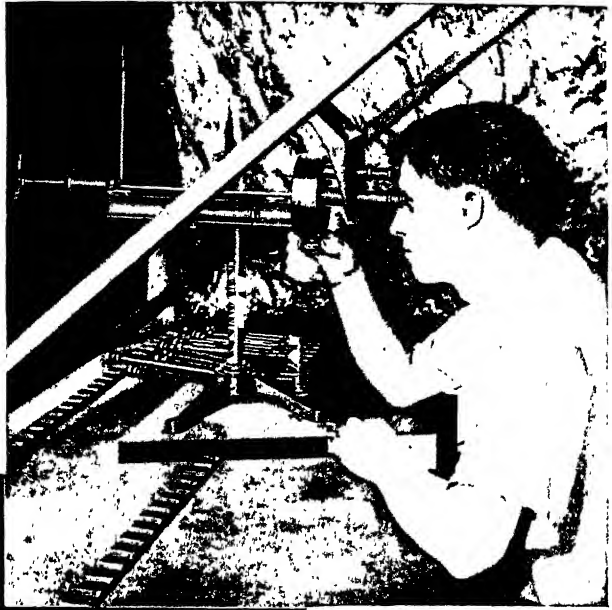
Half of the island is still covered by primeval forests—a fact but little realized—and these forests are rich in

such trees as mahogany, cedar, sandal-wood, lignum-vitæ, and logwood. The flora is magnificent, and though some 3,500 species of plants have been described, it is probable that many more remain unclassified. In that tropical humidity they flourish in unending sequence. Birds, too, abound in wonderful profusion, and Cuba can boast of 200 different varieties indigenous to the island. Other things about that are not so pleasant, as, for example, scorpions, centipedes, tarantulas, cockroaches, mosquitoes, fleas, ticks, and all manner of insects. They add to the interest of life—especially in the country districts—without adding to its amenity. Fortunately, the snakes are all non-poisonous; unfortunately, the mammals are few and of small size.

Cuba is essentially an agricultural country. Her chief crops are sugar and tobacco, with coffee as a bad third. The provinces of Santa Clara and Matanzas are the chief sugar-producing centres, while tobacco is mainly cultivated in Pinar del Rio and Havana. A sugar plantation where sugar is only grown and not manufactured is called a colonia; where it is grown and

manufactured, an ingenio; and where it is grown and manufactured on a large scale, with all the accessories of machine-shops and so on, a central. A tobacco plantation is known as a vega, and a coffee plantation as a cafetal. Cuba also produces many other tropical crops, such as grains, bananas, and henequen (or sisal hemp), from which the binding twine for reapers is made. The

richest Cuban soil is the black soil, used for sugar; the second richest is the red soil, used for coffee; and the third richest is the mulatto-coloured soil, used for tobacco. The tobacco farms are usually situated along the banks of rivers, and the soil needs constant fertilising. Tobacco seed is grown in nurseries, out of which the young plants are taken in October and November and planted out in furrows two feet apart. They grow



SCIENCE AND SUGAR

Sugar solutions are tested by polarised light. The greater the deflection of the light rays the stronger the solution

very rapidly, and attain their full size of six feet and over in a few months, during which time a constant war has to be waged against the insects that attack them. When the large leaves have grown to a good size—there are usually ten of them—the small surrounding leaves are picked off, as is the top of the plant, so that all the strength may go into the main leaves. Some of the finest tobacco is grown under cloth awnings, raised some eight feet above the ground, which act as a sort of filter to the sun's rays, and greatly increase the yield. When the selected leaves are finally picked, they are strung across poles in thatched drying-houses. After two or three months there they dry and turn



REDUCING SUGAR CANE TO JUICE

Broken into short pieces, the canes are reduced to a shredded condition and then crushed in a series of mills having three horizontal rollers each. Water, or dilute juice, is sprayed on the fibre between the successive crushings



NO POSSIBLE DOUBT ABOUT THE FRESHNESS OF THE MILK

In Cuban towns the milk is quite commonly brought to the doors by the cows themselves, the supply for each customer being drawn from them in front of his house. The custom, which has much to recommend it on many grounds, is paralleled in Malta, where goats' milk is supplied in the same way

Photo, Underwood Press Service

yellow and they are then packed into bales weighing about a hundred pounds and are sent off to Havana.

On some sugar estates—sugar, unlike tobacco, does not exhaust the soil—the same land has yielded crops for a hundred years in succession. Cattle in considerable numbers wander over the plains of guinea grass. Vast areas await opening up, and agriculture is capable of tremendous and profitable expansion. As more railways are

constructed so will the land come under further cultivation.

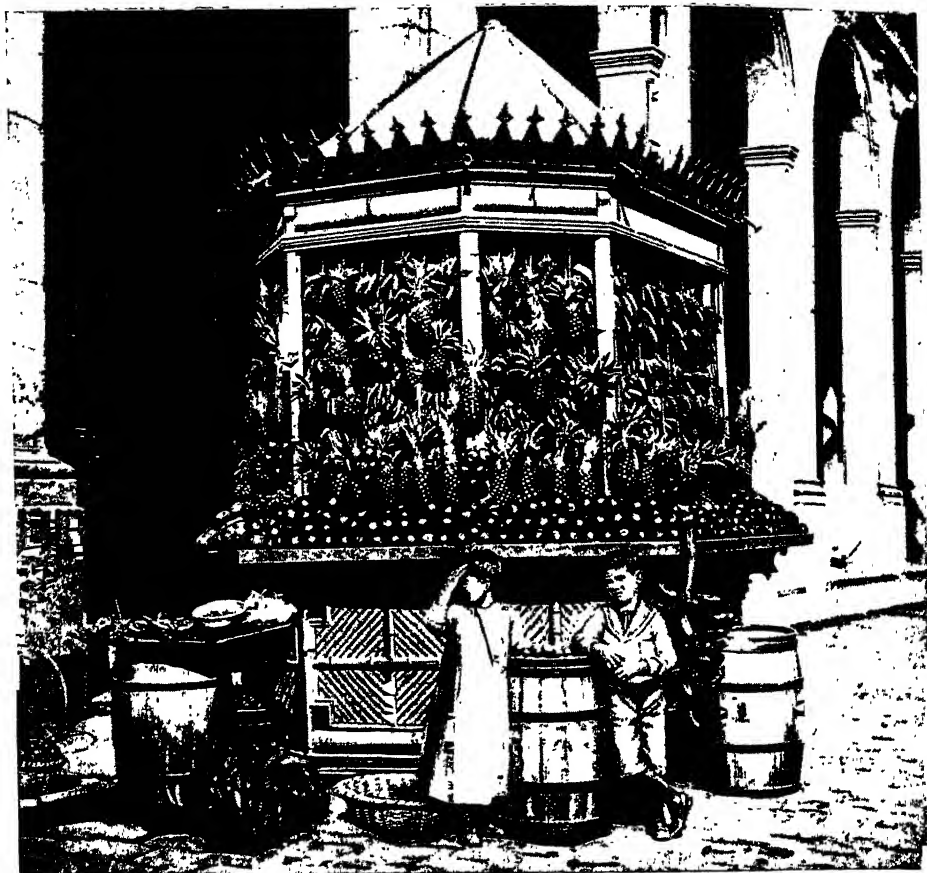
The fluctuating prices of sugar and tobacco make Cuba a country of fluctuating prosperity. During the Great War she was marvellously prosperous, but perhaps no country felt more acutely the post-war slump. Her wealth depends on the state of world markets, and she must build up greater reserves before she can stabilise more permanently her financial basis. The rich



DELIVERING THE MILK ON HORSEBACK IN HAVANA

Other Cuban milkmen go their morning rounds on horseback. Large panniers or saddle-bags fastened on either side of the horse are used for carrying the milk, which is contained in small sealed tins. The rider is obliged to go at a slow pace, for were he to trot his horse his customers would receive not milk but butter, as did the Beduins from the skinfuls of milk illustrated on page 181.

Photo, A. W. Cutler



SMALL SERVANTS AT A SHRINE OF POMONA

Fruit abounds in Cuba and fills the markets with colour and appetising scents. A kiosk like this, with pineapples piled high, is a particularly beautiful object, the tawny golden rind and grey-green leaves set off by encircling rows of apples—ruddy grey sapotes or purple caimitos—and flanked below by huge clumps of green or yellow bananas

estate-owning Cubans live in handsome houses and, even for the townsman, existence can be very comfortable on a plantation. But it must be confessed that the Cuban ladies do not find that lolling in cane chairs on a veranda compensates them for the delights of town life, and they are quite prepared to leave their menfolk on the estates if only they may hasten back to Havana. But for the poorer countrymen, the *monteros*, things are not so pleasant, though they, too, generally manage to employ some negro labour. Their food is coffee, pork, and plantains, and they know how to work hard. The women weave a little cotton and make *cascarilla*, a favourite cosmetic, out of egg-shells. This class is often illiterate, invariably hyper-superstitious, but, like all other Cubans, boundless in its hospitality.

The mineral resources of Cuba yet remain to be thoroughly investigated. That she produces iron ore, marble, and asphalt in abundance is a proved fact, but whether the mountainous region of Oriente is as rich in gold and other precious metals as some suppose, awaits further prospecting. The asphalt seems to point to oil.

Most visitors do not get beyond Havana (La Habana) and its outskirts, but to know Havana is no more to know Cuba than to know Paris is to know France. Nevertheless, it is a fascinating town, by far the largest and most important in the island, and it has been the capital since 1559. Havana is the port through which most of Cuba's produce passes to America and Europe, and it is also the centre of the cigar-making industry. There are probably

CUBA & THE CUBANS

150 large cigar factories there, some employing 400 men and even doing their own label printing and making their own boxes, and it is of absorbing interest to watch the various processes through which the raw leaf passes in its progress towards the finished Corona. The skilled workmen are well paid, and as each is usually allowed to make daily for himself five to ten cigars, the life has its compensations.

A curious and very old custom of the cigar factories throws quite a sidelight upon Cuban psychology. Every factory employs its own reader, who, during two daily sessions of an hour and a half, reads aloud to the staff while they roll cigars. The reader is selected by competition in which the workmen vote, and the books to be read—which, apart from the newspapers, consist in the main of classical works in Spanish literature and

books of travel—are chosen by a committee. The reader sits on a high chair where all may see him and his trained voice carries over his audience. Each member of the staff pays him ten cents a week, and the post is both coveted and profitable.

Approached from the sea, Havana presents an appearance of ethereal loveliness, with her bright colours blending about the green trees and the blue ocean, and the spell is not diminished as one walks through its narrow, teeming, old-world Spanish streets, those streets of a medieval city planked down in the incongruous turmoil of the twentieth century, and observes at leisure the immense variety of its picturesque existence. The motors and the mules, the innumerable itinerant hawkers, the houses with their barred windows and little patios behind gay with flowers



PROSPEROUS PROPRIETOR OF A "ONE-HORSE" CONCERN

The unwieldy panniers weighing down this little horse are filled with the fruit of the country. The long stems stretching up at all angles are sugar-canes, which contain a large amount of saccharine. This fruit-merchant's stock comprises avocado pears, sapodillas—an insipidly sweet plum-like fruit—mangoes, bananas, and plantains. Plantains are commonly eaten fried



UNDER A SPREADING CEIBA TREE THE CUBAN HOMESTEAD STANDS

Little better than the outhouses of an English peasant proprietor, palm-thatched shantilles like these are the homes of many Cuban peasants. The barrel covered with palm leaves outside the smaller hut contains the drinking water of the family now gathered at the foot of a spreading ceiba tree. These trees bear bell-shaped flowers, followed by pods filled with cotton-invested seeds which yield the useful fibre called kapok

Photo, A. W. Cutler



GRACEFUL EXPONENTS OF THE PICTURESQUE DANCES OF OLD SPAIN

These particularly charming Cuban girls, clad in remarkably picturesque dresses, are posed for the opening figure of one of their national dances. Colour and movement are dear to the heart of all the Latin races, and, for Spanish people especially, the rattle of the gaily-painted tambourine and the click of the castanets have a fascination that never palls

Photo, Publishers' Photo Service

and all whispering of romance, the covered shopping arcades, the gentlemen greeting one another with demonstrative embraces, the bustling crowds—such are the things that combine to make Havana one of the most enchanting cities of the West.

Havana, in truth, is a town rippling with vitality and yet touched with the spirit of age and history. It produces something like a hundred daily and weekly papers, most of which are given over to an effervescing interest in ephemeral political issues. But this is only to say that Havana's atmosphere is South American and that its patriotism is gathered volubly into the net of politics. It is easy enough for the visitor to avoid the subject, just as it is easy for him to escape from the turmoil of Havana's streets into the exquisite peace of the surrounding country.

Havana's outskirts are celebrated for their wide, soft beauty, and they have historic importance, too, in the old fortress of the Morro, finished in 1597, and in the more modern Cabafias fortress, standing behind it on the ridge of the hill, finished in 1774.

But attractive though Havana be, the visitor who wants to savour the true Cuba should traverse the plains towards the east. He will begin to perceive then the enormous natural resources of the country and its incredible potential wealth. He will see for himself the life of the estates and absorb into his system the personality of Cuba.

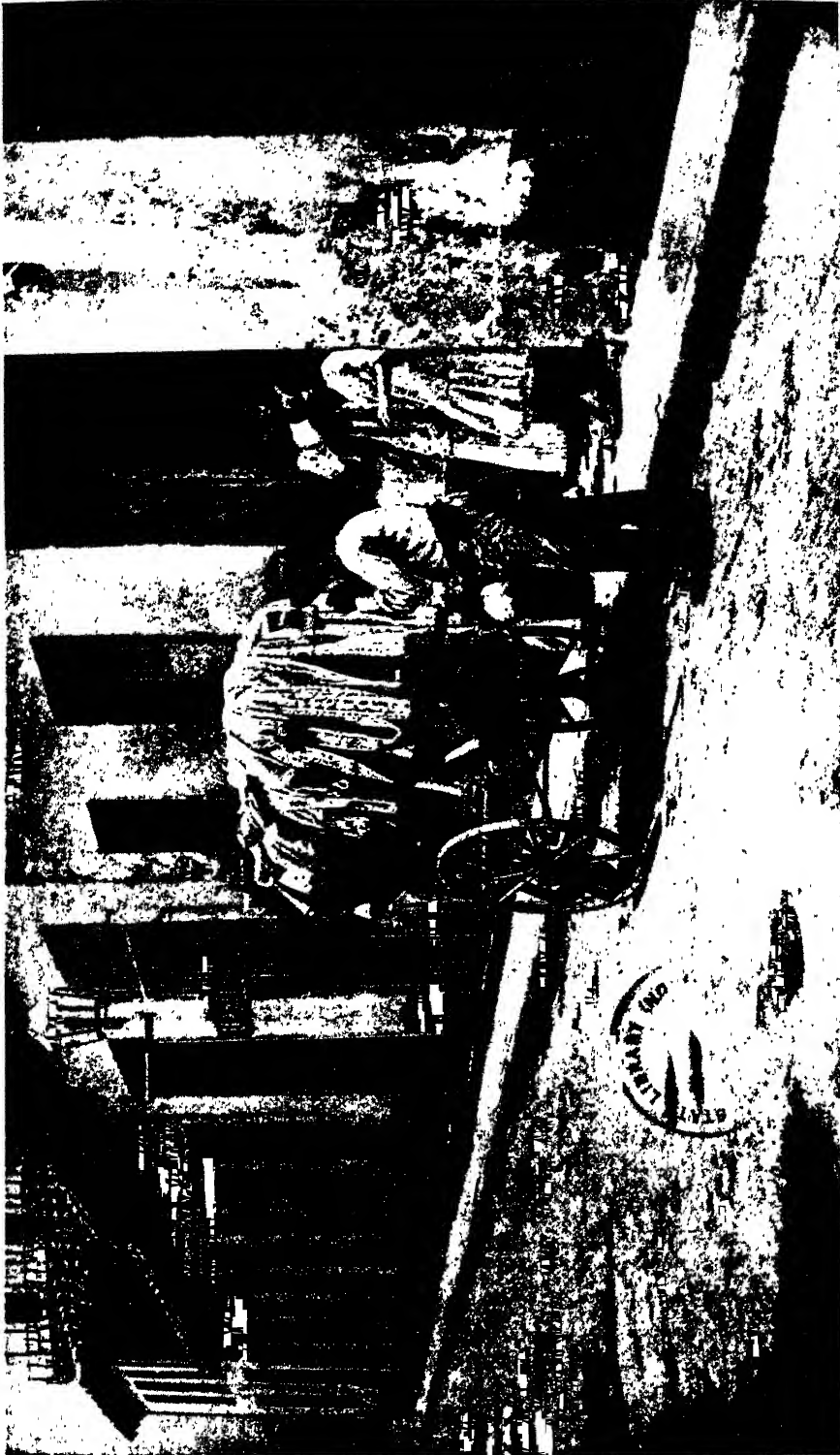
The island needs what most tropical countries need—capital and labour. Her population is not adequate, and though it grows rapidly the term is only relative to the former population, not to the requirements. The United States and



DOWN THE VILLAGE STREET: COTTAGE HOMES IN WESTERN CUBA

Domestic architecture is elementary in Cuban country villages. One-storied, weather-boarded frame houses thatched with palm leaves are the rule, a plank over the kennel leading to the door, which occasionally is shaded by a wooden porch whereby the rainwater may fall a foot or two farther from the threshold. Windows are hardly in evidence and chimneys non-existent. Despite their general meanness these villages have a certain picturesqueness in their tropical setting

Photo, A. W. Cutler



WHERE YOUR DRAPER GOES HIS ROUNDS FROM HOUSE TO HOUSE

In Havana it is the usual rule for the mountain to go to Mahomet and, in obedience to it, this gentleman in the dry goods trade is wheeling his establishment round the town. Fixed on a rickety two-wheeled cart, the store consists of a large glass case stuffed full of wares. What the proprietor cannot find room for within his perambulating warehouse he drapes more or less attractively over the top

Photo, A. W. Culler

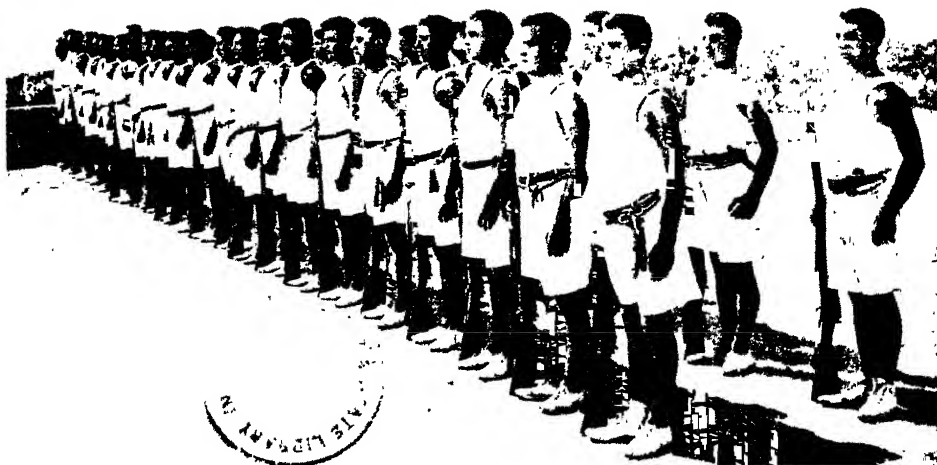


ONE OF THE ALLEGED RESTING-PLACES OF COLUMBUS

Havana's largest church is the Merced, the rococo cathedral seen between the arches of the adjoining colonnade. After Spain ceded the island of Haiti to France in 1785, the supposed remains of Christopher Columbus were removed from San Domingo to the chancel of this cathedral, where they remained until transferred to Spain in 1898. Their identity is, however, disputed by San Domingo, which claims still to possess those of the explorer

Photos, Publishers' Photo Service

Great Britain have done much to help Cuba in the past, either in the way of actual support or in the putting up of capital for enterprises, but her future rests more in the character of the Cubans than in anything else. What is certain is that, given a fair chance, the soil will justify any amount of faith.



YOUTH'S PROUD FOOT SET ON THE STRONGHOLD OF OLD TYRANNY

Liberation from Spanish dominion has immensely enhanced the devotion of the Cubans to their native land. There is a certain symbolism in this photograph of a company of cadets of the Cuban military school, training on the roof of Morro Castle, the stronghold in which Spanish tyranny was established

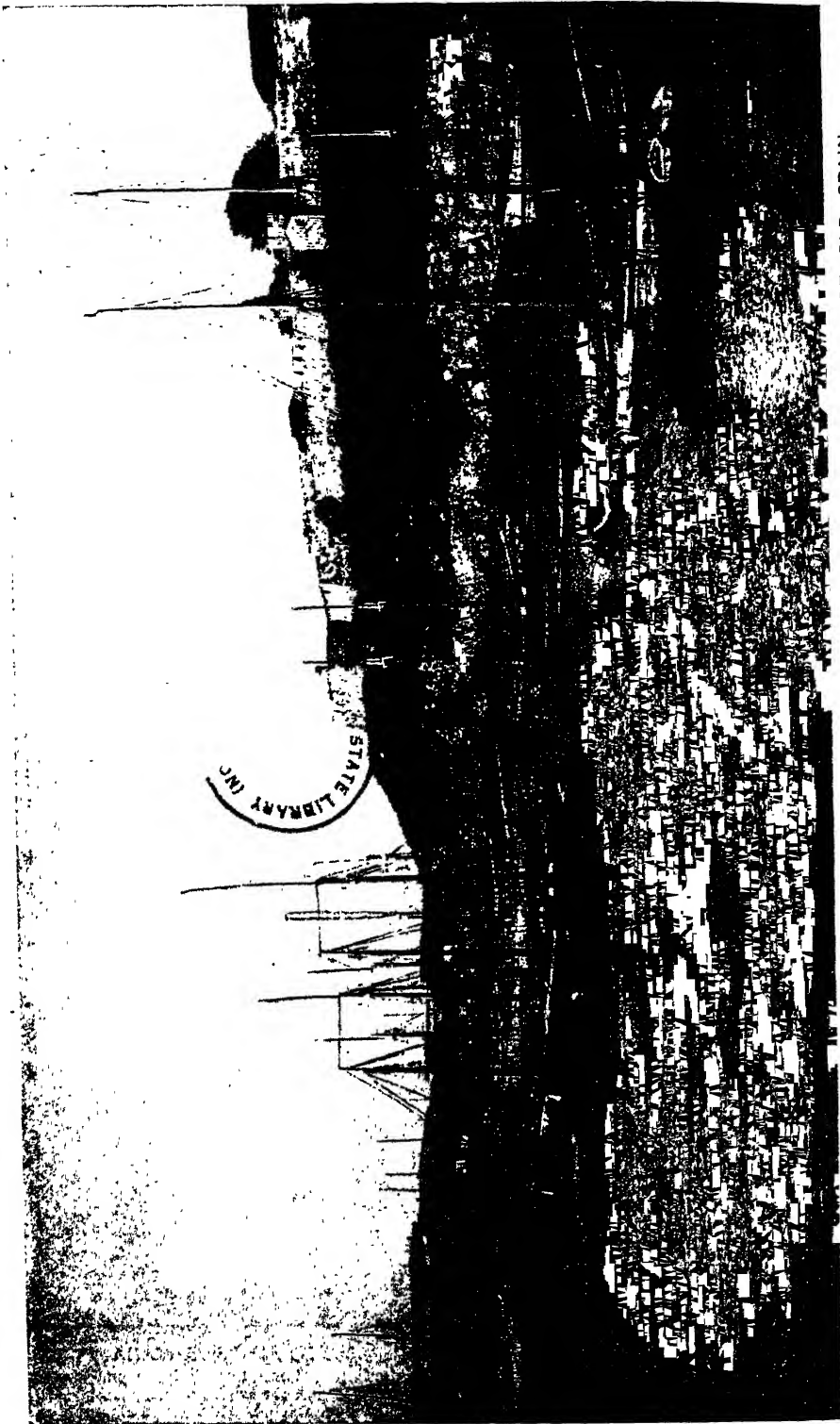
Photo, Publishers' Photo Service



ROAD HOGS BEWARE! A MOTOR-CYCLE POLICEMAN OF HAVANA

Havana is a particularly well policed city. Appointments to the force and promotion in it are made by examination, and, as elsewhere, it comprises both a detective force and the ordinary police service. A flying squad of motor-cycle policemen checks breaches of the law by motorists. There is an elaborate system of telephone communication between patrols and headquarters

Photo, Ewing Galloway



GRIM EMBLEM OF DEPARTED MIGHT THAT SENTINELLED A FORMER STRONGHOLD OF OLD SPAIN

Behind the peaceful fishing boats riding at anchor on the blue waters of Havana Harbour rise the old fortifications of the Spaniards. In the days when Spanish power was at its zenith in the West Indies, Havana was one of the greatest military strongholds. On the left are the walls of the old castle of San Carlos de la Cabaña, and on the right the lighthouse and part of the fortified wall of Morro Castle

Photo, Ewing Galloway

Cuba

II. The Island Under Spanish Rule and After

By Percy F. Martin, F.R.G.S.

Author of "Through Five Republics of South America," etc.

FOLLOWING upon its discovery by Columbus in 1492, and dating from its complete exploration and occupation (1494-1513), the history of Cuba, not inaptly termed "The Pearl of the Antilles," owing to its physical attractiveness, proved uniformly stormy and troublous, as have been all of the countries of the New World discovered and "civilized" by the Spaniards. The latter appear to have treated the original, peaceable, and unsophisticated natives with the same forbidding severity and frequent brutality exhibited in other of their Latin-American possessions. They speedily introduced the hated repartimiento system, otherwise a form of life-long slavery, the shelterless and dispossessed natives being compelled to work like beasts in the field, for their mere food, under taskmasters more merciless than any experienced under the corvée in Egypt. For close upon four centuries this was the Spanish policy. Without conscience, pity or justice, colonisation of the island was carried on, its great riches exploited, and the Crown of Spain enriched beyond computation.

Gradually the aborigines were crushed out of existence; gradually, also, the island became repopulated by negroes and other debased races. To-day, however, of the population, estimated at 2,889,000, about 72 per cent. are white (or almost white) and the remainder coloured.

In the persecution of the unfortunate natives the Church, mainly concerned with the collection of its tithes, took its full part. The Inquisition accounted for the death of a large number of so-called heretics, while the cupidity of hordes of officials played its part.

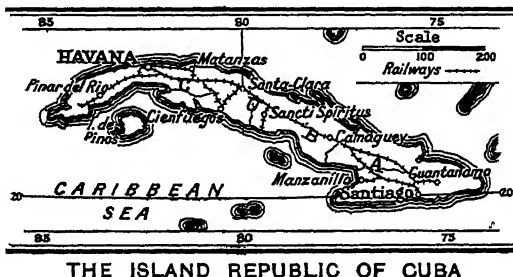
Seven of the earliest settlements established by Diego Velasquez, the first adelantado, or representative of the Spanish Crown, were followed by others. The immense mineral richness of the country brought about a high tide of prosperity between 1515-18, when enormous consignments of the gold, platinum, and

other precious metals, procured by ruthless application of slave-labour, were shipped to Spain. At this time Mexico, Jamaica, Florida, and all contiguous newly-discovered land was fused into the same nationality by the statesmanship of the Catholic kings; but local patriotism had no opportunity of asserting itself. The nomination of Las Casas, in 1516, as "Protector of the Indians," had in no way improved their unhappy lot.

While the Spaniards depended entirely upon military and naval forces for their maintenance in the country, social and commercial development were by no means wanting. Neither were the Spaniards allowed to carry out their task of "civilization" without opposition from other and competitive nations. Both the French and the British, being at war with Spain, harassed the island and its officials continually and effectively. During the reign of Charles V. of France the destructive activities of the former proved particularly aggravating; while the depredations committed by Jaques Sores, who, according to Pedro de Menendez, was "one of the best corsairs in all of France and England," gave the Spaniards endless trouble. The French declared that "God had not created the fair lands of the West Indies solely for the Castillians," and, determining that they should not enjoy them in peace, attacked Havana in 1555, taking the town in thirty minutes. Before releasing the numerous French prisoners they demanded and received a sum of 30,000 pesos, in addition to one hundred loads of cazabi bread.

Hostile English activity began as early as 1557, the outcome of personal hostility between Philip of Spain and Elizabeth of England, when a British merchant-

ship presented itself off Santo Domingo. The reputed mineral wealth of the island soon excited the envy of British buccaneers. Simultaneously with the waning of the influence of the French



CUBA: AN ISLAND STORY

commenced that of the English. By the end of 1586, thanks to the dauntless energies of such pioneers as Sir Francis Drake and his countrymen, it had become formidable. In 1741 an English expedition landed, and in 1763, under Lord Albemarle, and assisted by American colonial troops, the British overcame the Spanish army and captured Havana. By the Treaty of Paris (1763) the island was, however, restored, and from that time until 1834

into a veritable vale of suffering and sorrow. All civil, political, and religious liberty was at an end, and never since Cuba had been a Spanish Crown colony had so much distress existed, nor had the administration proved so corrupt.

The burden of taxation, persecution, and extortion proved too heavy for the people to sustain; internal eruptions succeeded one another rapidly. Rebellion broke out in 1868 and endured for nearly



WHEN THE MEN COME HOME: EVENING SCENE IN SAN LUIS

Simple as it is, life can be very pleasant in these village homes of Cuba. The beauty of the country is an index to the wealth of its natural resources. Plantations of coffee, cacao, bananas, and coconut palms clothe the land with verdure and give profitable occupation to acclimatised inhabitants. Only better railroad communications are required to make Cuba an immensely wealthy country

the Spaniards were left almost unmolested to develop the island's enormous riches. The height of prosperity was attained between that period and 1790, when one of the best of the Spanish Viceroy's, another bearer of the name of Las Casas, was appointed Administrator of the island, and Cuba was opened to the trade of the world.

In 1808, after Napoleon had overthrown the Spanish dynasty, the position became modified. By the decree of 1825 the Captains-General of the day wielded a despotic authority hitherto unknown in any other Christian country; arrests, banishments, executions, and other punishments were visited upon the unhappy residents of the island, foreign and native alike, converting the fair land

twenty years, finally resulting in the abolition of slavery in 1886 and further enforced concessions by the Spaniards as a consequence of fresh revolts in 1895-98. The fierce and bloody war which then broke out was continued until the United States Government, from motives of humanity, intervened. This movement, at first intended to be peaceable, was speedily converted into actual warfare by the revengeful destruction, by some Spanish fanatics, of the United States warship *Maine*, which was blown up and sunk in Havana Harbour. In return, the Spanish fleet, under Admiral Cervera, was completely destroyed, while in April, 1898, the United States Government demanded the evacuation of Cuba by the Spanish troops. Between

CUBA: AN ISLAND STORY

January 1, 1899, and May 20, 1902, the island was administered under United States military rule, when, for the first time in its long and unhappy history, reforms of the widest character were substituted for the degrading government pursued under Spanish dominion.

Judging—wrongly, as it turned out—that the island was ready for autonomous government, a new constitution was formed in 1901, and in 1902 free suffrage was granted and the first President was elected, while two legislative houses were instituted. But the people proved themselves unworthy of the trust, and in 1906 the United States Government had again to intervene forcibly, remaining in control until January 28, 1909, when the second republican government was inaugurated.

Dr. Estrada Palma was the first President. He served his four full years, proving a firm, honest, and shrewd Executive. He was succeeded by Señor Osbalidia, and in 1909 by General J. M. Gomez, who served until 1913, his successor being General Mario G. Menocál, who had once previously filled the office of Chief Executive. In 1917 Cuba declared war on Germany, and in

1919 joined the League of Nations. Under General Menocál's administration Cuba reached almost the apex of its economic prosperity; but towards its close, reckless speculation in sugar brought about partial economic collapse.

Upon the retirement of General Menocál, a severe contest took place for the post of President, the candidates being Dr. Alfredo Zayas and General J. M. Gomez. Political feelings were excited, and the bitter partisanship resulted in the perpetration of violence, which only terminated with the sudden death of General Gomez. Unfortunately, Dr. Alfredo Zayas experienced a stormy period of rule. For the third time the United States were compelled to intervene—but upon this occasion diplomatically—on account of the alleged corruption and extravagance of the native Administration. The representations made and the severe official reprimands administered by General Crowder, the United States Agent, foreshadowing the removal of President Zayas and dismissal of Congress, seemed to prove effective, for a complete change in the President's policy was brought about, it was hoped, with permanent advantage.

CUBA: FACTS AND FIGURES

The Country

Chief of group of Greater Antilles and largest of West India islands. Separated on east from Haiti by Windward Passage, forty-eight miles across, and on south-east from Jamaica by about ninety miles of the Caribbean Sea. Coastline about 2,000 miles, total area about 44,200 square miles. Divided into six provinces: Havana, Pinar del Rio, Matanzas, Santa Clara, Camagüey and Oriente, with total population of about 2,889,000, about 72 per cent. whites, the rest mulattoes and negroes. Range of Sierra de los Organos on west with elevation of 2,530 ft.; on east forested Sierra Maestra, rising in the Pico Turquino to 8,400 ft. Rivers are the Cauto, Saza, Hatiguanico, Sagua la Grande. Ports: Havana on north-west; Santiago de Cuba, with fine harbour, on south-east. North coast bordered by coral islands and reefs. Language, Spanish.

Government and Constitution

Republic, with reservations as to treaties, commerce, debt, and use of naval stations in favour of the U.S.A. Government under President, Vice-President, Cabinet, and National Congress, including Senate of twenty-four members and House of Representatives of 118 members. Of the six provinces and 112 municipalities, each province is under a governor and council, each municipality under mayor and council.

Defence

Military service age twenty-one to twenty-eight. Army consists of between 16,000 and 17,000 men; navy, two cruisers, sixteen gunboats, four submarine chasers, and three small auxiliaries, with rather more than 1,000 officers and men.

Communications

Railway mileage 3,200, connecting chief towns and ports; 2,790 miles of private lines linking sugar estates with main lines. Nine Government

wireless stations and about 6,000 miles of telegraph lines.

Commerce and Industries

Staple industries, sugar and tobacco. About fifty per cent. of cultivated area under sugar cane, and thirty per cent. under tobacco, sweet potatoes, and bananas. Rice, coffee, cacao, maize, oranges, coconuts, pineapples are grown, and honey and rum produced. Forest products, mahogany, cedar, dye-woods, fibres, gums, resins, and oils. Live-stock includes about 4,000,000 cattle, 700,000 horses, and 64,000 mules. Mining area of 915,720 acres includes iron, copper, oil, manganese, and asphalt. Sugar crop 1919-20 totalled 3,735,425 tons from plantations covering 1,384,800 acres. In 1918-19 sugar exports were valued at £81,570,178; tobacco, £8,167,366. Total exports 1920 valued at £213,784,585; imports (foodstuffs, tissues and manufactures, machinery, metals and metal manufactures, and chemicals), £108,814,431. Bulk of trade with America, United Kingdom, and Spain. Currency of same fineness and value as U.S.A., coinage of which country is legal tender; unit, the peso of sixty cents. Metric system in use.

Education

Primary instruction compulsory. Kindergarten system and adult night schools developed. In each province Government institute for advanced education, with normal schools annexed for training of teachers. University of Havana, with faculties of liberal arts and science, medicine and pharmacy, and law, has over 2,000 students. Government schools in 1919 had about 6,000 teachers and 334,670 children.

Chief Towns

Havana, capital (population 363,500), Cienfuegos (95,860), Camagüey (98,190), Santiago de Cuba (70,230), Guantánamo (68,880), Matanzas (62,600), Santa Clara (63,100), Manzanillo (56,570).



SUNDAY MORNING AMONG THE RUTHENIANS IN PODKARPATSKA RUS

In coloured skirts and kerchiefs, embroidered sheepskins, and multitudinous rows of beads, they are awaiting the bell which shall call them to prayer. The Ruthenian Church is perhaps the most important of all Uniat Churches, and in religion the Ruthenians are nearly all Uniats, acknowledging the Pope, but still retaining their Slavonic liturgy and most of the outward forms of the Greek Church

Photo, Miss Florence Farmborough

Czechoslovakia

I. Kindred Peoples Linked in a Single State

By Walter Jerrold

Author of "The Danube," etc.

THE peoples who together form the new republic of Czechoslovakia—Czechs (or Bohemians), Moravians, Slovaks, Ruthenes, and Teutons—occupy a beautiful and beautifully diversified country of central Europe, some six hundred miles in length from east to west, and in parts extending to about two hundred in breadth. The Czechs themselves mainly occupy Bohemia, where they form roughly two-thirds of the population of about seven millions.

The Czechs, including the Moravian branch and the Slovaks, are in the main descendants of those Slavic tribes which pushed farthest to the westward, displacing or mixing with the Celtic Boii, who had settled there at some undetermined pre-Christian period, and their earlier Germanic conquerors the Marcomanni. The country which these Slavic tribes occupied—the upper basin of the Elbe and its tributaries—was shut off from still farther western neighbours by high mountains, and those ranges are to a great extent the boundaries of the new state formed by the grouping of these peoples mostly of allied origin. In the north-west, however, there are districts that are almost wholly German in population, and these

include the well-known watering-places Karlsbad (now Karlovy Vary), Marienbad (now Mariánské Lázně), and Franzensbad (now Františkovy Lázně).

Behind their mountain ramparts, in a richly fertile country consisting for the most part of vast forest tracts, the Bohemians and their kindred remained for long the least known of the peoples of mid-Europe. The mountains dividing the people from their Teutonic neighbours helped to preserve them in days of limited means of communication from the Germanising influences which affected other tribes of Slav origin that penetrated into Europe farther to the north.

Thus it is that we find to-day a people—a great people—who have developed their own culture in a remarkable way.

Though isolated, as it were, from much of early Western civilization, the Czechs came under something of the wave of humanism that marked the Middle Ages. Through the Church (Christianity had become general in the country in the ninth century) and the University of Prague, which was established in the fourteenth century, Bohemia came indeed to be a centre of culture, though somewhat off that broad highway which extended from Oxford to the



A MAID OF SLOVAKIA

This pretty girl of Ruzomberok is a blaze of colour. It is not surprising that the girls of Slovakia cling tenaciously to their beautiful national dress

Photo, Dr. V. Sixta & Son

CZECHOSLOVAKIA & ITS PEOPLES

Italian cities. Early in the fifteenth century Bohemia produced a great pre-Lutheran reformer in the martyred John Hus.

In the fourteenth century the people of that country, too, began to be in touch with the English, first in enmity and later in amity. It was at the Battle of Crecy that the blind King John of Bohemia, refusing to retreat before the victorious English, exclaimed: "So will it God, it shall not be that a King of Bohemia flies from the battlefield." Those brave words became a proverb among the Czech people, and it was the badge of that Bohemian king, says tradition, which came to be that of the heir to the English throne, the now familiar "Prince of Wales's feathers."

A generation or so later Richard the Second of England married the Bohemian Princess Anne, sister of King Wenceslas. An earlier Wenceslas was the good king who is commemorated in

the popular English Christmas carol. A later connexion of England with the Czech people was early in the seventeenth century, when the British Princess Elizabeth, daughter of James the First, married the Elector Palatine Frederick, who was later elected King of Bohemia, but lost his crown at the disastrous Battle of the White Mountain (1621), which placed the Czechs and their kindred under the subjection of Austria.

It was, perhaps, in some measure owing to the nature of that subjection that the Czechs developed into what may be regarded as the most practical and self-reliant of the Slav peoples. They were a hard-working people, both agriculturally and later on industrially, occupying a rich and fertile country, which came to be the chief productive part of the Austrian Empire. To the rigour of their long subjection may be referred that hardness of attitude towards the Germans that is



CONVENTIONAL BIBS AND TUCKERS OF HOLY DAYS IN CZECHOSLOVAKIA
The polished Wellington boots are an interesting feature of their smart Sunday costumes, but on weekdays during the warm weather it is usual for these peasant girls of Pöstyén to go barefooted about their work in field or at home. The children of the poorer peasants seldom know the comfort or discomfort of footgear, and their tough little feet are indifferent to stones, mud, or even snow

Photo, A. W. Culler



NATURAL GRACE ENHANCED BY NATIONAL DRESS

Slovakia is said to be a museum of folk art, and the costumes of this charming quartette from Turciansky Sv. Martin, adequately represent those wonderful products of Slovak needles, which can be ranked with some of the finest peasant handiwork in the world. But modern commerce is beginning to play havoc with the peasants' art, and the lovely costumes of Czechoslovakia are donned more frequently as festal than as everyday dress

Photo, Dr. V. Sixta & Son

generally observable in conversing with Czech men and women, though in the new Republic the German minority is given an equality which had been denied the Czech majority up to the change brought about by the Great War.

To the present-day visitor, Czechoslovakia offers infinite variety of magnificent mountain and beautiful forest scenery, but when about the middle of the fifth century the Slav tribes known as Czechs penetrated and took possession of the country, it was far more extensively covered with forest. That Böhmerwald, or Bohemian Forest, that lies along part of its western bounds, may well be regarded as but a remnant of the vast woodlands in which the new people set up their homes.

The early story of the Czechs is—as with most nations—a blending of

romantic legend and history, so interwoven with tradition that it is not possible to say at any point here is the definite beginning. They tell of an early ruler named Krokus, or Krok, who had three daughters, and when he died it was the youngest of these, Libusa, who was chosen by the people to be their ruler. "She was a wonderful woman among women; chaste in body, righteous in her morals, second to none as judge over the people, affable to all and even amiable, the pride and glory of the female sex, doing wise and manly deeds; but as nobody is perfect, so this praiseworthy woman was, alas! a soothsayer."

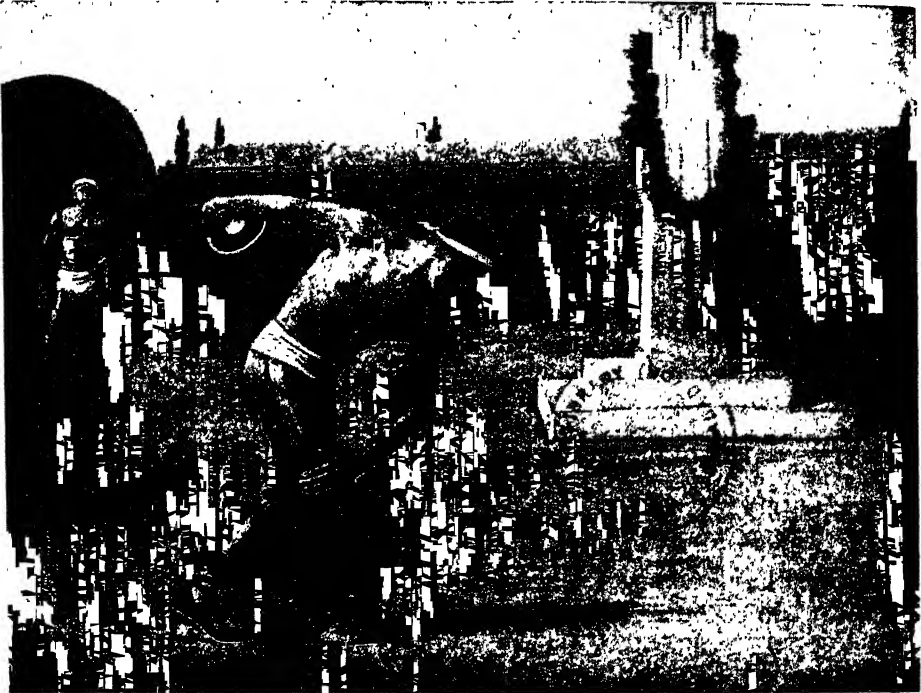
Now Libusa, having to decide a dispute between two nobles, was insulted by the one against whom she decided, and, declaring the people too

CZECHOSLOVAKIA & ITS PEOPLES

ferocious for a woman's rule, bade them choose a man to rule over them, and him she would marry. The people replied, let her choose a husband, and him they would acknowledge as prince. Libusa agreed, and said: "Behind those hills is a small river called Belina, and on its bank a farm called Stadic. Near that farm is a field, and in that field your future king is ploughing with two oxen marked with various spots.

in the character of the people to-day. They are at once—as those of us who have visited their country again and again are well aware—romantic and practical, artists and husbandmen, and possessed withal of an intensely national and patriotic feeling, deepened and strengthened by many generations of repressive rule on the part of Austria.

An active, intelligent people, the Czechs are excellent workers at home,



LIVING DISCOBOLUS IN THE STADIUM AT LETNA

The Society of the Sokols was organized in 1862 under the leadership of Dr. Tyrš, the first Chief Sokol, and Jindřich Fügner, the first President. Primarily, the Society was founded as a simple Athletic and Gymnastic Association, but the Sokols of the present day include in their programme instruction in civics and ethics; in short, all matters which promise the betterment of the nation

His name is Premysl (Prshemysl), and his descendants will reign over you for ever. Take my horse and follow him, he will lead you to the spot." And so it befell.

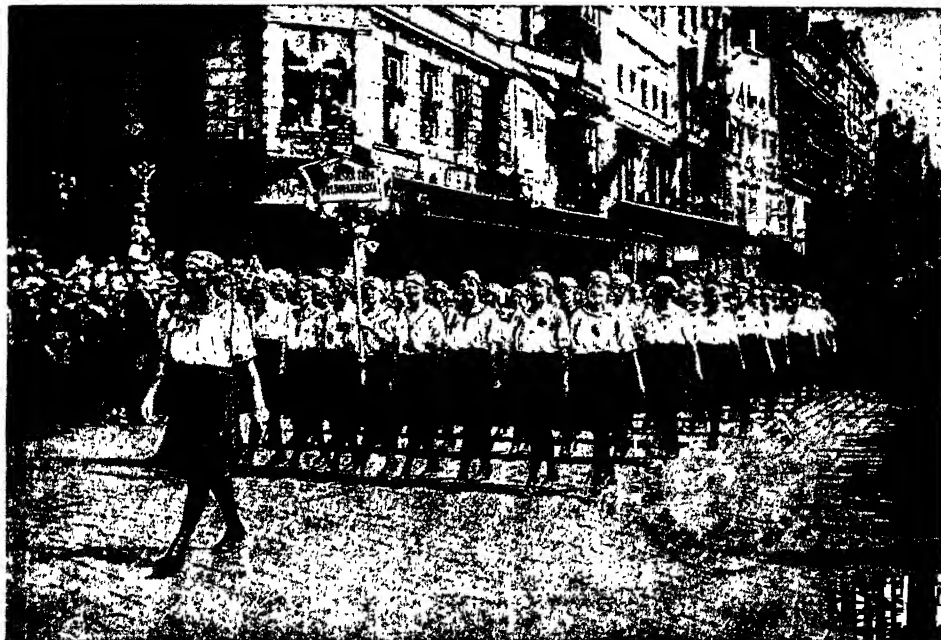
That story has been made the subject of one of his national operas by the Czech composer Smetana, and in its idealisation of the woman ruler and its sustained popularity as a story of Czech beginnings we may not unfairly see something of the best that is found

and as emigrants have been hailed in the United States of America as some of the most satisfactory, though it is remarked there that they retain in a new country that strong national and race feeling of which we find evidence on all hands. Though in many country places old religious customs are retained, and in some of the great monasteries and churches gorgeous religious ceremonials may still be seen, the people as a whole are not deeply religious—the



GRAND PARADE OF SOKOLS IN THE CITY OF PRAGUE

Sokol in Czech signifies "Falcon," and the idea was that the Sokols should be as agile and fearless as this intrepid bird. The men of the society number well over 300,000; they wear a special dress and a round cap with two falcon feathers on its left side. The society has been undoubtedly the most forceful factor in the social unification of the Bohemian people



MARCH-PAST OF A COMPANY OF WOMEN SOKOLS

There are many thousands of women and girl Sokols, and all receive gymnastic training. There is no class difference among them, either within or without the society. All members regard one another as brothers and sisters, and all work for the welfare of their compatriots. The principles of the society are Liberty, Equality, and Fraternity; its motto is "Tuzme se" (Let us be strong)



MARVELLOUS SPECTACLE OF A SOKOL PHYSICAL DRILL DISPLAY IN CZECHOSLOVAKIA

The mass drill of 12,000 athletes carrying out various exercises together, and yet absolutely as one person, is a sight never to be forgotten. The remarkable and wonderful evolutions of these loose-limbed, finely-built men speak well for the careful training that can ensure such magnificent results, and according to the testimony of one spectator, "As examples of perfect training and organization, nothing in the world compares with the great mass drills of the men and women Sokols."

CZECHOSLOVAKIA & ITS PEOPLES

promptness with which the state religion was changed on the establishment of the Republic was strong evidence of this. They are inclined "to believe what they see and are sure of," it has been said, and have but little feeling for any of the mysticism of religion.

Something of the romantic and intensely national feeling may still be seen in the way in which the national music, national art and architecture, and other manifestations of the Czech genius are encouraged. They are markedly musical, and in Dvořák and Smetana have given two great composers to the world. Not only in Prague, but in the smaller towns music is studied and practised with fervent appreciation. Along with keen appreciation of native work, there is to be recognized an avid desire for the acquisition and utilisation of the cultural products of other nations.

It would scarcely be an exaggeration, I think, to say that the plays of Shakespeare are produced well-nigh as often by the Czechs as by the British, while they are at the same time justly proud that their composers Dvořák and Smetana have won reputations throughout the world of Western music. English and French drama and literature are indeed widely welcomed by the educated Czechs, and rendered into their language—not only, as one is made to feel, in genuine appreciation, but also in a general desire for the uplifting of their own people, for I have found, even among the most travelled of them, a strong feeling of national pride.

That national pride, and something of that fine romantic feeling which clings to the old manifestations of a

nation's individuality, may be seen in the way in which the picturesque costumes of the country people in the different districts have been maintained, though there is now a noticeable tendency towards decreasing its use. Prague—as is the way of capital cities—tends to show something of a dull cosmopolitanism in dress, except on occasions of national festivity; but on



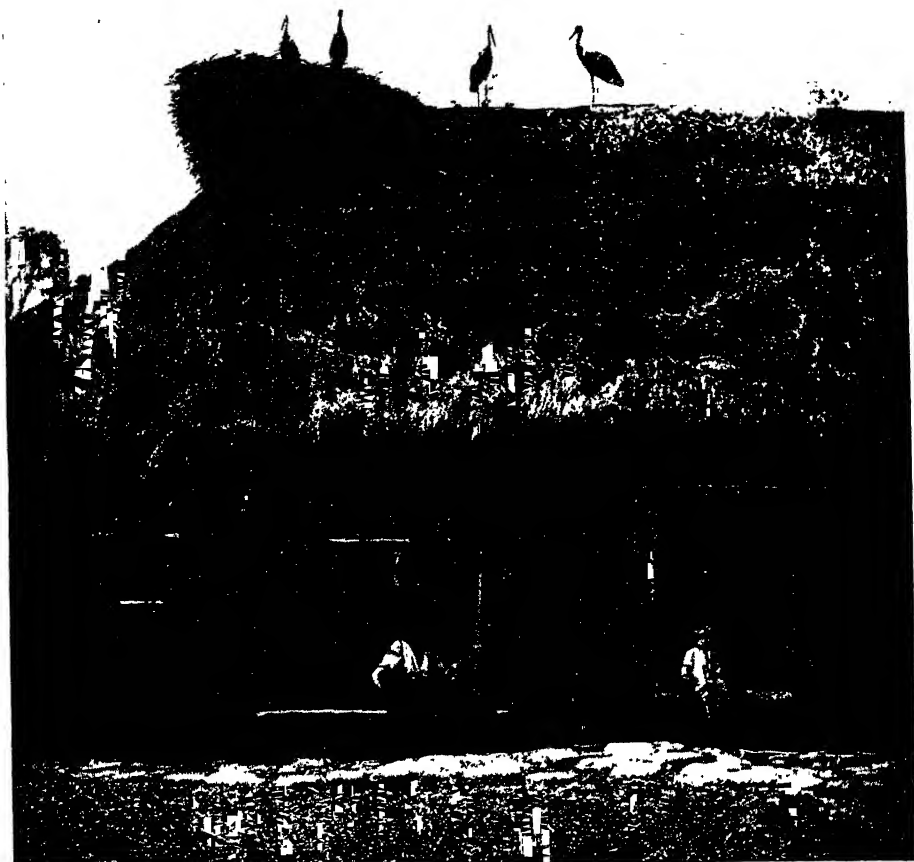
COUNTRY COUPLE OF CONSERVATIVE MORAVIA

These are types of the thick-set, homely peasants to be found on the mountainous plateau of Moravia. Their quaint costumes give them a fantastic appearance. Many of them might have stepped from the posters of a comic opera

Photo, A. W. Cutler

such occasions, when the peasants come in in their Sunday best from the surrounding country, and visitors from more distant parts throng the capital, there may still be seen much of the dress that seems to harmonize with the beautiful older buildings of the Golden City, as the Czechs themselves affectionately term it.

A sprinkling of such costume, too, may be seen in connexion with the



WELCOME TENANTS OF THE ROOF FLAT IN A CARPATHIAN HOUSEHOLD

Seated in the doorway, near his mother, busily spinning, is the son and heir, the pride of this humble home; on the roof, where bundles of flax are drying in the sun, is another family whose advent was heralded with delight. In their huge nest, Mr. and Mrs. Stork have reared two sturdy youngsters, and although they cause damage to the crops, the Ruthenian welcomes them as birds of good omen

Photo, Miss Florence Farmborough

wonderful performances given on Sundays and holidays at the open-air theatre of Sharka, a few miles out of Prague. Here, in a natural amphitheatre, audiences of several thousands of people indulge the very pronounced national delight in opera and drama, the performances taking place against a natural background of hills and woodland, while the countryside itself is utilised as a veritable extension of the stage.

Wherever we go we may still see something of the great variety of national costume that is maintained, if to a lessening extent, throughout the ancient kingdom of Bohemia; at Pilsen, though a great manufacturing centre; at Tabor, at Budejovice, at Domazlice,

and at scores of other old towns from the Giant Mountains to the Bohemian Forest. To stroll about the great market-place at Pilsen, for instance, on a market-day, is to see a goodly range of colouring in the costumes of the peasant women, though various kinds of red will be found to predominate.

In this part of the country the many petticoats that are worn give to the short dresses the effect of crinolines; white or red stockings, skirts and aprons of many bright colours, colour-embroidered bodices, and great variety of coloured head kerchiefs are also to be seen. Remarkable, indeed, is the variety of decorative embroidery, still revealing in general style and character the Slav origin of the people; though seemingly

CZECHOSLOVAKIA & ITS PEOPLES

infinite in the character of its details, it is probably repeating through many successive generations of peasant workers the basic patterns of the original Czechs.

In Southern Bohemia the costumes are not less striking, though the women's skirts have not the crinoline fulness noticed in the districts of which Prague and Pilsen are the centres; while some of the men wear fur-edged jackets often richly embroidered, others wear long black jackets and broad-brimmed hats, approximating in appearance to those of some of their Germanic neighbours. Some of the most striking costumes still to be seen are to be found about the Bohemian Forest district. At Domazlice, for example, where are the Chods, the lineal descendants of the ancient Bohemian borderers, the manners, customs, and dress of the people are still those of medieval times. The men wear long coats with close-set buttons, often extending from neck to ankle, and large broad-brimmed hats,

while the women's brightly-coloured full gowns and close-fitting caps with huge lace side bows or "wings" are remarkable. The beautiful "dove" headdress of some of the Bohemian maidens is a white close-fitting cap or bonnet with wing-like extensions. While these marked costumes, varying in different districts, are still to a varying extent worn throughout the country, they have been brought to a focus in the great national museums, such as those of Prague and Pilsen, along with furnishings and implements characteristic of the different districts. Thus is the pride in national manifestations at once chronicled and stimulated.

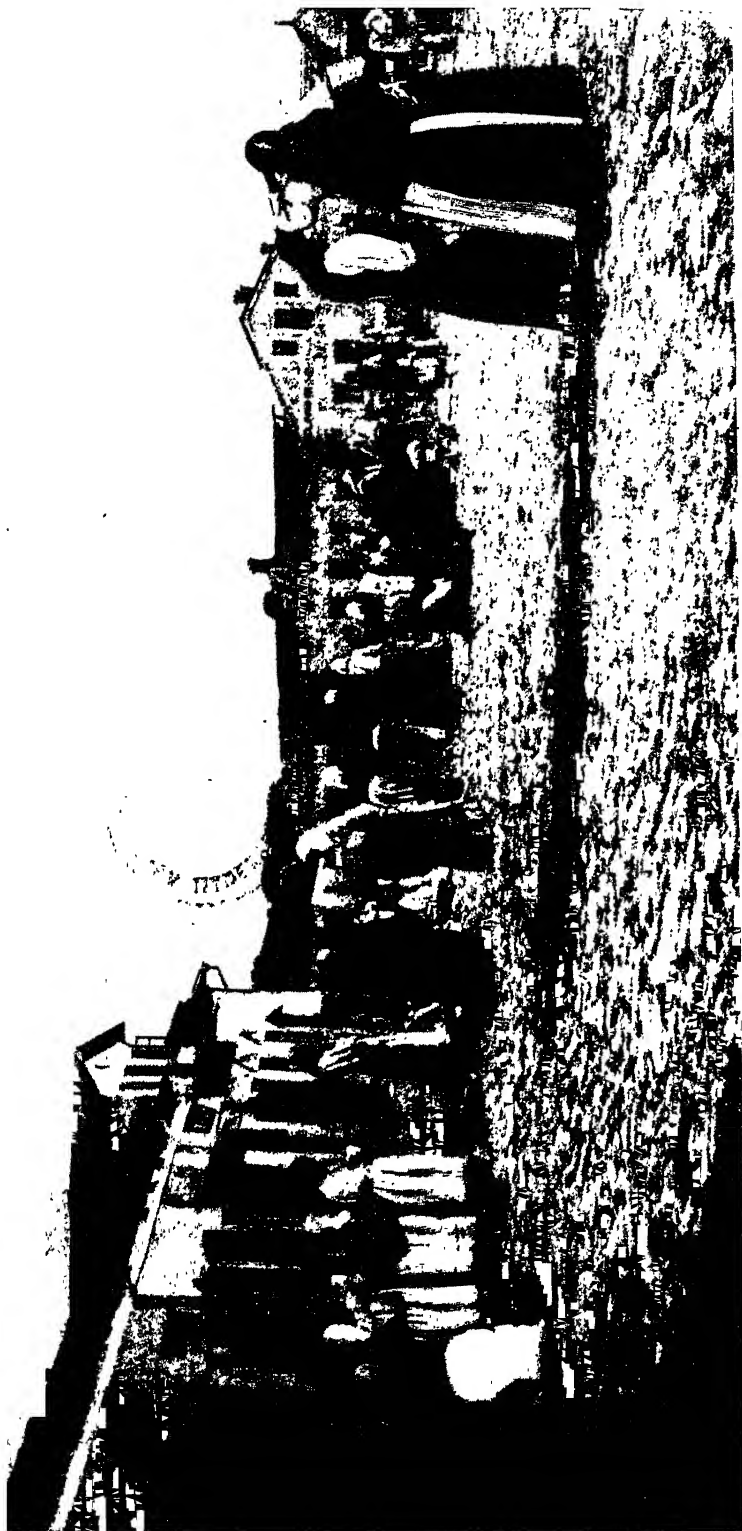
Though in the past the Czechs under successive ambitious rulers have seen their kingdom at one time including a large part of Poland, and at another extending southwards to Carinthia, that was at a period when Germanic influence was for a while strong in the country. The Czechs themselves, as has been said, were largely an agricultural



WINTER SNOWS AMONG THE CARPATHIAN MOUNTAINS

During the cold weather the Ruthenians wear sheepskins with long sleeves, and should a family not have sufficient means to provide a winter sheepskin for each member, the father's coat becomes common property, the wife and children wearing it in turns when the head of the house is at home. In the mountains the thermometer sometimes registers sixty degrees of frost, Fahrenheit, and unprotected ears and fingers are not infrequently sacrificed to frostbite

Photo, Miss Florence Farnborough



COUNTRYFOLK AND COBBLES IN AN OLD GALICIAN TOWN, RUTHENIA

The roads of the country formerly known as Galicia were noted for their rugged, furrowed surface; large boulders and deep ruts causing much discomfort to the occupants of cart or carriage unaccustomed to Galician thoroughfares. In this town, where the roads have been somewhat improved, the boulders have given place to cobbles, over which bare-footed peasants walk with utter indifference. On important market-days the square is a moving mass of vari-coloured countryfolk, all chatting volubly, and each intent on his neighbour's business as much as on his own.

Photo, Miss Florence Farmborough



RUTHENIAN PEASANTS RESTING FROM THEIR TASK OF HOEING THE ROUGH CARPATHIAN HILLSIDES

Hospitable, hard-working, honest, are epithets of which the Ruthenians are justly deserving. The older generation retain many quaint customs; when meeting the "gentry" they bow profoundly, uttering a blessing or prayer, kissing the hand of a lady, or, failing that, her skirt. Ceremonial likewise exists among the members of their own class. One form of salutation is truly fantastic: "May you live a thousand years!" and the peasant thus addressed must give the regulation reply: "And may you come to my funeral!" It is clear that the advantage lies with him who speaks first.

Photo, Miss Florence Farmborough



THE GAME OF WAR AMONG MINIATURE SOLDIERS OF THE CARPATHIANS

Real war has passed over their village, felling many a homestead in its devastating march. But the children still smile on, and their favourite game is "Soldiers." Their military caps, pathetic souvenirs of a war which was no game, represent Russia, Austria, and Germany, and the forgotten dug-out resounds with shrill childish voices, shouting fierce commands

Photo, Miss Florence Farmborough

people, though during the nineteenth century, in and about the chief towns, especially those in the centre and northern parts of the country, they had greatly developed industrially, and at the time of the Great War Bohemia was with Moravia the chief industrial portion of the crumbling Austrian Empire.

At the time of the Great War 31 per cent. of the whole Czech population was still engaged in agriculture, and not less than 51 per cent. of the total surface of the country was under plough cultivation—cereals, potatoes, and sugar-beet forming its principal crops.

The thoroughness of Czech cultivators is prettily illustrated by the fact that in many parts of the country the roads are converted into avenues of fruit trees, the abundant blossom of which in spring greatly enhances the beauty of the landscape. I recall being especially struck with this in a lovely tract of country about

Turnov—a tract that with its wonderland of fantastic eroded sandstone rocks close-grown about with trees is known as the Bohemian Paradise. Here, in the northern part of the country, though the close cultivation of such land as is available is still to be observed, agriculture has largely given way to the local industry of jewel-cutting and bead-polishing, the latter work being carried on in the homes of the peasants.

Passing through some of the hillside villages in this part of the country the roadway is seen to sparkle in the sun with many colours, where the fragments of broken beads have been thrown out from the peasant houses. These wooden cottage homes, with their wide overhanging roofs, are much like the chalets of Switzerland; within them all members of the family are frequently to be found engaged in one task or another in connexion with the bead industry.

CZECHOSLOVAKIA & ITS PEOPLES

Though the cottages consist often of but two rooms, serving at once as living-rooms, bedrooms, and workrooms, they are for the most part kept wonderfully clean and neat, the few cooking utensils are brightly polished, the beds are neatly covered with their down quilts and lace.

The working of the less precious stones which are found in the country—and more especially of the garnet, for

which Bohemia is famous—is carried on in workshops in the towns of the north, and there the visitor may see great baskets of newly-faceted gems lying side by side, as in some Aladdin's treasure-cave. The Czech people, indeed, have proved their capacity for adapting themselves to new conditions by the way in which they have utilised technical education as a means of developing at



JEWISH SWEETMEATS ARE THE DELIGHT OF COUNTRY PEASANTS

The highly-sweetened cakes of the town Jews find ready favour among the country-folk, one of whom is obviously enjoying the dainty, while the expression of dismay of an old Ruthenian woman indicates that coins are not over-abundant in her slender purse. The Ruthenians, little Russians who were formerly Austrian subjects, chiefly inhabited the Galicia of pre-war days

Photo, Miss Florence Farmborough



LUSTY LADS OF THE CARPATHIAN HIGHLANDS

The broad belts of these burly mountaineers are the all-important feature of their costume; when small boys, the belts were mere straps which increased in breadth as the owners increased in stature. Their baggy trousers are of bright red and blue baize, and the taller peasant is wearing a narrow leather band studded with brass buttons, from which depends a beautiful old brass crucifix

Photo, Miss Florence Farmborough



MARKETING COUNTRY WARES IN A RUTHENIAN TOWN

On the cobbles, in front of the Jewish shops, they sit in the glaring sun, a long row of bronzed, healthy, colourful Ruthenian peasant women, chattering vivaciously the livelong day. Nor are they distressed if the country produce with which they have tramped many miles attracts but few customers, for these simple-souled folk welcome dull and bright days with happy-go-lucky indifference

Photo, Miss Florence Farmborough



PIGS AND PEASANTS: A COUNTRY MARKET-PLACE AMONG THE CARPATHIAN HILLS

The well-to-do Ruthenians possess much live-stock, and even the poorest peasants are seldom without a pig. If they possess but one living-room there is always a corner for the pig, which not infrequently shares the wooden cradle with the youngest child. The young porker is carried to market in a sack slung over the shoulder; when fully grown, a rope is tied to a hind leg, and with a thick stick he is guided, none too gently, to his destination.

Photo, Miss Florence Farmborough

CZECHOSLOVAKIA & ITS PEOPLES

once the industries and the industrial workers. They have recognized the value of closely linking such education with its practical application in workshop and factory.

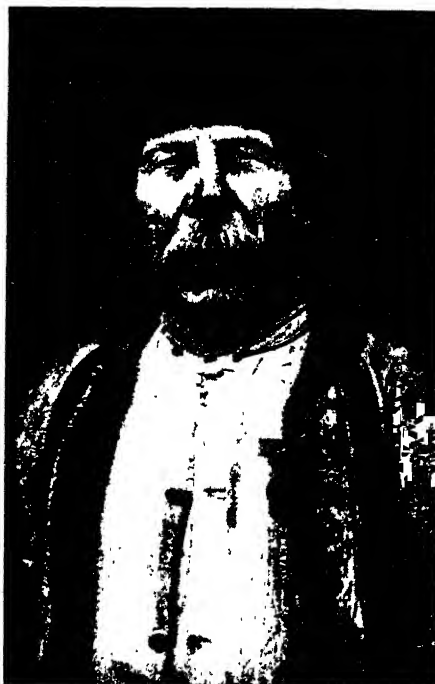
The character of a people is revealed to no small extent by its attitude towards education, and here it is generally acknowledged the Czechs occupy a very high place. They were early in realizing the importance of technical training; industrial schools were set up even in small centres of less than three thousand inhabitants, so that the young people might supplement their ordinary education by a proper training in that local industry with which they would probably come to be associated, whether the making of glass and various kinds of china—for which the country has long been famous—or in developing some of the newer industries, such as that connected with treatment of the now extensively grown sugar-beet.

This practicality—to use a word of which they seem especially fond—appears to be a strong characteristic of the Czech race; it may be recognized in the way in which the language was saved by the national leaders when the submergence of the people under a dominating Germanism seemed on the verge of accomplishment; it may be recognized also, I think, in that remarkable organization of young manhood and young womanhood of the nation known as the "Sokols." Here Czech leaders adapted from their Teuton rivals the idea of the gymnastic society, and utilised it as a means of training their people not only in the way of physical fitness, but in the way also of moral purpose, and adapted it furthermore to the quickening and stimulating of national and racial pride.

Some day, perhaps, the story will be told of the influence of the Sokol movement on the gaining of Czech independence in the Great War. The Sokol organization was begun in 1862, and developed with extraordinary rapidity. It took its name from the falcon (sokol in Czech), its motto being "Let us be strong," and its greeting "Good luck,"

and it was thoroughly democratic in character, the members of whatever social rank being regarded as a band of brothers and sisters. Its moral teaching I once heard tersely indicated in the words, addressed to one about to stoop to get under a fence: "A Sokol gets over or goes through, but never goes under."

Every Czech centre came to have its Sokol, and the periodical gatherings,



ONE OF THE OLDEN SCHOOL

Somewhat slow to imbibe fresh ideas, he, with his fellow-countrymen of Podkarpatska Rus, represents the conservative element of the new Republic of Czechoslovakia

Photo, Dr. V. Sixta & Son

such as those in Prague in 1912 and 1920, have brought tens of thousands of them together from all over the world. In 1920, for example, a massed drill was done by 12,000 men and another by 12,000 women. The special Sokol dress for the men is a loose fawn-coloured jacket, often worn hussar-fashion, over a red shirt, directly derived from that of the Garibaldians, and a round fawn cap bearing two falcon feathers.

In Moravia, the central portion of Czechoslovakia, are found among the population of about two and a quarter



MEN OF A MODEL VILLAGE IN SLOVAKIA WITH THEIR SPICK AND SPAN HABITATIONS

The term Czechoslovak comprises two branches of the same Slav nation: the Czechs of Bohemia, Moravia, and Silesia, and the Slovaks of Slovakia. The illiteracy of the Slovak was proverbial, but it was deliberate. Ordered by the Magyars to learn a hated tongue, they preferred to remain untaught, and there is no doubt but that these frugal and industrious people—true Slavs in faults and virtues—will develop amazingly in the free air of the new republic

Photo, Dr. T. Sista & Son



VENERABLE INMATES OF A HOME FOR THE AGED AND POOR

The days pass smoothly for them now in this, their last earthly home. The institution, supported entirely by voluntary gifts of food and money, stands by the highway at Pöstyén, and its aged members may often be seen sitting on the low bench skirting its walls. They are permitted to ask alms of passers by, and many a kindly person drops a coin in the box placed under the crucifix

Photo, A. W. Cutler

millions beside Bohemian Czechs, other peoples of closely allied Slav origin, of whom the Horaks and Hanaks are particularly interesting as having more markedly maintained their old-time costumes and customs. Their country is a mountainous, irregular, but very fertile, plateau, mainly watered by the river March, with a general slope to the south, and bordered on the three other sides by mountains. About a quarter of the country is still under forest, principally oak and pine. The people are for

the most part engaged in agriculture, and carry on extensive dairy-farming, but they also occupy themselves to a considerable extent in various home industries, more especially in weaving and the making of woodwares.

On the whole they may be regarded as a less progressive people than the Czechs of Bohemia, possibly owing to the way in which Moravia was long exploited by Austrian nobles as a favourite place in which to establish their country seats and engage in wild

CZECHOSLOVAKIA & ITS PEOPLES

boar battues and other sports. Political and economic matters, too, were long controlled almost wholly by the Germans and the Jews who had settled in the towns, and, though a minority, obtained a paramount position.

The Horaks, who occupy the high lands, are a somewhat taller people than their Czech neighbours on the immediate

in that the men as well as the women have largely retained the varied attire of tradition. For where the peasantry of different countries are concerned it is among the women that local peculiarities of dress are longest continued, the men earlier falling under the influence of the stiff and unpicturesque monotony of general

European clothing. White shirts and brilliantly coloured and richly embroidered vests, sleeveless jackets with an abundance of bright buttons, small hats wreathed with feathers or flowers—these are some of the features of the native dress still to be seen in common use among the men. It has, indeed, been suggested that nowhere so much as here is it possible to see a brilliant variety of attire so suggestive of the exaggerations of comic opera.

The people of Moravia, who for centuries suffered from the invading neighbours who successively gained power over their country, long occupied a position of actual serfdom, followed by conditions scarcely removed from that owing to the country being largely the property of the territorial magnates to whom the workers on the land were of little more significance than their cattle. Thus it is



CHILDREN OF UNMISTAKABLE NATIONALITY

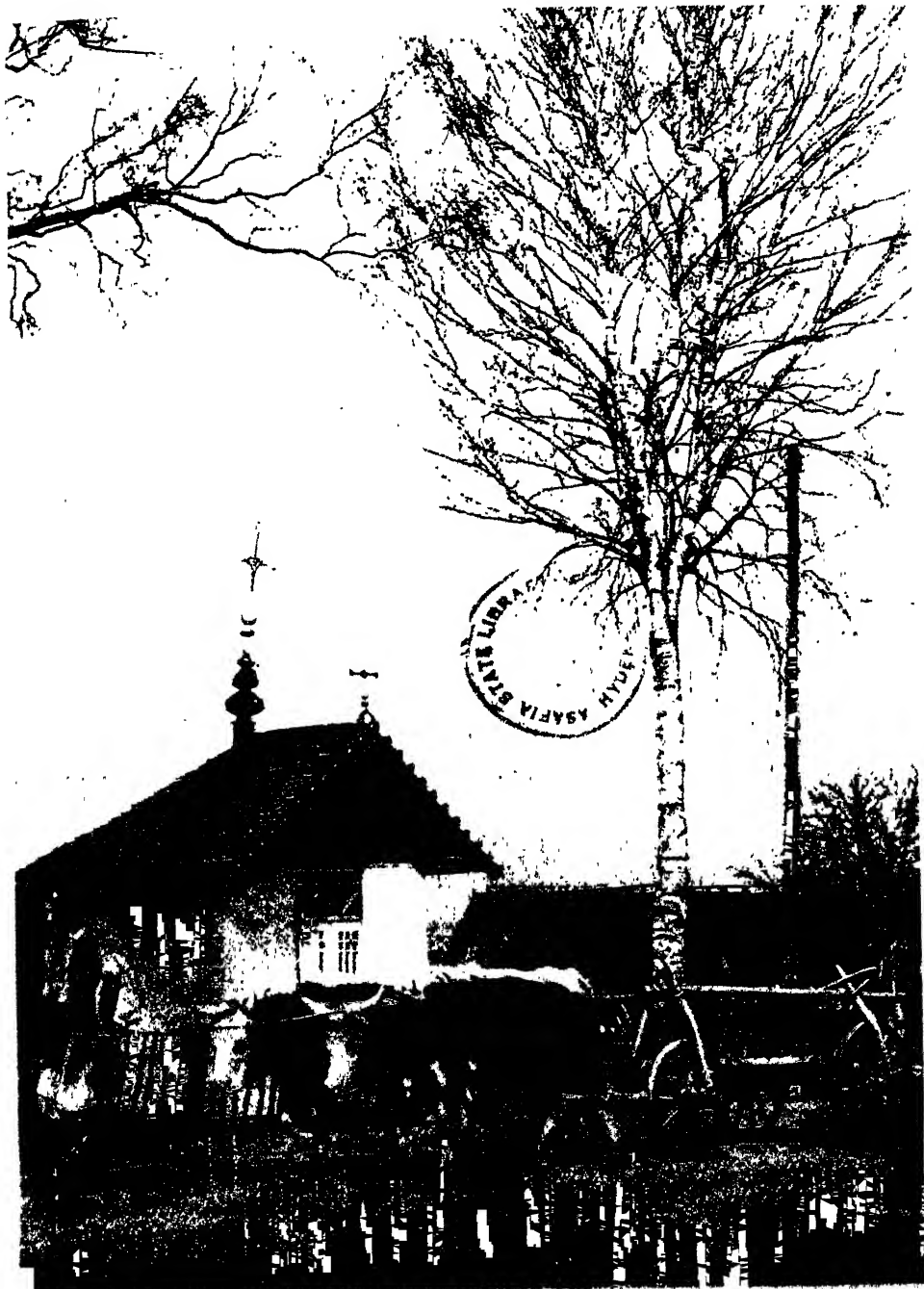
There are some 360,000 Jews in Czechoslovakia; those who inhabited the country formerly known as Galicia are strictly orthodox, and the lock of hair down the side of each cheek is still characteristic of both young and old

Photo, A. W. Culler

west; while the Hanaks of the valleys are of a stockier build. In the mountains of the north-east the shepherd people are Vlachs. It is among the Moravians—to employ the conveniently comprehensive geographical word that embraces the different peoples of the country—that picturesque national costume has been preserved more conspicuously than in most other parts of Central Europe. This is perhaps the more noticeably so

that the Moravian peoples are as a whole less advanced than their Czech brethren, though in their new conditions educational and cultural opportunities are being rapidly increased, and they are taking their places in industrial work which had long been in the hands of the German and Jewish settlers in the country. The language spoken is mostly Czech dialect, but the literary language is Czech, and this fact and the

CZECHOSLOVAKIA: *Its Picturesque Peasantry*



*Bare-headed he passes before a wayside shrine. Even in the wilds
of the Carpathians there is no lack of reverence for things sacred*

Photo, Miss Florence Farmborough



This sweet-faced girl of Czechoslovakia, arrayed in the beautiful handcraft of peasant artistry, is a veritable queen of loveliness



Her rich beauty and flashing grace are enhanced by the floral designs richly emblazoned in vivid colouring on her national dress.



Under the watchful eye of his eldest sister, the baby sleeps tranquilly in his improvised cradle, while, with free mind and an easy mind, the young Slovak mother attends to her arduous duties in the field

Photo, A. W. Culler



Despite the hot sun shaggy sheepskins are numerous in this Slovak market. "Comfort while you wait" is the motto of these peasants, who pass many patient hours before the sacks are emptied of their grain

Photo, A. W. Cutler



The modest beauty of the Slovak peasant home is portrayed in this mother and child, its industry in the golden maize-cobs overhead

Photo, A. W. Cutler



*The pleasant smiling faces of this homely peasant
earnest of the hospitality never lacking in the humble*

Photo, A. W. Cutler



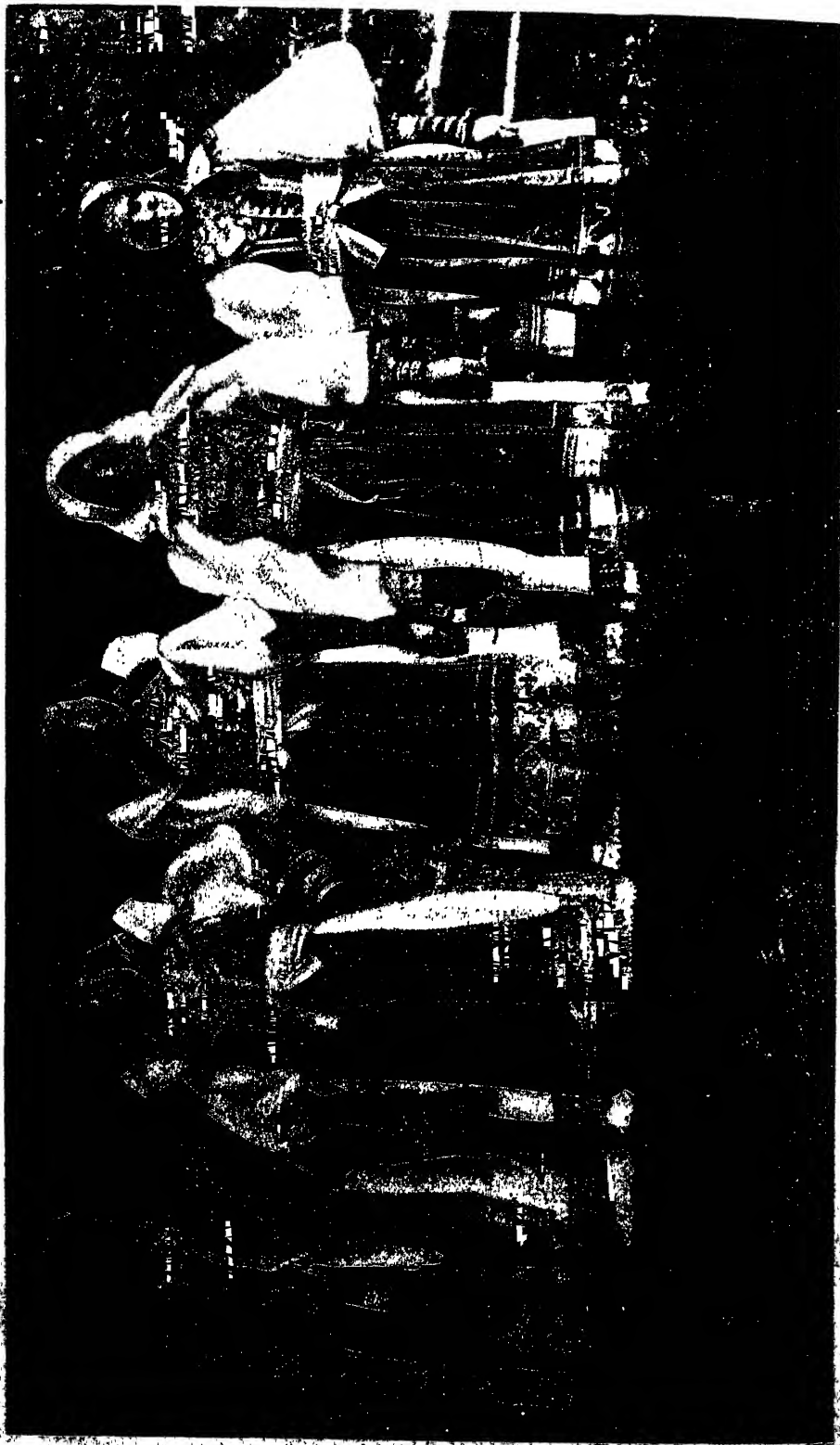
Colours run riot on market days, but the sheepskin, with its elaborate floral designs, is the crowning feature of a Ruthenian costume

Photo, Miss Florence Farmborough



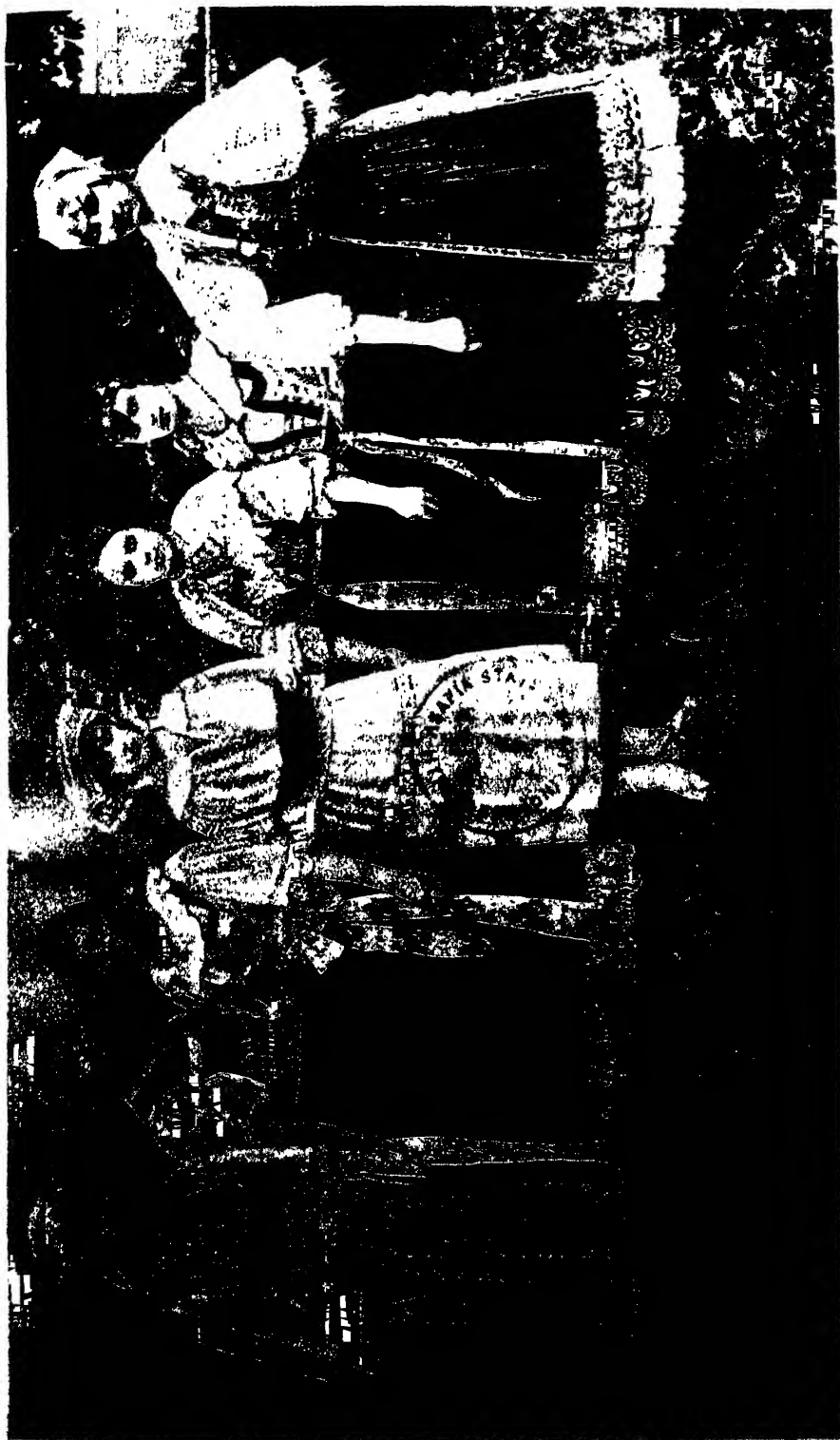
The dull brown haystack is a fitting background for this quiet-faced peasant and his comely daughter of the Carpathian Mountains.

Photo, Miss Florence Farmborough



The stolid peasant woman of Moravia and red-faced farmer's wife of Slovakia are transformed into picturesque personages when attired in their highly-decorative and brilliantly-coloured national costumes

Photo, Dr. V. Sixta & Son



...amazing skill and an artistic taste, combined with natural feminine instinct, enable the Czechoslovak girl to choose from myriad brilliant costumes the particular dress that can accentuate her charm

Photo, Dr. V. Sixta & Son



They roam the Carpathians with their flocks, shy young shepherd lads, understanding the language of Nature better than that of man

Photo, Miss Florence Farmborough



Through the quiet Slovak village the procession slowly moves, chanting prayers solemnising this holyday of a ~~year~~ ~~year~~



The Sabbath day in Ruthenia, and after church the lads, with swaggering gait and
wearing old long gaiters, parade their newest sheepskins and newest gaiterspuns through the village streets
State, Miss Florence Farmborough



high boots, wide, white fringed trousers, embroidered waistcoat, coat loosely hung over left shoulder, and low-crowned almost brimless hat, the average yodel of Slovakia is not wanting in rustic style

Photo, Dr. V. Sixta & Son



Attired in the ancient costume of her grandam, this tiny tot indicates the importance of the occasion by her right regal deportment

CZECHOSLOVAKIA & ITS PEOPLES

unifying of the educational system of the new state will probably together help to break down the dialect differences which at present are most marked in the eastern part of the country.

By its missionary zeal a Protestant sect which developed out of the Hussite movement of the fifteenth century came to be widely known in Western Europe, and later in America, as the Moravian Church (also as Moravian or Bohemian Brethren). Driven out of the country of its origin by reactionary persecution, it established settlements first in Germany and later in England and America, where it still maintains several centres.

The Slovaks or Slovakians who are linked with the Czechs in the name of their new joint state are about two and a half million in number, most of them occupying that eastern portion of the Republic which is formed in part of the mountains and valleys of the Carpathian system, including the High Tatra. It is only recently that the name Slovakland or Slovakia has been given to the tract of country mainly inhabited by the Slovaks, for they have never formed an independent state, though they have managed to maintain their racial individuality since they first occupied the country. By some authorities they are regarded as part of the original Czech tribes that passed westward from their fellow Slavs in the fifth century; by others it is claimed that they were a distinct branch of the Slavs who actually preceded the Czechs in their western march. This last claim is made on the ground that the language of the Slovaks is the nearest of all

modern tongues to the Old Slavonic. Though for centuries the Slovaks were under the close domination of Hungary they have not become Magyarised—indeed, they have tended rather to absorb others than to be absorbed, and have maintained their



FLOWERED RIBBONS OF BRIDAL HEADDRESS

The little Slovak bride turns aside her smiling face that the countless multi-hued ribbons, of which she is justly proud, may be seen to full advantage, but her corsage embroidery is no whit less gorgeous than these silken bands

Photo, A. W. Culler

characteristics even where they have passed into the southern parts of Hungary and formed settlements.

The Slovaks are for the most part Carpathian mountaineers and dwellers in the Little Alföld, that Danubian plain which stretches to the east of Bratislava. Their preference is for maintaining themselves by sheep and cattle breeding. They are, generally speaking, a very much simpler, more superstitious, less



OVERFLOW SERVICE OUTSIDE THE CROWDED CHURCH

This is no unusual Sunday morning scene at Pöstyén. The great interior of the Roman Catholic Church is already packed, and the late arrivals are forced to remain outside. There is no "fine-weather" religion, as may be seen from the open umbrellas, for, despite falling rain, the knee is bowed alike on the paved floor of the sacred building and the muddy ground of its courtyard

Photo, A. W. Outler



STURDY TRIO OF MOUNTAIN-BRED PEASANT WOMEN

In the Carpathian villages, strapping young women are plentiful; many of them are extremely handsome when young, but the wear and tear of outdoor life—for much of the field labor is done by women—wrinkle and discolour their faces unmercifully. After marriage the women bob their hair and fasten their kerchiefs behind the head, not under the chin as is customary with unmarried girls

Photo, Miss Florence Farmborough

CZECHOSLOVAKIA & ITS PEOPLES



ON HER WAY TO THE FIELDS

This farmer's wife cuts a neat figure as she walks along with her husband's appetising dinner in the tin cans, carried in practical Slovak fashion by one handle

Photo, A. W. Cutler

educated race than the Czechs of Bohemia and Moravia, with a language of their own that has produced but a slight literature. Quiet and even subdued in manner, they are kindly, contented, and extremely industrious. Mostly they are small farmers pursuing their tasks by somewhat antiquated methods, though a few years ago, when visiting Bratislava, I was struck by the many modern agricultural implements that were finding their way into the country through that pleasant old market centre.

Many of the Slovaks become wandering workers, going down to the great grain-growing plains in harvest-time, and also to Germany and even so far as Denmark; others, as itinerant tinkers, go wandering about Austria, Hungary, and Southern Russia, carrying the

implements of their trade and doing their work by the wayside. Numbers of the Slovak girls, too, were wont to seek work in Vienna and other cities as nursemaids. In their gay national costume, white bonnets, short dark jackets, short skirts, gaudy aprons and stockings, they added an attraction to the streets of the capital, and were valued by the Austrian aristocracy that employed them.

In material comforts and conveniences these people are poor. They are in an overwhelming majority a rural population contented with simplicity of life, and seemingly ready to journey any whither in search of work. Their favourite dish consists of rye bread soaked in water, with eggs and sheep's milk added, and the simplicity of their life is reflected in the frequent addition



RUSTIC YEOMAN OF SLOVAKIA

The tattered coat has seen long and honourable service, and the comical loose trousers were once actually growing in his garden-plot

—in the form of hardy hemp plants

Photo, A. W. Cutler



WATER-RETTING THE HEMP ON A RIVER-BED OF RUTHENIA

The methods of gathering and preparing hemp are very similar to those of flax, but it is a hardier plant than flax, grows to a height of several feet, and does not possess the same pliability. Hemp makes very coarse linen, flax the best and finest; the fibre is obtained from the stalks and consists of the bast beneath the bark. When ripe, the stalks are pulled and immersed in water



HAND-LABOUR PREPARING THE FIBRE FOR THE SPINNING-WHEEL

In a corner of their field this countryman and his wife, aided by their simple implements, are taking turns at scutching the hemp fibre. The broken, ravelled, and short fibres which separate out in this process form tow. The Ruthenians cultivate this annual herb very extensively, and most of their coarse linen garments are manufactured at home from the hemp grown on their small holdings

Photos, Miss Florence Farmborough



FAMILIAR SCENE IN THE COUNTRY DISTRICTS OF CZECHOSLOVAKIA DURING THE HEMP HARVESTS

After the steeping, the retting process takes place in order to destroy cohesion among the fibres by rotting. When the membrane, or rind, becomes loose, it is a sign that the stalks are sufficiently macerated, and then, thoroughly dried in the sun, they are beaten on a block, and the fibres are freed by a wooden mallet, and lightly chopped with a long wooden chopper. These processes demand much patience, for the peasant knows no labour-saving devices in the linen-making industry

Photo. A. W. Culler



INGENIOUS METHOD OF BLEACHING THE MATERIAL HOME-GROWN AND HOME-SPUN BY THE PEASANTRY

Innumerable yards of this coarse linen are placed on the river banks. The peasant girls, with earthenware bowls, throw water upon the material, which dries quickly in the hot sun, when it is again saturated and dried until sufficiently bleached. The various processes in the manufacture of linen, sowing, pulling, steeping, retting, scutching, cleaning, spinning, weaving, and bleaching, are carried on entirely within the limits of the peasants' premises, and all by members of the family

Photo, Miss Florence Farmborough



WHERE THE HOPE OF THE YOUNG REPUBLIC LIES DREAMING

The beautiful country districts of Czechoslovakia have a fascination all their own. Among the whirring shuttles of the cottage home, the pastoral scenes in the valleys, the pine-clad slopes, the song of romance is never stilled, and the hearts of these humble women are stirred by strange hopes and ambitions as they watch the peaceful baby face of him who will one day be a man

Photo, A. W. Cutler



PAIR OF OLD CRONIES FROM KRUPINA IN SLOVAKIA

The latter years of their lives are being blessed with comparative peace and plenty. They have passed through many vicissitudes together, and now, freed from the Magyar yoke, are bent on promoting the prosperity of their country. The Slovaks are a simple, religious, and industrious folk, skilful in all domestic manufactures, but mostly prefer to occupy themselves with cultivating the land.

Photo, Dr. V. Sista & Son



VOLUMINOUS SKIRT-TROUSERS OF THE MEN AND BOYS OF THE OLD BOHEMIAN PEASANTRY

Wider even than the women's petticoats were the trousers worn by the menfolk, and these, hanging loosely, could scarcely be distinguished from skirts, but being home-grown and home-spun were not censured as an extravagance. Owing, however, to the straightened economic condition of the country consequent upon the Great War, the matter of clothing was subjected to very strict control, and these extraordinary trousers are consequently disappearing from view, their place being taken by a less extensive substitute

Photo. A. W. Culler



PLEASING TYPES OF THE PEASANTRY OF CZECHOSLOVAKIA

So early as the fifth century the Czechs inhabited as an independent nation the territories of the ancient kingdom of Bohemia, and now, owing to the overthrow of the old order in Europe, Czechoslovakia has again, after centuries of vassalage, become a free country. Here are a few representatives of the class whose wonderful ability has gained for their country the title of "Treasure House of Peasant Art"

Photo, Dr. V. Sixta & Son



FOLK-DANCING AT A HOLIDAY FESTIVAL IN PRAGUE

Even in the early medieval period the Bohemians were renowned for singing and dancing, and folk-songs and folk-dances have never lost their hold on them, and it is to the peasants, fixed to the soil by serf-laws, that the national music of Bohemia owes its preservation. Many well-known "Hungarian Rhapsodies" are merely the captivating measures that sing of stamping boots and voluminous skirts whirled in the picturesque dances of the Czechoslovak peasant

Photo, Rudo Bruner-Dvorak



OPEN-AIR RENDERING OF A BOHEMIAN RHAPSODY

The brodered shirts and wide loose trousers lend a picturesque touch to these peasant musicians, whose curious home-made wind instruments can produce such remarkably tuneful melodies. In matters of taste and skill in the fine arts, the Czechs rank very high indeed. The love of music is universal among them, and their music is well known throughout the world, a fact largely due to the superb creative work of Smetana and Dvořák

Photo, Dr. V. Sista & Son

to an invitation to a wedding: "Bring your own plate and knife and fork"—a custom which is fairly general in the country districts of Hungary.

The most densely populated part of the country is the south-western, and the simplicity of the lives of the people is well seen on a market-day at Bratislava, the largest of their towns. Hither, drawn by buff-coloured bullocks, come long, narrow wagons with wattled sides laden with various vegetables, while the peasant cultivators, craftsmen, or dealers group themselves about the irregular market-place of the old town according to the wares of which they have to

dispose. At one place are the sellers of bread in many forms, at another the dealers in drapery and haberdashery, or sellers of boots and shoes. A little beyond are the dealers in fruit and vegetables, conspicuous among which are the mounds of dark green-skinned melons, with here and there a broken one revealing the beautifully contrasting purplish red flesh within, and the broad baskets or tubs of paprika, a delicately flavoured red pepper greatly used in this part of Europe.

All about are peasants from the surrounding country, who bring in sometimes wares that can gain them



YOUTH AND AGE CHEERFULLY BEARING THEIR ALLOTTED BURDENS
Among the stately buildings steeped in ancient lore of Zlata Praha (Golden Prague), as the Czechs call their beloved capital, weighty matters dealing with the welfare of some 13,000,000 people are under discussion; but in the country places, where the world is at rest and time stands still, simple lives are being lived in artless fashion, scarcely conscious of the teeming world around them

Photo, A. W. Culler

but a few halfpence, such as a handful of beans of various kinds, three or four dozen tomatoes, good, bad, or indifferent; while grouped at one point are women with small heaps of fungi, unknown to British culinary art—"toadstools" of all shapes and sizes and colours. Though one or two striking costumes are to be seen—somewhat similar in brightness of colour and fulness of petticoats to those of central Bohemia—one is struck by the absence of any marked characteristic of local dress.



RICH FEMININE APPAREL OF CZECHOSLOVAKIA

With her arms akimbo, this fresh-faced maid presents a delightful picture in the gay costume of her race, which, with its ribbons, laces, embroideries worked by her own deft fingers, and floral decorations runs the whole gamut of brilliant colours

Photo, Dr. V. Sixta & Son

The various coloured headkerchiefs are much the same as those to be found in the neighbouring countries, while the two dominating notes of colour are "butcher's blue" in the women's gowns and a warm yellow brown in their kerchiefs.

More marked examples of local dress are to be found in the smaller villages and on occasions of special festivals. In their homes the Slovak men, who keep their hair long and shave both beard and moustache, wear a coat of white baize with a broad leather girdle, sandals, and wide-brimmed hat. The women, whose coloured dresses are often richly embroidered, are famous for this kind of work.

Despite the poorness and simplicity of their lives, the Slovaks show in their customs and traditions that they are agreeably romantic, even poetical in their imaginations, as may be recognized in the way in which a marriage proposal is made. One evening the lover and his best man knock at the door of the house where the girl lives, and say that they are looking for a star. They are asked to enter and look round, and as soon as the girl sees them she leaves the room. "That is the star we seek," they say to the parents. "May we go in search of her?" When she is found and brought back the best man makes a long speech about the institution of marriage from the time of Adam and Eve, and the betrothal is solemnly performed.

The narrow easternmost end of Czechoslovakia is inhabited mostly by Ruthenes or Ruthenians, of whom there are about



MOUNTAINEER OR BUCCANEER?

This is no reckless, lawless brigand, but a kindly, honest farmer of Slovakia, who has never been far outside his hamlet, and whose only luxury is a pipe

Photo, Dr. V. Sixta & Son

half a million occupying an autonomous district of the republic. They are mainly a poor and backward people, forming mostly the labouring class. The weaving of linen is pursued as a household industry throughout Ruthenia, and the peasants are now being encouraged to develop the manufacture of wood articles, furniture, and paper, and to start factories of their own. Sometimes described as Little Russians or Red Russians, they form but a small part of this Ukrainian branch of the Slav race, most of whom are found in the neighbouring Polish Galicia or the Rumanian Bukowina.

These different peoples that are now brought together in one state, the Republic of Czechoslovakia, as a result of the Great War, represent, as we have seen, distinct differences in their stages of cultural progress. The most advanced are undoubtedly the Bohemian Czechs, and as we pass eastwards we find the standard attained a lower one, the condition of the mass of the people more



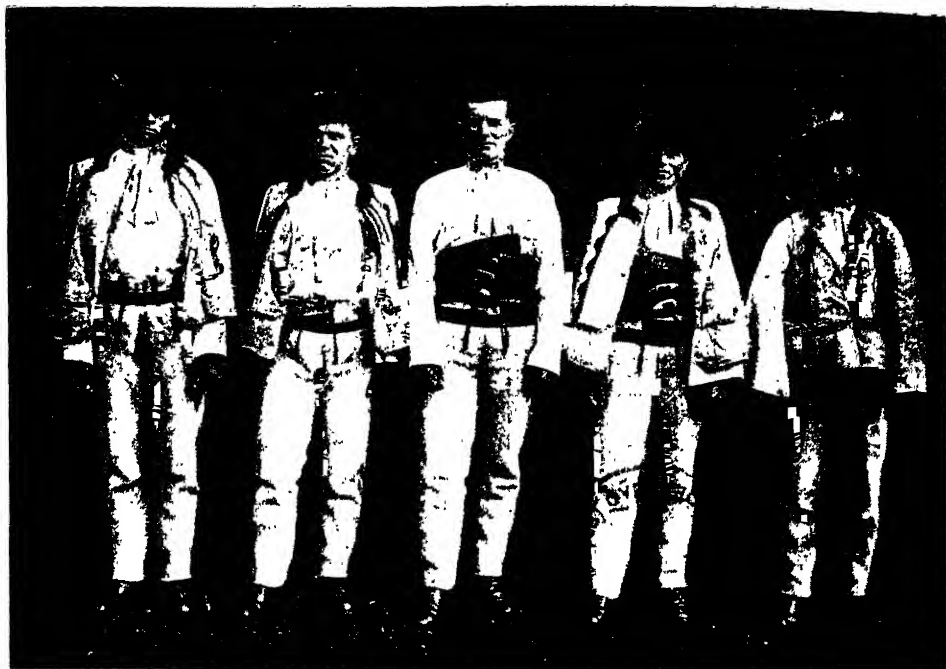
SEASONED SLOVAK VETERAN

The Slovaks seldom wear beards or moustaches, but their hair, when long enough, is often braided, as is seen on this fine, weather-beaten old head

Photo, Dr. V. Sixta & Son

primitive. Despite differences of education and intelligence they have, however, the link of common racial origin, and as they held together in their aspirations for independence, it may be anticipated that with new conditions and enlarged opportunities they will attain to something of an actual national unity.

It was of happy augury that the first President of the Republic to be elected, Thomas Masaryk, should have been one whose father was a Moravian Czech, and whose mother was of mixed Slovak and German descent. Those of us who were present at the first gathering of the Parliament in Prague when Masaryk was elected, while realizing that the historic occasion was the culminating point of the aspirations of the vast majority of the peoples of the country, realized also that the large German population was likely to prove for some time a disturbing factor—not easily can such a people submit to the rule of those whom they have been accustomed to dominate.



MEN OF CZECHOSLOVAKIA IN NATIONAL DRESS

Thick white baize trousers, linen shirts, broad leather belts, short sleeveless sheepskins, and round felt hats decorated with coloured flowers or rooster feathers, form the usual picturesque garb of the young countrymen. Mostly of medium stature, they possess strong and vigorous constitutions



POLYCHROME PROCESSION OF CHURCH-GOING PEASANTS

The native costumes of Czechoslovakia are a delight to the stranger, whose eye may feast on an unparalleled diversity of colour. The Sabbath Day in Slovakia is a picture difficult for the most skilful artist to paint, so bewildering is the array of garish costumes, and it would be an everlasting pity should this beautiful apparel be sacrificed for the sombre garments of present-day European fashions

Photos, Dr. V. Sixta & Son

Czechoslovakia

II. The Long Struggle Between Czech and Teuton

By C. Townley-Fullam

Author of "A Land of Shepherd Kings"

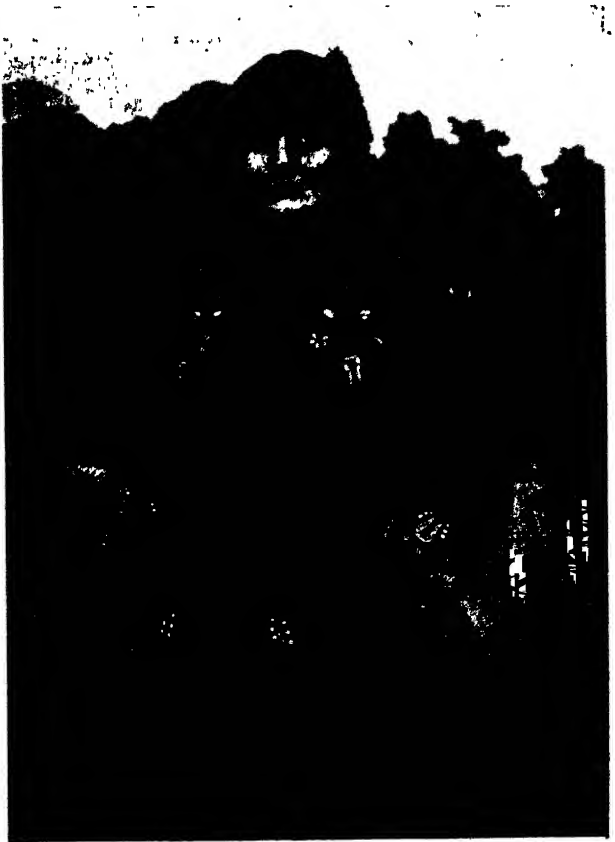
IF we compare the phenomena born of the Napoleonic cycle with those reborn of the Hohenzollern epoch the similarity is striking. Equally striking is the divergence. Both cataclysms ended in disaster and in the shipwreck of ideals. Both were closed by international Treaties, but whereas the Treaty of Paris was the negation of 1789, that of Versailles was its reassertion. The former was the triumph of the dynastic and despotic theory; the latter of democratic ideals. There the divergence ends.

Each Treaty provided for new political groupings. Thus the grandchildren of that generation which saw the combination of Norway with Sweden and Holland with Belgium are now witnesses to the marriage of Serb with Croat and Czech with Slovak. But whereas the moving spirit which produced such strange coalitions at the Peace of Paris was purely dynastic, that which has brought forth the new political conceptions is simple race-consciousness. So much is this the case that those economic causes which were the mainspring of action in the case of greater powers left the smaller groups quite untouched.

The end of the Great War saw the old German Empire geographically intact; the new Austrian Empire was annihilated. Of the States ~~formed~~ out of the debris, by far the most important in extent as in political force is the entity now known as Czechoslovakia, a unit formed of the old kingdom of Bohemia, long directly subject to Austria, and the provinces eastward, inhabited by Slovaks, directly subject to Hungary. Though the Slovaks have had the honour of giving birth to such great men as Kossuth, leader of the Magyar Revolution; Petöfi, the poet of the '48;

and Kollar, the poet whose influence, strangely enough, was cast in favour of Bohemia and Pan-Slavism, the Slovak provinces never had a continuous political existence. The practical result is that the half—Bohemia—is, in terms of the Greek proverb, greater than the whole—Czechoslovakia.

If Slovakia cannot be considered in relation to Bohemia, neither can Bohemia be considered otherwise than in relation to Moravia, Hungary, Germany, Austria, and the Vatican. It would be less than true to say that these have influenced her destiny—they have made it.



PRETTY YOUNG GENTLEWOMAN OF SLOVAKIA

This dainty girl, in jaunty little fur cap, does not disdain the sheepskin coat, familiar among the peasantry of her country, for thus attired she is proof against the coldest wind

Photo, Dr. V. Sixta & Son

CZECHOSLOVAKIA : HISTORICAL

The traveller who tells us that Naples is the glory of the earth never saw Budapest. The historian who speaks of Belgium as the cockpit of Europe knows nothing of Bohemia, where for a thousand years the irresistible force has battled against the immovable body. Bohemia, which has known in succession Charlemagne and Svatopluk, Boleslaus of Poland and Henry of Germany, the Mongol invader, Sigismund of the Council of Constance, the tools of the Vatican, Matthias the Just of Hungary, Ferdinand of Hapsburg, the Hussite War, the Thirty Years' War, the Seven Years' War, the Revolution of the '48, and the horrors of 1914-18 may surely claim a mournful pre-eminence in suffering and sorrow.

The claim is just. Behind her roll fifteen full centuries, centuries of uninterrupted strife—strife in aims, in religion, in culture, in speech, in civic polity; strife with a succession of Popes and a roll of emperors, with Arpad, Hohenstaufen, Hohenzollern, and Hapsburg. She has known martyrs, heroes, conquerors; she has never known rest. For this there are many reasons, but the one which counts is the axiom which underlay the politics of Central Europe, even down to the days of Bismarck, that "the master of Bohemia must be master of Europe."

Cleft by the Magyar Wedge

The main cause of this tearful destiny must be sought not in the pressure of German States, nor in the thunders of the Vatican, but in a circumstance bewailed by Palacky, her statesman-poet, in a memorable and poignant lament—the coming of the Magyar: "Slavdom never received a more fatal blow. . . . The Magyar, by driving a wedge into the heart of the State, destroyed it, and therewith all the hopes of the Slavs."

The effect of this irruption of the children of Attila—for so the Magyar claims to be—was even more decisive than Palacky, writing many years ago, claimed. The wedge cut off from their parent stem both the Balkan provinces and Bohemia herself, thus leaving the latter the unsupported outpost of Slavdom exposed to the hereditary German enemy. But for this the Slav would have presented an unbroken front through Strelitz to Kiel, even to Sweden, as witness the commemorative title of the Swedish kings to this day, "and of the Werds" or Slavs. Cut off, pierced again and again by German oppression, these small communities were quickly swallowed up and lost.

Bohemia, more compact, self-contained, could not be annihilated, but she could be permeated. She could be penetrated. Thus her whole history of centuries offers the spectacle of a people exposed as to her outer relations to conquest, and as to her

inner relations to treason. Both factors, the factor of treason and the factor of force, the efforts of a minority within supported by the arms of a majority without, combined to impose upon her a cultus against which she perpetually rebelled. The history of continental Europe of the seventeenth, eighteenth, and nineteenth centuries is bound up with this question of the forcible superimposition of Teutonic ideals upon the small Slav peoples of Bohemia, Moravia, Poland, Slavonia, and Croatia.

Bohemia Bloody but Unbowed

All nations or peoples at some time or other have had their great moments, eras whose glories serve as inspirations to later generations and keep alive, even subconsciously, those qualities and aspirations which, held in common, go far to explain the baffling phenomenon which we call race-consciousness. Hungary and Serbia, Venice and Bohemia, fill the annals of the Middle Ages with stories of great conquests, dizzy pre-eminence, and resounding crash. Hungary gave law to Europe, even to the Vatican, until submerged by the Crescent. Serbia, in the heroic age of Dusan, dominated the Balkans until weakened by the "wedge," and conquered by the Turk. Venice fell to "the government which she deserved," and later to Napoleon and Austria. But to Bohemia has been reserved a history constant in the repetition of evils. And yet, though overrun, conquered, looted, and ravaged, she has never been subdued, not even at the epoch of the Battle of the White Mountain, which made her the slave of intolerant and illiberal Austria. There has never been a moment in her mournful past when the dogged and purposeful policy of the German invader was not matched and well countered by the equally dogged spirit of national resistance. That, in brief, is Bohemian history.

Cycle of a Thousand Years

Until recent times there have been in Czech history no sharp dividing lines such as usually mark the evolution of a nation. On the contrary, phase melts into phase, the whole being insensibly leavened by external influences. There have been upheavals and convulsions; great, even fundamental changes, but these have run more or less in cycles and cannot be said to have had—each of itself—any permanent effect. It has taken a thousand years for the wheel to revolve full circle.

All these changes—ephemeral movements equally with basic alterations—are barometric, showing at any given time, the state of the battlefield, high or low pressure. At one period the Teutonic legions, bringing up their Vatican supports, bear down Czech resistance. At another



PEASANT WOMEN OF TRENCIN, PROVINCIAL TOWN OF WEST SLOVAKIA

Their native town is situated on the River Vag, but, in their quaint Quaker costumes, they are typical of the women who are to be found in the surrounding valley districts, and in the beautiful wild regions of North Slovakia, amidst the High Tatra Mountains, which are the loftiest group of the Carpathian system, and rival the Swiss Alps in their magnificent scenery

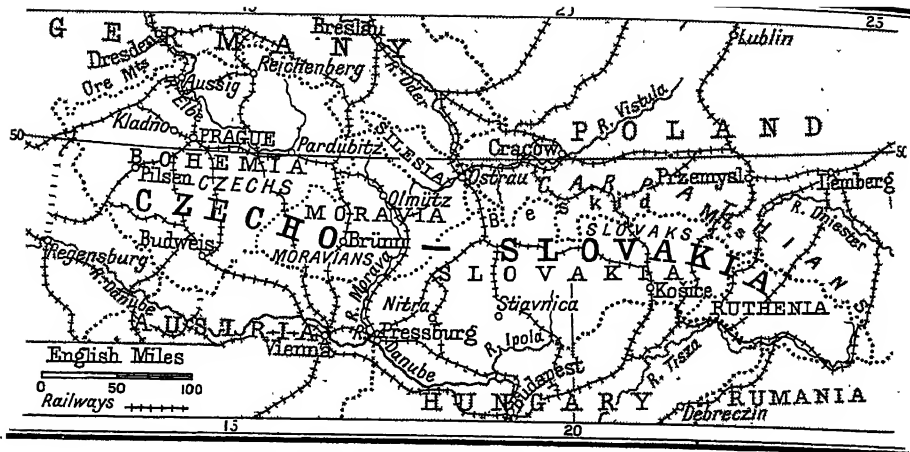
Photo, Dr. V. Sixta & Son

the Czech phalanx, solid, impenetrable, by the mere power of inertia or weight of moral force, causes the German tidal wave to spend itself in useless effort. At yet another moment, as during the Napoleonic era, there is an armistice, both forces being submerged by a third. But there is never a Treaty of Peace.

It might be urged that this point of view loses much of its force when considered in relation to the outstanding feature of Czech history, the Hussite War. The ordinary view of that convulsion is that in an age when the shadow of the Renaissance brooded over Europe it was the inevitable result of a conflict between the whole armoury of the Papacy on the one side

and the heresy of a whole people, once under its spiritual jurisdiction, upon the other. It is put into a class with the struggles of the Albigenses and of the Lollards. Nothing is further from the truth. The Bohemian did not quarrel with the religion of Rome so much as with its exponents. The priesthood was wholly German; the monasteries were strongholds and watch-towers of the invader. The Church in Bohemia acquired the character not of a religious organization but of a political force whose weight was being thrown into the scale on the side of the German and against the Czech.

He who aids the enemy is himself the enemy.



CZECHOSLOVAKIA AND ITS PEOPLES

The Hussite War was little other than a racial struggle upon a convenient religious issue. Nor should it be forgotten that the Council of Constance which condemned Hus was not Eumenical. The sentiment of this age would hardly enrol it in the list of Councils at all. Its active president was a layman, the Emperor Sigismund, who brushed aside two Popes and himself created a third, the Emperor whom Hus had offended.

John Hus was tried under the forms of a Church Council for heresy. In truth he was tried by his own sovereign as a rebel upon an issue with which this generation is familiar. He was the first statesman to put forth the amazing and heretical doctrine of the self-determination of peoples. It was for that he was condemned—for that he died. To this generation has been reserved the spectacle of a world giving formal sanction to a principle for whose mere enunciation a Bohemian died in flames five hundred years ago.

If Hus was a greater statesman than Luther it was because he was a pioneer and he had a longer road to travel. Hus preceded Luther; more, he produced the Man of Wittenberg.

Influence of Hus and Luther

Taking full advantage of the recent establishment of the Prague University and the absolute parity, for the moment, of the Czech and German tongues, Hus set out to reform Czech orthography; he advocated the study of his own depressed language, wrote it, spoke it, and by so doing placed himself at the head of a racial movement which would have gathered way had he never been born. He never wrote German; if he turned now and then to Latin it was with the object of appealing to intelligences racially inimical but politically sympathetic. Luther reformed not only the German

religion but also the German language; he threw off a religious yoke which had become a political menace. In the interests of Germanism he offered battle to a foreign hierarchy. That that hierarchy should have been religious rather than political was the accident of circumstance. Luther ended in favour of the Empire one phase of the Guelph Ghibelline War.

Hus was dead, but Hus dead was stronger than Hus living, for the very Emperor Sigismund who burned him as a rebel was forced at last to banish from his councils both German and Catholic elements. To the Czech these were synonymous.

Period of Ruthless Persecution

But the tide ebbed again. The "Winter King," Frederick, was defeated in 1620 at the fateful Battle of the White Mountain, and for the moment a nation ceased to exist. There followed a persecution worse than any that Alva had tried in the Netherlands. A new German nobility was forced upon the country. Ferdinand, the Emperor, determined that none but Catholics should exist, reserved for himself the task of schooling the bodies of his lieges; their souls he handed over to the Jesuits.

Landlords were executed in bulk; the language was proscribed; only German was tolerated. The universities and schools were placed in the hands of that company the fame of which has come down in history associated with so many stories of cruelty and intolerance. Konias the Jesuit burned, with his own hands, 60,000 volumes. Those printed in Czech were not German; those printed in German were not orthodox; those printed in Latin were superfluous.

The tide turned again. "It is no mere coincidence to say that the Czech revival

CZECHOSLOVAKIA: HISTORICAL

dates from the suppression of the Society of Jesus." This is a terrible indictment.

Joseph II., the benevolent despot and doctrinaire with a passion for uniformity, by his ordinances and ukases directed to the supremacy of the German element merely produced a Czech revival. He proclaimed toleration for the Christian and banished the Jew to the Ghetto; made German the language of the schools, and endowed a Chair of Czech in Vienna!

For one brief period the tide receded. The abortive revolution of '48, itself a protest against the Holy Alliance, placed the Emperor once more in the only position which a Hapsburg could understand. Bohemia, like Hungary, became again the forcing-ground for absolutism, for govern-

ment by police spies and proscription. But the system failed. Nemesis provided that two branches of the German race should fall out and honest men began again to expect their due.

For the last fifty years the Czech has steadily waxed, the German as steadily waned, until at this moment it is safe to say that the day of German dominance in Bohemia is definitely over, not as the result of a clause in a Peace Treaty, but from more enduring economic and racial causes. If that be indeed so the Czech does right to place in the forefront of a small galaxy of national heroes who nourished him in the moment of hope and comforted him in the hour of despair the great names of Hus and Palacky.

CZECHOSLOVAKIA: FACTS AND FIGURES

The Country

Independent Republic, bordering on Germany, Austria, Hungary, Rumania, and Poland. Established in accord with the Peace Treaties and comprising the former Austrian provinces of Bohemia, Moravia, and Silesia, together with the upper part of Hungary known as Slovakia and Carpathian Ruthenia. The latter territory is autonomous in matters relating to provincial administration, schools and religion. For local administration the State is divided into twenty-two districts. Total area about 55,690 square miles. Population (1921), 13,595,816—67 per cent. Czechoslovaks, 22 per cent. Germans, 5.5 per cent. Magyars, 4 per cent. Ruthenians, and 1.5 per cent. others. Density of population 248 per square mile.

Government

Democratic Republic, with two legislative Chambers—Chamber of Deputies, elected for six years and containing 300 members; a Senate comprising 150 members elected for eight years. Both Chambers are elected by direct ballot on the basis of equality of sexes, race, religion, and occupation, and in accordance with the principle of proportional representation. Voting is compulsory. President elected for seven years by the two Chambers assembled in joint session (exception being made in the case of President T. G. Masaryk, elected for life). He represents the State in its relations with other States, negotiates international treaties, convokes, prorogues and dissolves parliament, signs laws, appoints and recalls ministers, appoints all higher officers, officials and judges.

Army

Conscription law provides for national army with two years' service; strength of standing army, 150,000. During service the men are given educational advantages in continuation schools, systematic courses of lectures, etc.

Commerce and Industries

Mineral wealth enormous—gold, silver, radium, lead, iron, coal, lignite, graphite, salt, oil, etc.

Water power offers almost unlimited resources and is extensively utilised. Agriculture basis of large industry. In western provinces the growing of raw material for sugar, beer, malt and spirit industries most important branch of agriculture; in the eastern part chief crops are cereals. Moravian malt, Bohemian beer and hops have a good reputation in the world-market. Forests comprise 32 per cent. of whole area. Bohemian glass industry famous. Fancy goods, agricultural machinery, textile industries (four million spindles), paper, leather, and chemical are other industries. About 80 per cent. of the mines and industrial enterprises of the former Austro-Hungarian Empire are located in Czechoslovakia.

In 1920 imports were valued at 23,384 million Czech crowns; exports, 27,569 million crowns; credit balance, 4,185 million crowns. In 1921 imports amounted to 22,435 million crowns, exports to 27,312 million crowns, credit balance 4,877 million crowns. About 200 Czechoslovak crowns go to an English £ (pre-war parity 24.02). Czechoslovak crown the most stable currency in central and eastern Europe. In 1921 imports chiefly cotton and cotton goods, corn, flour, wool and woollen goods. Principal exports wool and woollen goods, sugar, cotton and cotton goods, iron and iron goods, glass, coal and timber. Most foreign trade is with Germany and Austria.

Communications

There are about 8,500 miles of railways, mostly State-owned. River Elbe and its navigable tributary, the Vltava, connects Prague, the capital, with Hamburg. The Danube also touches the country, and Bratislava, the Czechoslovak port, is headquarters of the International Danubian Commission. Over 65,000 miles of telegraph line, and over 50,000 miles of telephone wire. 34,000 miles of roads suitable for motor traffic. Large sums being spent on new railway, telegraph, and telephone lines. In mountainous districts motor-car services being established.

Chief Cities

Prague (Czech, Praha), the capital (population 676,000), Brno (221,000), Plzen (88,000), Bratislava (93,000), Olomouc (56,000), Kosice (52,500), Moravska Ostrava (42,000), Usti n.L. (39,000), Liberec (35,000).

Dahomey

Past & Present in the Old Slave Kingdom

By Frank R. Cana

Author of "The Sahara in 1915"

A GENERATION ago Dahomey was an independent state with an hereditary monarchy whose power was limited only by that of fetishism ; it was notorious alike for its human sacrifices, its army of Amazons, and its incessant raids on its neighbours. French rule has, however, brought great changes ; no longer are human sacrifices offered, neither are the skulls of fallen enemies used as drinking cups, or piled in pyramids as monuments of victory ; the she-soldiery have been disbanded : the kingdom, built up by two centuries of conquest, has dissolved into its component parts.

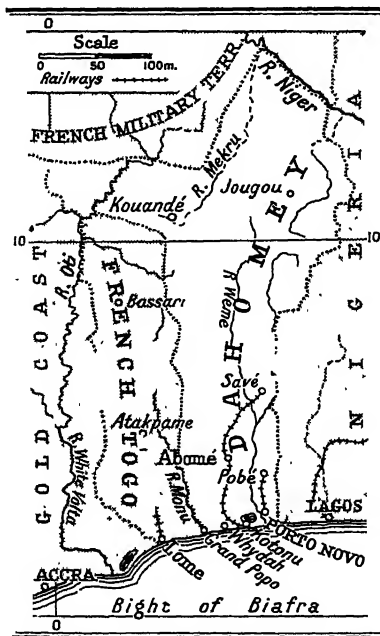
But the Dahomian remains a type of those West African tribes who, cut off from contact with other parts of the continent, proved themselves capable of building up strong and elaborately organized states possessing a highly remarkable degree of civilization. Separated from the Sudan by a broad belt of virgin forest, they owed nothing, or next to nothing, to the infiltration of the higher types of African humanity. They owed, indeed, a good deal to the white man who came to the Guinea coast for ivory, gold, spices, and — principally — slaves. But their genius for government and their elaborate ceremonial were innate. No Oriental or European court ever had a more elaborate etiquette for state functions than had these

West Coast negroes, whose system was seen at its height alike in Ashanti, Dahomey, and Benin. Each of these states had its special features, and Dahomey was alone in maintaining a standing army and in making women professional soldiers.

The aspect of Dahomey is monotonous. The coast line is formed by a low, level, narrow strip of sand, against which the great breakers of the Atlantic roll continually. There are no harbours, and landing through the surf is still the general custom, though at Kotonu the French have built a pier where ships can unload. Behind the strip of coast lies a network of lagoons and swamps, mangrove-lined and forbidding. Beyond is the bush, giving place to forest proper, oil-palms and bamboos being conspicuous. The orange and citron trees, very numerous in some localities, were

introduced by the Portuguese. To-day there is little big game in the forest, but when first known elephants were plentiful, as was also the lion.

The forest, too, is much thinner than it used to be. In the clearings the natives cultivate, often in large quantities, maize, millet, manioc, yams, and beans, and when it is realized that nearly all these things are not African — but, like the oranges, were introduced by the early Portuguese, it will be admitted that the old slavers did not do evil only. The three essentially



DAHOMÉY

DAHOMY PAST & PRESENT

native trade products of the country were men, ivory, and palm-oil. The trade in ivory went first, slave dealing lingered on almost to the last quarter of the nineteenth century, the trade in palm-oil, at first insignificant, is to-day the basis of the country's prosperity.

North of the primeval forest, across the once dreaded Lama swamp—now traversed by a railway—the ground rises gradually to a more open plateau, some 800 ft. high, and here stands Abomey, the old capital of Dahomey, the scene of the annual "customs," when scores of victims were sacrificed to the ancestral spirits, and of the still more dreadful "grand customs," celebrated on the king's accession, when the victims sometimes numbered thousands.

The kingdom of Dahomey, at its greatest extent, covered about 10,000

square miles; it was that is, about as large as Yorkshire, Durham and Northumberland combined, and from the sea it stretched about 125 miles inland. It is inhabited by numerous tribes, each with a different though often allied language.

The dominant race is the Fong, a tribe known also as Fons, Jejs or Jefe, whose proper name is Ffon. Somewhat above the average height, well-formed, square-faced, with deep-set eyes and flattish rather than flat noses, and low foreheads, their skin is not really black, but varies in colour from a dark chestnut to deep purple, with sometimes a yellowish tinge.

The Fong are inordinately proud—as becomes a conquering race—reserved, polite to strangers, and do not now deserve the reputation they held at the time of the French conquest of being liars above the ordinary, slothful and



EUROPEAN FASHIONS FOR MEN IN A WEST AFRICAN TOWN

Situated on the coast near the frontier of what is now French Togoland, and on a lagoon whereon small steamers can ply, Grand Popo is an important trading town of Dahomey. The Mina, the natives who occupy the district, are wonderfully skilful surfmen. Despite the distressing climatic conditions a good many Europeans of mixed nationality are found in the town.

DAHOMY PAST & PRESENT

treacherous. They are certainly keen traders, and the ruling class is of much more than average intelligence. Their kings were masterful men, as they had need to be if they would keep their thrones. They surrounded themselves with women—numbering their wives by hundreds—and the Amazon army grew out of a feminine lifeguard established by the early monarchs.

Trade Leads the Van of Empire

The story of Dahomey cannot be separated from that of the European traders who frequented the coast and made the lagoon port of Whydah their headquarters. The Portuguese were the first to come, and they have not quite gone. Indeed, to-day, though Whydah and the adjoining regions have been annexed by France, the fort of São João Baptista d'Ajuda (St. John Baptist of Whydah) is still claimed by Portugal as part of the province formed by the famous coco-producing islands of San Thomé and Principe in the Gulf of Guinea. An officer and twenty men guard the Lusitanian flag at the Baptist fort, while high-sounding Portuguese names are borne by natives all along the coast.

After the Portuguese came the French, the British, the Dutch, and other adventurers. The oldest of the modern forts at Whydah is that built by the French in 1671; English, Portuguese, and Brazilian forts were also built, and when Sir Richard Burton was at Whydah in 1864 he recorded the shameful fact that the English fort was under the protection of two fetish charms.

Ivory, White and Black

From their first coming to the coast the white merchants in black flesh maintained agents at the courts of the native potentates, chief of whom in the seventeenth century were the kings of Hwedah (Whydah) who lived at Savé, some miles inland, and the kings of Allada, farther inland. The kings of Whydah, though they ruled over less than 50 square miles of territory, were immensely wealthy, deriving their riches from the dues levied on the export of

slaves and ivory. In the middle of the seventeenth century 20,000 slaves were shipped yearly.

The prosperity of Whydah in the next century is illustrated by the truly royal dash (present) of half a hundredweight of gold dust, which the king gave to the English captain, Sir Challoner Ogle, for ridding the Guinea Coast of the notorious pirate Bartholomew Roberts. Roberts had sadly interfered with the monopoly of the slave trade which England then possessed with Spanish America, to the great detriment of the Whydahs. This was in 1772; five years later Whydah was conquered by Agaja Dosu, king of Dahomey, who had already conquered the neighbouring kingdom of Allada. The Whydahs had trusted to their gods for salvation. To guard a ford, where a few hundred men could have withstood a host, they placed nothing but their great fetish Danh, a carved stone snake. But the Dahomian general cared nothing for Danh—the fetish of his king was a panther—Savé was captured, and 4,000 of its people sacrificed to Agaja's gods and ancestors.

An African Tamerlane

This Agaja was the fourth of his line. The founder of the dynasty was a prince of Allada named Dako, who had gone north and established himself near Kana, the residence of the then chieftain of the Fong. Dako killed this chieftain and usurped his kingdom, which was enlarged in subsequent reigns. Agaja was a conqueror by profession, a Tamerlane in miniature. It is said of him that he sought territory and not consolidation, skulls not subjects, but in seeking an outlet to the sea he had his eye on the main chance—to draw to himself all the benefit which the kings of Whydah had derived from their dealings with the white slave-traders. And in token of his success he emblazoned on his flag a two-masted ship. From this time, too, the kings of Dahomey imported large quantities of guns, cannon and ammunition.

When the Dahomians became masters of Whydah they became also virtual overlords of the white traders on the coast. The kings insisted on the presence



HIGH PRIEST OF DARKNESS WHOSE POWER IS WANING

Slowly pacing with his acolytes down the woodland ways, this dignified high priest of fetishism still finds many to do him reverence, for the Dahomians proper are mostly fetish worshippers. But civilization is clearing the mental vision of his people even as it is letting light into their forests and has shorn him of much of his spiritual power

Photo, Govt. French West Africa

DAHOMY PAST & PRESENT

of white notables at Abomey for the annual "customs," and these visitors were compelled to witness the human sacrifices with which the festival ended. But if the kings exacted respect, they were prepared to show respect for the white man.

The viceroy of Whydah, before going upon and on returning from a journey, paid official visits to the European forts, and had to offer prayers to the white man's god in the chapel of the Portuguese fort, first removing his sword and fetish charms. And the black priests who used to officiate sprinkled the heathen with holy water. As a further mark of their patronage of Christianity, every year on St. John's Day the king sent a pot of palm-oil and a bottle of rum to the

guardians of the Portuguese chapel. The Dahomians were very religious, and their human sacrifices were not evidences of wanton cruelty, but resulted from a mixture of piety and pride—of pride as to the numbers slain, of piety, inasmuch as the spirits of the victims were sent to be attendants on dead monarchs or other ancestors. Such sacrifices were distinct from those offered to the gods. The accounts of European witnesses of the annual "customs" vary, as did the "customs" themselves during the 160 years they were under observation. But they always included the public slaughter of prisoners of war and criminals in the market-place. Some of the victims were tied to posts, others were exhibited in baskets on a platform. On the fateful



PEACEFUL VILLAGE LIFE UNDER UMBRAGEOUS TREES

Under French rule quiet contentment pervades the scattered villages of Upper Dahomey. Here, in Dassazoumbé, the girls may fetch water, and children may play on the boulders outside their beehive homes without fear of molestation by slave-raiders or warlike neighbours. Their customs are little interfered with, and the natives can cultivate their crops for their own use, and acquire comparative wealth by extracting palm-oil for the market

Photo, Govt. French West Africa



ART SERVES RELIGION: DAHOMIAN SCULPTOR CARVING A FETISH

Fetichism is not idolatry, but a belief that the services of a spirit may be appropriated by possessing its material embodiment, and a fetish thus is a useful spirit in its proper shrine. This devout Dahomian is making a clay image for presentation to his fetish priest, using the beak of a slain fowl to carve the features in the plastic material

Photo, J. R. Birtwistle

day the king came out in state and explained to the people that the victims were being sent to wait upon his ancestors in the spirit world. The condemned men were then slain, in some cases the king himself being the executioner. While most of the victims were decapitated, those on the platform were hurled, bound, into the midst of the crowd, by whom they were butchered. Animals were sacrificed at the same time. The king, wrote one eye-witness, bathed his feet in the blood of the slain, while their heads were placed in neat rows at the entrance to the palace.

Visitors to Abomey witnessed not only the "customs," but the army manœuvres. They bear testimony to the high training, martial bearing, and powers of endurance of the Amazon corps, which numbered between 2,000

and 3,000 women. Originally they were divided into light and heavy infantry battalions, the former armed with bow and spear and a formidable knife. Later all were provided with firearms and became good markswomen. In valour they were not excelled by the men warriors, as indeed was shown in their last campaign, when they more than once charged right up to the French lines, several falling in hand-to-hand combats. At parades a usual manœuvre was a charge through triple lines of piled up thorns, a severe test, as their uniform gave little protection and they went barefoot.

As the king sacrificed regularly to his ancestors, just as regularly he sent forth his warriors, both for conquest and for procuring slaves, for no Dahomian could be sold. The captives, such as were not



NATURAL BEAUTY AND PHYSICAL GRACE AT ZAGNANADO: ON DAHOMEY'S GREAT NORTH ROAD

Lithe and erect, with her heavy water-pot balanced on her head, this Dahomian girl might almost be taken for a sculptured figure from a fountain for the refreshment of travellers on the great road that runs northward from Porto Novo through Zagnanado to Savé. Thence, as the metalled East Road, it extends to Mallanville on the Niger. These fine roads are under Government control and are maintained by the use of forced labour

Photo, Govt. French West Africa



"WHERE EVERY PROSPECT PLEASES": DASSAZOUMBÉ VILLAGERS ON THEIR WOODED HEIGHT

Savanna, with dry forest and bush, characterises the central zone of Dahomey where the Savalu district is situated, one of the few thickly populated areas north of Abomey. Much of it is occupied by the Nagos, a race decidedly inferior to the Fong, at whose merry they have always been, owing to their lack of centralised organization. Commanding a perfectly magnificent panorama, this village has an air of comfort, but the natives' civilization is comparatively low

Photo, Genl. French West Africa



PAGEANTRY OF TRIBAL LIFE: DAHOMIANS DANCING THE TAM-TAM AT ATHIÉMÉ

Action dances of primitive peoples provide a fascinating study for the ethnologist. Dances representing fights are practised universally where warfare is a main occupation of the men, and are partly of the nature of military exercise. The bravery dances of the Dahomians is an example. In another action dance of Dahomey the warriors, hunters, minstrels, carpenters, and blacksmiths take part, with their weapons, instruments, and tools of their trade

Photo, Govt. French West Africa



YOUTHFUL DAHOMIANS WHO ARE HAPPY UNDER FRENCH RULE

They are natives of Abomey, the ancient capital of Dahomey, and once a great stronghold in the scrubland, mud-walled and protected by a deep fosse filled with a growth of prickly acacia. Burned by King Behazin on his defeat and flight, the town has been rebuilt by the French, greatly to the material benefit of its native inhabitants

given to the princes, ministers of state, and caboceers (governors), cultivated the royal farms. From these slave farms the requirements of the white dealers were met. When the public conscience of Europe awoke to the iniquity of the slave trade the revenues of the kings of Dahomey suffered, but those monarchs showed no signs of adapting themselves to changed conditions. Gezo, a famous warrior-king who reorganized and increased his women soldiery and died in 1858, was succeeded by Gléglé, who (without knowing it) was instrumental in bringing Nigeria under British rule. It was to counter Gléglé's slave-dealing that the British in 1861 annexed Lagos. A little later the French established their first protectorate over Porto Novo, a little coast kingdom which Dahomey had not absorbed, and they obtained from Gléglé in 1878 the grant of Kotonu, with the right to collect customs.

It was in 1889, during the scramble for Africa, that the British acknowledged French claims to the country; in the same year Gléglé died, and was succeeded

by his son Behazin, or Behanzin. War between the French and Behazin followed, in which the Amazons played their part "manfully." Peace was patched up, but was broken by Dahomian raids on Porto Novo. Then came the campaign of General Dodds (1892-94), which ended in the complete conquest of Dahomey. Behazin died in 1906, an exile in Algeria.

The French have not violently interfered with native life; chiefs, if not kings, still exercise authority. Many of the old war lords of Behazin became officials.

Even the annual "customs" continue at Abomey, though without human sacrifice. In place of the king the head of the youngest branch of the royal family officiates, and the ceremonies last four days. But the palace or palaces of Abomey—each monarch built himself a new abode, adjoining that of his predecessor—are in decay. The *kposi*, or spouses of the panther, and the *ahosi*, the ordinary wives of the king, are dispersed, the princes are scattered, the slaves freed; only a few faithful women



INDUSTRY FETTERED BY IGNORANCE: NATIVES MAKING PALM-OIL

Palm-oil is the principal industry of Dahomey, the oil palm growing wild throughout the country, and also being cultivated largely. The natives crack the nuts by hand to obtain the kernels—a slow process only gradually being replaced by mechanical crackers—and their primitive method of extracting the oil prevents them getting more than about 70 per cent. of the possible yield

remain to tend the royal tombs, for each monarch (except Behazin) is buried in the house in which he lived and died.

These palaces were rectangular buildings of unbaked earth, and were frequently adorned with bas-reliefs of animals. Dahomian art was crude, showing little of the skill of the Benin brasses; such as it was, it was mostly derived from contact with Europeans. Imitative the Dahomians certainly were; their thrones were exaggerated copies of the Ashanti stools, and, as with the Ashanti, the flat-topped, large umbrella was a symbol of royal authority. Even more sacred was the baton, the bearing of which was the mark of ambassadorial powers; when an official solemnly produced his baton, the people would prostrate themselves and pour dust on their heads, as if in the presence of the sovereign. Batons took the place of a visiting card, a signature, a passport.

The usual Dahomian dress was a long robe of cotton or silk thrown over the shoulder and wound round the body, but other garments were worn. The Amazons, for instance, were dressed in a

short Zouave-like vest, knickerbockers, and short skirt. To-day there is a tendency to adopt European clothes. This is most noticeable in the coast towns, where there is a very mixed population.

Along the coast, too, one meets the Mina, a people taller and better developed than the Fong, and noted surf men. Their women, in youth, are often distinctly good-looking. One other tribe, found in eastern Dahomey, may be mentioned, the Nagos, or Nagots, of whom the Yoruba of Nigeria form a branch. A more primitive people than the Fong and without their centralised organization, they suffered much from their warlike neighbours.

This account does not deal with the regions added to Dahomey by the French since the overthrow of Behazin; these northern districts have nothing in common with Dahomey proper save that they are under the same government. To-day, under the sympathetic guidance of men who seek to rule by understanding the native mind, the Dahomians are contented, loyal, and prosperous.